



Kiyotaka
Of Class V-B

Kiyotaka Of Class B (Year 1)

GiKaRa_

Published: 2022

Arc 1 Chap 0 : How it All Started

I was laying my head on my desk, pondering the idea of equality while pretending to be asleep, when I felt a presence behind me. It wasn't a malicious one, rather, a citrus-smelling one.

"Ayanokouji-Kun, wake up ! Homeroom is about to begin. " said the girl while shaking my right shoulder to wake me up.

Ofcourse i was Conscious , And indeed Homeroom Was About to Begin , But i Wanted To See What she Would Do If I Pretended to be asleep

"Ayanokouji-kun ! Ayanokouji-kun If you don't wake up, I'll force you to ! " She said this while slightly shaking me and speaking with a rather high voice. Of course, I knew that was an empty threat, so I just brushed it off and stood my ground.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I know you are awake. Please get up before homeroom begins ! "

"What's going on, Honami-chan ? What's up with Ayanokouji-kun ? "

"Ah, Mako-chan ! Help me wake up Ayanokouji-kun before Sensei gets here ! "

"Oy Ayanokouji-kun, wake up ! Wake up, Ahhh~ at this rate, he won't. Try threatening him Honami-chan; I'm sure he'll cave."

"You know I'm no good at this stuff Mako-chan ! Can you give me some ideas ? "

"Hmmm lets see , If u say something Like 'wake up or i will kiss you' im sure he will surrender "

"EEEH?!! Mako-chan ! NO I- "

"Why not ? He's a boy after all i'm sure it would work "

"N-No O-Obviou-"

"Why are you all red, Honami-chan ? It's not like it's inappropriate, it's just a threat. "

"Wake Up or , i will kiss u " She muttered the Last Part Under Her Breath , But it was Obvious What She Said , I Turned around And Look At Her

She had long smooth strawberry hair with beautiful blue eyes and a delicate figure. People say she's the cutest in our grade, and I don't blame them; she was simply stunning. The girl in question is Ichinose Honami, my seatmate.

I looked at her State Right Now , She Was Burying Her Head in

Hands While The Other Girl Is Teasing Her And poking her mercilessly

After that, our homeroom teacher entered the classroom while she had difficulties walking. Some students went and supported her to the podium. While she was muttering gibberish words, it was obvious that she was drunk. It wasn't surprising since we see her in this state almost everyday.

I Looked at our Classroom , And The People in it , I Unintentionally Cracked A Smile While observing Them , Happy about my new highschool Life.

How Did it All Start ? Well , It All Started Back on the Entrance Ceremony Day

This is my First Time Writing A Fanfic , While im Confident in my English And I Trust That There is no Spelling Mistakes , I Hope u cut some Slack when it comes to The Content

Im Planning on Giving Kiyo A bit Of Brainpower to Atleast Smile , While giving Him A Somewhat Normal Emotions , But Dont worry its still not Gonna Affect him That much.

If u Have Any Ideas Feel Free to submit Them . Adieu For now.

Arc 1 Chap 1 : The Bus Encounter

The 1st of April. The day of the entrance ceremony

I was waiting for my bus at the bus station, excited about my first school experience and experiencing being normal.

I looked around to see the other people wearing the same uniform as me. Some of them were happy, some were nervous, some were bored. All of them had different expressions on their faces.

I kept scanning the students until my eyes fell on someone.

He was well-built and had blonde hair, and he was looking at himself in the mirror.

He stands out compared to the students in the station, not because of his looks or his body.

He had a unique aura, one of superiority and arrogance. And the expression on his face was unreadable. He had a smug smile the entire time, but I couldn't figure out how he was feeling to the depths of the other people.

He Seems To Have Notice My Gaze At Him , He Looked At my Reflection in The Mirror For a Second And Grinned , Before Ignoring Me And Examining Himself Again.

I could tell that he was no ordinary guy, and we were similar in one way or another.

Before I could finish my thoughts, the bus arrived. I climbed up the stairs to find it crowded and almost all the seats were taken.

If I could get a seat, that would be great.

Fortunately , someone got up and left. I quickly went and sat on the seat, claiming my ground.

I Could See Some People Were Disappointed When I took the seat, they stared at me with a hint of jealousy.

Sorry , Seat-san is mine.

Not before long, they gave up. I stared at the window, admiring the scenery. I never got the chance to experience the outside world. Experience what is normal. This is a completely different experience for me. One that I'm looking forward to

" Excuse me , Shouldn't You Give Up Your Seat ? "

My train of thought was interrupted by a loud, angry voice. I looked over to see the blonde guy from before getting yelled at by an office lady. Beside her was an elderly woman.

" Hey You , Cant You See That This Elderly Woman Is Having Trouble ? " Said The Office Lady

" That's a really crazy question, lady." The blonde boy said this with a smug smile on his face. He crossed his legs and exclaimed, " Why should I offer up my seat? There is no reason for me to do so.

" You're sitting in a priority seat. It's natural to offer these seats to the elderly, but now beat them. "

" I Don't Understand , Beat What Exactly ? Besides , Priority Seats Are just That :Priority Seats , I Have no legal Obligation To move, Since I'm Occupying This Seat Right Now I Should Be The One To Determine Whether Or Not i move, Am I Supposed To Give Up My Seat Just Because Im Young ? Ha! That is complete Nonsense " The Lady Was Taken aback After What He Said

After some back and forth, the blondie utterly owned the lady. After that, she apologized to the elderly woman. A girl shouted, " Can anyone offer up their seat? She is shaking and about to collapse. Please, someone help."

She Had A Long Strawberry Hair With Blue Eyes , She Was Beautiful , Any man Would have his heart itched Just By the Mere Sight Of Her.

I looked around the bus, checking the people around me. Some pretended to not hear, while others were looking down out of guilt.

I Raised my Hand " You Can Have Mine " I Wouldn't Care Less About Giving Up My Seat. Besides , I Wanted To Experience Doing Good , So I Didn't Have Any Problems

" Thank you very much!" said the old woman while she went and sat on my seat.

I walked to the back of the bus and was soon approached by the strawberry-haired girl.

" Thank you so much for giving up your seat! I'm Ichinose Honami. " She said this with a smile as she stood by my side.

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka , Don't Even Mention It , Anyone Would've Done The Same "

" But That Doesn't Change The Fact That You Are a Good Guy Ayanokouji-kun "

"Anyone would have done the same thing; if you waited a little longer, someone would eventually offer theirs."

"I guess you're right, but you're still a good guy," she said with a beautiful smile.

"Thanks, I guess," I muttered, knowing full well that I wasn't a good guy, but her words sounded genuine, which made me happy.

" By The Way , What C-"

" Ah There You Are , Thank You So mush For Standing Up For That Elderly , If You Didn't I would've Done so My self " A Brown

Short Haired Girl Approached Us And Said so " My Name Is Kushida Kikyounice To Meet Both Of you "

"Ah, it was nothing. I'm Ichinose Honami and this is Ayanokouji-kun. Nice to meet you too, Kushida-san." I said hello with a nod.

" Ichinose-san and Ayanokouji-kun, pleasure is all mine," she said with a beaming smile.

Kushida seemed to have almost the same energy as Ichinose , yet something felt off, like a feeling telling me to be wary of Kushida. Seeing her interact with Ichinose and her expressions, I couldn't help but be wary of her.

I brushed off those feelings and stood on the bus while Ichinose and Kushida talked, occasionally asking me questions to keep me involved in their conversation.

" By the way, what class are you guys in ?"

"Class B." I announced.

Ichinose turned to me slowly with a surprised expression, " It seems like we'll be classmates, Ayanokouji-kun. Take care of me okay ?"

" Don't Worry , I'll Take Care Of You, In More Than One Way "

" Hmmm , What Do You Mean Ayanokouji-kun " Kushida Said , Tilting Her Head In Confusion

" It's Nothing , Anyway What Class Are You In Kushida ? " I Said Leading The conversation Back To Normal , *I need to keep T-REX in Check if i don't Want Any Problems*

" Sadly i'm in Class D , I Hoped To Be Classmates With You Both " Replied Kushida Pouting

" Ahaha Dont worry Kushida-san , I'm Sure You Will Be Able To Make Friends Anywhere You're placed " Complimented ichinose

After a little more banter, the bus arrived at our destination. I looked up to see a gate formed from natural rock waiting just ahead , all the young boys and girls wearing school uniforms passing through it.

The Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing High School is an elite school formed by the Japanese government with the purpose of developing future leaders.

"Alright, this seems like goodbye, for now." Kushida turned to us and said

Ah, don't worry, Kushida-san. I'm sure you will do just fine. See you later !" said Ichinose while waving her hand goodbye.

" See you soon, Ichinose-san , and Ayanokouji-kun"

" Cya " i Said While Raising My Hand A Little , She Gave us a bright Smile Before Heading Towards The Entrance. One thought running through my mind, *Kushida is sus.*

" Alright, wanna head back to the entrance ceremony together?"

Said Ichinose, with a bright smile that seemed quite genuine.

"Alright, here we go."

And thus, my school life begins.

I know This Chapter is Kinda Short , but i made it in the middle of the night and wanted to post it right after the chap 0 , ofcourse this chap had nothing special but i promise to make it up in the next chapters

This chapter had 1200 words for little content , excluding these after noted , kinda dissapointed but ill do better belive me , ill cya later

Arc 1 Chap 2 : Class B

I Disliked The Entrance Ceremony and Imagined Many First Years Felt The Same. The Principal and the Students Exchanged Excessive Words of gratitude, There Was Far too much Time Spent Standing in Lines, And With So many irritating Things to Deal With, It All felt Like A Huge Pain in The Butt. But Those Weren't Only My Complaints. The Entrance Ceremonies For Elementary, Junior High And High School All Meant The Same Thing: The Start of another major Trial For Children. In order for them to enjoy their School Life, They Have To Make Friends, Failing in doing so signals The Beginning Of a Rather Tragic 3 Years.

After the ceremony, I made my way to my classroom after bidding farewell to Ichinose as she went to speak with other students in the Gymnasium.

I looked up to read the nameplate '1-B Class' So this is where I'll be spending the rest of the school year, huh?

Alright, how should I do this ? Should I burst into the class with energy and instantly go chat with someone ? Or should I pass a sheet of paper with my e-mail on it? Should I remain seated and wait for someone to approach me? My only option is the third, but can I expect to be approached?

" Are You a Student Of This Class ? " As i Was Agonizing Over What to do , A Boy Came Behind me And Asked

" Ah, yes, what about you ? "

" Seems Like We'll Be Classmates , Im Kanzaki Ryuuji Pleasure To Meet You " He Raised His Hand For a Handshake , He Has A Violet-bluish Hair With Golden Sharp Eyes

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, nice to meet you too, Kanzaki." I said as I accepted his handshake.

" Say Ayanokouji, why were you standing in front of the door and doing nothing ? "

" I was just nervous about meeting my classmates."

He laughed a little before putting his hand on my shoulder. "You don't have to be nervous, Ayanokouji. Besides, the entrance ceremony just ended, so I'm Sure We Are The First Ones To Arrive. "

He Went And Opened The Door To See an Empty Classroom

" I Guess You Are Right " Then We Both Made Our Way To Our Respective Desks, My Desk Had A Nameplate With My Name Over

It , And It Was On The Back Of The Room Beside The Window, It Was A Good Seat, Since I'll Be Able To Watch And Observe The Whole Class Easily Without Being conspicuous About it.

Then Kanzaki went and sat on the seat right in front of me. It seems like we are neighbors.

" Seems Like We Are Seatmates Ayanokouji, My Back is in Your Care " He Said While Sitting And Turning Towards Me

We chatted about some irrelevant things. While the classroom started slowly flooding with people, they were all busy revising their study materials or chatting with their friends. Since I'm talking with Kanzaki right now, does that make him my friend ?

As I was thinking about it, a group of girls entered the classroom. I noticed Ichinose was among them. *She's already made that many friends, huh ?*

She Started Scanning The Room Until Her Eyes Landed On Mine, She Then Started Walking Towards Me, *what could she possibly want from me ? Will She Ask For My Email Or Contact Info ? Or Would She Ask me To Help Find Her Desk ? Or perhaps an invitation ?*

As these Thoughts Came To My Head, She Then Went And Sat On The Seat Next To Mine. *Oh*

" What a coincidence, Ayanokouji-kun. It seems like we are seatmates ! Let's try to get along well. " She said, with her usual bright smile.

" Likewise." I said, while replying with a smile of my own.

"Do you know her ?" Said Kanzaki still half-turned to face me.

"Yeah. I met Ayanokouji-kun when we were on the bus. He is the first friend I made in this school. " *Friend huh ? So where exactly do friends come from ? I still don't get it. Since I had an encounter with Ichinose, did that make us friends ? Does that mean Kanzaki is my friend too ? No, we didn't have a big encounter... Should we head to the bathroom together?*

" I see. Well, I'm Kanzaki Ryuuji by the way. "

" Nice to meet you, Kanzaki-kun. I'm Ichinose Honami. "

The three of us had a little exchange before the bell rang, signaling the start of homeroom.

At that precise moment, a woman in her late twenties entered the room. She had wavy brown shoulder-length hair that made her look mature.

" Good Morning To You Students I'm The Instructor For Class B, My Name Is Hoshinomiya Chie, At This School We Do Not Change Classrooms For Each Grade, For The Next Three Years I Will Be Acting As Your Homeroom Teacher, So I Hope To Get To Know All Of You, The Entrance Ceremony Will Be Held In The Gymnasium One Hour From Now. But First , I Will Distribute Written Materials

With Information About This School's Special Rules I Will Also Hand The Admission Guide "

The students in the front passed back the documents and took a look around them.

In Summary. This School Spread Around 600.000 Square Meters And It Came Equipped With Many Facilities, Contact With The Outside World Is Forbidden In Any Way, Leaving School Ground Is Also Strictly Forbidden, All Students Are Required To Live In Dormitories Within Campus. In Short , You Can Think Of This As A Small City. There is Also The Feature Called The : S System

" I will now hand out your student ID cards. By using your card, you can access any of the facilities on campus, including purchasing goods. You can buy anything, and anything on school grounds can be purchased with points. "

Our Points Loaded In Our ID Cards Acts Like a Currency, And Apparently We Can Buy Anything using them. Do They Actually Mean Anything anything ? Naturally, There Would Be Restrictions, I Couldn't Imagine Buying A Staff Member Or Something Around That, But If They Mean it, Then ill Have To Test Out The Limits.

" Points are automatically deposited into your accounts on the first of every month. You should all have received 100.000 points this month Already, keep in mind that one point is worth one yen. "

The classroom turned into an uproar. Everyone was shocked by the number of points given to them. 100.000 yen per month is no small number. However, that's not what sensei said.

I turned to look at Ichinose. She had a skeptical expression on her face, so she had noticed it as well.

"Are you overwhelmed by the number of points you've been given? This school evaluates its students' merits. Everyone here passed the entrance exams, which speaks of your value and potential. The number of points you receive reflects the evaluation of your worth. You could use your points without restraint. They are also transferable to other students. However, extorting points from your peers is not allowed. This school monitors bullying very carefully. " There it was, another piece of the puzzle.

I could notice some students were skeptical about this. It could be said of Kanzaki too.

" Does anyone have any questions ?" Hoshinomiya-sensei said, indicating the end of her explanation.

I looked around the classroom. Most of the students were happy about the points they received, while some were skeptical and confused.

" Alright then, it seems no one has questions. I'll be going the- "

" Hoshinomiya-sensei i have a question " I interrupted her

" Yes, Go ahead " She replied with a smile

" How many points are we going to get next month ?"

All eyes turned to me. while most of them were staring at me intensely. However, my eyes only remained on Hoshinomiya Chie.

I could see a grin forming on her face upon hearing my question.

" Sorry. I cannot tell you, but be careful teehee~ " She gave us a warning while posing in a childish figure.

After that, a tense atmosphere built up, and the warning gagged everyone.

" If that's all I'll be going then~ Don't forget about the entrance ceremony in 30 minutes. Bae~ " She said as she strolled out of the room.

Well, that was interesting. Based on her obvious scripted speech that contained hints and her warning, I could say with almost certainty that my suspicions are true. But I still couldn't see the bigger picture.

After that, Ichinose stepped up, gathering everyone's attention as she spoke. " Alright everyone, since we'll be classmates for the next three years. It's important that we get along together, so it would be a good start to introduce ourselves," she said.

"Yeah!" " That's right!" As she got words of confirmation, Ichinose continued.

"Alright, I'll start by introducing myself." With a beaming smile, she introduced herself. "My name is Ichinose Honami. I don't have any particular hobbies, but I like to do just about anything. Feel free to invite me to hangout. I'm also planning to join the student council. It's a pleasure to meet all of you. " She ended her flawless introduction with a brilliant smile.

Everyone got affected by Ichinose's energy and started clapping loudly. I kind of envied her since my introduction wouldn't hold a candle to hers. I already have an introduction in mind. I calculated the chances of success and it was not bad. All that matters now is the execution.

"Okay, I'm Next !" The voice belonged to a blue-haired boy with purple eyes as he stood up " My name is Shibata Sou. Feel free to call me Sou. I like sports, especially football, and I'm planning to play for this school's soccer club. Pleasure to meet you ! " A club?*I wonder if I should join one.*

" I'm Kanzaki Ryuuji. I don't do anything in particular. Pleasure to meet you. "

After that, there was Amikura Mako, Hamaguguchi Tetsuya, Andou Sayo, Chihiro Shiranami, and Minamikata Kozue. Our class had a relaxing and fun atmosphere, which I hope continue-

"All right, next iiiiiiss, Ah, Ayanokouji-kun ! It's your turn to introduce yourself." Ichinose said, turning the entire class toward

me.

Damn it, I forgot it was my turn and was focused After analyzing others' introductions, I deduced that my introduction's chance of success is 40%. That's an unreliable percentage, but for the sake of my reputation, here goes nothing.

I Stood Up From My Seat and Faced Everyone " My Name Is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, I Like Reading Books and i play abit of Sports, I Also Practiced Piano And Calligraphy, I Hope We Get Along Well " I Gave a Smile At The End

The Class Clapped Like They Did With The Other Introductions, Well Atleast it Wasn't an utter Failure

" Nice to meet you too, Ayanokouji-kun. I hope we become great friends !" Said Shibata.

" Likewise." The class introductions went on for the rest of homeroom, until the bell rang.

Thats it for this Chapter, I made It Longer But Decided Against It At The End. However, I Planned For Kiyo To Try And Buy The Information But Decided Against it Since it Would Go Against What Im Planning For Whatever Kiyo Will Do.

Adieu

Arc 1 Chap 3 : The Start Of a New Life

The entrance ceremony was the same, people exchanged words of gratitude, and it ended without any incident. We were free to do whatever we wanted for the rest of the day.

70-80% of students went to the dormitories, while the remaining formed groups and made their way to the cafes, while the louder ones went to Karaoke. The hustle and bustle quickly died down. I decided to swing by the convenience store on my way to the dorms to buy some essentials.

I entered the store and was welcomed by the extravagant number of products and different ingredients. There were different types of shampoo and beauty necessities, vegetables, snacks, premade lunch sets, and so on. I decided to grab some ramen along with other stuff. I'm not going to lie, it's a lot of fun surfing through the various shelves-

"Ahh?! "

As I was going through the shelves, a girl bumped into me and fell on the ground. As she fell, her basket fell along with the book she was reading.

"I'm sorry, I should have seen where I was standing." I apologize, fully aware that it was not my fault, but mentioning it will make me the bad guy, at least according to what I've read.

"A-Ah, No You Don't Have To Apologize, I Was Too Immersed In My Book That I Didn't Notice Where I Was Going, It's My Fault, I'm Sorry " She Had A mid-back Length Silver Hair With Black Ribbons Tied Behind it And Light Purple-ish Eyes, She Was Beautiful.

"It's Fine, Here Let Me Help You " I Crouched And Started Grabbing Her Stuff

"Um, thanks." She replied as she started standing up.

I collected her stuff until I reached the book she was reading. It was *Wuthering Heights* by Emily Bronte.

"*Wuthering Heights* ?" I murmured.

"Um, Did You Perhaps Read It? " She said

"Yes, It's a Excellent Book, Well Excellent is understatement, Every Book By The Bronte is a Masterpiece " I Replied (***i don't know about books, don't take it seriously***)

As I said that, I could see her face beaming with happiness and excitement, just like a child who got his long-awaited favorite

Toy, She looked like an Angel With That Smile. *How Can Such A Cute Creature Like Her Exist ?*

"Really? This is my first Bronte book, but I've read most of Isaac Asimov's collection, and it was fantastic; did you read it? "

"Mhm, if you're looking for similar books. You can see 'whose boddy' It's a little long but still entertaining. "

" Whose Body ? By Dorothy L. Sayers, right ? I've already read it ! It was great, especially in the middle, where he discovers that other people have powers similar to him, and he tries to win by outsmarting everyone. I got so excited when I reached that part. Uh oh, I'm sorry If I'm being weird or anything, it's just that I've been looking forward to having a friend who shares my hobby of reading books. I'm Shiina Hiyori from Class C. What about you ? " She tilted her head a little. *Cute*

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka Class B, Nice To Meet You Shiina."

" Hiyori," she muttered.

"Uh?" I said, tilting my head a little.

" Just Call me Hiyori, I'm Used To People Call me That So Please Use My First Name "

" Alright, Hiyori You Can Call me Kiyotaka too if you want "

"It's a deal, Kiyotaka-kun," she said, beaming.

We continued shopping while talking about books. Hiyori seems to be very passionate about books. Apparently, she has a collection of books that she carries around with her. It's strange but fun. I guess having a common interest is part of friendship.

As we were walking, I noticed something weird. Hiyori seemed to have noticed it too. There was a table in the corner of the store which had a bunch of necessities on it, but there was one big difference.

"Free?" Mused Hiyori.

" Maybe It's For The People Who Burned All Their Points ?"

" How Is That Possible ?"

" I Don't Know."

I went closer to the table and noticed the label " 3 Items Per Month." These were different than the items in the rest of the store; some were daily necessities like toothbrushes, etc. I grabbed 3 items and put them in my basket.

" The school is very lenient, isn't it ?"

"Yeah, 100.000 yen per month seems a bit excessive for high school students, even if it's a government-sponsored school."

" Hey Shut It, Just Wait A Sec, Im Looking For it "

A sudden loud voice came from the counter, apparently a dispute between two young men glaring at each other. I approached the Ill-Tempered Face student, who had fierce red hair and intense eyes.

He had an intimidating presence, enough to keep people from stepping forward or complaining.

"What's Going on Here?" I asked.

"Huh? Who are you?" The red-haired guy glared at me. He was under the impression that I was an enemy.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class B, I just wanted to check because you look like you're in trouble." My explanation seemed to calm him down a bit.

"I forgot my student ID card. I forgot that it works as our credit card from now on."

He put the noodles aside and started walking back, probably to the dorms, where he had forgotten his ID.

"I can pay for you if you want. Walking back to the dorms to get back seems like a pain. I don't mind. The store wasn't far from the dorms, but by the time he returned, there would be a long line of students purchasing lunch.

Yeah, it's annoying. Thanks, man." He actually thanked me.

As he got back, I swept the ID through the scanner. The cashier confirmed the purchase with a nod.

"It's no problem, Uuuuh," I said, tilting my head slightly.

"Sudou, Sudou Ken, That's My Name."

"Nice to meet you, Sudou. I'm Ayanokouji. This is Shiina Hiyori." Hiyori gave him a smile.

"Nice To Meet You Ayanokouji, Shiina Here"

Sudou Handed Me One Of his Cup Noodles "This is The Least i Can Do " Since Any Protest Would Get me nowhere , i Accepted , Walked Towards The Hot Water Dispense And Filled By Cup, Then Walked To The Bench Where Sudou Was And Sat Down Beside Him.

I took a sip of my ramen. It was good. The flavors complement each other, and the noodles themselves weren't bad. Although it was fatty and not healthy, it was delicious.

Apparently, Hiyori found something amusing, as I could hear her giggling away. I looked at her, "Is there something wrong, Hiyori?"

"Oh no, it's just that you look like a little kid when you eat your food, Kiyotaka-kun. I find it pretty adorable." With a chuckle, she said

"I see."

I Took Another Sip of My Noodles, Then Sudou Came Closer to My Ear And Whispered "You're On First Name Basis Already, Is She Your Girlfriend?"

"No, we're just friends who share the same interest. She asked me to call her by her first name because she's used to it," I whispered back.

Hiyori curiously looked at us, but before she could say anything,

three figures approached us. They appeared to be upperclassmen, had just come out of the store, and were carrying Noodle Cups.

" Hey, you guys, first years? This is our spot. " Said one of them.

" Who Are You ? We were already here. You're in the way. Get lost." Barked Sudou.

" You hear this guy ? 'get lost' he says. What a cocky first-year punk' "

The Three Laughed At Sudou, As He Shot up, Slamming His Noodle Cup On The Ground, Hiyori Got abit Nervous As She Kept Her Distance, She Then Looked At Me With A Worried Expression. I Gave Her a Nod, Which Eased Her abit.

" 'First-year punk' Huh ? You trying to make fun of me, Huh ? " Sudou had an extremely short fuse. At this rate, I would have to intervene.

"Chill out, we're just claiming our spot. After all, we're second-years, so you should respect your upperclassmen, *Kohai*," one of them said provocatively.

" You got a lot of guts, asshole. I'll beat the shi-" Before he could keep going, I grabbed his shoulder to stop him.

" Calm down Sudou, It's clear that they are trying to provoke you. There is a security camera nearby, so if you attack them, you'll be in trouble, " I said.

" But-"

" Hoh, seems like this guy has some brain cells in his head. Not bad; are you possibly in Class A? Or maybe Class B ? " One of them said. *Class A and B ?*

" Ey 'You red-haired moron' are you perhaps in Class D ?"

" Yeah, and what abou' it?"

The three of them looked at each other before laughing hysterically.

" AHHAHAHA , I KNEW IT , IT WAS A DEAD GIVEAWAY."

" HE IS FROM THE DEFECTIVE CLASS AHAHAHA " *defective ?*

"Ahahaha You poor thing, don't worry, since you'll experience hell soon enough, I'll let you off the hook." *Experience Hell ?*

All three of them turned their backs on us and started walking away.

" Heh Wai-" Sudou barked as one of them turned and called out to me.

"Hey, the brunette kid, don't hang out with this guy. For your own good, this is just friendly advice from your Senpais," he said as he walked away, cracking up.

" Aaaah DAMN IT-" Sudou Couldn't Hide His Frustrations, Kicked A Trash Bin As He Walked Away.

I looked towards Hiyori to see her. She gave me a comforting

smile. I looked back towards the trash bin and started fixing it.

I followed Hiyori to the dorms after collecting the trash.

I decided to strike up a conversation because she didn't say anything and sat silent the entire time, and none of her previous enthusiasm could be found.

" Did you notice ?" She turned towards me and tilted her head.

" Notice What ?"

"The upperclassmen's reaction when they found out he was from Class D"

" Oh yeah, their attitudes took a major turn upon hearing that. It makes me uneasy."

It seems like this school is more than it lets on. We might be in a disaster if we weren't careful. I need to talk to Ichinose about this.

" As a friend, I'll offer you some advice. Don't carelessly spend your points. We might be in for a rude awakening if we aren't careful."

" Yeah, thanks Kiyotaka-Kun, I glanced to see an anxious Hiyori. From her facial expression, I can tell that she is worried about the others. *What a good girl.*

" You don't have to worry; I'm sure we'll be just fine."

We arrived at the dorms and went to the reception desk. I received a keycard for Room 401 and a book containing information about the dorm's rules. I quickly flipped through the pages, memorizing the important details like basic rules and time for garbage disposal. There are also notes on not wasting electricity, water, and so on.

It seems that illicit relationships are strictly forbidden. So having sex is a big no-no.

" So they don't place restrictions on electricity and gas use ?" asked Hiyori.

" This school is very lenient, isn't it ? I assumed they would deduct points for the cost. " I responded, " This school really went to great lengths to make the perfect system. Although I doubt spoiled students would become outstanding adults, this is too good to be true. "

I Said As I Climbed The Elevator With Hiyori, I Pressed The Fourth Floor, Meanwhile Hiyori Pressed The Seventh (***IDK What Floor Hiyori Lives In***)

From everything I've seen so far, I couldn't help but doubt this generosity. 480 students in the entire school, which results in 48 million points per month. What merit could the school gain from this ?

The elevator reached the fourth floor. As I stepped out, I turned to look at Hiyori.

" I've had fun today, Hiyori. It was really nice to talk to you. Do you want to exchange contact information? " I suggested

"Yes, Kiyotaka-kun, I would like that very much," she said with an angelic smile.

I and Hiyori exchanged contact info before bidding farewell to each other. I walked towards the door, which had a 401 sign on it, and swung the keycard on the handle to open it.

My room was nice. It was about eight tatami wide. Also, this was the first time I lived alone without having any eyes on me.

I went and lay on my bed. I was pondering what happened today. Is This Freedom ? If It Is, Then It Was Nice. I'm Looking Forward To Living With You Freedom-chan.

I got for the first time a girl's contact info. I've made some friends and didn't end up as an outcast. I got excited by the thought of it. I would enjoy being in Class B and around the people I meet in the next three years. I will get to experience many things. I can taste many foods and enjoy having my freedom outside of *that place and away from that man*.

I Introduced Hiyori Early Due To My Plans With Horikita, What Would I Do With Her You May ask ? That's a Secret, But It Would Be Very Interesting, I Also Introduced Hiyori Because She is Great. Catch ya Later

Arc 1 Chap 4 : Club Affairs

Happy Valentine's Day Everyone, I Hope you enjoy it with your boyfriend/girlfriend and if you're single, Then Don't worry we are on the same boat

Here is a banner for an underrated ship special for valentine's day, Enjoy Reading.

On our second day of school a.k.a First day of class, We spent most of our time running through the course objectives. Surprisingly, Everyone in our class is behaving themselves, It's better than i thought, Seems like i underestimated Ichinose's leadership and grasp over the class.

Kiyo POV : That morning

It was 4:30AM, The sound of the alarm buzzing through the room as i woke up, I got ready and left the room for my morning exercises, It's Nothing like what i used to do in the white room, But enough to keep my physical condition at its peek. It is important since i'll most likely try different types of food Healthy and unhealthy ones, Slacking off might degrade my body massively, I'd Like to Avoid that at any cost.

**** Time Skip Finishing the Routine ****

After finishing my routine i went back to my room, Took a Shower and ate breakfast, And Prepared my self for the day. This is my second day of the school, Another day with my freedom.

I Climbed the elevator Making my first steps towards the school, On my way there, I could see some students forming groups and making their way to the school, One of which was Kushida and her friends, She already made more friends than i could in the next three years, It was enviable, But handling many relationships at once seems very difficult, And i could never be able to do that.

As i was observing the students, Someone tapped my shoulders, I Turned around to see a Bright and cheerful looking Ichinose Honami.

" Good morning Ayanokouji-kun ! " She Said With A Bright Smile

" Morning Ichinose, How Are you ? " I Said with my usual monotone voice

" I'm doing great ! I've had alot of fun yesterday, What about you ? "

" Same, I've made some friends here and there, It was Fun too "

" That's Great to hear Ayanokouji-kun, Do you mind if i walk with you to school ? "

" Sure "

The We both made our way to school, We talked about trivial things like how great the facilities are, And how we spent our points, It was rather nice talking to her, Ichinose greeted some classmates and other students on our way too, This is the perfect timing to ask her about what's on my mind.

" Ichinose what do you think of What Sensei said yesterday ? " I Asked, It would be interesting hearing her thoughts on the matter

" Well, Giving a Highschool student an allowance of 100.000 yen without any strings attached is weird. Also, Her Reaction upon hearing your question made the whole situation suspicious,'be careful' She says, Could it be that our allowance may decrease on the next month ? "

" Maybe, But haven't you noticed anything else ? " If she deduced this much, then that would be abit disappointing

" Hmm, I don't know if I'm speculating but sensei's explanation seems abit out of character for her, Comparing her tone when she explained and when she warned us, It seems like two different people " She then looked at me " Can you explain to me what made you ask that question yesterday ? "

" Yes, Before that i'd like you to do something Ichinose "

I filled her in on my theory, And about the hidden cameras and the incident that occurred yesterday on the convenience store and the strange behavior of the upperclassmen, and for my request.

" I see, So you want me to convince the class to behave well in so we won't get a decrease in our allowance " I Nodded " Say Ayanokouji-kun " She Turned to look at me with a calculating gaze

" Mmm ? "

" You're pretty smart aren't you ? "

" No, I'm just abit observant " I Shrugged

" Still, I doubt anyone would've noticed and deduced that much, That's impressive Ayanokouji-kun "

" I Guess, So how about my request ? " I tried to switch topics

" Yeah about that, I will talk to the class before homeroom starts, It would be bad if we delay it to lunch break "

" No, Do it at the start of homeroom "

" Huh ? Why ? "

" I'll need to check something, Also can you say What i'm going to tell you now ? "

I Explained to her the script that i had on my head, And with that she nodded.

" I have to say, That was some crazy stuff, But i'll do it "

And with that, We Walked together to our class, I went and sat on my seat gazing through the window, There was a big tree on a distance, With some birds Dancing around the leaves, It was a magnificent View, One i could relate.

I Always wanted to be free, Free like a bird, Experience The outside world, Learn what the white room couldn't teach, What books couldn't teach, Feel what couldn't be felt in that world. And now i have three years to do that, I will enjoy it as mush as i want. I couldn't disregard the possibility of *that man* Trying to get me to drop out, But i doubt he would be successful, Even for a man like him.

The first bell rang, Signalling the start of homeroom, Hoshinomiya-sensei Waltzed in the room with incredible speed and cheerful expression

" Gooooood Morning Class~, I hope you didn't forgot me, I'm your lovely homeroom teacher " She expressed.

" Don't worry, We won't forget about our little bitc----- I mean our Teacher " Said one of the students.

She beamed with such a smile, That smile was too bright that it could kill your eyes, Is that her way of punishing him ?

" Aww, You guys are so cute~ Now Let's start our homero-" Before she could continue, Ichinose Raised her hands.

" Sensei, Can i have abit of your time ? I have something important to tell the class " She Requested.

Hoshinomiya-sensei took a dynamic turn and looked at ichinose, She nodded and smiled " Ofcourse my dear Ichinose~ The stage is all yours " With That Ichinose went to the teacher's podium and looked at everyone with determination in her eyes.

" Everyone, I Would like you to pay attention because what i'm gonna say is for utmost importance " Everyone in the class were listening carefully, Even Hoshinomiya-sensei was looking with interest.

" I would like you all to behave well in class, Listen to the discussions or atleast act like you are interested, So our allowance won't decrease for the next month " The class was silent, Thinking about was Ichinose said, Amidst the silence, Hamaguchi Tetsuya said a question all the class were wondering about

" Can you explain Ichinose-san ? "

It looks like all of my classmates were suspicious of the current situation, I have no clue on how much they investigated but they all share the same doubts.

" I don't know if you noticed Hamaguchi-kun, But there are hidden cameras around the classroom, They are here to observe our behavior, I think its related to what Sensei said yesterday 'the

amount of points you receive reflect the evaluation of your worth' " Reasoned Ichinose.

The class turned around and scanned the room " Oh There is one ! " Kanzaki Yelled as he noticed one of the cameras.

Upon seeing this, Hoshinomiya-sensei's grin became wider and wider, The reason i told Ichinose to do it in the start of homeroom is to keep an eye on Hoshinomiya-sensei's reactions upon revealing my theories, This has been productive so far.

Ichinose then gazed at me which i simply nodded, Seems my theory is correct or atleast close to.

Hoshinomiya-sensei noticed ichinose's gaze, And she looked at me with a grin, *Oops, i got exposed.* Time for the final blow.

" I also believe that the school has a hierarchy, Ranking the the best students in Classes A and B, While the flawed ones in C and D, According to Ayanokouji-kun, Three upperclassmen approached him while he was with someone from Class D, And upon hearing that his friend is from Class D, The Laughed at him calling him defective and stupid, When Ayanokouji-kun stopped the Class D student from fighting, They praised him for being smart and asked if he was in Class A or B "

Upon hearing this Hoshinomiya cracked into a laughter, Seems my final blow was too much for her to handle.

" Ahahaha, I knew you kids were interesting, With interesting theories, Since you've putted the effort and deduced this much, I Don't mind giving you a hint, You're in the right path but You're still missing crucial pieces of information " As she said this, She glanced at me before looking at Ichinose, Ofcourse it was impossible for me to figure everything out from the get-go, While Im pretty sure there is more to the S-System than said today.

" I see, Thank you Sensei " And with that, Ichinose went back to her seat, I gave her a thumbs up, She smiled in response.

And With That Homeroom started. for real this time.

.
.
.

It was lunch time now. I Decided to try the cafeteria. I finished gathering my stuff and, I got instantly approached by Shibata and Hamaguchi.

" Yo Kanzaki-kun, Ayanokouji-kun, We were just heading to the cafeteria, Do you want to eat with us ? " Invited shibata.

" I was just going there myself, I don't mind a company " Accepted Kanzaki.

" Same " I Said

" Right ! " Shibata said leaping in excitement. He looked amusing

for some reason.

The four of us headed towards the cafeteria, It was crowded, We went inline and secured our meal tickets, And we were fortunate enough to find some seats, I Ordered Pasta with meatballs since it looked good in the menu, However..

" Well this is a disappointment " I Voiced My Feelings

" They sure do lead you on Ayanokouji, You should know better than to trust a menu's picture " mused kanzaki

" Right... " He chuckled.

" Hamaguchi-kun, Why did you only order a salad, Are You on a diet ? " Asked Shibata.

" Oh no, It's just that i'm not hungry, I Could've got the free vegetables option, But it looks gross " Responded Hamaguchi

" Free Vegetables ?.... "

" Yeah You didn't notice it Kanzaki-kun ? I Even Saw some upperclassmen eating it " Kanzaki thought about something

" Seems like what Ichinose said was true " He turned towards me " Ayanokouji, What Ichinose said earlier was true right ? " I nodded

" I also noticed some free stuff on the store, I found it weird but if its true, Then It Would Make Sense " Said Shibata

However, Before anyone could say anything, Music played through the speakers along with a beautiful voice.

" At 5PM Today, We will be holding a student club affair in Gymnasium No 1, Students interested in joining a club please gather at Gymnasium 1, I Repeat .. " *Clubs huh ?*

" Clubs..... Oh that reminds me Shibata-kun, Didn't you say You'll be Applying for the soccer club ? "

" Yeah, I Hope i Get Accepted " Shibata voiced his worries at Hamaguchi's question

" Don't worry Shibata, If its you, I'm sure you'll pass with flying colors "

" Ayanokouji-kun, Thanks. Enough about me, Are you planning to join any clubs guys ? "

He Turned to Hamaguchi " No, Clubs aren't my thing, I Like to study in my free time instead "

Then he Turned to Kanzaki " Probably not, If i find something that interests me, I Suppose i'll give it a shot "

Then me " Same as Kanzaki "

He looked down with a sad expression " You guys are no fun "

" Don't worry, We'll be wiling to Accompany you to the Club Affair "

" Really ?!.. "

" Yeah "

" I Don't see why not "

" Alright its a deal then, We'll meet after class "

With that we finished our food and headed back to class.

.

The classes ended for today, I Gathered up with Shibata and the others as promised to head for the club affairs.

" Alright, Lets G- " A Voice Interrupted us

" Are you going to the club affairs ? "

I Turned Around to see Ichinose, Behind her were Amikura, Shiranami, Andou, And Minamikata

" Yeah, Are you going too ? " Said Hamaguchi

" Yep ! Lets go all Together " With That The Nine of us headed towards Gymnasium No 1 While Bantering in The Way.

" I Have to say, I could understand Shibata-kun Joining a club, But i didn't expect the three of you would be interesting " Said Ando

" I'm not planning on joining, But if i find something interests me I'll do " I nodded towards Kanzaki's statement

" I see, What about you Hamaguchi-kun ? "

" I'm just coming as a company that's all "

Not long after We Arrived at the Gymnasium, Surprisingly it was packed with fresh-men, Most likely for the bonus points Sensei talked about.

" There is much more people than i thought " Voiced Shiranami

" I wonder if this school has some famous clubs, I mean look at these equipments, It put Professionals to shame, They even Have Luxurious tea cups for tea ceremony " Said Amikura

" Ahaha, I wonder if the school Paid for such stuff " Said Ichinose

A girl with a average height and a familiar voice made her way to the stage, She had a purple hair tied into two buns, She Grabbed the microphone and spoke:

" Thank you all for waiting First Years, We will now begin the club affair, My name is Tachibana Akane, The student council Secretary and The club affair's organizer, Its nice to meet you all " After Tachibana Delivered The Remarks, Club Representatives Lined up on Stage, And Proceeded into Explaining their function.

The was various amount of clubs, From Athlete to Chess, There were even Fun-Activity Clubs like tea ceremony.

All the representatives said the same thing, Yet in another words, They Explained their clubs and goals, And Welcoming beginners.

As the seniors passed one after another. Only One person Remained, Everyone Seems Focused on him as he walked on the Stage. Stood infront of the microphone, As he calmly started observing the first Years.

He was around 170 cm Tall, With Black Hair and Wore Sharp Glasses, With a piercing, Calculating Gaze, He Observed the First Years *Hmm, I Wonder What club he's in.*

He didn't say a word as he stared at the first years, What is he trying to do exactly ? As i was thinking his eyes landed on mine, We stared at eachother for a good 20 seconds, I Could feel him appraising me With His Sharp Gaze. Eventually, He Shifted his eyes, Silencing the whole gym, People who were hurdling comments at him gagged and listened to the silence.

He then introduced himself " I'm the student Council President My Name is Horikita Manabu " I looked towards ichinose, To see her wearing a serious expression

" The student council is looking to recruit potential candidates among the first-years to replace the graduated third-years, We humbly ask that you refrain from getting involved any clubs if you're considering to apply " He spoke with a soft tone, But the tension was so thick that you could cut it with a knife. Nobody dared to talk or move, As they sat intensely Listening to him.

" Furthermore, We in the student council do not wish to appoint anyone who possess a naive outlook, Not only such a person would be rejected, They will sully the sanctity of the school, It is the student council's duty to enforce and amend the rules. We greatly welcome those who understand this, That's all " He didn't even pause during his eloquent speech. He Immediately got off stage and walked out of the gym. No one could've uttered a word even after he left, We all stared at the door he left from moments ago.

" Thank you all for coming, The club affair has ended, We will now open the reception area for whose interested, The registrations are open until the end of April " Thanks to Tachibana, The atmosphere dissipated and went back to normal.

" Alright, I'll go sign up now, I will be right back " Shibata said as he ran towards the reception desks

The Silence was still on effect on our group, Until i decided to break it

" The President is really something huh ? "

" Yeah, Are you okay Honami-chan ? It seems like it would be tough for you to join " Said Shiranami

" I was confident since i was the student council president back on junior high... But now im not so sure " Ichinose said with a sad tone.

" If its Honami-chan, I'm sure she would be accepted, I have no doubts ! " Cheered the girls.

I approached Kanzaki, Curious about his decision " So have you decided on a club ? "

" No, Not Yet, I think i would Stay 'Club-less' "

" I See "

" Oh Ayanokouji ? Are you joining a club ? " I Turned around to see Sudou along with 2 other guys

" Hey Sudou, No i just came to check, What about you ? "

" I'm planning on joining the basketball club, I've been playing it since when i was on primary school " Said Sudou, Flexing his biceps

" I see, Good Luck Then "

" Hey Ken, Do you know This guy ? " Said one of Sudou's friends, He was short compared to the other.

" Yeah, He helped me out in the Store Yesterday, I Owe him one " Responded Sudou, Scratching his nose with his index finger.

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka Class B " I Raised My hand For them

" Ike Kanji Class D, Nice meeting ya " The short guy named Ike shook my hand

" I'm The one and only Yamauchi Haruki of Class D, If you need any love advice i'm your man " The guy named Yamauchi Shook my hand, THE LEGENDARY YAMAUCHI SHOOK MY HAND OMG I'M GONNA DIE

" I'll keep that in mind Yamauchi, It was nice meeting both of you " I bowed a little

By that time Shibata returned with a quite the expression on his face.

" How did it go ? " asked Hamaguchi

" It went amazingly well, Since it's expected to have alot of members, They will hold a practice match to pick the superior players " Said Shibata , " I'm sure i would get chosen "

" If it's you Shibata-kun, I'm sure you'll do just Fine " Said Ichinose, She Then Turned Towards me " Are you not joining any clubs Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I haven't found anything that interested me "

" I see "

" Are you planning on joining the student council ? "

" Yeah, I'll do my best ! " Ichinose said cheerfully

" If you say so, Then I Believe you "

" Hehe~ "

After that, We went and spent the rest of the day at a cafe in Keyaki mall, Chatting about The Club Affairs and more trivial things. We bid farewell on the lobby, And i Went straight to my room and spent the rest of the afternoon there.

Whew, This Chapter was long, Around 3.1k Words, Im quite satisfied with it. If you find any typos i'd appreciate if you warn me about them. Adieu8

Arc 1 Chap 4.5 : The Calm Before The Storm

A Few days passed and my life has been so far so good. My classmates are behaving themselves while there is some slips here, But overall a great behavior.

Ichinose did a great job as the Class Representative. Objectively speaking, We Wouldn't lose that many points thanks to her.

I've been also hanging out with Hiyori a.k.a My bookbuddy, We would recommend each other books, And have sessions of silence readings, Hiyori was so passionate about books, So hanging with her was never boring.

Today we were supposed to have swimming class after lunch. However, Our P.E teacher won't be there, Instead would be Hoshinomiya-sensei, She claimed that he is home sick and announced that she would be taking his place. I Don't know what she did but that was suspicious.

" Queen to A8, Checkmate "

" I Lost, Again "

" Haha, Good Game Kanzaki-kun, You were better this time, But Ayanokouji-kun is just unbeatable "

" You're right Ichinose, This would make it 8 Losses In arrow, Under two minute. Honestly, What else are you hiding Ayanokouji ? "

During lunch, I have been playing chess against some of my friends for fun, Needless to say I Won every single match, They were all Definitely not bad at all.

" You've putted a better fight this time Kanzaki, I've been playing chess since when i was a child and in my free time too, You've made The lowest amount of blunders out of them " I said honestly

" Yeah yeah, Better fight my ass this game didn't even reach 15 moves ! " Said Kanzaki.

" My game didn't reach 10 moves " Muttered Amikura

" Don't worry guys, With time and practice, You could reach me or even surpass me " I said trying to cheer everyone, In response, Everyone growled.

The bell rang signaling the end of the lunch period, And with that everyone headed towards the pool.

We entered the changing room, I Went to one of the lockers and grabbed a swimwear, It was a school issued one, With a good quality too, It won't be painful to move around with while its wet, With almost no hindrance to your movements too.

I looked around to see the boys changing, Shibata next to me, With no doubt had the best body, Looking at it gives me the idea of how hard he practiced and played soccer, Kanzaki wasn't bad either, But Shibata was better overall.

I took off my shirt followed up with my pants, Standing semi-naked as i wore the swim shorts. Shibata done changing, Glanced around the room, Upon seeing me, Or to be more specific my body. A big Shocked Scream escaped his mouth. Everyone upon hearing his scream turned to shibata. Following his line of sight, They Cried of shock too.

" Ayanokouji, WHAT THE HELL ? " Yelled Shibata

" That is a very muscular body you get there Ayanokouji-kun, Do you exercise ? " Asked Hamaguchi.

" I guess i do exercise abit " I Shrugged

" Ayanokouji, Exercising abit wouldn't get you with that. " Marked Kanzaki

" I did exercise abit, Along with practicing tea ceremony, Guess that helped too "

With that everyone lost interest, And left the room together.

" Woah, It's so big "

Everyone stared in an awe at the 50-meter pool ahead of us. The water was clear and beautiful. And We wouldn't have to worry about the weather due to it being indoors, In other words, The Perfect Environment.

" Woah, Look at that, Its even bigger than the city pool " The voice was behind us, We turned around to see The girls emerge from the changing room in their school issued swimsuit.

Instantly, My Attention... No, Every Boy's attention Was taken by one Person, She emerged from the room looking as bright as ever, With her Strawberry hair floating in the air as she stood somehow. The person in question was none other than The Ichinose Honami.

Ichinose in her school issued swimwear, Looked like a godsent, She was Alot bigger Than i anticipated, Basically She looked Stunning.

I Tried not to look by averting my eyes, But that scene was still on my head, Analyzing every inch of her voluptuous figure, I tried to Drop that image with every single brain cell, But I Failed, Miserably. *Why didn't the white room teach me how to deal with these types of situations ?*

The boys did the same, Averting their eyes to not be labelled as

'that pervert'

" ?!! "

Suddenly, I Tensed up, As if i was on a radar for everyone to see.

I turned around to see All the girls, Including Ichinose, Staring intensely at me, Or to be more precise again, My body.

Not Before long, Ichinose Walked Close as she spoke " Say Ayanokouji-kun, Do you exercise ? " She stood right infront of me, Looking at me like i'm a criminal getting interrogated, Her monstrous Breasts almost touching my chest, Doing so made me more conscious of her.

" I Do Exercise in the mornings abit " I Shrugged

" But you are very well-built Ayanokouji-kun, You're even more built than Shibata-kun who is in the soccer club, Some may even say that you have the best Body in the whole grade "

" Good genes i guess ? "

" I Find that hard to believe, Even if that's the case, You've been practicing to keep that up for long time now " She Then Proceeds to touch my chest, And Started Poking me Everywhere " Your Forearms, Back Muscles, Abdominal muscles, Psoas Major Muscles are all Well Developed and maintained too, You're pretty strong Ayanokouji-kun "

Honestly, What's up with her ? If a boy did the same to the girls, They would Definitely Get Slapped, Called a Pervert, And Lives hell.

" Hoh~ What are you doing Honami-chan " Amikura Said with a huge grin plastered in her face.

Ichinose seems to realize what she did, Backed away, A Huge Blush on her Face " Umm- "

" What were you doing touching Ayanokouji-kun Like that, Are you perhaps Dating " Ichinose got flustered at Amikura's Words, And made her even more red. *Cute*

" Eeh ?! N-No Mako-chan, I-It's not like tha- "

" Then what would it be Honami-chan ? You were touching Ayanokouji-kun all over the place making him clearly uncomfortable, He didn't show it on his face but it was clear as day, You Must be Dating " Amikura showed no signs of backing down, Teasing Ichinose relentlessly, Ichinose, Couldn't take it anymore, Buried her face in her hands, This made Amikura more amused " *Ecchinose* "

" M-Mako-chan ! Don't C-Call me that ! It's Embarras- "

" Ara~ What do we have here ? " Hoshinomiya-sensei, Appeared Behind The girls, She wore a Gym Uniform with a cap while carrying a swimming plank.

" Oh Hoshinomiya-sensei, Haven't you heard ? It appears that Honami-chan is dating Ayanokouji-kun without telling us, She is so

sneaky and naughty~ " Amikura spoke in a lewd tone.

" Ara~ My dear Adorable Ichinose Went and picked for herself a Handsome Boyfriend, It's Going to get Lonely "

" N-No ! We Aren't Datin- "

" Ah You Don't have to be Embarrassed About it My Dear Ichinose, If you need any advice Come to me ! Ah to be Young again~ " Hoshinomiya-sensei Proceeds to wipe an invisible tear, Before looking up Cheerfully Again " Alright Everyone, Enough of that, As i Told you before, Your P.E Teacher is Sick, So I'll be Taking care of you Today ! " As i Suspected, She did something.

" There is no Absences ! I Honestly Didn't Expect this but its no Problems, We'll Arrange We'll Arrange.. " Hoshinomiya-sensei Nodded to herself, As being Convinced By her own idea " Alright Anyone Who Can't Swim ? "

A Few people Raised their Hands, They Can't swim but they didn't want to ditch Due to it possibly affection our points. A Wise Choice.

" There are a few people, But Fear not ! Since i'm your Teacher you'll be able to swim in no time ! Swimming would definitely come in handy later in life, Definitely " Hoshinomiya-sensei nodded to her self again, *Swimming would come in handy ? Interesting* " Alright, Time for Warm up ! Swim for me~ "

We were asked to swim for 50-meters, Students who couldn't swim were allowed to touch the bottom of the pool. The water must have been temperature-controlled since i didn't get any chills, My Body adjusted right away. I Swam Lightly.

After Finishing my 50-meters I waited for everyone to finish, I Gazed towards a guard tower where Hoshinomiya-sensei was, The Person in question was eyeing the boys with a huge grin on her face. It was spooky, But I Ignored it.

" Right, Seems like everyone can swim, For the most part " Hoshinomiya-sensei Continued " Then we are going to hold a competition ! "

" A Competition ? " muttered someone.

" Yes a Competition against eachother, Separated By Gender, 50-meter Freestyle, There is a special reward for the first-placed winner, 10.000 points. The student who gets in last place however, Would have to take supplementary classes, Good Luck~ " We were split into two groups of ten, I Was in The second group with Hamaguchi, While Kanzaki and Shibata were on the first group, That would preform first. I Went to the Side where The Boys Were sitting, Watching as the Girls lined up for the race. 10.000 points huh ? *I Guess i wouldn't mind extra points*

" The school is very generous aren't they ? " Said Kanzaki, As he

came and sat on my left

" Yeah, I'd never imagined they would offer up points as a prize, Maybe its their own way to light a fire under students ? " I Respond

" Probably "

The First Group of girls lined up, Ichinose Went in the Second Lane, As she took a pose, In her group were Amikura and Andou.

" Oh, Ayanokouji-kun and Kanzaki-kun ! " Shibata Walked and sat on my Right, Kanzaki and I Waved our hands at him before he asked " So who do you think would win ? My guess is Ichinose "

" If i have to guess, I'm gonna say its Andou " Said Kanzaki, Then Shibata looked at my direction

" Same " I Said

The Whistle blew and all the girls dove in the water, Ichinose took the lead, But slowly overtaken by Andou, To be Honest, Ichinose is faster than i thought. *Totally not because her breasts would get in the way.*

" First Place: Andou Sayo 28.46 seconds, Second place: Ichinose Honami with 30.16 seconds, Third place: Amikura Mako with 31.86 seconds, Not bad Everyone~ " Hoshinomiya-sensei wrote down the times of everyone, While the second group of girls went to stage, They consisted of Shiranami, Minamikata and others.

The Race Ended with Minamikata Taking first place, But not in the girls, Andou Emerged Victorious On the Girls

" Alright Kanzaki-kun, Lets get going, See you later Ayanokouji-kun ! " Shibata Waved as he went to the stage with Kanzaki. I was Sitting Alone, Until i got approached by Ichinose.

" Heyo~ Ayanokouji-kun "

" Hey Ichinose, You were pretty fast down there, I'm Impressed " I Said Honestly

" Haha, But i still lost unfortunately " She said looking down

" You don't have to be sad about that, You got the second best time Between the girls, That's Impressive " She Looked bright again upon hearing me

The Whistle Blew and everyone Dove in. Shibata took the lead as expected, Kanzaki was right on his tail but was slowly getting pushed down as Shibata's speed Increased.

" First Place: Shibata sou with 25.96 seconds, Second Place: Kanzaki Ryuuji with 27.06 seconds, Third Place Beppu Ryouta with 28.18 seconds, Well done Shibata-kun, Kanzaki-kun " Complimented Hoshinomiya-sensei.

" Right, It seems like you are next " Ichinose turned towards me " Are you confident that you'll win ? "

" You'll see " I Started Walking towards the lanes

" Good Luck Ayanokouji-kun ! I'll be cheering for you " Said

Ichinose as i walked towards the Seventh Lane, I Could see Hoshinomiya-sensei Staring at me from the end of the pool Clearly Focusing on me. *Sigh*

" Good luck, Ayanokouji-kun, Go easy on us " Said Hamaguchi Next to me, I Could hear the girls cheering on from the Side of the pools. It appears that it's working quite well, As i feel Excitement Filling me.

The Whistle Blew And we dove in the water, I Instantly Took the lead and swam putting alittle force on my hands, Reaching Halfway, i Doubled My speed Leaving everyone behind, I Could hear some shouting But I Ignored it, As i swam even Faster.

I Reached the end And looked at Hoshinomiya-sensei, Who stared at me, Then At the Watch, Then at me Again. " R-Right, Ayanokouji-kun Got First Place with 22.46 Seconds, Hey My dear Ichinose, You don't mind if i take him for my self right ? " Said with a sarcastic Tone

I Pulled myself out of the pool, And I Got Instantly Surrounded By People, Not Girls Only, But also Boys

" Woah, Ayanokouji-kun You're so cool "

" Ayanokouji-kun you were so fast, Like a Flying fish ! "

" Have my kids, Ayanokouji-kun ! "

The Crowd Kept Getting Closer And Closer as they praised me, That last one was a bit too much but i ignored it, I Got A bit Nervous and looked at Ichinose Requesting Backup. Ichinose Understood my Plea of help putted her self at the Center of the Group.

" Alright Everyone, You're making Ayanokouji-kun Clearly uncomfortable by surrounding him " Everyone Seemed to Realize that, And Backed Away. *I Need to thank Ichinose For this Later*

" I Know Right ! But that was Crazy Fast " Exclaimed Shibata

" I Knew you were going to be fast Ayanokouji, But I Didn't expect That " Said Kanzaki

" You were so fast Ayanokouji-kun, It's a shame that i didn't see it from a better point of view, Dominating Everyone in the race " Said Hamaguchi

" You guys were pretty fast too, You got decent Times your selves " I Said

" Ha, Don't pity us like that Ayanokouji-kun, You were amazing, You don't have to be humble about it, Its Deserved " Said Shibata

With that swimming class ended. I Went and got changed, I Checked my phone to see 2 Notifications, One was The point transaction from Hoshinomiya-Sensei. And the second from Ichinose with the time and place to meet. We were planning to hang out in Keyaki Mall with Kushida and her friends, I Kinda got dragged

along by Amikura for some reason, But I Had Accepted at the End.

I Arrived at the Designated Meeting place to find Ichinose Sitting at a bench alone. I Checked my phone to see There was 15 minutes Before The Designated time, *Well someone is early.*

I Went To Approach her but before i could do, Someone appeared to be an Upperclassman went and sat beside her, He Had his Legs Crossed While Turned towards her. Ichinose surprised by his Actions went along and spoke with him. They spoke for a good minute, Before he Reached his Left Hand and grabbed her by the Chin. Ichinose Tried to push him away but he grabbed her arms with his free hand, Itching closer and closer to her Face.

I Stopped the recording in my phone, And Went Close To The Bench and Spoke " What's Going on here ? " Taking a close look into the Upperclassman, He Looked Quite Muscular, Above Average.

" Oh ? This isn't Your Business, Get lost kid " He Said

" Well, She happens to be my Girlfriend, So it is my business. I Recommend you let go " I Threatened

" A-Ayanokouji-...kun, H-Help "

" Hoh ? You Already have a Boyfriend ? And it's this guy ? Beauty you clearly Don't Have a Good Taste in men, I'm Handsome And strong, I'll Show you that I'm better than this Wimpy Kouhai " He Said Letting Go of Ichinose, He Stood up and Faced me With a big Smug on his face " Get Ready, Kouhai " He Said while Taking a Fighting Stance. I Looked Around to see a Security Camera. Good so Security Would be there soon.

Instantly, He Closed The Distance Between us And Threw a Punch Aimed at my Abdominal, I Dodged it Grabbing His Wrist with my Left Hand, And with my Right on his Collar. I pulled him aside Tripping His Legs And Slamming him Hard on the Ground.

" Duaa-aah ! "

He Let a Huge, Pained Scream. He Clearly was a capable fighter but He Lacked Technique. *And he is against me*

" Argh. You Bastard ! Let go of me " He Yelled

" No, I Don't Feel Like it, Security Would be here Soon " I Said

" Tsk ! " He Tried To Free Himself, But The Pain in his back made it Futile, And my grip is just that strong. I Turned around to look at Ichinose Who was Trembling abit on the Bench

" What's Going on here ? " I Turned Around to see Not the Cops, But a tall Fair-skinned Blonde Upperclassman, He Was Well built too, More so than this guy.

" A... Nagumo-senpai ! T-This Guy Assaulted me " Said Ichinose

" Don't Worry Honami, I'll Take Care of it " He Then Walked Close

to me while i was Restraining the guy. And Kicked me on my side, It was Quite Painful, I Fell On the Ground Letting go of the Upperclassman.

" N-NO ! Nagumo-Senpai, That's Not him, Ayanokouji-kun Was The One Who Saved me ! " Yelled Ichinose

" Oh ? My bad then " He went And Knocked the Other Upperclassman Rendering him Unconscious, He Then Went Close to me And Offered me a Hand " Here, This is the least i could do, My Bad " He Said a smile.

I Took His Hand And Stood up " Don't Worry About it, I Understand that you misunderstood the situation "

" No, How could i Forgive my self for hitting an innocent Classmate of my friend ? Oh You don't know me yet, I'm Nagumo Miyabe from Class 2-A, And the Student Council Vice President " *So He is the vice president, It explains why he is close with Ichinose, And him Knowing that I'm her Classmate, But why did he kick me then ?*

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka Class 1-B, Pleasure meeting you Nagumo-senpai "

" Pleasure is all mine Ayanokouji, And now if you'll excuse me, I'll Deal with this Situation " He Said as a police Officer walked towards us, He took Ichinose and My Testimony along with the video i recorded.

" Alright See you later Honami , Ayanokouji " Said Nagumo As he walked with the police Officer.

" Ichinose Are you okay ? " I Said as i sat beside Her on her Bench.

" Yes I'm alright, Thanks to you Ayanokouji-kun, But you got hurt instead ! " She said, Tears forming in her eyes.

" You Don't have to worry about me, You were the one who got assaulted I'm Fine"

" But You Fought that Upperclassman, Along with getting a hard kick on your weak spot from Nagumo-senpai, Are you sure you're Alright ? " She said with a worried Expression

" That kick was painful, But the pain is almost gone now " I Shrugged " So That Nagumo guy, Can you tell me about him ? " I Said

" Yes, He is the student council vice president, And he helped me alot by allowing me to join " She Said

" By allowing you to join, You mean you got rejected from president Horikita ? " Ichinose Nodded

" That wasn't a finalized Decision, he is still reviewing my application form, But Nagumo-senpai approached me and told me that i'm going to get rejected because The President isn't going to accept people below Class A, And he Promised me that he'll let me

join when he becomes the president " Said Ichinose

" Seems like this school is really a hierarchy after all " I Said, Followed up by a nod from Ichinose.

Then Kushida and Her friends Arrived with our group of Class B Students, And we went Shopping In Keyaki Mall, With Kushida was with a boy Named Hirata Yousuke along with a girl Clinging into his arm named Karuizawa Kei, Along with Other Girls Matsushita, Satou, Inogashira And Mori. It Surprised me how much They Spent Their points without a care in the world, Namely Karuizawa Spent a Total of 32.000 Points Just For Clothes, I Picked up some clothes aswell with the Help of Matsushita, She had a good Taste in Fashion if i may be honest, We spent the rest of the time in Pallet Cafe Before Heading Back towards the dorms. We Bid farewell and headed to our rooms. It Was Fun.

I Pondered Over what happened at that Incident, Nagumo Huh ? I Should be careful around him, It seems that i did something to anger him. Could it be a setup for him to come and rescue Ichinose so he could get closer to her ? It Seems likely, Considering what he told Ichinose About, I Might've made an Enemy Out of someone undesirable.

With Those Thoughts in My Head I Fell A Sleep.

I Woke up, and Checked The Clock, It Was 4:30 AM, Along with..

" It's May 1st "

This Chapter Was Quite Fun to write, Introducing Nagumo Early To get more Breathing room in the Future, And i think That Incident is something Nagumo could plot, AND NOW ITS MAY FIRST, You know What that means right ?

I Skipped the Short Quiz Test Due to My lack of Creativity of how to implement it, But it was Before the swimming class and it happened exactly like canon, Kiyo Getting suspicious of the 3 hard questions. The only difference is that when he observed the students, Everyone was having an easy time. Bye Bye

Arc 1 Chap 5 : The Revelation

May 1st

The bell rang signaling the start of the day. Hoshinomiya-sensei waltzed into the room with her usual expression, She was carrying a rolled poster as she stood in the teachers podium.

She then looked at every single one of us, Who we were having a serious expressions, The Atmosphere was tense.

" Ara~ What's with the long faces Students of Class B ? " Most of us looked up to her with anticipation, Hoshinomiya-sensei's expression softened " Or should i say Students Of Class A ? "

" Students of Class A ? Can you elaborate Sensei ? " Asked Shibata

" Of course " She then Proceeds to spread the the poster on the Black board " These are the Class points for the your first month of the school "

Class A 940 C.P

Class B 980 C.P

Class C 490 C.P

Class D 0 C.P

" You managed to surpass Class A in the amount of Class Points, So You've been Promoted To Class A, On the other hand, Class A Has been Demoted To Class B, You can Proudly Call your selves Class A Students, You can't imagine how much you've made Sensei Happy " She said with Excitement and wiping an invisible tear from her eyes, But the students weren't happy, They were confused upon Sensei's Words.

" Hmm Sensei ? Class points ? Promotion to Class A ? Can you please explain " The voice Came from Ichinose. That made Hoshinomiya Snap out from her Fantasy.

" Oh dear me~ Of course you would be Confused, I'm sorry Teehee~ " She cutely knocked her head while standing in a ridiculous stand

" Alright everyone listen, There are two types of points, The one that is for private use and you buy anything with, In Grocery Store, Cafeteria you name them . . . Are Called Private points, The ones that are on these posters who who determines not only your class standing, But the allowance awarded to you each month are Class Points, 1 Class points Equal 100 points, Any questions ? "

That explains it, I Calculated the points i received to find 2,000

Points missing, And the weird change in the nameplate in our class, It was quite a hassle but eventually, The teachers Came and confirmed that this was our class and we would get an explanation.

The serious expressions changed into one of joy. Celebrating their Advancement into a higher class. Ichinose proceeds to ask another question " So Sensei ? Can you tell us how we lost 20 Class points ? "

" Ofcourse, Your behavior in class and outside of class has been almost flawless, But there were some cases of talking in class and late arrivals that costed you Classpoints, Apart from this i'm not allowed to disclose the methods we use to evaluate you "

" Is there anyway to gain more Classpoints ? " This time around It was Kanzaki who spoke, Hoshinomiya appeared to be waiting for this question turned to face him.

" Well Ofcourse, And you're Next Opportunity would be your midterms coming in three weeks " She then Posted another rolled poster, Containing the names of everyone along with a number " These are the results of our little quiz test you took the other day "

I took a quick scan over the poster, There were multiple people tied in the score of 85 one of which was Ichinose. Kanzaki and hamaguchi Were able to solve one of the hard questions and scored 90 tied for the best score each. I in the other hand Scored 80 slightly above average. The lowest score was 70.

" I'm glad that no one failed ! No one would be expelled if this was a real test ! " With that all the cheers and celebrations stopped at *that word*. Everyone froze in fear.

" E-Expelled ? " " You're joking right Sensei ? "

" Nope, If you fail in any subject on your midterms or finals, You would be Expelled, But you don't have to worry, You all did a Magnificent job " She said with a Thumbs-up which didn't help in anyway.

It is true that everyone did great. However, That was a very easy Quiz, One for Elementary and middle school, Which was exactly what my Classmates realized. Hoshinomiya stood in the podium waiting for questions that would never come as everyone gagged.

However, I raised my hand " Hoshinomiya-sensei, I Have a Question.. "

" Yes Kiyotaka-kun " I Ignored the part where she called me with my first name.

" What's the point of all of this ? I Mean Classpoints and ranking ? Is there any special rewards for being in Class A ? " If i could guess, It would be most definitely the so called '100% employment rate' But i decided to ask anyway

" Yes you are correct Ayanokouji-kun, Did you guys hear of the

100% employment rate and college admissions ? Well, They are only Available if you graduate from Class A, Any other class below you Wouldn't receive anything " The class erupted into chaos, Their easy journey to their dream college or workplace was shattered. Ichinose successfully calmed everyone down, Watching her made me admire her, She really is amazing.

" So all Classes except Class A are doomed ? "

" Doesn't that make the lower classes Target us ? " Shibata and Kanzaki Respectively asked their questions.

" Yes, Since you now became Class A, You'll be in the Crosshairs of the lower Three Classes, Keep in mind that the Difference between you and the new Class B are only 40 Class Points, So be careful~ "

With that Hoshinomiya-sensei made her way to the door, Giving us a cute bye-bye before leaving. The moment the door was closed. Ichinose stood making her way to the teacher podium and clapped, Gathering everyone's attention.

" Everyone, I Would like to thank you for behaving yourselves in the past month, And Special thanks to Ayanokouji-kun for figuring everything and warning me " Everyone Turned around and looked at me in Admiration and gratitude and praised me, Ichinose Didn't have to do this, But her Nature wouldn't allow her to take the credits for someone else's work. I guess getting praised between now and then isn't bad.

Ichinose looked towards me and nodded before continuing her speech " You all did Great on the recent quiz. However, We aren't in the clear yet, I suggest that we hold study groups with a tutor on each group so we could completely avoid expulsion and increase our average at the same time " Her Suggestion received confirmation from our classmates " We could discuss the groups in the lunch break and finalize them in the class's groupchat, I Would also ask Hoshinomiya-Sensei for our entrance examination papers so we could improve using them, If no one has objections then that's all " Spoken like a true leader. She went down from the teacher podium as the bell rang.

" Good Job Ichinose " I Said with a thumbs up, Ichinose blushed alittle while responding with a cute smile.

.

.

.

Classes Ended for the day, Kanzaki approached Ichinose and suggested something rather unexpected

" Hey Ichinose "

" Oh hey Kanzaki-kun, What's up ? "

" I've been thinking about this for a while, Sensei said that we could buy anything using private points right ? I wonder if we can get enough points to nullify an expulsion ? " I didn't expect Kanzaki to be sharp enough to come up with something like that. Impressive.

" Thinking about it, It could actually work ! Great job figuring it out Kanzaki-kun ! Do you want to check it out with Hoshinomiya-sensei now ? "

" Sure "

However, Before they could leave, A robotic voice came from the speakers " Ichinose Honami Of Class A, Please come to the Student Council Room "

Honami POV

The messages played in the speakers, Summoning me to the student council room. My heart started racing, This could be it, The Moment of truth.

" Em, Good luck Honami-chan " Chihiro-chan Said

" Go Get em Honami-chan We're cheering for you " Cheered Mako-chan, Touching her biceps and standing in a ridiculous pose

" We're cheering for you Honami-chan " Said Kozue-chan.

Seeing them supporting me and being lively like this eased me. After all i have great classmates and great people watching my back, I couldn't ask for more.

" Seems like you have important business with the student council, We'll check that later " Said Kanzaki

" Yeah, Sorry Kanzaki-kun " I Apologized, He nodded and wished me the best of lucks.

As i was about to leave, I Glanced towards Ayanokouji-kun, Who gave me a thumbs up along with a soft and gentle " Good luck Ichinose "

I quickly left the room Headed towards the student council, I Could feel my cheeks getting hotter.

Ayanokouji-kun has been on my mind alot more than usual, Since the incident from yesterday... No, It got more frequent from that incident, But i couldn't tell when exactly I've been thinking about him.

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, He is my seatmate, He is handsome and very smart, His recent score on the quiz doesn't really show it, But he is very cunning and observant and was able to figure out the S-System since the first day. He is very strong too as he was able to handle down a muscular upperclassman with ease, He looked so cool and he is very fast at swimming too.

He was so hot with his muscular body dripping wet *Ah no why am i thinking about that ? Bad Honami Bad, But i have to admit he*

is hot but ... No no no stop.

Before i realized it, I was infront of the student council room, I Knocked on it, The door opened by a sweet girl who had a purple hair tied into two buns, It was the secretary Tachibana-senpai

" Come in "

" Pardon the intrusion " I Walked in to see the President Horikita-senpai sitting at the top of the U Shaped Table with a serious expression. Sitting on his right is Nagumo-senpai who had a smile the entire time. On the president's left was the Treasurer Kiriya-senpai who nodded upon seeing me.

Tachibana-senpai gestured me to sit next to a bald person who looked dedicated. I sat next to him and waited, Then Tachibana who was standing close to the door spoke

" Ichinose Honami From Class 1-A and Katsuragi Kohei From Class 1-B. Thank you for being here "

Then Horikita-senpai got two papers who appeared to be our application forms, I Instantly became more nervous.

" So Ichinose and Katsuragi Right ? " I Nodded " I Have Reviewed your applications. Unfortunately, Both of you are rejected " *Well i expected that much.*

" May we know the reason we got Rejected ? For future reference " Said Katsuragi

" Both of you aren't qualified to join the student council, You're dismissed "

" I see ... "

We both stood up leaving the office. However, I Got called out " You stay Ichinose, I have something to talk with you about " Called Horikita-senpai, I Instantly perked up, Sensing an opportunity to change his mind, Went back and sat on my seat, Katsuragi-kun glaring at me before exiting the room

" First of all allow me to congratulate you on reaching Class A on the very first month of your first-year, You Managed to convince your classmates to not fall on the trap, Not many achieved such a fate so Well done " He said with his usual tone

" Umm .. Thank you President, But it wasn't me who figured it out " I Said honestly

" I Know, And it was Ayanokouji Kiyotaka who did right ? "

" Eh-? " I yelled out of shock, *How did he know ?* , " Umm, President ? How did you know ? "

" Well, He is a very interesting kouhai " At his statement everyone in the room looked at him in shock.

" What President ? " " A Kouhai Impressed President Horikita ? " " Taking an Interest in someone is very rare from you Horikita-senpai "

" Anyway, The other reason i called you here is to inform you that the culprit of the assault attempt has been punished properly, We apologize for the inconvenience and for what happened " Said the president

" Oh ? No it's not your fault president, Anything else ? " I Asked trying to find any hope of changing his mind

" No, That's all. You're dismissed " Said The President shattering any hope of joining the student council. I stood up and went to the door and gave the president one last look, He had the same expression as always

" Have a nice evening " I Said before exiting the room.

I walked down the hallway towards the entrance. Lost on my own fantasy, I failed to join the student council and failed my classmates. I don't know how i'm gonna tell them.

I walked completely unaware of my surrounding, Until he called " Ichinose "

I turned around to see a familiar brown haired boy with a golden eyes it was ..

" Ayanokouji-kun ? "

Kiyo POV

The robotic message dumped it's content. Ichinose looking clearly nervous as she stared back at the speakers. Her friends namely Amikura, Shiranami and Minamikata cheered her on, It made her nervousness lighter as she regained some of her aura.

Ichinose was about to leave but gazed at me. She needed alittle push before confronting her worries, So i gave her a thumbs up, While saying in my softest tone possible " Good Luck Ichinose "

I expected her to give me her usual smile. However, She quickly ran out of the room, I noticed her Blush before she disappeared behind the wall. " Seems like i overdid it. *Sigh* "

" Hoho~ Ayanokouji-kun , I never knew you can so smooth " Here it was, The Amikura Omen, Tried to tease me, But i wasn't someone to budge easily.

" I Just tried to cheer her on, It's not a big deal " I Shrugged

" But you went all the way to soften your tone for her sake, The Ayanokouji Kiyotaka broke his infamous monotone voice, That's a newspaper Title for ya " Teased Amikura, She kept trying to tease me relentlessly, But she didn't succeed, Nevertheless she appeared to have fun.

" Ayanokouji-kun, Can you say it again ? "

" Yes. One, more, time ! "

Amikura found some backup, and joined for a three way attack with the support of Andou and Shiranami.

They kept teasing me, Eventually they gave up, Breaking into a

sweat.

" Damn, I thought we would get you for sure " Grumbled Andou

" That poker face of yours is harder to break than i anticipated, Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun, We will break it some day " Said Amikura

" Feel free to try " I Said with my usual monotone voice. And with that i made my way towards the entrance.

On my way there, I saw Ichinose looking down with a sad expression as she walked completely unaware of her surroundings. *So that happened huh ?*

I Decided to call her to find what happened " Ichinose "

She Turned and looked at me with teary eyes, My heart started racing by the sight of her. And she called out " Ayanokouji-kun ? ... "

" So, That happened ? " I Said, She Responded with a nod " Do you want to walk to the dorms together ? " She nodded in response

We walked towards the dorms in an uncomfortable silence, Ichinose was usually the one who carry the conversation while i respond or talk back sometimes, But she was looking down the entire time. I decided to break the silence

" Did he say the reason of the rejection ? " I Said

" He said that I Wasn't qualified to be in the council " She said looking down even more

That was a complete lie. Ichinose is capable enough of being in the student council and she has the experience because she was the president in her middle school. I couldn't come up with any reason for rejecting her. The president didn't appear naive enough to not notice that she is a shining crystal, But rejecting her for that reason was nonsense. There should be another reason that is beyond my understanding.

" Can you tell me what happened ? " She Nodded and briefed me of what happened.

" So Nagumo lied huh ? " i muttered, Nagumo told Ichinose that the president Rejects anyone below Class A, Now that he rejected both a former and current Class A students. I Could discard completely reason of incompetence. However, Another theory formed in my head.

" Did you have any prior contact with Nagumo-senpai before or after you applied for the student council ? " Ichinose, Appeared surprised by my question

" Eh, Yeah, He was the one who took my application and did the interview, After the interview he told me that i would be rejected because The president doesn't accept students below Class A " Ichinose lied. She is trying to cover up something that she didn't

expect to be asked about, I glanced at her to see a Serious Expression along with ... Guilt ?. I decided to ask her about it.

" Are you hiding something Ichinose ? " Ichinose Tensed up from my question

" W-What are you talking about A-Ayanokouji-kun I D-Don't U-Underst- "

" I Don't think Nagumo would be careless enough to say something like that, On the First week of the school nevertheless " Then i turned to look at her, She looked back at me too, Her Blue eyes were missing her usual Brightness, As Gloominess Took over them " Is there something bothering you Ichinose ? " I Said with a soft tone

She Quickly Shifted her gaze looking away while saying in a low voice " Y-Yes .. " From her voice, I Could feel sadness and guilt, Whatever was Burdening her wasn't something trivial.

" Do you wanna talk about it ? " She nodded " If you want you we can go to my room, I have some drinks too "

With that, We entered the lobby and went straight for my room, I Opened the door for her and she Entered " You can sit on the bed, The Ground may be cold and i still don't have Carpet, Or you can take the Chair " She Went and sat on the bed, Still looking Down I Went to the kitchen and started boiling water " Do you want a drink ? I Have Coffee, Tea and Cocoa "

" I-I'll Have C-Cocoa ... "

After few minutes, I Poured the hot water into two Cups of Cocoa, I Handed one to Ichinose who was still looking down, I Went and sat on the ground waiting for her to start

A Few Minutes passed and she was still looking at the ground, Just as i was about to take a sip from my Drink She Spoke

" We lost our father due to an accident just when i was 10. Because of that, My mother had to work extra hard to afford us the luxury of our childhood, She was clearly Overworking her self coming back late at the night and waking up early on the morning, When we would ask for her health she would always say that she is fine to remove any worries we have, But Clearly She was Struggling and i failed to do anything about it " She took a long sigh before continuing " One day, My little sister's Birthday was coming up, My mother promised to buy her a Bracelet that was very expensive, 10.000 yen. However, she fell sick and was transported to the hospital, My sister was depressed, As she locked her self in her room. Day after day, She only leaves to eat lunch and dinner, We Tried to talk to her but it didn't work. Until her birthday came " I Could already guess what's going to happen.

" I Went to the store where the bracelet was, And i ... I ... I STOLE

IT ! " There it is, Ichinose's biggest secret, She Shoplifted for the sake of her sister, To bring happiness upon her depressed house again, First her father, Then her mother, and Lastly Her sister, Her house was clearly breaking apart and Ichinose did her best to keep her family together.

I Couldn't Pretend to understand, I Never knew mother's love or Parent's blessing. I Was always alone, Isolated, And getting experimented on, I was treated like nothing, A Number. My humanity got stripped away, I Became a monster, One that couldn't feel love or love someone.

However. Ichinose Clearly loved her family and enjoyed her time with them, She was ready to do the impossible to not break away her home. That. Was the only thing i understood.

" The look on her face when i gave her the bracelet was priceless, She was smiling again, Happy Again. Seeing her made my heart itch, I Felt guilty for what I've done, But i sealed it with everything i have, If it was for the sake of my sister then it was all worth it. That's What i kept telling my self " She Continued " On the next day, We went and visited our mother on the hospital, She instantly noticed the bracelet and looked at me for questions. The Daughter can never gets past things through her mother. She looked furious upon realizing what i did, She Grabbed the Bracelet and me and went to the store forcing her self to fix what i did. She Returned the item and forced me to apologize, The Store clerk Forgave me. But i didn't, I Never forgave my self for what i did, I Locked my self on my room, Day in and day out, Only leaving for lunch and dinners. My classmates visited my house, But i never left. I Mean, How can a criminal like me ever face people again ? " She said, Tears forming in her eyes.

I Sat there in silence listening to her. Listening is the only thing i could do.

With that, My Theory Was complete, And i could see the bigger picture of the current Situation, And i came up with measures. However, Ichinose Rose her head for the first time in a while and looked at me, Her eyes, Filled Sadness and guilt. Opened her mouth and asked:

" Are you disappointed Ayanokouji-kun ? Are you going to look down on me because i did that ? " She said with a worried expression, As tears fell down from her eyes. There was only one response in this situation

" Well, I am Disappointed ... "

" Y-Yeah That's Understandable Ayanokouji-kun, How can a criminal like my sel- "

" I am disappointed that you think i would be disappointed " My

words stroke her, As she looked at me with a surprise " I'm not going to look down on you. In fact, Now I Admire you even more Ichinose. You were brave enough to sacrifice what you have for the sake of others. I'm not gonna say that what you did was good, But your intentions of doing so was out of goodwill and love " I Said with a soft tone

Ichinose Did something bad, And she was punished for it. But she wasn't able to move on. Her guilt kept stalking her wherever she went. That was a weakness that she needed to get rid off, But never was able to.

Ichinose Buried her face in her hands, And started crying. I Went and sat beside her and putted my hand on her shoulder and pulled her in for a one-arm hug.

After a few minutes she calmed down, Before Tugging my shirt and muttering " T-Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun " *I Casually went and checked what my heart was doing, And he was Running with Incredible speed, I Wished him a good luck before asking my question*

" Did you tell Nagumo about this ? " She nodded, Still Laying on my chest

"Should i tell my classmates about this Ayanokouji-kun ? " She Said

" That's not my decision to make, It's Yours. Whatever decision you make, I'll support you " I Said Warmly

" Thank you , Ayanokouji-kun "

We Stayed like that for a while before she stood up. Regained alittle of her cheerful aura. She looked at me with a warm and exciting gaze.

" Right ! Ayanokouji-kun, I'm planning to have a Class alliance "

" Class Alliance ? Do you have a class in mind ? "

" Yep ! Tomorrow at lunch i will go and discuss it with the Leaders of Class D, What do you think ? "

" Well having One less class to worry about is helpful, But why tell me ? "

" Because i want you to accompany me tomorrow, And besides " Ichinose Lowered her voice at this " I Hold you at a very high position Ayanokouji-kun "

Hold me at a very high position ?

" Ah i mean You're Insights are useful Ayanokouji-kun you are very smart so i wanted you to accompany me, But if it's a problem then no. Nevermind " She Said. I Chuckled abit " What's funny Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" Oh no, Don't mind me. You Just look very cute when you're blushing " Ichinose went blank for a second before blushing even more

" Eh- Umm, Right I-It's getting Late . . . I-I Should head Back " She Said While running to the door" Umm- Good Night , Ayanokouji-kun " She said with a huge blush on her face

" Good Night, Ichinose " With that, She bolted out of the room

I Laid on my bed thinking about today's events ... The whole time i was around Ichinose, I've was having a weird feeling. One of ... Attraction ? I've never been able to feel emotions before, But this time i felt something.

Could it be that Ichinose . . . Triggered some of my Emotions ?

Whew ! The Longest Chapter so far. The was alot of things to cover, With 4.1K Words !

I have some tests next week, While i'm sure it somewhat won't affect my updating, But i'll intentionally updates because im going at an incredible speed these days. Expect a chapter in 2-3 days, Or maybe tomorrow if im feeling like it.

Adieu.

Arc 1 Chap 6 : The midterms part 1

Important notice :

I Uploaded the previous in the pretense that it was done. However, When i checked it i realized that wattpad uploaded only half of it and deleted the rest (When Kiyo saw honami walking after the student council rejection) I recreated the rest. If you didnt read You Should go and continue reading the rest of the previous chapter. And if you did then Enjoy this Chapter)

A Few days passed and our Class Situation has been Great. We were tackling the upcoming midterms head on as we created Two Study groups with multiple tutors on top, I Was assigned to the first group with Ichinose, Amikura, Shibata, Kanzaki, Shiranami and Minamikata. Hamaguchi was tutoring another group while Kanzaki was supporting Ichinose. The Situation has been Flawless as i could already see us passing the exam. But we couldn't let our guard down.

After Ichinose revealed her past to me, We became closer than ever. Meanwhile, I was trying to discover what is that feeling when i'm around her.

The bell rang signaling the start of lunch period. Ichinose and I, Glanced at each other and nodded, Before leaving the classroom heading towards Class D.

After what happened in my room, I kinda became like Ichinose's right hand man. We explained our proposal of alliance to our classmates which received positive responses. We were walking down the hall, When i decided to strike up a conversation

" So what is the reason you chose Class D ? " I Asked with interest

" Since the start of may, They have been treated horribly by the school and the other students, So i decided to help them " Said Ichinose looking as bright as ever

" You do realize that we gain almost nothing by allying with them right ? " I marked, Ichinose has become a capable Class leader and central figure in our class, I'm pretty sure she knows what She's doing

" It's not a question of gain or loss, I just wanted to help them. Besides, there is other reasons like crossing one class of our list, We wouldn't completely drop our guard especially since we are Class A and They seem the easiest class to approach " Explained Ichinose.

That Certainly is true. Class D compared to the other classes is our best option.

Class C has a tyrant named Ryueen leading them with an iron fist and violence, stirring up trouble everywhere. It's only a matter of time before he targets us again

Class B is rumored to have Two factions, The Sakayanagi faction and The Katsuragi faction, Even if we managed to bring one faction to our side, There is still half of the class remaining and 40 Class points difference between us. Adding their new found hostility to us the new Class A. Allying ourselves with them is virtually impossible

That leaves Class D, Who are in a slightly better position in terms of internal conflict, And due to our class points difference being massive, Bringing them in our side isn't a bad idea

" Aren't you happy with my decision Ayanokouji-kun " She said snapping me out of my thoughts

" No, Class D is our best choice .. Or rather only choice as far as alliance is concerned " She responded with a cute smile before reaching the class D Door

She put her hands on the handle and slid the door open. And greeted Everyone with such enthusiasm " Goooooooood morning everyone ! " Everyone in the classroom turned to face us, Abandoning whatever they were doing, Except for the blonde student who was at the bus.

" Ah Ichinose-san ! Good morning " Kushida who was speaking with a group of girls, walked up to us with her usual 'smile' " Oh and Ayanokouji-kun too, Do you have any business with Class D ? "

" Yep ! I Came here to discuss forming an alliance with your leader soooooo, Where are they ? " Kushida looking kind of embarrassed, Started scratching her cheek upon hearing Ichinose.

" Actually Ichinose-san We don't really have a leader, But if you're looking for someone close to being one, Then you can talk to me or Hirata-kun "

Hirata who was observing from the background walked to us with a bright smile " Good morning to you Ichinose-san and Ayanokouji-kun, From what i heard You're looking to form an Alliance with us correct ? "

" Mhm, Do you mind if we head to the cafeteria and discuss things ? "

" Sur- "

" No Hirata-kun, You promised you would hang out with us ! "

" Yeah, Let Kushida-san handle things you stay with us Hirata-kun "

A Bunch of girls went and dragged Hirata away. He gave Kushida an apologetic look while speaking " I'm sorry Kushida-san, Can you

handle things instead ? "

Kushida responded with a nod " Right, Lets get going ! " With that we left the classroom heading towards the cafeteria.

I turned around to look at Hirata, Who gave me a smile while being dragged by the girls, *Truly pitiful*.

As we were walking towards the cafeteria a voice called behind us " Wait ! "

We turned around to see a Girl with a long black hair called out from the entrance of Class D facing us

" Horikita-san, Do you need something ? " *Horikita* ?

" Horikita ? " Muttered Ichinose while staring at the black haired girl apparently named Horikita

" Can i come along with you ? " Requested Horikita, Kushida responded with a sweet 'yes' Before we headed towards the Reserved tables on the cafeteria, I sat next to Ichinose Facing Horikita

" Allow me to introduce my self, I'm Horikita Suzune " So Her Family name is Horikita, I wonder if she's related to the President. Ichinose was about to speak, But i spoke instead

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, And this is our leader Ichinose Honami From Class A, Pleasure to meet you Horikita " I Said with my usual tone, Ichinose nodded at my little introduction. I looked at Ichinose who recovered quickly before continuing what i started and dropping whatever she was going to ask

" As you know, We came here to establish a cooperative relationship between Our Respective Classes " Ichinose Explained with her bright smile.

" Why would you want to Ally yourself with our class ? " Said Horikita

" You see, From the start of the month, You guys have been treated badly by the school and it's students, So i decided to help you guys " Said Ichinose

" Really ? That's very sweet of you Ichinose-san ! We humbly Accep- "

" So you're taking pity on us ?

Kushida looked happy, The reverse could be said to Horikita as she glared at Ichinose Intensely

" No, Its not Like Tha- "

" Then what would it be ? You're clearly taking pity on us, Or could it be that you're trying to mock us just because you recently got into Class A ? " Horikita attacked Ichinose

" No ! You're Wrong I- " Horikita Interrupted her

" Then What Could it B- "

" Yes, It is out of pity, We Class A Are taking a pity on you The

Defective Class D by offering you a hand " I Interrupted her, My words seems to shock Ichinose, Horikita Switching targets, Glared at me instead.

" We Don't need your Pity, My Placement in Class D was a mistake from the school anyway " She shrugged

" What makes you so sure about that ? I as a Class A Student, See that you're no better than the other Class D Students " I seem to have touched a nerve as she started yelling.

" Don't compare me with those worthless trash, I am clearly a superior student who deserves to be in Class A, After all, I will reach Class A with my abilities and prove the school wrong " She said, Gathering the attention of everyone in the cafeteria

" You Think that you can reach Class A Alone ? " I Asked

" Yes, I don't need pity, Or friendship, My abilities are superior to everyone in this school " I took a deep sigh, Before Facing her

" Look Superior-san, Allow me to elaborate, You're a worthless defect who is full of herself and looks down on others. This school is about class competitions and you need to work with your classmates to advance to a higher class, But you didn't realize that due to your superiority complex, Even if you did, You wouldn't cooperate with your classmates due to a miss placed pride " I Continued " Your nature makes it hard to cooperate with you, Even if you are smart and athletic, You clearly lack cohesion and adaptability, Your placement in Class D was no mistake "

Horikita grew angrier by the second. Kushida however, Observed the situation with kind of ... amusement ?

" YOU " She then proceeds to pull out a mathematical compass and aims for my left Shoulder.

" Ayanokouji-kun ! " Ichinose Screamed with Worry

I However, Grabbed the Compass between my index and middle finger and snatched it away from her.

" Tsk.... Give it back ! "

" Go retrieve it..... From your brother Manabu " Horikita tensed up at the mention of her brother, Interesting.

" Don- "

" HAHAAHAHAHAHAHA " That laughter came from the table next to us, More Specifically From a Girl who appeared to be a senpai

She had a long platinum hair with ruby eyes, She looked at us with a smirk, Beside her was a Senpai too, She had a brown hair

" The president has a little sister, WHO IS A DEFECT TOO AHAHAHAHAHA " Horikita was trembling at her words as she sat on the seat looking down.

" Mmmmm, Fuka-chan, You're disturbing the Othe- "

" Ignore the others Nazuna, This is the best thing that Happened in my entire High school life, I mean who would have THOUGHT AHAHAHHAHA " She laughed again, with a smirk She looked at me " Impressive Kouhai-kun, You've managed to show something interesting to Fuka-chan, What's your name ? "

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, What about you Senpai ? "

" Call me Fuka-chan " She said with a smirk " Or would you rather to call me Onee-chan ? "

" Neither "

" Aah, You're no fun Kouhai-kun " She said, Her smirk never leaving her face.

The girl beside her spoke up

" We are sorry for disturbing you, My name is Nazuna Asahina from Class 2-A and she is Kiryuin Fuka from Class 2-B "

We then proceeded to introduce ourselves, With Kiryuin Looking bored at everyone's introduction. However, When Kushida introduced herself, Kiryuin looked at her before grinning like a mad lad. *So she noticed it too huh ? Interesting*

I exchanged contact info with Kiryuin, Because she insisted. And with that, Horikita abandoned the meeting and headed towards the classroom We discussed our alliance details before returning to our classes.

At the end of the classes, The robotic sound played again dumping the same contents as last time " Ichinose Honami of Class 1-A Please come to the student council room "

Ichinose was caught off guard by the message, and Sat on the desk with conflicted emotions.

" Honami-chan did you reapply for the student council ? " Asked Shiranami

" No. I Don't know why i am called again, I got rejected Last time "

" Maybe they changed their minds Honami-chan ! Go, Don't keep them waiting " Pushed Amikura " We will be waiting here for you, Go get em ! " Amikura punched the air with Excitement

Ichinose with conflicted emotions, Walked out of the room. However, Before she went too far i called out to her " Ichinose "

Ichinose turned around " Ayanokouji-kun ? Is there anything wrong ? "

" Here take this " I gave her the mathematical compass " Send my regards to Manabu " With That i disappeared into the classroom not

waiting for any response.

I'm sure she would be confused by this, But i'm glad he held his part of the deal.

Flashback Around 3 Days ago

It was lunch time, I got invited by Shibata, Kanzaki and Hamaguchi to eat at the cafeteria which i gracefully accepted.

We ordered our foods and sat on a table, Talked about pointless things until Kanzaki Said something calls for worry

" Haven't you guys noticed ? We are being watched " Said Kanzaki with a serious expression

" Huh ? Who ? " Shibata yelled and started checking his surroundings

" Shhh, Don't make fuss, Or they would know that we are aware " Kanzaki Calmed Shibata down, Shibata nodded and continued eating his food like normal

" It started right after class ended, Some Class C Students are watching us for some reason " I Marked

" So you noticed it too huh ? Well We Should be Carefu- "

" Kukuku what an interesting little group, Mind if i join ya ? " A Magenta Haired boy interrupted Kanzaki and took a seat and faced all of us.

" What do you want from us Ryueen ? " Said Kanzaki while glaring at the Magenta Haired boy Apparently named Ryueen

" Hoh ? Why the hostility ? We are in the same grade ! You guys seemed to be talking about something interesting and decided to join ya " Said Ryueen with a smirk on his face

" We are talking about class manners Ryueen-kun, We will appreciate it if you leave us. We don't want a class's leader prying into our affairs " Said Hamaguchi

Ryueen's smirk never leaving his face, Sat up and slammed his hands on the table. It caused a commotion and now all the attention on us " Listen Students of Class A, Lets have a deal. You tell me who is your class's leader is, And i won't beat you up. That's a good deal no ? "

Hamaguchi and Shibata Tensed up, Kanzaki kept glaring daggers at him, Was about to speak. However, I Spoke

" You think you can beat us in the middle of a public place ? You know there is security cameras right ? " I Said, Ryueen Switched his attention on me with his smirk

" You think i give a fuck about the security cameras ? " Said ryueen

" If you want to lose Classpoints then be my guest " I Said Standing up and facing him, Ryueen's grin reached his ears

" You cocky little Bastard ! " Ryueen threw a punch on my face that i evaded In the middle of a crowded cafeteria where can hear a lot of gasps. Ryueen didn't care about that, Threw Another punch to my abdominal which i also Dodged, He crouched trying to kick my legs which i evaded by jumping again " Stop Fucking dodging and fight back ! " Ryueen became angrier by the second, He kept throwing punches which i just evaded, He Went on full attack and left him self open, While i only dodged his attacks.

He didn't practice martial arts, His style came from the countless street fights he fought, I Could clearly tell that he is one of the strongest fighters in the grade or even the school, Even stronger than that Senpai i handled when he tried to assault Ichinose.

Ryueen Kept sending blows which i easily dodged, While blocking some of them, I Could see a wide smile on his face while he's attacking, He seems to be having fun.

" Stop this instance " However. A Voice came from entrance of the cafeteria, I Looked to see The Student council President Horikita Manabu, With him was Tachibana Akane. " Ryueen, What do you think you're doing attacking someone at the middle of the cafeteria ? " Any person would shiver at that gaze. However, Ryueen stood there and took it head on, His Smug never leaving his face

" Kukuku, Attacking ? I'm not attacking anyone, We were just dancing right Monster ? " Ryueen said facing me. *Monster* ? I responded with a Nod " See ? "

" I See, If nothing happened then i don't see why should i intervene " Said Prez Horkitia fixing his glasses

Ryueen Then turned to me for a handshake " We'll continue our little dance later, Monster " He said while Grinning, I Took his hand. However, He started applying force to his grip testing my strength, His grin became wider " See you later "

With that Ryueen went outside the cafeteria with his lackeys that were tailing us. I went and sat back on my seat. My friends were staring at me with worried and shocked expression, I Calmed them down, But that was only the tip of the iceberg " The show is over, Go back to whatever you've been doing " I Yelled, With that everyone in the cafeteria continued eating their foods

However, I Was about to dig in but President Horikita Came and spoke to me " Ayanokouji Kiyotaka right ? " I Looked at him *How did he know my name ? Could it be from that incident ? it seems unlikely.*

" Yes, What could i do for you President ? "

" Would you mind coming to the student council room after class

? "

" And why would i do that ? " Tachibana got frustrated, But Horikita calmed her down

" I Need to discuss something with you, I Hope it doesn't bother you that much " *Discuss something huh ? Well i'll have to atleast hear him out*

" Sure, It's not like i have plans anyway " With that Horikita looked satisfied and left us wishing us a 'nice lunch'

With that we finished our foods while talking about the incident, Apparently Ryueen is the Tyrant leader of Class C, And he is stirring up trouble in all the classes including our class. They asked me why did i lie to the president by agreeing with ryueen, I just shrugged and said its not worth the trouble.

With that we headed back to class. However, News Travel Fast

" Ayanokouji-kun ! Are you okay ? " Ichinose Ran to me with a worried expression " You aren't hurt Are you ? Ryueen Didn't hurt you right ? " Seeing her worry about me like this made me quite happy

" I'm fine, He didn't do anything to me " My words didn't ease Ichinose, As she kept panicking

" I Heard about it ! Are you sure you aren't Hurt Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I'm perfectly fine Ichinose, Besides Ryueen didn't even land a hit on me " She Looked at Shibata and the others for confirmations, They nodded And with that Ichinose sighed a sigh of relief

" Ara~ Honami-chan, Why are you so worried about Ayanokouji-kun ? Are you perhaps *THAT* " Amikura jumped in the situation like a bad omen. Ichinose looked at her with confusion " Or should i specify ? "

Ichinose stood there looking Amikura, A few seconds later and her cheeks Started heating up. A Cute blush on her face. Amikura smirked at the sight of her and kept going. According to Amikura, Shiranami was on the cafeteria when the confrontation happened, When she saw the president she Ran to the Classroom to report, Ichinose Was sitting anxiously at her seat waiting for us. Hearing that The boys in the Class Gave me a thumbs up. The bell rang and with that the classes continued

.
. .
.

The bell rang signalling the end of class, I Was on my way to the student council when i bumped into Hiyori, She was walking back from the park carrying a book, Upon noticing my presence She smiled, But her smile slowly broke as it became an expression of

worry

" Hey Kiyotaka-kun "

" Hey Hiyori Reading books like usual ? "

" Ummm Yeah " She then looked to me " I Heard about what happened earlier, Are you okay ? "

I nodded, And she sighed in relief

" Anyway, I took a walk on the part while reading this book " She Showed me her book, Not bad. She Continued " Where are you going ? "

" I Got called to the student council " She Looked at me with Anxiety " Don't worry, It's not about Ryueen, That i'm sure about it " She smiled again, With that we bid farewell

However, She Called out my name Again " Kiyotaka-kun ! " I Turned around to look at her, Her worried expression still on her face " Be Careful " I Nodded

With that i went to the third floor where the student council room was, I Knocked on the door to receive a " Come in " I Opened the door and saw the President Alone " Take a seat " He Gestured me to take a seat which i obliged

" So what is it that you wanted to talk about ? " I Said Bluntly, The president Smirked at that Comment. He then Looked at me with his Sharp Gaze

" Join the Student Council " *Huh ?*

" I Refuse " I Said

" That's a Shame then, You may go now " He said looking alittle disappointed. However, I Wouldn't accept to end it right There, I Ignored his Comment and sat, He didn't seem surprised with my actions. More like he expected this Chat to Continue.

" Why do you want me to join the student council ? There are many other people more fit than me " I Said

" Because i deemed you Qualified "

" Why am i Qualified and Ichinose isn't ? ? "

" Because i said so "

A Moment of silence Erupted, The Atmosphere was kinda funny To be honest, I Broke the Silence with an important question

" What is the real reason that you Rejected Ichinose ? " I Said While staring at him, He seemed unfazed, I Must commend that poker face of his

" As i said, I deemed Her Unqualifi- "

" Don't give me that, I Know that's not the real reason, Ichinose is definitely capable of being in the student council, And she has the Experience and the mindset for it " The president sat in silence listening to me. As i Continued " If i have to guess, Is it because of Nagumo ? "

" What an interesting Theory, Why do you think that ? " He said, His lips curled up abit, Before returning back to normal

" You knew that Ichinose is capable of being in the student council. However, Before she could join Nagumo already brought her to his side, That's why you rejected her to not give Nagumo an Advantage on your Conflict, The reason you want me to join is because you deemed me Capable enough of defeating Nagumo, Correct ? "

" That- "

" The proof is that you're talking to me alone, If this was a normal invitation, Shouldn't the other members be here ? "

The president sat in silence. Before He Started his monologue

" When Nagumo Takes over the President he will Change the School, For the worst. He is a very Capable man, But his Ideals are against this school, He believes in Merit and merit alone. He will turn this school into a meritocracy. That's why i'm looking for people Capable enough to defeat him, It is as you said, Ichinose is Capable, But Nagumo Already Sank his teeth in her " *Meritocracy huh ? that sounds kinda fun*

However, Something Doesn't make sense " Why do you care ? You're Graduating soon right ? "

" I am leaving this school soon. However, Seeing the work i putted years into it Fall apart because of Nagumo isn't something desirable " I see, It is understandable. Horikita is rumored to be the best Student council president in the history of this school

" I Still refuse joining " Horikita looked down abit " However, I can have a deal with you " Horikita looked at me As i continued

" I will help you defeat Nagumo, In return, I Want you to Accept Ichinose in the student council, Don't worry about her she is Smart to not fall in Nagumo's Traps and she is already aware of his Malicious Intent " I Continued " Do we have a deal ? "

I couldn't care less about what Nagumo would do with the school. However, He is becoming kinda annoying to deal with lately, He still tried to contact Ichinose and she clearly rejected him, But he went as far as to corner her.

Why am i worried about her ? Hmmm, *Good question*

Horikita Thought about it for a second, Before Agreeing to my Conditions " Do you want to do a contract ? "

" No, I Already trust that you won't back down. Pleasure Doing Business with you Horikita-senpai " With that We Shook hands.

We Exchanged Contact info while he insisted on calling Him Manabu. With that i Called it a day and went back to the dorms.

Today was Really something huh ?

I Decided to split this part into Two because of the amount of content in them. Expect a second Chapter in Maximum 5 Days, Since i have my Exams.

Sayonara

Arc 1 Chap 7 : The MidTerms Part 2

Important notice : It happened, AGAIN. I think i know why wattpad deleted half of my previous chapter again i'll try to evade it. Again if you missed the latter half go back and read it. Ill try to not make it happen again. Enjoy :)

It has been over 15 minutes since Ichinose got called to the student council, And yet, Nobody left. We all waited in a comfortable silence for any further notice.

The person in question came back and opened the door, All of my classmates including me looked at her in anticipation.

" So ? .. " Amikura being the first one to speak, Stood and looked at Ichinose.

Ichinose, In Response, Showed a bright and cute smile while jumping in excitement, Everyone sighed in relieve. Amikura, Rushed her friend and embraced her tightly

" You really did it Honami-chan ! I never had a doubt ! " Shiranami walked closely and spoke

" Yes, Thanks to all of your support, I became part of the student council, Thank you everyone " Ichinose said with a bright voice, She Genuinely looked Happy.

With that Shiranami, Minamikata and Andou all jumped into Ichinose hugging her more tightly. Well, *Seems my business is done here.*

However, As i was about to leave, Amikura Grabbed my wrist " Where do you think you're going Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" To the dorms of course " Amikura didn't seem too happy with my response, Sighed deeply

" You clearly can't read the room Can you ? " I looked at her in confusion, She continued " This calls for celebration, And you're just heading back to the dorms ? Pathetic, Follow me " She Started dragging me before i could complain. I sighed in resignation and allowed myself to be dragged by her.

After we got back to the classroom, We decided to head to karaoke. One a side note, It was Amikura's suggestion. Me, Ichinose, Amikura, Shibata, Kanzaki, Shiranami and Minamikata, Total of 7 people.

I checked my Phone to see two notifications. The first was from Manabu which was a thumbs up. The second was a message where

Class A was tagged in one of posts of the school forums, Welcoming Ichinose to the student council. That post went viral, and now Ichinose is the talk of the school.

We arrived at the karaoke place, Ichinose went first, And what i could say ? Her performance was exceptional. Next was Shibata and Kanzaki, Who were forced to sing regardless of their protests. They managed to barely pass, The rest of the group went until it was my turn, I Insisted on not singing. However, All six of them were Insisting that i will. I chose a rap song, Due to my monotone voice, it was the easiest to preform. I managed to get a passing grade. And after that we left and sat on a cafe.

" Man that was quite tiring " Said Shibata while stretching

" It was a loud evening, But i had fun " Stated Kanzaki

" Yep ! It's all worth it " Said Minamikata

" Hey Kozue-chan you know what was more worth it ? " Said Amikura with a grin

" Hmm ?~ "

" Seeing Ayanokouji-kun sing. What do you think of his voice Honami-chan ? You were listening quite intensely when he was singing " The person in question was quietly and peacefully enjoying their drink. However, The Amikura omen doesn't show any favoritism

Ichinose chocked her drink against the surprise attack and started coughing hard, I Offered her my drink which was half-drunk, She gulped it in one-go before returning back to normal.

However, Amikura leaned in to Ichinose's ears and whispered something, Not long after Ichinose started blushing furiously even her ears became red. She dug her face in her hands, Staring at me with one eye before speaking :

" A-... Ayanokouji-kun ! T-That was Y-your D-Drink R-Right ? " She was stuttering while speaking but i got the gist of it. When i nodded Ichinose Covered her other eye. Amikura taking the chance to poke her cheeks. Meanwhile, Shibata gave me a thumbs up while Kanzaki chuckled

After a few minutes Ichinose calmed down and we ordered new drinks and kept talking about pointless things. While Amikura tried to tease me from time to time, I Remained unfazed. We walked to a park, Where we bumped into Kushida, Hirata and his harem

" Ah Ichinose-san, Good evening " Said Kushida waving at us

" Good evening to you too Kushida-san, How are you doing ? " Responded Ichinose with her usual smile

" We've been Alright, For the most part. Oh and i heard the news ! Congratulations Ichinose-san "

" Ahaha thanks Kushida-san, Were you having a change of air ? "

" Yep ! Do you want to join us ? "

" Absolutely "

We then joined Kushida's group with the walk, Being around too many people paranoided me, But i managed to deal with, Nevertheless It was fun. Then Ichinose decided to ask a question

" Is your Class Doing well in this exam Kushida-san ? " Kushida looked down, But Hirata spoke up

" We are working hard, We managed to save some of our classmates from expulsion, But there are some people who refused to join our study groups especially the three lowest scorers. I'm honestly worried " Said Hirata with a grim Expression " They said that they'll be fine because they will cram at the night of the last day, I think it will be inevitable "

Ichinose tried to think of a solution but couldn't find any. The only thing we could do is to tutor them, But that would be pointless and it may harm our class instead. But there was one thing

Ichinose looked at me with a worried expression, I simply nodded and she brightened up again

" You did your best Hirata-kun, So even if they got expelled it won't be your fault. If you need anything just contact us ! "

" Thank you very much Ichinose-san " Said Hirata with a bitter smile

With that we called it a day and headed towards the dorms

I laid on my bed looking at the screen for sometime, I went to the Chatting App and sent a message to a *certain* someone before going into a deep slumber.

The next Day: Okay here is a quiz, Try and guess who did kiyotaka message before going to sleep, No Cheating !

It was Lunch time, I made my way to the cafeteria to meet with that certain someone.

I went to the designated meeting place, It was at the northeast corner, An inconspicuous place, I waited for a good minute Before

they showed up

" Ara~ Did you already miss me ? " She said with her infamous smug face " Kouhai-kun ? "

" Good morning Kiryuin-senpai "

Kiryuin Laughed at my little greeting, Went and sat in the seat next to mine, In a rather close distance. She looked at me with her smug smile " Do you not like it ? "

" That's not it, Did you bring what i asked you ? " I Said

" Yes, You promised me something fun and i'll never pass on that, You know me well Kouhai-kun " She said Giving me Test Papers " I Didn't have them so i asked them from Nazuna, I Can't really tell what would you need with them, But i trust that you will amaze me Kouhai-kun "

I Took the recent quiz paper and compared the last 3 questions in front of Kiryuin.

" What is this Kouhai-kun ? " I perfectly memorized the questions but i brought the Quiz paper to show Kiryuin the Comparison for the sake of her Amusement " They are the same ... "

" Yes, This is the recent Quiz we took and the last three questions were very hard. I Asked for your first-year midterms because i had a hunch and it is correct " I Looked at her, She looked at me back with a serious expression, I Grabbed the papers that She gave me " In other words, This is going to be most likely our midterms "

Kiryuin's face didn't change until her lips curled up a bit, Before exploding in a Violent ever-so-loud laughter. She was laughing with all of her might, Attracting not only the nearby students attention, But the whole Cafeteria. *How many times i'm gonna be the Center of the attention in the cafeteria ?*

" Ah .. Ah " Kiryuin calmed down. With deep exhales, She Looked at me with a smirk bigger than usual " I Didn't in a million years expect this to happen Kouhai-kun, You certainly are impressi- No Impressive is an understatement "

" You're overestimating me Senpai, I Just had an impossible hunch who appeared to be true. I May get it right now but maybe not in the future, Besides it's not a 100% percent that these would be our midterms "

" If you say so Kouhai-kun, Thank you for today. You more than lived up to your words " With that she excused herself with her smirk.

I looked at the papers before sending them To Hirata. *Why Hirata ? Because he is popular and with this his popularity would increase meaning he would be dragged by more girls and he won't give me that smile again. Well deserved no ?*

[Ayanokouji-kun ? What's this ?]

[These questions are most likely going to be in our midterms, Use them Wisely Hirata]

[Really ? Thank you so much ! I am really indebted to you and Ichinose-san, Ayanokouji-kun I can't thank you enough]

[Don't thank me yet, There is still a chance that i'm wrong]

[But You've already been a big help Ayanokouji-kun. Thank you]

On my way, I sent the Questions to Ichinose as well and told her the same thing. She decided to use them and study them in the study groups before telling our classmates to memorize the questions. A perfect plan.

.

.

.

.

It was time for the study group, We decided to meet at the corner of the library. I arrived early to find Ichinose sitting alone while spaced out.

Hmmm, this is a nice opportunity to....

" Boo ! "

" AAAAAH ! "

I sneaked behind her in the intent to jump scare her, However i didn't anticipate her to scream loudly, Likely no one was in the library to disturb. *Wait no one ?*

She turned around with a horrified expression, When she saw me her expression softened

" Ah Ayanokouji-kun, You meanie " She cutely pouted " You're early "

" I could say the same to you " I said while taking the seat next to her. Immediately, a Citrus perfume tickled my nose " You started using perfumes ? "

" Ummm yeah, I've started using it for a while now, Did you only notice it now ? " She said Flustered abit

" Not really, I've been catching this smell around but i didn't think that you were the one to have it, It suits you " My words made her more flustered. *What's up with her today ?*

She struggled a bit before muttering " Thank you " in a low cute voice. My heart started racing all of the sudden

" Ichinose I'm gonna confess to you about something " Ichinose turned and looked at me in the eye, Her cheeks still red she spoke

" W-What is it Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I'm sorry "

" Why are you apologizing Ayanokouji-kun ? " Ichinose tilted her head in confusion

" On the recent quiz, I could've scored higher and got more Classpoints if i didn't hold back " I Continued " I didn't want to tutor anyone, So i Apologize again " I said bowing alittle

" You don't have to Apologize Ayanokouji-kun, If you told me then i wouldn't have forced you, And you got an 80 so you didn't hold back the class. Just don't do it again Okay~ ? " She said While smiling a bright smile, I felt like all of my sins were washed and cleaned by that smile. My heart throbbing on my chest as i looked at her. However, Before i could talk

" Ara ara~ " I heard a low voice coming behind one of the shelves, I looked at the direction to see The rest of the group, Amikura looking at us from behind the shelf with one eye " Don't mind me, Keep going with your lovey-dovey stuff~ I'm just a wall, A mere Shelf "

" N-No, It-ts not L-Like tha- " Ichinose being the blushing-mess she is, Tried to deny it However, Amikura and Minamikata jumped out of the hiding spot, Went and started poking Ichinose's cheeks.

After sometime, The group started studying, Ichinone being the main tutor while i helped her alittle. I caught Ichinose stealing glances at me for a while, One time i looked back at her and she got flustered and looked back at her material. Amikura caught glimpses of this grinned.

We kept studying in our peaceful gentle group, I hope this continu-

" Oho what an interesting little gathering we've got " Nagumo Showed up, Ruining our little group. Ichinose tensed up alittle at his arrival, *Am i missing something here ?*

" H-Hello Nagumo-senpai " Said Ichinose with a weak voice

" Good evening Honami, Do you mind if you come with me for a bit ? It concerns the student council " Nagumo said with with a doubtful smile

" Y-yes, I'll be right back guys " Ichinose stood and following Nagumo. Ichinose Gave me a worried look, While Nagumo Looked at her with a big grin on his face and disappeared.

I looked back at our group who clearly were nervous and worried, I looked at Shibata and Kanzaki who both nodded and tailed them. I turned on the voice recorder just in case

We could see the silhouettes of the two persons we were tailing, But as they left. A Group of 10 Upperclassmen stood in front of the door blocking our path

" Tsk. Let us go " Ordered Shibata

" Haha, Where do you think you're going, We wouldn't let you ruin Nagumo's date with that Cute Kouhai "

" Date ? " Said Kanzaki. *So Nagumo is getting desperate huh ?*

However, I had no time to waste with those guys, I Remembered that there was a camera on the outside door, Ganging up like this Shouldn't be possible. Where is the Gua- Oh i see.

I looked around the library to find no one, So this was a setup from the beginning.

I walked to the front door and bumped into that upperclassman, I noticed Ichinose's hair going to the direction of the Special Building.

The Senpai i bumped into instantly tried to sweep my legs. I Jumped while using the gravity to land a kick on his neck, He fell on the ground unconscious

1 Down

After that two people charged into me, I Stepped at to the right guy and punched him in the guts. The other swunged his bat which i easily Dodged, Using the momentum i half-flipped and kicked him on his flank causing him to fall

3 Down

Two guys walked past me and ran at the girls who were Dialing the security. Kanzaki and Shibata, Took the Senpais head on.

I looked back at the five remaining infront of me, They were hesitant and somewhat nervous. Seeing the opening i bolted into the Left guy who was caught off guard and punched him on his face rendering him unconscious.

Kanzaki and Shibata both out of breath, Emerged from the library and charged at the 4 Senpais creating an opening

" Go Ayanokouji ! " Said Kanzaki while hooking one of the Senpais

I Took the opportunity and Ran towards the Special Building

Honami POV

We entered the special building and went to the third floor. I Was walking behind Nagumo-senpai, He took glances at me from time to time to ensure i was behind him

I was scared recalling what happened in the previous days, Today was no different However, It was the deadline that Nagumo-senpai Gave me.

Since the start of this month, He has been confessing to me everyday, While i kept rejecting him. However, In the middle of the month he became more forceful and threatened me into dating him,

I refused him but he never gave up. He told me that i should think about it and he is gonna come this day for the final say.

I Have to date him. Or he will Out my secret. That's his condition

My secret, That i shoplifted would become public knowledge depending on this meeting.

We arrived at the third floor, He stopped and turned around with his Smile.

" So what is your answer Honami ? " He said in a gentle yet forceful tone.

" I-I'm Sorry, Senpai, My A-Answer is still N-No ... "

" I see .. "

I would never get in a unhealthy one-sided relationship, I may regret it for the rest of my life. And i already *love him Yes i do love him*, I've been feeling like that for a while now, I kept denying it but i knew deep down that i do love him, I even went to buy a new perfume to try and attract him. I've been denying it. But now i can say for certain that

I love Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

" Is it because of that brown haired boy That you kept rejecting me Over and over again ? " Said Nagumo, His smile turned into a grim, Anger expression " Tell me Honami, Is it because of him ? "

" Y Yes ! I love Ayanokouji-kun ! That's why i won't go out with you Nagumo-senpai " I felt like a huge burden has been off my Shoulders, I couldn't care about him spreading my secret, I'm already over that. Thanks to Ayanokouji-kun

" So you chose a beta male like him over an Alpha like me ? " Said Nagumo

" No, He is not beta. He is a sigm- "

" I'll show you who is more capable. Then you can distinguish the differences between us. I'm looking forward to the look on his face when i Expel him " At the mention to that word, I trembled, No is he serious ? He can't expel him ! Fear overtook me i pondered over what to do, Should i accept his offer and suffer ?

" No.... " I unconsciously said

" Speaking of The Fucking Devil " I Looked at the stairs, And there he was again

" A-Ayanokouji-kun ?! ... "

I was running towards the special building, On my way there i checked my phone and it is still recording.

Just for safety i dialed Manabu

(Hello ?)

" Hello Manabu-senpai "

(Yes Kiyotaka, How can i help you ?)

" Do you perhaps know where Nagumo is ? "

(Nagumo ? Lemme see ...He is currently at the Student council room, Why ?)

" Lemme correct you senpai, Nagumo is at the special building "

(Huh ? I just checked his location with Tachibana's phone and it says he is at the council room)

" Checked his location ? "

(Yes, Don't tell me you don't know about it ? You can see anyone's location if they are friends with you on the chatting app) I never knew something like that existed

" Anyway, This is an emergency Manabu-senpai " I briefed him on what's happening

(I'm heading towards you right now)

" No, Go to the library and check on my friends, They need your help more than I do"

(Are you sure ? Nagumo is quite strong, I believe you'll put up a good fight but are you sure you don't need help ?)

" No, But i want you to not hang up and act as a witness, I already recorded things from back on the library but having you as a witness would seal his fate "

(I Understand, Please be careful Kiyotaka)

With that i putted my phone on my pocket while entering the special building. I shouldn't be late because i ran as fast as i could before my call with Manabu

I could hear some muffling until i came Close to hear

" I-Im sorry Senpai, My A-Answer is still N-No ... "

" I see ... "

There was a bit of silence before Nagumo spoke up " Is it because of that brown haired boy that you kept rejecting me over and over again ? " Said Nagumo with a forceful, Intimidating Tone " Tell me Honami, Is it because of him ? "

So that's what was bothering Ichinose all this time, He kept asking her out day after day and she went through the pain of rejecting him over and over again. *What a simp*

However, Ichinose's next words Shocked me

" Y ... Yes ! I Love Ayanokouji-kun ! That's why i won't go out with you Nagumo-senpai "

I sensed no lies in her words, My judgement could be clouded due

to this feeling. I need to check it with her

" I see, So you chose a beta male like him over an alpha like me ?

" Continued Nagumo

" I'll show you who is more capable. Then you can distinguish the difference between us, I'm looking forward to the look on his face when i expel him " That's it, That was what i was looking for, I'm sure the recorder and Manabu heard him because i was carrying my phone.

" No ... " Ichinose offered a weak resistance with words. At that moment, My victory was all but certain, But i need to clean one more thing

" Speaking of the fucking Devil " Said Nagumo looking at me with anger and hate

Ichinose was barely standing, Looked at me. Her beautiful blue eyes full of fear and anxiety. A small light sparkled in them upon seeing me

" A-Ayanokouji-kun ?! ... "

" That's my name, Sorry for being lat- " Ichinose ran and Hugged me tightly, Tears falling from her eyes as she cried on my shirt, Nagumo looking more pissed off clenched his teeth. I started patting her head " It's okay Ichinose, You did great. I'll take it from here "

Ichinose let go of my Shirt which was quite wet, and sat on the side. I nodded to her and turned to face Nagumo

" You're quite the dedicated Vice-president Nagumo-senpai " Nagumo looked ready to attack i pulled out my phone and made it on speaker mode

(Nagumo, What in the world do you think you're you doing ?)

" Horikita ... Senpa- "

(You shouldn't call me that when you're no longer a student at this school Nagumo)

Nagumo's face turned pale as he stared at the phone

(Nagumo, You are expelled from the Advanced Nurturing High school, Come to the Faculty Room. NOW) Manabu's words was forceful and full of frustration

Nagumo while staring at the ground, Walked out of the floor head down. Manabu took a long sigh

" Are you okay Manabu-senpai ? "

(Yeah, It's a shame that a student as excellent as Nagumo would do something like that. It's a great loss but it is what it is)

" I see, What about Shibata and Kanzaki ? "

(They were quite beaten up, But nothing serious, They are at the infirmary right now. Besides, Shouldn't you worry about what's gonna happen to you right now ?)

" What do you mean ? " I hope he doesn't bring that. Please

Manabu Don-

(You have a confession to answer, And from a beautiful girl like Ichinose- Ouch Why did you do that Tachibana)

" Eeeeh ? " Ichinose didn't expect that, She was blushing furiously.

" D-D-Did you H-Hear ? "

(Oops. My bad, Good Luck Kiyotaka !) He said Hanging up, I made a mental note to take revenge on him

I looked at Ichinose's Red face " Yes, All of it "

" Ummm, C-Can Y-You Forge- "

" Did you really mean it Ichinose ? "

My words seems to make her more Flustered, Her teary eyes's looked into mine

" Y-Yes ... I-I Love you, Ayanokouji-kun "

I get it, So it was you all along huh ? Love ?

Hearing her words made that small feeling Explode and cover my entire body, Pleasant feeling and easiness, Excitement and happiness in the same mix.

I tried to see if i feel the same with other girls. However, It was only Ichinose that I shared that with. She was the first person to spark a light in my dark heart that knew nothing but results.

I remembered once again that i was human. And i could feel emotions too.

But that doesn't deny the fact that i'm a Monster, Lab rat used for the Only purpose of Finding results. A heartless monster that feels nothing. Thought of all humans as nothing but tools to achieve his goals. A nemesis that couldn't feel the slightest amount of compassion.

I decided to show my real personality, My eyes that were covered in a facade was full of darkness. If the person Called Ichinose Honami accepts me regardless. I will cherish her for the rest of my life, And accept her as my girlfriend or a weakness like that man would name it

Ichinose tensed up and started trembling as she looked down. *Sigh, I shouldn't have had my hopes up. Well too much for that.*

I started walking away. However, Ichinose hugged me from behind, Tears rolling up from her eyes " I'm Sorry ! "

" Why are you Apologiz- "

" I never knew ! How ! ... " She kept crying on my blazer " My closest friend ... Who has saved me countless times when i was broken or When i was suffering, was suffering much greater than i did, How ! "

My blazer was getting more wet by the second, But that was my least worries

" I'm Sorry Ayanokouji-kun, I'm sorry for being so weak that you

saved me alot of times, and i failed to notice that you were suffering much greater than i did " She let go of me " That's right, You don't deserve someone weak like me *sniff* Someone failed to notice you're pain *Sniff* Someone you saved countless times and she's didn't consider saving you *sniff* "

She looked down and said " I-I'll see you tomorrow, Ayanokouji-kun "

She started walking towards the stairs, Looking down while sniffing.

However, I grabbed her wrist, She turned to look at me

" Hnng ! ... "

I Pressed my lips against hers, She looked Shocked, After a few seconds She putted her hands on my neck and pulled me in deepening our kiss, I did the same by hugging her by the waist. " Warm "

After a few seconds we broke our kiss. She was blushing harder than ever which made her cute

" Was that ... a yes ? " She said in a low voice

" I thought it was Obvious "

I went and kissed her again, This time she totally gave in, I licked her bottom lip requesting permission which she totally gave, Exploring the depth of her mouth, She did the same and we both *Explored* Each other. After 30 seconds we broke off again.

" I love you Aya- Kiyotaka-kun "

" I love you too Honami " I said wiping the tears off her Cute blushing face

The person named Ichinose Honami Accepted the monster, As unbelievable as it seems, It happened. Is this what love is ? I read about it in stories that love doesn't get affected no matter what, I Thought that was just a stretch of fiction, Is it actually True ?

Ichinose Honami is the first girl That Genuinely Loved me, And the first that i loved. It feels good Casually Saying the word Love, It feels nice.

" Eeeh ? " Honami looked shocked at me

" What's wrong ? " I said

" Kiyotaka-kun, You ... You You Smiled ! "

" Did i ? "

" Yep you Totally did ! I was the first one to see Kiyotaka-kun smile in this entire school right ? " Did i actually smile ? I guess it's not that impossible

" I guess you're right, You were the first person ever to make me smile Honami "

" Hehe, Don't worry Kiyotaka-kun, i'll someday break that poker face of yours, I succeeded slightly today, But just so you wait " She

said With Enthusiasm

" Give it your worst Honami, I'm looking for it " She smiled beautifully, With that we started heading towards the Infirmary Holding hands.

I guess i owe it to Manabu huh ? Then i should repay him the same way.

Just so you wait, Tachibana Akane

Listen i know i rushed things, I F up, But i'll manage, I wasn't thinking straight.

Ignore that would you look at this

LETS

F##KING

GOOOOOOOOOOOOôOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

Anyway let me tell you a funny story real quick, I started reading Cote at the start of this year (1st Of January 2022) because i waited 2 years but no second season so i gave up

I Finished every volume at the 6th of February. After i finished it the sequel was announced

Ironic isn't it ?

The next Chapter is gonna be Midterms final part and the end of Arc 1

Nagumo is a lost cause. Do you think i rushed things or did it play out perfectly ? I'm open for criticism

Sayonara

Arc 1 Chap 8 : The midterms Final Part

Honami and I were walking towards the Infirmary holding hands. After what happened earlier Honami and I Officially became Boyfriend and Girlfriend, Which is also a part of a normal high school life.

We walked past many people, Girls blushed and boys Glared at me. But i just fended them off, I wanted to enjoy this moment, Together with Honami.

We kept walking until we reached the infirmary, We could already hear Chatter inside, We opened the door to see 5 Faces looking at us, Kanzaki and Shibata were both laying on beds with bandages on their faces. With them were Amikura, Minamikata and Shiranami. The rest of the group

" HONAMI-CHAN ! " Shiranami jumped up and hugged Honami while crying, Honami patted her heads

" Ichinose-sa..n, We are glad " Said Shibata with a smile while being in pain

" Honami-chan ! Are you alright ? Nagumo didn't do anything to you right ? " Said Amikura who genuinely looked worried

Honami Shook her head " No, He didn't. Thanks to Kiyotaka-kun " She said, A Light blush could be spotted on her face

Everyone's eyes widened in surprise. Amikura was the first to change ... Into a big grin.

I went and sat next to Kanzaki " Are you guys okay ? I'm sorry for ditching you alone against 4 strong upperclassmen "

They both looked at me and smiled

" I don't see why are you apologizing Ayanokouji, Saving Ichinose was the top priority " Said Kanzaki

" You didn't do anything wrong Ayanokouji-kun, You saved Ichinose-san, So it's worth it "Said Shibata

" How is your condition ? " Honami said, Looking quite pained at the sight of them

" The doctor said that it will take at least a month to fully heal, But we can still do move and go back to school, It's nothing serious " That's good news, I believe that Kanzaki and Shibata would be just fine in those midterms. Despite their condition, They are strong enough to keep pushing forward

Honami looking Guilty, She Looked down. Thankfully the girls

reassured her.

" By the way Ayanokouji "

" What's up Kanzaki ? "

" What's up with your clothes ? " Ah, I totally forgot

" When i fought with Nagumo he had a bottle of water he used to try and blur my vision, But he ended up missing "

" You fought Nagumo ? What happened to him ? " Minamikata who was watching us with the rest of the girls in the background asked

" He got expelled " At my words everyone shivered.

" I see, That is only natural right ? " Said Amikura and everyone nodded " By the way what's up with you guys using first names ? " Amikura sensing the situation dying down, Brought another topic with her usual grin.

" Ummm- W-We A-Are D-D-Da- "

" Honami and I became lovers "

" Eh ? " Everyone in the room screamed in unison, and looked at Honami who was the blushing mess she usually is

Amikura was the first one to break out of her shock, Looked at me with a smirk

" Ara Ara~ Ayanokouji-kun, I never knew you were the type to take advantage of the vulnerable side of women, You're so naughty and cheeky~ " Amikura said with a huge grin while drawing circles with her finger in the air.

With a good excuse, The girls jumped and tried to tease us both, I remained unfazed like usual but the same couldn't be said to Honami

I looked towards the boys, This time around they both gave me a thumbs up, What a trouble-some group.

" Finally Honami-chan, Took you long enough " Said Minamikata

" Yep, You've been this wary of Ayanokouji-kun for a while, You even brought your perfume to impress him after you looked it up on the internet " Teased Amikura

" MAKO-CHAN ! " Honami screamed, The rest laughed at the blushing mess. It was quite wholesome, This is what friendship is ? In my opinion, It's an amazing thing. I unintentionally smiled, But it went unnoticed.

" Everyone " Honami said gathering everyone's attention, She looked down *So she decided to do it* " I have a secret to tell you "

It was the day of the midterms, I woke up at 4:30 AM for my morning exercise. I've been going on everyday to keep my physical

condition up.

After Honami revealed her past to our classmates, Her popularity got boosted even more, I wasn't expecting that but our classmates were surprisingly very understanding, Probably because of the strong faith they already put into her.

I was joggling recalling the events of the previous days, When i saw the blonde haired student from the bus sitting at one of the chairs, Legs crossed, Smirking.

He noticed me coming to him, As he looked at me with one eye and crossed his legs again

" Hmmm "

I ignored him and kept joggling

" You know it's rude to ignore a fellow perfect existence " I froze on my place, *A fellow perfect existence ? Could he know about me ? No it seems unlikely but ...*

" You're talking to me ? "

" Mhm- " He then stood up and started walking towards me " I never would have thought that i would meet the masterpiece himself in this school, And here i thought the next Three years are going to be boring. Ha ! Guess lady luck is on my side "

I glared at him. He definitely knows about me, If he wanted to spread my secret he would've have done so long ago, What does he want from me ?

" No need to be hostile Ayanokouji-boy, I just wanted to greet a fellow perfect existence, But never think that you'll surpass me. Ha ! I Am the true perfect human "

He stood next to me and raised his hand " I'm Kouenji Rokusuke, Since you are the masterpiece, I wouldn't mind to spare you a handshake from the the greatness himself " I took his hand and shook it

" Nice meeting you perfect-existence-kun, May i know what business you have with me ? "

" Hmph ! No need to be wary Ayanokouji-boy, I'm not gonna spread your secret as you deduced, I just wanted to see the masterpiece of that man, Ha ! " With that he walked away. Hand raised in the sky, Satisfied with this current predicament

As i watched him disappear, Only one thought came to my brain. *What a weirdo.*

I kept going with my exercise while pondering about what happened. Someone already knows about that place and about me, I wonder how many more.

** Time skip **

All of us sitting in silence waiting for the homeroom to start, News travel fast as now the whole school is aware of my relationship with Honami, There were Also rumors linking us with Nagumo's expulsion and the suspended upperclassmen, Great more attention to deal with.

The bell rang and Chie-sensei waltzed into the room with her usual cheerful expression(I decided to call her that because Hoshinomiya is a pain to write with the phone)

" Alright everyone~ I hope you're ready for your midterms, Before we start does anyone have any questions ? " We shook our heads " Great ! Then I Officially declare the start of your first-year midterms, Good luck Everyone~ "

I received my paper and and waited for the signal, I could feel Honami's nervous gazes towards me

" Flip~ "

I flipped my paper and " Its the same " I looked around the classroom to see my classmates sighing in relieve, No one appeared to be having difficulties. Probably the same could be said to Class D

I looked towards Honami who gave me a warm smile and muttered " You were Right " I nodded and went to my paper

" Time for speedrun "

** Timeskip **

The bell rang signaling the end of the day, All my classmates were relieved, Happy that we came on top unscathed

I got invited again to hang out with Honami, Shibata, Kanzaki and Amikura which i gracefully accepted.

We went to a movie theater first, Where we stumbled upon an unexpected people

" Ah Horikita-senpai, Good evening " Said Honami, Manabu was talking with the receptionist, With him was Tachibana. Hmmmmmm

" Oh Ichinose, And Kiyotaka too. Fancy seeing you here "

" Yeah fancy seeing you here Horikita-senpai, Are you on a date with Tachibana-senpai ? " Amikura smirked at him. I Told Amikura about the details of the confession and asked her help to Ship Manabu And Tachibana together so i can take revenge to which she agreed instantly. I felt like like making a deal with the devil, But having her on my side would be a big help

Manabu remained unfazed. However, Tachibana got flustered and started blushing while waiting for his response

I gave Tachibana a thumbs up, Sending her the go-get-em

message, She perked up for a sec.

" No, She just invited me to watch a movie with her " Tachibana got disappointed, This is gonna be harder than i thought.

" You don't know how to read the room can you ? You two going out together and enjoying each other's company while going through fun stuff, It sounds like a date to me " Said Amikura

Manabu looked at Tachibana set a good facade, She smiled at him " I guess it's a date then "

Tachibana perked up, She gave us a look of gratitude, Amikura and i fist-bumped celebrating the successful first steps. Honami looking confused at our actions, While the others chuckled.

We scrolled through the list of movies, There was Horror, Comedy, Action and even Anime

Amikura insisted that we watch a romance Movie with the support of Tachibana and Shibata. We paid and went inside the theater

I went and sat on my seat, On my right was Honami, And on my left Was Manabu. Beside Manabu was Tachibana and beside her was Amikura. We planned those seating to ensure the correct placement of our plan on the fly, Perfect.

However, there was one problem. It was the armrests, There was one on each side, I was holding hands with Honami on my right, while i fully invaded the other, Manabu's arm brushed into mine , He tried to find some space but he gave up. It's up to you Amikura.

The lights turned dim and the movie started and it was interesting, It's based on sorcery and magic. A very strong princess went into war and fought with a saint disciple, But he ended up saving her life against some third party who blended into her forces, She ended up falling for him. But the nature of their positions made it impossible due to war between the two countries, They kept fighting while going on secret dates off duty.

However, The ending was tragic as the Saint got captured and held on public execution for everyone to see, And what's worse it was the princess that was ordered to captivate him, She ended up refusing and tried to free him, But she got shot from her back from forces that expected her betrayal.

Honami started crying while holding my hand tightly, I looked towards Manabu who was calming Tachibana down, Even Amikura started crying. Sigh

The movie ended on a scene where the princess was on a classroom, Joined by a transfer student, And that student was

The end

we could clearly tell that it was the saint disciple, Everyone shared the same thoughts.

Honami calmed down as she slowly regained her aura, Manabu was aiding Tachibana who was still crying, Probably on purpose.

" That really was something " Said Amikura

" Yeah its depressive, Shibata couldn't even stop crying " Said Kanzaki while looking at a red eyed Shibata

" I couldn't help it okay ? It was really sad " Sniffed Shibata

I turned to look at Manabu who was wiping Tachibana's tears with a paper, Amikura gave me a thumbs up. She did a way better job than i anticipated, I'll have to thank her later

" It was fun while it lasted, But we have to go now, If you'll excuse us " With That Manabu walked away, Tachibana gave us a warm smile before following Manabu, Today was a success.

We continued at an Italian restaurant, Talking about trivial matters, Apparently, Shibata told us a story that i found quite amusing. On soccer practice, He was dribbling a player on the side before he served the ball to his teammates. However, as he was about to serve he fell and kicked the ball with more force, The ball ended going in the direction of one of the defenders who tried to block the fast ball with his chest but ended up scoring an own-goal instead. The goal was awarded to Shibata Nevertheless.

We reached the dorms, and Dispersed. When the elevator's door opened, A Girl with lilac short hair holding a cane emerged from the Elevator, She let out a shocked expression upon seeing me, Moment later her shock quickly disappeared and a smug smile replaced it

" Fufufu, This has to be fate " She said in a low voice " I never expected to see you here of all places Ayanokouji-kun "

" Do you know me ? " I went through every possibility, *Could it be because of my relationship with Honami ? That wouldn't explain her Shock, She said that like she already knows me. Could it be that this person is aware of that place too ?*

" Fufufu, Of course i do, After all you're the masterpiece "

" How do you know about that place ? "

" I don't think you want to talk about something like that here no ? " I nodded " Then your room it is "

I climbed on the elevator who was opened for a while now and headed towards the forth floor, I opened my door and She immediately sat on my bed

I put water into the cane and started boiling it, After all i wouldn't want to be called a bad host

" Coffee, Tea or Cocoa ? " I asked

" I'll have some tea please "

I poured the hot water into a tea cup, Along with a cup of cocoa, I handed the Loli her tea cup while i sat on the ground looking at

her sipping from her tea.

" My name is Sakayanagi Arisu and yes, I am the chairman's daughter and Class B's leader " The chairman was the one who helped enroll at this school, He Sympathized with me and offered me a fun highschool life, That's why he enrolled me in Class B Thinking that it was the best for that reason, But he wasn't wrong.

" How do you know about me ? " I said in an intimidating tone, However, Sakayanagi remained unfazed, Looking at me with her smug smile

" Fufufu, It's been 8 Years and 69 days Ayanokouji-kun, I still remember that day like it was yesterday " She continued " A Child who solved every test question without a sweat, Defeating Chess Grandmasters like it's nothing. His apathetic expression never changed, Even now "

I see, So the chairman didn't tell her about me, They both visited the Whiteroom some long and observed me.

" From that day, I strove to become better. I who was born a genius, Couldn't accept a fake genius surpassing me so i worked hard despite my condition, To crush the masterpiece. To crush you " She said with a smug smile

" That would be ideal, I hope to be defeated someday, But it's not possible. However, If you Sakayanagi can bury me, Then i'll be grateful for you. After all my loss is that man's defeat, But its not possible "

" Fufufu, Don't be so sure Ayanokouji-kun, You didn't see my abilities yet. I would bury you, The fake genius, And prove that the natural born Geniuses are the superior "

I can trust Sakayanagi to keep my secret, She strove for long years to the day that she could face me and defeat me. She believe that i'm her prey and hers alone, Spreading my secret would mean that more people would try and challenge the masterpiece.

" Well this meeting has been fruitful Ayanokouji-kun, Now i can see how you guys managed to climb to Class A " She sat and walked towards the door " It's a shame that you already got a girlfriend, Well See you around "

" Wha- " *Clark.*

The sound of the door closing cut through my sentence. Now another person knows about me. I believe that neither of them is interested in spreading it, Kouenji with his self-centered attitude wouldn't want to get to the trouble of spreading it, And Sakayanagi doesn't want her prey to be snatched away from her, I'm safe. For now.

This meeting was been productive indeed, She isn't someone i should underestimate, I'm looking forward to your challenge,

** Timeskip * The next day*

It was lunch time, I sat on my seat watching our classmates as they formed groups and headed to the cafeteria.

" K-Kiyotaka-kun ! "

As i was walking outside the door, Honami called out to me, She walked close to me with a cute blush. Behind her was Amikura grinning, I think i can see where is this going

" Yes Honami ? "

" Do you w-want to eat at the cafeteria t-together ? ... " She said still blushing " I-If you don't want then Its O-Oka- "

" I would love to eat with you Honami, I'm sorry for not inviting you, I thought you were going to eat with your friends that's why i didn't ask " I said while adding a way for the conversation to continue, My social skills are getting better thanks to Class A and Honami

Honami perked up " No you don't have to apologize Kiyotaka-kun, I'm your girlfriend so you can invite me anytime " She Said, My heart started racing, Is this a date ? It could be a small one, Dates are usually long and with a lot of stuff involved.

I nodded while giving her a smile, Which she blushed at, Cute

I looked towards the remaining of our classmates, They were smiling at the wholesome scene infront of them, Some gave me a thumbs up including Amikura.

With that we walked down the hallway holding hands, Her hand was soft and gentle. We walked past many people who glared at us, Specifically me. The rumored Boyfriend of The Ichinose Honami

We kept walking until we stumbled upon someone i wished i wouldn't meet

" Kukuku So monster can feel love eh ? " Ryueen with his infamous 'kuku' looked at me with a smirk, Like he's seen something interesting.

" Monster ? ... " Honami looked displeased with Ryueen's appearance, Muttered loud enough to hear, Behind Ryueen emerged Albert, Ishizaki and ... Surprisingly Hiyori, She gave me a bright smile while waving.

" Yea, When i heard about Monster dating someone, Ichinose of all people. I just laughed and Slapped whoever told me that, I didn't think it was true " Ryueen's smile disappeared for a sec while recalling something, Before it returned back " Well Anyway, Just a

minor accidents "

" Is there anything wrong with Honami ? " I said, Ryueen's smirk widened at my question

" No not at all " He walked past us, Before he turned back " Just a friendly advice Ichinose, Be mindful when you handle T-Rex Kukuku " With that he started to walk away.

" T-Rex ? " Honami turned to me with a confused look " What does he mean by that Kiyotaka-kun ? " Ryueen Laughed again by hearing Honami, *He had to say that.*

" It's nothing, Ryueen is always spouting nonsense, I think that this is one of them "

However, Ryueen's laughter stopped as he looked at Hiyori with a serious expression " Ryueen-kun, What did you mean by T-Rex ? "

Ryueen looking grim " When you grow up, You'll understand " That made Hiyori more curious, And asked him more questions as they disappeared, *Enjoy the situation you created for yourself Dragon-boy*

We walked to the cafeteria and sat on the table, I went and ordered my food, While Honami brought a Bento

" You seen quite close With Ryueen-kun " Said Honami

" I wouldn't say close, But after the cafeteria incident we kinda became rivals and he started attacking me whenever " I said taking a bite of my fried fish, It was good but not fully cleaned, If someone carelessly munched on them they could be injured.

" Are you okay ? " Said Honami, Looking at me with a worried expression

" I'm perfectly fine, It's not like he succeeded on landing a hit yet, So i can take it as a light exercise " I Shrugged, Honami's look of worry faded into a smile

" Kiyotaka-kun, Do you Exercise ? " I narrowed my eyes before she continued " You're like super strong and you have a hot body, I was wondering if you do exercise because i never saw you outside of P.E Classes "

" I do exercise on the mornings everyday " I Said honestly

" Oh ? When ? "

" Around 4:30 AM "

" I see "

Honami opened her bento, And there was multiple foods, From Riceballs to small fried chicken.

" Do you make your own bentos ? " I think the answer is obvious, But decided to ask anyway, Honami blushed a little

" Y-yes " She responded " D-Do you wanna try ? "

" Absolutely " She perked up at my response. Its seems like this was her plan all along, I can guess what's gonna happen next, Call it

men's intuition

She picked one of the fried chicken with her chopstick and pulled it close to my mouth with a blush " Say Aaah "

" Aaah ... " She fed me the crispy fried chicken

As i took my first bite, The delicious flavor and juices all poured into my mouth, The chicken was cooked perfectly, Every time i munched i felt better

Honami chuckled " What's wrong ? " I said while eating

" You look soooo cute and adorable when you're eating Kiyotaka-kun~ Just Like a child " She looking at my face with a cute smile.

" I couldn't help it, This was just too good " Honami got flustered at my sudden compliment

" thank you " She muttered in a low voice while blushing

I took one piece of fried fish and pulled it close to her mouth, She looked Surprised

" Ah "

" It's only fair ... "

She opened her mouth while i fed her.

I looked around and unsurprisingly, Almost everyone was staring at us, Some of them averted their eyes at my gaze, And before i knew it, We were the center of attention again. *That makes it 4 times, I wonder how much more*

I noticed Amikura with the rest of my friends on one of the corners, I sighed internally, What a trouble-some group.

I turned my attention back to Honami.

" This is good Kiyotaka-kun " She said with a smile

" It is, But not as good as yours " Honami got flustered again. There was a moment of silence before she spoke up

" Do you want Do you want me to make you b-bentos ? " She asked

" Would that be okay with you ? "

" Yep ! It would be no problem ! "

" I'm sure but you would spend more points than usual, I could transf- "

" No you don't have to do that Kiyotaka-kun, Really if i wasn't okay with it i wouldn't have suggested it " She explained " So ? ... "

She looked at me with anticipation

" I would love that very much. I'll take you up in that offer "

She smiled brightly and clapped her hands together " It's a deal then "

We finished our lunch and headed back to our class, Finishing our little date with it. We got teased by our classmates when we returned, But it didn't linger as the bell rang.

And with that, Another Day of my High school life continues

This is the end of Arc 1, And let me share some of my thoughts about it.

When i started this fanfic i didnt expect it to reach almost 3k reads this fast, I am truly grateful.

The midterms chap was bigger than i thought, I could blame it on the season 2 announcement which disturbed my senses and made me rush some stuff, But it turned out better than i thought.

The upcoming arc is the start of class conflict and issss the trial not. I have an idea of what to do but i'll fish for more

If you have any ideas for the next arcs don't hesitate, Who knows maybe i'll adopt your ideas

I may or maynot do a SS, Its heavily leaning to yes, if im satisfied with a SS i'll post it

Sayonara

Ichinose Honami SS : A Change

Sometimes, I Wonder. The answer was obvious but i still questioned

Why did i come to this school ?

I was again reminded, That i'm just a run away, A Weak Girl.

I Ran away. As far as i can, I couldn't take responsibility.

I could've went to a normal High school and live with my family and friends. But i was

Scared

Affraid

Affraid that my Sin would torment me using people. Scared that my past would haunt me.

That's why i shut my self in hoping for salvation

That's when a opportunity presented itself : The Advanced nurturing High school. Free of Charge and no contact with the outside world, It was like a godsent special for me.

I ran away to this school, Running away from my past, Hoping for a change.

But the dark pit of the past flew to the heavens to drown me again.

Despair And Suffer, I was chosen between two options that was Basically the same.

That's when i realized that I was still weak

How could i hope for a change when i my self don't change.

I came to this school, Carrying my past with me that i wanted to run away from.

I was swollen by it, Little by Little Despair took me. I was still the weak girl that would run away, I kept denying it hoping for a better life. It was all over like that.

I came to run away from my past, Not only i brought it with me. I ended up sharing it with Nagumo.

Nagumo took advantage of this weak girl, Pulling her into the despair.

As i thought that it was all over, He came.

He Fought the creeping veins of despair and chased them deep into my heart.

He ended up freeing me from my past, And from The despair and suffering and presented a third option

He saved me.

He gave this weak girl a chance for a change, I who was lost deep in my heart's darkness, lighted a path for me.

I was once again reminded of the reason i came to this school, However...

It was different. If i didn't come to this school i wouldn't have met the wonderful people on it.

I was reminded again about my goal. But i had the support of my friends and the people i'm around.

I was reminded that i still have an opportunity to change, With the help of my friends.

I couldn't let this opportunity go to vain, I together with him.

I looked at the back of the brown haired boy, Who was walking away, After presenting my opportunity.

Little did he know. While he was at it, He stole my heart

What do you think ?

Arc 2 Chap 1 : Trouble brewing

" Good morning everyone~ You know what today is right ? " Questioned Chie-sensei while standing on the podium.

" Today is the results of our midterms right ? " Answered Shibata.

" Not Quite~ Today is also the day we announce your Class Points for May ! Isn't it Exciting~ ? " Exclaimed Chie while Making a V With her fingers close to her face smiling (**IDK WHAT IS THIS POSE CALLED**)

Everyone looked at each other nervously. Providing that we most likely had the best grades on the whole grade, Expulsion was still on the table. Chie sensing the weird atmosphere, She spread a rolled Poster on the Board, It was the results of our midterms

" Woah Look at those Perfect Scores ! "

27 Yes 27 of the students in Class A Got a perfect score across the board, And no one got below a 90. I Belong to the 27 perfect scorers, Those are splendid results.

" When i was correcting your papers i couldn't contain my joy so i started crying, Some papers ended up being wet. Everyone, You made Sensei proud~ " She smiled at us like a proud mother.

" We did nothing Sensei, If you want to thank someone, Thank Ichinose-san. She was the one who brought those test papers ! " Said by one girl

" Yeah " " We owe it to Ichinose-san " Students Jumped into the Hype Train and started Praising Honami, The girl in question started Scratching her cheek while sending some side glances at me, I told her to not worry and take credit for what i did. After all her position as the Class leader would get stronger as a result.

" Thank you everyone ! But Really, You were the ones who worked hard, Give your selves some credit " Said Honami

" And Nooooow for the second event~ " She Posted another poster on the Board " These are your class points for The month of may, Tomorrow you would get your points ! "

Class A : 1076 C.P (+96 CP)

Class B : 1004 C.P (+84 CP)

Class C : 574 C.P (+84 CP)

Class D : 85 C.P (+85 CP)

I Messaged Hirata about his class's state, He told me that everyone managed to pass and Sudou barely passed by 1 mark

difference, Yikes.

Seems like He used the test papers i gave him quite well, I'm not sure if he held onto them until the last day or he immediately bet his own Class's lifeline on my prediction but either way he succeeded on preventing expulsions.

I Screenshotted my conversation with him and sent it to Honami, She Grabbed her phone and checked my message. Moments later she responded, Relieved that no one got expelled and looked at me with a warm and beautiful smile, I Wanted really badly to pat her head but i held myself from doing so.

The bell rang and the class continued

It was lunch time. Me, Kanzaki and Shibata went to the cafeteria to grab a bite. We sat and they ordered their food. However, I Brought a bento.

" Hmmm " Kanzaki noticed the dangerous item i brought, Hummed before asking " Don't mind me Ayanokouji, Is this bento from Ichinose ? " Shibata who was looking around the Cafeteria focused his attention on me.

I Responded with a nod before opening the Bento. Instantly, I Got welcomed by how rich and generous the flavors are, The texture was top-notch. I Can't wait to dig in

" Woah, You're so lucky Ayanokouji-kun ! I Wish i had a girlfriend too " Shibata gazed into the air fantasizing, Before he turned to face me again " I Mean how did you do it ? You got a girl like Ichinose-san as your girlfriend, And on a period of 2 months ! You're quite the smooth operator, Teach me Ayanokouji-sensei " However, At the mention of that name i felt my compute crack abit. *Anything but that nickname*

" I Have zero experience on romance, I don't know what i can teach you " I Answered Honestly, it was cliché, But the truth. I don't think he would be convinced easily

" But you managed to get a girlfriend, Atleast tell me what happened so i could deduce for my self " Shibata said with his hand on his Chin

" Well, when i went to rescue her from Nagumo, I Happened to hear that he asked her out but she rejected him and told him that she loves me instead " I Continued " I Checked it out with her after i kicked Nagumo and she confirmed it so i told her my honest feelings and we became lovers " I Said taking a sip from my miso

soup.

" SO IT WAS ICHINOSE-SAN WHO CONFESSED TO YOU ? " Shibata stood from his seat and Yelled, Moments later He seems to realize that he spoke alittle too loud and caused everyone to look at us again. *That makes it 5, WTF.*

" Sorry " He muttered under his breath, Kanzaki Patted his Shoulders as he sat " But i thought for sure it was you who confessed i mean that's how it usu- "

" Excuse me are you guys from Class A ? " A Girl who was carrying a plate with her approached us

" Yes Do you have business with us ? " Responded Kanzaki, The girl got happy as she heard him

" Yes, May i sit here ? I Have something to discuss with you " We looked at eachother, Before Kanzaki Nodded " Great ! "

She sat on the seat next To Shibata " My name is Nanami Yabu from Class C "

" Nice to meet you Nanami-san, I'm Shibata Sou and this is Ayanokouji-kun and Kanzaki-kun "

" Shibata-kun, Ayanokouji-kun, Kanzaki-kun. Thank you for having me here " She bowed at us

" So what did you want to discuss with us ? " Kanzaki Got straight the point, A Serious Expression Plastered into his Face

" Ah you see " She started Scratching her Cheek while she looked down out of embarrassment " I-I-I

" You ? "

" I-I- I l-like one of your C-classmates " She said still looking down, Kanzaki was baffled by this. Shibata took the initiative and spoke

" One of our classmates ? Who ? " Said Shibata getting alittle Excited

" C-Can you promise that ... You w-won't tell Anyone ? "

" Yep ! I won't breath a word ! Right guys ? " We nodded, This seems to ease her abit.

" I-It's R-Ryouta-Kun " We all looked at eachother.

Ryouta Beppu. He is above average in both physical and Academical Ability, And his looks aren't bad either. He is Mature, Calm and collective, He sometimes Participates on the class discussions and has not a large social circle, However he seems to enjoy his time with his friends.

" So you want us to mediate between you and Ryouta ? " Kanzaki stated the obvious, He received a nod from her

" I-If it isn't not much trouble. I Would also like to get some tips aswell on how to approach h-him "

" Don't worry, We'll help you ! And for tips you can ask

Ayanokouji-kun ! He is dating The Ichinose Honami-san " Shibata Exclaimed, He looks excited to help her get close to Ryouta, However, I Wasn't a big fan of my name being put in there

" S-So you're Ayanokouji-kun right ? " She looked at me, I Nodded " Nice To meet you, Will you help me too ? "

" Depends, If it's within my abilities then i'll do, And nice to meet you too Nanami " She Smiled lightly " So how do you plan on approaching him ? "

" Ah.... Ummmm- " She got flustered and looked down again " I Was planning on C-Confessing B-But i think i'm rushing things "

" Yeah, If you confessed right away you'll probably get rejected " Said Kanzaki, He Appears to be interested. *Interesting...*

" Yeah, That's why i came to you guys. I Thought i could use your help and advice " She Responded

" I'm not close with Ryouta-kun, But my impression of him is that he is very mature, Using something stupid or a weak Excuse would lead to an inevitable Failure " Shibata seems deep on thought, Moments later he raised his head with wide eyes " How about we hangout together ! We can ask Ryouta-kun's friends to hang out with us and invite him, And you'll bring some of your friends too so it doesn't appear suspicious, And you start by becoming friends then you can slowly get closer to him ! How does that sound ? "

If Shibata's brain could be used with this efficiency on other matters, He would definitely Excel. Such a shame

Nanami thought about the idea before Nodding " Great idea ! How about we do it today ? "

" I Have to check it out first with Ryouta-kun's group, I'll send you the time and place when i convince them " Said Shibata

With that We Exchanged Contact Information and headed back towards our respective class. Shibata went and told Honami about what happened which she agreed to help them alongside Amikura. Obviously Amikura wouldn't miss.

Honami Shyly Asked about my opinion on her cooking, Which i responded Positively. She looked happy at my response. However, The Amikura Omen Prevailed. She teased her until lunch break was over.

The Next Day

I Was climbing down the elevator getting ready for my morning Exercise. The Elevator door open and i instantly Spotted Honami sitting on one of the sofas waiting for someone, She looked sleepy

but was holding her self well. Naturally i approached her

" Waiting for someone ? "

" Ah ! Good morning Kiyotaka-kun, And yes i was waiting for you

" She said with her usually bright smile

" Waiting for me ? is it something so important that you'll wake up very early on the morning ? "

" No, It's nothing serious ! I Just wanted to Exercise with you, That's all " She blushed alittle " I Mean if it's not a problem with you "

" No it's no problem. However i'm not sure if you can keep up " She looked up eyes beaming

" You are heavily underestimating Kiyotaka-kun, I'm not as athletic as Shibata-kun but i'm sure i can keep up " I Looked at her and smiled, *ah you poor thing*

" Alright, Let's go then " I Said as i started Jogging

" By the way, I Didn't ask you about your routine " She Said

" You'll see "

*** After 2 Laps ***

" Haa ! ... Haa ! "

" We can take a break if you want "

" No I'm gonna Keep going "

" Ok "

*** 2 Minutes Later ***

" Kiyota.....ka-kun I Can't "

" Let's take a break " I stopped and went to aid her to a nearby tree, She leaned on me breathing heavily " I'm honestly impressed that you held up this much, You weren't lying when you said you can keep up "

She sat under the three leaning on it while catching air, She looked exhausted, I guess i went alittle hard on her

" You don't look like you're out of breath at all " She marked

" Well i'm used to doing this everyday " I Shrugged

" Just how many laps you do ? "

" Around 15, It heavily depends on my mood " She widened her eyes at my response " You can sit here and rest, I'll keep on going "

" So you're going to leave your defenseless girlfriend and leave ? You're so insensitive Kiyotaka-kun ! What if someone comes and starts hitting on me " Teased Honami while pouting.

" If that happens then i'll just kick their sorry asses " Honami Chuckled with a little blush.

I kept jogging, While Honami joined in whenever she recovers, It was such a refreshing experience exercising with someone else.

After we were done we both went to our respective dorms. While i was taking a bath i heard my phone vibrate.

I wiped my self dry as i checked my phone, It was a message from Manabu

M : [One of the Class C Students filed a report against one of your classmates] Seems like trouble is coming.

K : [What did they say ?]

M : [You'll hear the details from your homeroom teacher] This doesn't make sense

K : [Then why did you message me ?]

M : [I thought i'd Give you a heads up. Because this situation is totally ridiculous]

K : [Ridiculous ? What do you mean ?]

M : [You'll figure it out yourself]

I couldn't accurately pinpoint what kind of ridicule Manabu was talking about, and there was still one hour left for class, So i messaged Honami

K : [Honami you're heading towards the student council correct ?]

She didn't take long to respond

H : [Yeah, I got a message from The president summoning me, How did you know ?]

K : [*File attached.png*] i sent her the screenshot of my messages with Manabu

K : [I think it's related to this]

H : [I see I'll tell you the details when i confirm it]

K : [That would be nice]

I went and laid on my bed and sighed

" What a troublesome start to the day "

** Timeskip to homeroom **

The bell rang and on that precise moment, Chie-sensei walked into the room, She looked somewhat gloomy.

" Everyone I have some bad news "

Everyone shivered after hearing Chie's words, I knew what she was going to say because Honami already informed me. However

" Mariko Yajima-kun from Class C filed a complaint against Shibata-kun, He claimed that Shibata-kun deliberately injured him during soccer practice yesterday and he complained to the student council. " However, It was ridiculous, Stupidly ridiculous

" Whaaat ? " Naturally The first one to react was Shibata, He looked genuinely shocked " Wait Wait wait wait, Can you elaborate

Sensei ? "

" That's everything that i was told Shibata-kun, I'm sorry "

" How ? It's true that i tackled towards the ball and injured him, But it wasn't intentional ! Those things are normal in Soccer ! " Shibata and everyone who knew how soccer works knew how stupid this was, But the possibility of the ' intentional ' was present, And it was what made this happen

" You will get interrogated in the faculty room after class Shibata-kun, You have a temporary break from your club so don't worry " Chie couldn't do anything even if she saw how genuine Shibata's reaction " There is one more thing "

One more thing ? I looked towards Honami who appeared to be shocked aswell.

" Don't worry this doesn't include our class " The students sighed in relief but still listened to Chie " Yesterday, Sudou Ken From Class D went into trouble with 3 Class C Students from his Club in the Special building. In other words there was a fight, Sudou-kun claims that it was self defence and there is a witness, If you witnessed what happened please talk to the school That's all "

The homeroom continued in a tense atmosphere

Lunch break came, We decided to eat in the classroom. Most of the students were around Honami's table. I and Kanzaki sat on our seats listening in on their discussions

" I swear it wasn't on purpose " Shibata looking about to cry

" Don't worry Shibata-kun, We believe you " Said Honami.

" They don't have proof that it was intentional anyway " Shrugged Amikura " Don't worry Shibata-kun You'll be fine "

They kept discussing about it, I who listened while digging on the bento Honami Gave me, As Usual it was amazing.

Kanzaki who was silently eating on his seat, Suddenly turned to me " Don't you think it's weird ? "

" Weird ? "

" Yeah, The case with Shibata and Sudou, They were both the assaulters and Class C were the victims, Adding some other suspicious details. It makes me believe it's a deliberate attack from Class C " Kanzaki rose a good point, The two cases had major similarities between them. Pulling something like a staged violence is much easier than manipulating your opponent into injuring a specific student on a soccer match. The fact that it's reported proves that Someone took advantage of this coincidence.

" You mean Ryueen ? " He nodded

" Ryueen is a tyrant after all, I wouldn't be surprised if there is another case on Class B " Exclaimed Kanzaki " If this is Ryueen's way to attack then so be it, It won't do any real damage to our class anyway "

Ryueen had made it clear that he'll enjoy tormenting us apart, And we are on his list. However, This attack is a mere scratch, It was a weak threat that would do nothing but drain us mentally

" What are you two talking about ? " Amikura said, Turning everyone's attention to us

" We were just talking about Ryueen " Said Kanzaki

" So you believe that he is the one behind the incidents too ? " Said Honami, We both nodded. I took another bite of my steak, Honami blushed a little.

" Seems like you're enjoying your food Ayanokouji-kun, Care to share "Said Amikura smirking

I Pulled my arm close to the bento box and covered it " Nao, Thith ith may Footh " I said while stuffing my mouth with riceballs. Everyone laughed at the childish scene i preformed, It wasn't that bad. Seems my preformance easened Shibata abit.

Discussions continued while enjoying our food.

So Ryueen finally took full control over his class and started making moves.

Bring it on Ryueen

Mariko Yajima and Ryouta Beppu are OOC

I Don't know their personalitirs so i just started bluffing.

New chap most likely tomorrow

Arc 2 Chap 2 : Developments

The classes has ended for the day.

Shibata got called to the faculty office for his interrogations.

Honami Along with Amikura, Approached the leaving Ryouta Group

I couldn't hear what they were saying, But Ryouta nodded and Amikura got excited. Honami turned to me and gave me a thumbs up, Seems like it worked.

After Ryouta left i approached Her " What did they say ? "

" They agreed to go to the arcade on tomorrow evening, They were abit skeptical when they heard that a group of Class C students are joining " Responded Honami " But they Agreed " She said with smile

" I see " I gave her a head pat " Do you want to come with me to the special building ? "

" Hmmm ? What are we going to do ? " She said, Blushing.

" Se- " *DAMN IT HORNYKOUJI*

" S-S-S-S-SE..... " Honami Got flustered " K-Kiyotaka-kun Don't Y- You think it's e-early for that ? A-Atleast n-not y-yet "

" We are heading to the special building to search for evidence to Sudou's Case "

" Ah, I see. Well yeah i can come " She calmed down, Her bright smile came back to her face. I'm glad i saved the situation from deep awkwardness.

We made our way to the special building engaging in a small banter.

We entered and headed towards the third floor when we met someone unexpected

" Kanzaki-kun ?! " Kanzaki who was standing deep in thought, Looked at us. He seems surprised too

" Ichinose and Ayanokouji, Did you come to investigate too ? "

" Yep ! I thought we could find some evidence to prove that it was a staged incident " Exclaimed Honami " But since you're here, Can you brief us of what you found ? "

" Well ... We're out of luck, There is no cameras around and it's extremely hot, And there is nearly no evi- " Kanzaki suddenly stopped, Thinking about a sudden idea. It seems like he caught on it fast, He is much smarter than i thought, Him being here in the first

place is proof.

" A Place like this is the best place to execute such a strategy, There is no cameras except inside the rooms. And the heat disturbs your ability to rationalize. Now Honami " I turned to look at her, She looked at me with curiosity " Do you think Komiya, Kondou and Ishizaki are smart enough to choose such a place alone ? "

Honami spoke deep in thought " I didn't socialize with them that much, But if i have to go with what i have ... Then No "

" The report states that Sudou made fun of them for being bad at basketball. However, I don't remember Ishizaki being in any club, This is a mistake that could be exploited " There are much more Circumstantial Evidence, But they are 'Circumstantial' Without any real proof which Class C Possesses, Class D are in deep trouble

Kanzaki who listened carefully to my insight completed his idea " You prove a good point Ayanokouji, With other additions it begs me to believe that Ryueen is behind all of this " He then looked at me " I'm surprised that you're much smarter than you let on, Why is that ? "

" I don't like standing out, Don't worry I'll help you guys, But i want you to keep my abilities a secret " I Offered, Kanzaki wouldn't agree to a request like that without something valuable in return. He would just question me and possibly try to manipulate me.

" I see. Then your secret is safe with us Ayanokouji " I'm glad he didn't probe for more " Well, We've got what we wanted Let's go " However, When we exited the building, We met the Dragon Himself Outside

" Kukuku, What a interesting little group eh ? " Ryueen most likely was waiting outside for us, I noticed that me and Honami were being tailed by Class C Students. I decided to see how far they would go.

" Ryueen " Kanzaki glared at Ryueen Who responded with a wide grin

" No need to be Hostile Kanzaki. I the one who should be, After all your classmate is the one who injured my classmate "

" We all know that it was an accident Ryueen-kun, You don't have any evidence to back it up " Said Honami, Ryueen turned his Attention to her

" Seems like Miss. Leader decided to speak. I thought you'd shut up and let Monster or Kanzaki speak, Guess I couldn't be more wrong " He laughed and started leaving.

" K-Kiyotaka-kun ! "

However, Just as he turned his back at me, He tried to back leg me, I instinctively Dodged it. He turned around and threw an uppercut which i dodged aswell. Hearing Honami's worried

expression he laughed

" What a fucking Monster, How can you even dodge two surprise attacks. What are you ? " He said still smirking

" Well, You've been attacking me whenever you meet me, So it became like a habit " I nonchalantly said

" Ryueen what the hell do you think you're doing ? " Kanzaki still frustrated, Tried to confront Ryueen

" Kukuku, I'm just Playing with Monster Kanzaki, Don't worry " He started walking away" I am a generous man so i'll give you an advice, Once I'm done with Class D, I'm gonna destroy you " He said, While mostly gazing at me. Sigh.

Ryueen left, I patted Honami who was worrying about me. Before heading back towards our dorms.

I laid on my bed and stared at the message that Shibata sent me

" Destroy us huh ? "

With that thought i was driven into a deep slumber.

Morning.

The bell rang and Chie Waltzed into the room

" Everyone, Before we start i have some news on Shibata's case " Everyone was ready for Chie, She continued " A Trial would be held on Tuesday next week for the final decision on the student council room. You are allowed to bring maximum two students along with the suspect and their homeroom teacher to act as lawyers. Although the teachers are just spectating, i couldn't help you guys in anything, I'm sorry " She said looking down

" You don't need to Apologize Chie-sensei, We will win this case " Said Honami

" I believe that you do Honami-chan. However, Since you're in the student council you will not be able to act as the lawyer " Said Chie

" I understand Sensei, But i'll do as much as i can to help ! " Honami's words were encouraging to those who were gloomy as they rallied behind her.

Chie's gloomy aura dispersed as she is now back to her usual self, And the session continued.

It was around 5 PM, When i was heading towards the arcade for the hangout. I was the last one to arrive and got scolded by Honami, Before we headed inside

Nanami brought Yamashita Saki and surprisingly, Class D student named Mei-Yu Wang. She asked us to call her Mii-chan which everyone agreed to.

On our Group there was Honami, Amikura, Shiranami, Shibata and me. Andou and Minamikata had errands to do and Kanzaki refused to join.

On Ryouta's group were Only him ? I'm actually surprised, He told us that one of his female friends got sick and the boy stayed with her. So he remained alone. This is perfect

We were walking through one game onto the other, While Nanami tried to get close to Ryouta by asking for his help on some games, Shibata and Amikura were doing a splendid job. We could clearly see our plan working as Ryouta and Nanami are talking to each other like friends

" By the way, I heard that Shibata-kun got into trouble and now is going into the trial in the student council " Asked Mii-chan

" Yeah, All we can do is wait right now " Said Honami " How is the case with Sudou-kun ? "

" Kushida-san and Hirata-kun are doing their best looking for witnesses. Horikita-san says that it doesn't matter to her but she is still helping " Responded Mii-chan

" We are sorry, We already have our hands full now, If you need anything we'll try to help as much as we can "

" You don't have to apologize Ichinose-san " She continued " Sudou-kun's trial is at the start of next week. On Monday, If we don't find a witness until then. Sudou would most likely be punished at worst expelled " That is a natural assumption to make. The report says that the Class C students were brutalized, Expulsion is on the table.

However, I believe Manabu already knows that Sudo's case is a setup. So expelling him for falling into cheap provocations isn't the best choice. What awaits Sudou is most likely Suspension.

Honami turned to look at me, Which i shook my head. There is nothing we can do in our position, Honami understood that much.

We continued our little hangout, This was my first time on an arcade. I enjoyed my time playing some games with the company of the others.

Nanami and Ryouta exchanged contact info, This was all possible due to Shibata and Amikura Co-operation, They make a perfect duo. Everything went smoothly, We reached the dorm and dispersed.

It was around 7PM when i received a message from Honami

H : [Kiyotaka-kun are you free right now ?]

K : [Yeah, What's up ?]

H : [Do you mind coming to my room ?]

K : [Not at all, But can i ask why ?]

H : [Do i need a reason to spend some time with my boyfriend ?]
I guess this is one of the absurd things of love huh ? With no reason to decline i sent

K : [I'll be right there]

I opened my door and went towards the elevator, When the elevator opened i saw Hirata along Karuizawa inside the elevator

" Yo " The most natural thing to do is greet them

" Hello Ayanokouji-kun " Said Hirata smiling warmly, Karuizawa just stared at me.

" Do you mind ? " I gestured asking permission to enter

" Sure " Said Hirata, I Climbed the elevator and pressed for Honami's floor (*if you know Honami's door number and floor please tell me. Asking for a friend ofcourse*)

The elevator started moving. We all sat in silence, Hirata and Karuizawa are a couple, It would make sense for them to not talk around an outsider.

However, I sensed no hints of closeness, There is like a big wall between them, And they call each other by their family names. I could be overthinking this.

Sensing the awkward atmosphere, Hirata decided to speak " Are you going to meet with Ichinose-san Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" Yeah, What about you Hirata ? " I threw the ball back at him

" I'm gonna hang out with Karuizawa-san on her room, You could say it's a date " Date huh ? Could it also be said that i'm gonna have a date with Honami ?

" That's cool " we Reached Honami's floor and climbed off " Have a good night Hirata "

" Same to you Ayanokouji-kun, Have a nice Time with Ichinose-san " I bowed at Karuizawa bowed back before the door closed

I went and knocked on Honami's door

" Coming~ "

She opened the door and i was welcomed by Honami in her pyjamas. My heart started racing

" Kiyotaka-kun ! Come in "

I nodded and got off my shoes, Come to think of it this is my first time in Honami's room, Her room was decorated nicely. Stickers and some paintings on the wall, Some dolls were around her bed. It gave off a nice girly atmosphere.

" Go and sit on the bed~ " I obliged and sat on the bed, A media player could be spotted along with some CDs around " What would you like to drink ? "

" I'll have some tea if you have " She nodded and headed towards the kitchen, I have to admit. Honami looks beautiful on her pyjamas, It nicely shows off her thighs which i was attracted to for some reason.

She notices me staring at her and starts blushing " S-Stop staring baka " She said in a cute voice.

" Sorry i couldn't help it, You just look too beautiful " I complimented knowing fully that she would get flustered, And she did.

" Thank you " She peeked her head from the kitchen looking at me, Blushing " You are v-very handsome too " I felt a smile creeping up to my face, So i let it on. When i smiled she looked shocked and returned back to the kitchen.

I grabbed her phone on the table and opened it for fun.

Password :

I tried to put her Birthday which originally comes with our phones. And it was incorrect, I thought about which passwords she would put

Kiyotaka <3

Nope incorrect, I got kinda disappointed. What was i hoping for anyway ?

" Sigh " I unconsciously sighed, At that moment Honami came with two cups

" Ummm ... Kiyotaka-kun, What are you doing ? " She said as she placed the two cups on the table

" Just trying to prove that you're not cheating on me " I Teased

" So you don't trust me ? " She looked down in sadness. Maybe i went too far ?

" I was just kidding, Of course i trust you. Don't be sad " I said with a troubled tone, However she giggled *Oh no*

" Hmmm ? What was that i heard just now ? Can you repeat Kiyotaka-kun ? " She said in a sarcastic tone, I averted my gaze

" Not happening ... "

" Hmph- " She pouted as she sat beside me " You're no fun Kiyotaka-kun "

I went close and whispered on her ear " This is payback "

" ?!! "

I licked her ear, She instinctively made space between us. She blushed furiously that even her ears became red

She looked at me in disbelief which i responded with a smirk

" T-T-T-That " She regained her composure and stared at me " That's so unfair ! "

She jumped on top of me pushing me down on her bed, Her hands rubbing my sides trying to tickle me. However, I stared at her with the same apathetic face doing her best to tickle me.

She stared back at me with her bright blue eyes. Her eyes slowly sucking away some of my darkness as our faces came closer and closer.

Our lips clashed in a passionate kiss, I was laying on her bed while she was on top of me. Unlike last time, We took our time exploring every part of our mouths, Enjoying each other's warmth. Her lips were soft and gentle, I pulled her by the waist to deepen our kiss even further.

30 sec passed. 1 minute. 2 minutes

Eventually we pulled back, Saliva still linking both of our mouths. She giggled with a huge blush

" I love you Kiyotaka-kun "

" I love you too Honami "

We shared another passionate kiss. It wasn't long before we pulled back.

" You know you can drop the honorifics, I don't mind "

" If you say so Kiyotaka " She got off me and sat on the side " Do you want to watch a movie ? "

" Mhmm " I nodded " You can choose, I trust your taste " She smiled before inserting a CD on the media player

The movie started and we were both leaning on each other, She had her head on my shoulder while we watched.

The movie ended, And so my date with Honami

" You can spend the night here if you want, It's way past curfew "

" I'll be fine Don't worry- "

" No ! If you go out in curfew you'll be punished ! We don't know

what kind of punishment but i'll feel guilty, I Insist that you stay "

" That is if i'm caught, I'll just take the emergency staircases "

" A Ah " She shook her head as she went and locked the door " I won't make you take that risk, Stay " I see how it is, She deliberately held me past curfew for an excuse to stay the night.

" Sigh. Fine you win, But i'll sleep on the sof- "

" Not good enough, We'll share the bed " Seriously ?

She gazed at me with a big grin, I Sighed again " You're such a troublesome girlfriend you know that ? "

" I don't know what you mean Kiyotaka " She laid on the bed and patted the other half " Here "

I obliged and took off my shirt and laid beside her, She is staring at my body while blushing, She traced a finger on it and giggled alittle. I placed my hand behind her into a hug

" Should i wake you up when i leave for our exercise ? " She looked up and nodded with a bright smile

" Good night Kiyotaka "

" Good night Honami "

It took longer than usual for me to fall into sleep, But it felt good sharing a bed with Honami. I could feel excitement rushing through my whole body.

Love is such a fascinating thing

Arc 2 Chap 3 : Sudden Change of air

It was The weekend.

I Woke up, To an awfully unfamiliar place.

I Gazed around to see Honami's cute sleeping face, A Smile on her face as she was hugging my arm.

Huh ?

I panicked internally, *What am i doing here ? Why is Honami sleeping next to me ? Am i still a virgin ?*

I Jogged up my memory, Recalling the events of yesterday. Slowly but surely my questions got answered

I Looked around to check the Clock. 6:53 AM. Sadly i overslept.

I Started pulling my arm slowly as to not wake her up yet. However, My hand brushed against her Breasts and she woke up, Still sleepy she looked at me. After processing what's happening her eyes widened and started blushing.

" K-K-Kiyotaka-kun, W-Wha- " She stopped and gazed into the air. Moments later she calmed down and looked at me with a smile " Good morning Kiyotaka "

" Good morning Honami, Sorry if i woke you " She shook her head

" Don't apologize Kiyotaka, Did you sleep well~? "

" Yeah, I slept too well i ended up over sleeping " She Giggled abit, Before her cheeks got lightly more red

" Let's do this again sometimes, Do you mind~? "

" Not at all, I want to do it again "

She gave me a warm smile before getting off the bed, Stretching as she moaned cutely. My heart Skipped a beat

" Since i held you off lemme repay you, What do you want for breakfast~? "

" Anything you're comfortable with " I Said as i stood and wore my shirt

" Anything huh ? " She peeked from the kitchen " Do you wanna eat me ? "

I turned around to look at her peeking head, A Light blush could be spotted on her face, But she was grinning. Seeing her somehow reminded me of Amikura

" I Do, But not for breakfast " I Smirked back, She quickly returned back to the kitchen muttering words *Kiyobaka ?*

I Grabbed my phone and sat on one of the chairs, I Received a message from Shibata

S : [We are going to hang out with Nanami-san and Ryouta-kun again. Do you want to join us ?]

Ah, The Shipping case no'2. On a side note, One day I Noticed Manabu carrying an aphrodisiac going into the student council room, The most normal thought it would be that he is containing it. Well no matter.

K : [Yeah, Just send me the time and place]

S : [Tomorrow At 2 PM in the entrance of Keyaki mall, be late again and i (👉👈)]

K : [Please don't] I Could imagine Shibata laughing at our Little Conversation

I Scrolled around with my phone, Pointless things here and there.

" Seems like Sakayanagi has took more than half of the Class into her side, Interesting "

It was a message from one of my classmates in the class chat. The Katsuragi faction is still alive but is in a heavy disadvantage compared to the Sakayanagi Faction. The reason is clear as day, Sakayanagi possesses Much higher intellect than Katsuragi and is a better leader overall. Just by looking at them you could tell. Sakayanagi, Show me something interesting

I Kept scrolling until Honami Came with our breakfast, She made Scrambled eggs with ketchup, And some broccoli and bacon, A Classic American Breakfast.

I Took my plate and started Digging in, She stared at me for sometime before she was satisfied and started eating, We engaged in a trivial chatters while mostly she carried the Conversation, But i was surprised about my self, I Unconsciously started carrying more of the conversation, Not much but an improvement.

After we were done we got ready and started Exercising, We passed through people who greeted us, Mostly Honami.

Honami was able to do 6 Laps compared to 4 from last Times, A Significant Improvements.

We got separated after we were done and both went for our dorms, There wasn't much for the day as i pondered over some books and my phone.

*** The Next Day ***

4:53 PM. Me, Shibata, Kanzaki, Honami, Amikura, Shiranami, Minamikata, Ryouta, Nanami and Hamaguchi

We left the large sized Karaoke room, After a loud evening. Hamaguchi Decided to join us because he was free, Kanzaki on the other hand, Decided on a whim. I Don't believe it on the slightest because Me and Shibata Received a message from Nanami telling us to meet her at the end of the hangout for our plan, I Bet she sent the same message to Kanzaki too.

Speaking of Nanami, She Surprisingly smoothed her way and became close to Ryouta, Probably because of Amikura, But she played a part on that too. It's commendable

After we got separated We went to the meeting spot, Kanzaki seems to be heading there too so i approached him

" You could've told me that you came for the plan you know ? "

" Well I deemed it unnecessary, I'm pretty sure you figured it out already " He said with his unchanging expression

" You guessed it right "

We walked around the Corner to Find Shibata and Nanami both waiting, Shibata perked up when he noticed us and waved, We joined him.

" Thank you for coming here " She looked at the three of us, We all nodded. We know what's going to happen now but we listened " I Decided T-That i will confess to him This Tuesday " Tuesday huh ? We looked towards each other, Shibata was Anxious because Tuesday was his Trial, And Kanzaki had a suspicious Glint in his eyes

" Why Tuesday ? " Probed Kanzaki

" I Originally planned to confess tomorrow, But there would be a meeting to discuss about Komiya-kun's Case and and i can't I-Ignore Because ... " She is trembling, Probably every Class C Student would have the same reaction whenever They remember Ryueen

" I See " Said Kanzaki Nodding, She sighed in relief

" You know I Can't help you on Tuesday, My Trial is after class and " Said Shibata

" It's okay Shibata-kun, You have been a great help already, I Owe you " She said holding Shibata's hand.

" What do you plan on doing if he rejects you ? " I Said, Kanzaki probably was thinking about the same thing he nodded

" Well if he does then I Should just move on, It is what it is " She said in a meek voice " Would you two help me ? " She looked at us with puppy eyes

" Well if nothing comes up, I'll help " Said Kanzaki, I Nodded alongside him. She smiled widely and started heading back

" Thank you guys, I Don't know how i can repay you. If you need anything Just message me " With that She parted away.

The three of us Walked back towards the dorms.

" What's on your mind Kanzaki ? " Kanzaki was deep in thought, He snapped back at my statement and sighed.

" It's just that, This might be a plan from Ryueen. I Don't have any proof ... Agh I May be overthinking this " He looked quite troubled by this, Shibata was silent the whole time, That's unusual

" Why don't you check it yourself ? " I Said, He looked back at me in Confusion " If you think this is Ryueen's plan to trap Ryouta, Then Why don't you follow them on Tuesday with your recorder on. If it's a normal confession you leave, And if Ryouta falls into a trap you record them and Save him "

He seems to be thinking about the situation before he looked at me again " But Shibata's Tri- "

" Don't worry i'll attend instead, Your job is to protect Ryouta, Shibata's case is almost set on stone already " I Shrugged, Kanzaki seems to understand what i'm implying, He nodded.

I Showed him the GPS Feature which he looked shocked at, Shibata the Same. It was a effective backup plan in the case he lost him, And with that i set Kanzaki to Protect Ryouta.

We reached the dorms and dispersed, The weekend has ended and tomorrow a new week begins.

I Sent a message to a someone, Moments later a knock came from my door.

** The Next Day **

3RD POV

At 6:30 PM After Classes, a Certain Two groups of Students met at a certain room.

Both Groups sat opposite to each other at a certain U Shaped Table, They were glaring at each other, Hostile, Howling at each other. Debating over pointless things like self-defense and injuries.

On top of that Table Sat a Student, He had a black hair and piercing gaze, Alongside him was a certain Purple haired woman.

The boy was analyzing the situation calmly, Suppressing his urge to stop this comedic show.

Both parties kept Debating, But it was one-sided. Not only the party that Reported have evidence, The Other party's lawyer never spoke. She was sitting there intensely holding her head down. Intimidated by the Black haired boy at the top of the table.

The boy noticed this and sighed in disappointment, He thought of how much of a failure she is and hoped for her to stand up for her classmates, A short Brown haired Girl beside her tried to desperately persuade the other party but ended in vein.

" Alright " The black haired boy stated gathering the attention of both parties " After thorough consideration to the evidence, Witnesses and the discussions. The student council will issue the decision on the current matter " Both parties stared at him intensely, Breaking into a cold sweat as the silence took place

The boy Fixed his glasses, And stared at The blacked haired girl in disappointment, He hoped for a change, But that Change Never Came.

" Sudo Ken, Is deemed guilty of physically harassing peers from other classes " He Continued regardless of the shocked noises " And hence, Would be suspended for a Month, And he would lose his position on the basketball team "

The person in question stared at the boy in disbelief, Anger, Frustration, Hatred Came out of his Eyes. He stood there too shocked to move, His Basketball carrier is done and dusted.

" For Compensations, Class D Would Pay a total of 50 Classpoints towards the harmed party. That's all, You're dismissed "

A Smile crept into one of the teacher's mouth, While the other stared at her students in a indifferent expression. Who could have knows that she is more pained by this outcome than anybody else ?

*** The Next Day AT 5 PM ***

Third Party POV

The Bell rang signaling the end of the first half of the day, And starting the second half for a Certain Class A.

" Shibata-kun, It's time for the trial. If you wish to bring anyone with you then do it now " Said the teacher who was desperately Trying to hide her nervousness, But most students noticed it.

A Certain Brown haired boy raised his hand " Sensei, I Wish to go with Shibata to the Trial "

The Boy Named Shibata, Stared at the Brown haired boy with admiration " Ayanokouji-kun "

Another person Raised their hand " Chie-sensei, I Wish to go too "

Shibata Stared at her too " Amikura-san Thank you " You could see his purple eyes getting bright as tears formed into his eyes. He then turned to his Homeroom Teacher " Chie-sensei, I Wish to bring Ayanokouji-kun and Amikura-san to the Trial with me "

The Teacher smiled warmly as she nodded " Right, Follow me "

Meanwhile, A Certain Boy Checked His Phone

N : [If you are free can you come to the rooftop ? I Have something important to tell you]

The boy stared at his phone pondering over what's gonna happen.

Amikura, Walked closely behind him and tapped his shoulders, snapping him out of his thoughts and stared at her, She took the opportunity to read the message contents, He tried to hide it but it was too late as she grinned at him

" Hohoho~ Ryouta-kun, Why did Nanami-san ask you to come to the rooftop ? " She whispered in his ear, He flinched at her

" I-I Don't know, I Should go and check maybe " He said

" You don't have to act like you don't know Ryouta-kun, It's obviously a confession. Go get em " She said posing into a ridiculous Pose. " First you don't have to go like this, Here "

She then flattened his shoulders and started closing his buttons, She tied his collar and shoes

" Here, You shouldn't go like that to a confession you know ? " She said with a big grin on her face

The boy was speechless, He then nodded and started heading towards the rooftop " Don't forget the kiss~ or condoms if you're that far " He flinched again, And started walking away towards the rooftop.

A Purple haired boy took this chance and left the classroom tailing the boy, His recorder was on.

That girl went and ran to the student council room catching up with the rest " Sorry, It took me long to prepare Ryouta-kun for his little confession~ "

The Teacher was confused, And the students nodded and with that they entered the Student Council room.

*** Ryouta's POV ***

I Was walking down the hallway heading towards the rooftop, I Reached the stairs and started walking on heavy steps.

If what Amikura-san said was true, Then i should be ready to reject her. Nanami-san is a nice Girl, But she is not my type, We became good friends over the weekend. But i don't feel that way towards her.

I Reached the door and took a huge sigh before opening it, I Found Nanami-san on a corner, Gazing into the school building.

The door made a noise as i opened it, She turned around and looked at me with her usual smile

" Good afternoon Ryouta-kun " She said

" Afternoon Nanami-san, Why did you call me here ? " My voice was nervous and i couldn't hide it, She seems to notice it and responded

" No need to feel Nervous Ryouta-kun, I'm not gonna confess to you " She said

" Then why did you call me here ? " If it wasn't a confession then What ?

" Well, You are a good Guy, But i'm sorry about this Ryouta-kun " She sighed and rushed at me and hugged me,

" Nanami-san W-Wha- "

" Kukuku, You shouldn't sexually assault young maidens Ryouta-kUn "

I Turned around to receive a punch on my face, And Fell on the ground in agony. My nose started bleeding, I Stared at the guy and it was a magenta short haired boy, He is The tyrant Leader Of Class C Ryueen Kakeru

I Tried to stand but he kicked me on the guts, I Fell on the ground unable to move, Coughing blood and feeling of dizziness started taking over

" Kukuku What's wrong ? Feeling a little dizzy eh ? We aren't done yet " He kicked me again, Pain rushed through all my body as i couldn't move, I was paralyzed from pain

" D-Do you R-Really need to to T-This R-Ryuee- "

" Shut the Fuck up Nanami, Now let's Get this over with " Nanami was terrified of the scene next to her, Anyone would.

Ryueen Turned around and moved his leg and kicked me on the face, That's when everything went black.

Ryueen POV

I stared at the pathetic body of Ryouta Beppu, A Student from that pathetic class as he laid unconscious on the ground. I gotta give it to him, It took me an extra kick to knock him out.

I got through his pockets and grabbed his phone, Good it's not recording.

A Grin crept into my face, As i imagined Monster on the same state as him when i beat the shit out of him, But for now i want to see that apathetic face of his shatter into one of shock and despair

" BOSS I GOT A MOUSE " Albert spoke in English, As he restrained a purple haired boy, I Laughed seeing his pathetic Expression

" Ryueen WHAT DID YOU DO ? "

" Kukuku Remember what i said Kanzaki ? When i'm done with Class D I'll destroy you, Now watch "

I went and grabbed Ryouta's hands, I gestured for Nanami to come close which she complied hesitantly, I put his hands on her Shoulders, Stomach, And Her back, Little bit on her breasts, She looked amusingly disgusted

" Do you think you'll get away with this ? ! " Kanzaki being a brat started yelling, I walked towards him and looked him dead in the eye " Why can't i ? I've done this before and got away all the times, This is just one of them "

" Tsk. " He clinched his Tongue

" Kukuku you're kind of amusing Kanzaki, I won't beat the shit out of you now because i want to see your pathetic face on Full HD along with Miss Fairy tale " I Grinned wider " And the main dish is Monster "

I Gestured for Albert to go and throw him away, Albert walked towards the stairs and let him go, Kanzaki being a pathetic glared at him before walking away.

" Alright let's get going " With that headed towards the Faculty room, Kukuku.

KANZAKI POV

I Was tailing Ryouta, As i kept my distance to not get spotted.

He walked towards the staircase which after a while i followed.

I Checked my Phone again and it's still recording, Good.

However, I Heard a commotion on top, And the voice of
Ryuen. Damn it I'm late.

I rushed towards the stairs only to meet Yamada Albert Standing
in the entrance, His Build gives off an Intimidating aura. He gazed
at me with his glasses

" RAT "

He said in English, Did he just call me a rat ? He started walking
towards me. I tried to put some distance However he Closed it in an
instant and tried to grab my neck.

I crouched barely dodging, But he kept running and clashed with
me kicking me on the ground.

I tried to put some distance but he quickly got a hold of my neck.

He reached my phone and deleted the Recording

" Damn it " I Spat, He looked at me

" SORRY, BOSS ORDERS " He said in English again which i fully
understood. He returned my phone on my bag and carried me
towards the rooftop.

I'm sorry Everyone

Arc 2 Chap 4 : The Flying flipped Tables

KIYOTAKA POV

The door to the student council opened, And the Fancy interior welcomes us.

U Shaped table in the middle, While 2 Sofas bid against each other on the opposing walls, The plants on each corner and a wide black board.

As we entered the room, A Pleasant Air welcomed us, It was cool. Due to the air conditioner.

" You may sit there "

The black haired boy on top of the table gestured for us to sit, We Gracefully complied and sat, I sat on the middle between Shibata and Amikura, Chie-sensei stood behind Shibata, A Nervous smile on her face.

" You may make use of the facilities here until the other party arrives " Said Manabu, He turned his gaze towards Honami who stood close to the door " You are aware that you wouldn't be able to participate, Right Ichinose ? "

" Yes President, They would speak. I would like to observe if that's not a problem " She looked at us with a warm smile. Me and Amikura gave her a thumbs up.

Manabu nodded and took a sip from his tea that was prepared by a Purple Haired Tachibana next to him.

We waited for over 15 Minutes, When we thought that they wouldn't come a knock came from the door. Honami grabbed the door's handle and opened it. The next thing we saw is The door got yanked Open with such a speed.

Emerging from the door is a Shoulder length Cyan Haired Boy, He looked quite frustrated. He gave us a disgusted look before sitting on the opposite chair of Amikura.

Sakagami-sensei Emerged after him, He glared at us before he went and sat on the chair, Tailing behind him is a boy who was walking using sticks. Who i believe is Yajima Mariko.

He glared at us with anger, Specially Shibata, Who looked down down in guilt, I patted his shoulder which resulted in him regaining some energy. Honami clearly bothered by the scene, Closed the door and stared back, I gave her a nod which she smiled with a light blush.

" Class 1-C's Party led by Ibuki Mio and Class 1-A's Party led by Amikura Mako have both arrived. Hence i officially declare the start of the Trial " Mio ? I looked back at the boy who glared back at me. Is he She is a girl ? Well, Looks do tend to lie sometimes (*sorry Ibuki fans, I honestly thought she was a boy at first when i saw her in the anime*)

Tachibana took a paper board and started reading

" And now i'll proceed with Class C's Statement " She continued " Yajime-kun was on soccer practice when he received the ball, And Due to his competition with Shibata-kun for a place in the main team, Shibata-kun tackled and injured him on purpose. He also said that he Threatened him when they were on the changing room. Is this true Class C ? " The Class C Bunch nodded.

" And now with Shibata-kun's statement " She flipped a paper and continued " On soccer Practice, One of the enemy players passed the ball to Yajime-kun. However, Shibata-kun was close to the line of the ball so he tackled trying to cut the ball, But Yajime-kun ended up running towards the ball and hit him instead, Is this True Shibata-kun ? ? " Shibata nodded, Tachibana handed Manabu the paper clip and stood behind.

" Let the discussion begins " Said Manabu, And Instantly Yajime Raised His voice.

" What's the meaning of this Shibata ? Why would you start spouting non sense ? " Said Yajime

" I'm not lying Yajime-kun, I injured you by accident, I Apologized but you took it to the student council and made a big deal out of it " Said Shibata calmly, He acted like an adult.

" Tsk. Nonsense " Barked Yajime " You threatened me and now you're telling me it's an accident ? We were the last one to leave the changing room, Are you going to deny that ? "

" No- "

" Even if you were the last, This doesn't prove anything " Amikura stood " Neither one of us has evidence to support their claims. But it's you Yajime-kun who need evidence, Not us. You're making such a bold claims with no basis to them "

Amikura rose a great point, If the case continues like this it would be a clean victory, Ryueen Surely Isn't Challenging us with such a weak Case Right ?

" Excuse me we don't need it " It was Sakagami-sensei we spoke this time " It's my student who is injured, His words are proof enough. You Sh- "

" This is not Sudo's Case Sakagami " This time i spoke, I earned a glare from him. But continued Regardless " We are debating wherever this is an accident or not, Shibata didn't deny that he

Injured him. It should be written off as a coincidence. However, You're the ones who is going against the normal flow, You should at least back it up so it doesn't get demolished no ? "

" You should show some respect when you're talking to your teachers Ayanokouji " Said Sakagami

" I'm giving you the respect you deserve, If you sat silent like Chie-sensei, You would've atleast earned a honorific " I heard Chie-sensei Chuckle behind me, I turned my Gaze towards Manabu " This is supposed to be a debate between students yes ? Teachers intervening when they have no business on shouldn't be allowed right ? "

Manabu smirked at my Comment, He fixed his Glasses

" You are correct Kiyotaka, You should stay neutral on this Sakagami-sensei. You intervening would go against the school's ideologies " He said Gazing at Sakagami who averted His Gaze. Manabu Gazed at me next " However, Insulting a teacher isn't something i tolerate Kiyotaka, I hope i don't see this again. From both of you " I nodded

The debate continued, Long Story short. A waste of time. However, Yajime and Ibuki Kept going into circles almost like deliberately wasting time.

I gazed at Manabu who nodded at me. Before he spoke

" Alright, Discussions closed " Announced Manabu

" Wha ? But- " Yajime tried to protest. But Manabu's gaze silenced him as he sat back on his seat.

" After thorough considerations to the Evidence, Interrogations and investigations. " He continued " I Officially declare this as a waste of precious time. Shibata Sou, Is Innocent. You're dismissed " He grabbed the report and threw it in the bin. What a chad.

" What ? What about my injuries ? " Barked Yajime, He gazed towards a relieved Honami, Then me " You canceled it out because of these two being your friends is that right ? "

" Is that so ? " Manabu seems quite interested on what Yajime said, Before he uttered a word Manabu stood and slammed his hands on the table " This is the final say on the matter, My decision isn't clouded by my personal emotions. If you have an issue you can take your complains to the school "

Manabu looked so cool that i would crush on him if i was a girl. I noticed Tachibana's angry expression Change into a look of admiration, A light blush on her cheeks. I found it kinda amusing.

Yajime and his group left the room, Frustrated, Sakagami gave Chie-sensei a glare which she responded in a cute but evil grin.

Honami came and hugged me, Celebrating our Victory, Shibata is also back on his Cheery self as he tried cracking jokes

I looked at Manabu who nodded in confirmation, A Small smile on his face, I bowed and we left the room.

However, I noticed the Aphrodisiac behind one of the flower pots, I Gazed back at Manabu *'What are you going to do with this ?'*

He gave me a warm but menacing Smile *'I Don't know what you're talking about'* I Sighed and left the room.

I Checked my Phone who had 7 Missed Calls from Kanzaki, Not long after he called Again.

" Hello ? "

[Ayanokouji ! This is bad]

" What's wrong Kanzaki ? " Honami and the rest stared at me Intensely

[It's Ryouta, It was a trap. Ryueen Was there and he knocked him Unconscious and made him touch Nanami for a staged Rape attempt]

I gave them a look and started sprinting towards the Rooftop, The were confused and tense, but followed.

" Did you record ? "

[No, There was Yamada on the entrance, He forcefully grabbed me and deleted the Recordings I'm sorry] He sounded Quite dejected, This is a rare moment when Kanzaki Changed His Tone

" I'm on my way "

I said as i increased the pace, They asked me questions which i simply ignored, *So this was a decoy to divert our attention after all, Well played Ryueen.*

We reached the rooftop and We found Kanzaki, Aiding a barely Conscious Ryouta, Who was beaten up.

Honami was horrified, Shibata and Amikura couldn't believe what they saw.

I went close i crouched in front of Ryouta, I Touched his neck which was beating fast. I released the tightly tied Collar and opened the top of His Shirt. I turned around and Looked at them

" Call the teachers, He needs treatment " Shibata nodded and left looking for teachers, I Turned my gaze towards Ryouta " Breathe slowly, Can you hear me ? "

" Y-Yes, A-Ayan..okouji-kkun " He nodded lightly, His face was full of bruises

" Can you tell me what happened ? "

" I-It was R-Ry...ueen *Cough* *Cough*

After N-Nanami Call....ed me here. R-Ryueen app....eared and kicked me " I nodded Urging him to Continue " T-Thats all Th.....at i remember "

He seems to not know that he is gonna be framed of sexual assault, Knowing would only make him panic.

Honami and Amikura both listened to him spitting words forcefully, It's impressive that he held this much.

Steps came from the door, As Shibata came with One of the teachers, Who checked his condition. Before carrying him to the infirmary with the help of Shibata.

We all sat there in silence. Honami was tembeling, Amikura was Frustrated and Kanzaki looked Dejected.

I made my way towards the door, All i need is to give them sometime. However

" Ayanokouji-kun Where are you going ? " Said Amikura who looked at me in frustration

" To the Dorms Of course " I responded

" Was it all worth it ? " Said Amikura " You told me Ryouta-kun wouldn't be hurt that much, Ho- "

" I as well didn't expect Ryueen to hurt him this badly, It was a miscalculation on my part, Not relevant because we got what we wanted " I started Walking away but ..

" What did the both of you do ? " It was Kanzaki who spoke, Honami was listening. I sighed. Guess no getting out of this one

I pulled out a piece of technology, They both stared at it with wide eyes

" Ayanokouji Is that- "

" An Audio Bug ? "

Kanzaki and Honami continued each other's sentence, I Simply nodded.

" I'm sorry for hiding this from you, But there was a considerable chance That Nanami actually liked Ryouta, Stopping him wasn't an option. I'll understand if you have some complains Especially You Amikura "

Amikura stared at me in frustration. It's understandable.

" Ayanokouji Can you explain ? " I nodded

" Well, It started when Nanami approached our table, I had a suspicion that Ryueen sent her, But i only confirmed it when i heard about Sudo's case, I'm pretty sure you noticed this too Kanzaki " He stared at me, Expression not changing " I followed their progress, Slowly but surely i unraveled their whole game plan, That's when i called Amikura "

** FlashBack **

I sent a message to a certain someone, Moments later a knock could be heard from the door

I opened the door to find Amikura with her Usual Expression

" Heyo Ayanokouji-kun "

" Hello Amikura, Come in " I stepped on the side allowing her to enter, She took off her shoes and sat on the bed.

" What's up Ayanokouji-kun ? Don't tell me Honami-chan isn't enough for you so you decided to hit on me too~ " She teased

" No, Far from it "

" Awww~ Don't you find me pretty Ayanokouji-kun ? " She said while faking a sad Expression, I Sighed.

" I do find you Attractive " She perked up, About to open her mouth again " But i'm not gonna hit on another girl when i have Honami, What kind of a man i would be ? "

She seems to be thinking about it " You would be a horrible Human Being, So disgusting that you better end up dead "

" Exactly " She seems satisfied for now " Anyway, I'd like a little favor from you Amikura "

She seems to be listening, I expected her to tease me for asking Love advice.

" I happen to believe that This situation With Ryouta is a trap from Ryueen to lead him into sexually assaulting Nanami " She widened her eyes " Of course i could still be wrong, But i'm worried "

She's sorting the information that i'm telling her. She looked at me again

" Are you serious ? "

" Frankly I Am very serious Right now, Ryouta may very well be in deep trouble "

" You don't look like your lying " She looked at me still thinking about what i said " Do you want me to do something about it ? "

" I'm glad that you catch on fast " I pulled out something and handed it to her " I want you to tie this into Ryouta's collar or anywhere invisible, If it happens to be a trap, We would be safe "

She stared at the audio bug in her hand, Before She looked back at me " Shouldn't it be better if we just warn him so he won't go in the first place ? " It was a natural conclusion, However.

" There is still a chance that Nanami Honestly likes Ryouta, Possibly even him too. Stopping them is futile "

" Even if it's futile and it is indeed a trap, Would Ryouta-kun be hurt badly in return ? "

" I believe Ryueen Wouldn't Hurt him much, He needs to act not too violent for his case to be more credible " It was a lie, I'm sure that Ryouta would be hurt badly. All i need now is to make Amikura follow my orders even if i have to lie.

We sat on silence, She stared at the bug before speaking in a frustrated tone

" Can someone actually be horrible enough to do such a plan ? I Came across some horrible Humans but this is on a whole another level ! "

" I believe Ryueen is capable of doing something like that, I'm sure " I looked into her weary Eyes " So would you help me Amikura ? "

Her emotions are on a conflict. However there is only one answer to this

" Y-Yes, I'll help you Ayanokouji-kun, I still don't get it but ... If you say it's true then i should protect my Classmates "

" Great, Then i'll message you when you should place it on him, Thank you for your time Amikura "

*** End of flashback ***

" I see " Honami said, Still uneasy. Kanzaki sighed a sigh of relief

" And I Just asked Kanzaki to Tail him so i could convince Ryueen that he won already. Making him Tunnel Vision and ignoring The other possibilities " I Shrugged " I Understand if you hate me after this. I Did a big miscalculation leading to Ryouta getting Injured Badly, I Hope you find it in your heart to forgive me " I Said trying to get into their Sympathizing side.

" You don't have to Apologize Ayanokouji, Without you i couldn't Imagine what would happen to Ryouta and our Class " Kanzaki Nodded with a soft Expression

" Kiyotaka i'm mad at you for hiding stuff from me " Said Honami as she pouted " But i'll forgive you, If you treat me to dinner " I Nodded and gazed at Amikura Next

" Well F-Fine I Forgive you, I Couldn't go against the flow now can i ? " She said, As she smiled again " I Have to admit, If you didn't do this, We would've been in deep trouble "

" It's too early to Celebrate, We have one job to do " Everyone nodded and we started heading towards the Special Building, Honami Sent a message Requesting Ryueen's Appearance, Which he Agreed instantly.

I Explained to them our roles and with that we Headed towards the Meeting Place.

*** 20min Later ***

The Red rays of the sun raiding the Gloomy dark Third floor of the Special Building.

It was such a magnificent Sight, The Four of us stared at it, Mesmerized by it's Beauty. It's even more beautiful than i imagined while being in that Place.

" Here they come " Said Amikura nervously

2 Shadows Emerged from the stairs, A Purple Haired Enigma smirking widely. While A Person with a giant Build with sunglasses

came behind him

" Kukuku, What possibly do you guys want from me ? Or are you gonna assault me like Sudou and Ryouta ? " Ryueen Said, As he laughed at his own Joke.

" Don't Ever say something horrible towards Ryouta-kun or Sudou-kun, We all know that you plotted their Accidents Ryueen-kun " Said Honami in Determination, Ryueen got hit by those words as he laughed Again

" Kukuku. That's what every sore loser says, You don't have any evidence so Just Shut up "

" I Wouldn't be so sure about that Ryueen "

Kanzaki and Amikura, Both Pulled out their phones. Amikura started Recording our Conversation While Kanzaki Played the Audio File.

" Kukuku, You shouldn't assault young maidens Ryouta "

" Aaaah ! "

" Let's get this over with, Come here Nanami "

" Ryueen Do you think you'll get away with this ? "

" Kukuku, I Always did. This is not so different "

Ryueen's smug face Disappeared, A Serious expression Came instead.

" We will send those to the School Ryueen-kun, And you'll kiss your Carrier Goodbye " Said Amikura looking at Ryueen With a grin

Ryueen Stood there, Glaring at us. Before his lips curled up and started Laughing with all of his Might

" HOLLY SHIT AHAHAHAHAHAHAHAHA " He Clutched his Stomach " I'VE BEEN DANCING INTO SOMEONE'S PALM FOR THE WHOLE DAY, SOMEONE PREDICTED EVERY MOVE I DID AND SAW THROUGH EVERY SINGLE FUCKING PLAN "

He kept Laughing, We all looked at each other in confusion.

" I NEVER LOST SO BADLY BEFORE, I FEEL LIKE I'M RETARDED RIGHT NOW. THIS IS SO AMAZING AHAHAHAHAHA "

I understood what he meant, He was undefeated, Always coming up on top, But now he got outsmarted and lost.... I would feel the same since our situations are Close. However, I Believe that's not possible.

" You lost this Time Ryueen-kun, And it'll be at a hefty Price " Said Honami as we Started walking away

" Hold it " We froze on our place and turned to look at Ryueen, A Big Grin Plastered on his Face " If you wanted to send it to the School you would've done so long Ago. What are you after ? seeing my Pathetic Face before my doom ? You're Surprisingly Cruel Ichinose " His voice Contained no fear or Anxiety, After losing he still kept his cool. I gotta top my hat to him. He is truly Amazing

and Enigma.

" I'm glad that you catch on fast Ryueen-kun " Honami Said as she Turned And Faced Him " I Want you to Retract the Report you made on Ryouta-kun, and not Target our Class Ever again, And A Favor from you Ryueen-kun, Agree to this and we have a deal "

Ryueen Smirked at Honami's Proposal as he put his hand on his chin " A Favor from me eh ? That's not half bad Ichinose, However, I'd like a copy of the recording if you don't mind "

" Sure " She gestured to Kanzaki to send him the Recordings " Pleasure doing business with you Ryueen-kun, Know that Amikura-san is recording our conversation, If you break the Deal you know what's gonna happen "

" Yes, Yes. A Deal is A Deal Ichinose, I Lost and i gotta accept the consequences that comes with it " Ryueen Said with a big Smirk " However, When our Classes are bend against eachother, Know that i will destroy you, Mercilessly. That favor won't work on that "

" I Understand Ryueen-kun. Now If you'll Excu- "

" I Want to know one more thing Ichinose " He Continued, This time staring intensely at me " Who is the person who defeated me ? "

" I'm not obliged to respond Ryueen-kun, Have a nice day "

" I'll let you know Ichinose, Me and that person. We think a like, And we are fated to go against Eachother, I Will fish him out and Beat him, Both Physically And Mentally Kukuku " He said While mostly staring at me, Great I'm Suspect #1

" Great, You do that Ryueen-kun "

With That, The meeting with the Dragon Ended. Ryueen is a dangerous Opponent, He wouldn't think twice before using underhanded Tactics, Which is the complete reverse of Honami's fight Fair and Square.

He Said that he'll destroy me. That makes two. Ryueen And Sakayanagi, Show me something interesting

" By the way, Where did you find the Audio bugs Kiyotaka ? " Asked Honami

" One time i was joggling i walked past an Inconspicuous Electronic Store. I Checked it and found out Interesting Stuff. Like fake Cameras and those Audio Bugs " I Said, I was lucky to find such a store, I Guess there are many Stores like that Scattered around Campus, After all This school is 600.000 Square Meters large.

" I See, That store would help us on the future ! Care to share the details ? " Said Amikura

" Sure i'll message you it "

One of the possibly Heaviest Day of the school has ended. It was

Interesting Playing with Ryueen, I'm positive that he is much more Capable than that, Plus his room of Growth is Amazingly Large, He may even surpass me when he is at his Peek. For now he is out of the way.

Sakayanagi Show me something Interesting....

Whew ! That's it for Ar..... Not Really. While i'm writing this an idea came across my Head for a Chapter, I Think with the Right Style it would be Awesome ! Possibly the Best Chapter i'll make. On after the next Chapter.

The " Ryueen may even surpass me " is just a unreliable Narrator thing.

By the way, How do you guys feel about a Seggs and lemon Chapter :)

Arc 2 Chap 4.5 : Love

I was surrounded by white walls, The walls that push the feeling of uneasiness, Anxiety and Despair. I looked above me and below me, It was still white.

The only thing that had a different color is the Instructor's pen

I was sitting ... on the middle of the class, Classmates doing the same.

We all stared voidlessly at the words on the Board, It was like everyday, Everything was the same as usual. Why ? Why am i back here ?

I looked around, Everyone was looking dead, They were staring at the board.

" You FOCUS " The instructor yelled at one boy. Immediately, He kicked him. We all stared doing nothing. However, The boy perished, Particles flying in the air.

One by one, Students started perishing. The others, Started hyperventilating. The instructor kept going through his lessons, As students perished.

Why.... Why did everyone i knew disappeared ? Where are they ? What is this ?

" Kiyotaka " I looked up, and found that man " In order to succeed, You don't need emotions, They are just obstacles "

" Emotions ? What are they ? How do you feel them ? "

" You are feeling emotions now, If you don't get rid of them you'll follow them "

Follow them ? What happened to them ?

That man with his Eyes, Walked away. Every student was terrified. However, I was calm. That's right, I abandoned them. In order to succeed. Sacrifices are made.

Are you abandoning your humanity ?

A mysterious voice Said, I couldn't feel where it is coming from.

Being a human is to feel

Feel what ? Pain ? Anger ? Despair ? I already felt them all

Being a human is to care for others

Care ? For others ?

Being a human is to feel the pain of others

Other's pain ? Why would i care ? I only care about my self.

Being a human is to protect who's dear to you

Dear ? That is useless, People are all nothing but pawns to achieve victory

Being a human is to experience defeat

I would never lose.

But you lost

Lost ?

You lost your humanity, Without even having a chance To fight back

Nonsense ! I decided to abandon it

Were you the one who really abandoned it ?

Y-Yes

You can't lie to me

I am not lying, I became a monster. A monster like me has no business being a human

You're lying....

No i am not, Emotions are nothing but obstacles.

You don't understand

Under.....stand ?

Being a human is to feel Happiness

Happin-

BEING A HUMAN IS TO FEEL AFFECTION

Affe-

BEING A HUMAN IS TO LOVE

At that moment, The white walls turned black. Despair, Sadness, Frustrations coming from every corner.

At a Distance, The Advanced Nurturing Highschool was there. The stone gate laying on the front.

I tried to run, Escape. Getting free.

But chains were locking me and slowly driving me towards despair.

No, I don't. I don't want to go back. Not again !

How are you feeling ?

Am feeling ?

Are you desperate ?

Yes, I am desperate

Afraid ?

Yes, Afraid of coming back.

But you're just running away

Yes, I'm running away.

It's not late

Late ?

The monster can feel Happiness

Can i ?

The monster can still feel sadness

The monster can still care for Others.

And most Importantly, The reason you came here.

The reason I came here ?

A Familiar Box Landed Infront of me, I pulled my arm and touched it. The chains disappeared from both my arms.

I flicked the key open. And there was

Did you find what you're looking for ?

Yes, It's here.

There was faces of very familiar people. I couldn't tell who they were or the box belonged to who. But i feel familiarity. And

How are you feeling ?

Excited

Can you really feel it ?

Yes, I can feel it

The feeling you're having isn't excitement

Ye ?

It's Happiness

Happiness ?

The photo lighted, Going through another picture

What are you feeling ?

Sadness ?

No, It's guilt

The boy on the picture was beaten up, He was also familiar

The Picture Shone again, There was me with other familiar people

What do you feel ?

Excitement

The photo switched again

Sadness.

The photo switched again. There it was, A Strawberry haired girl, She was smiling brightly as she stood infront of a Vast Green Field.

How do you feel ?

I checked my whole body, Feeling of warmth and attraction flooding in it. I couldn't tell

You know what you're feeling ?

No

You're feeling *love*.

Love ?

The chains were holding me disappeared, I Started walking towards the school building, There it was. My friends. All of them waving with smiles towards me, I walked to them. On the middle, Was Ichinose Honami.

I woke up, But not like usual. A Weird sensation i'm getting. I couldn't understand it.

I looked around the bed, Honami was sleeping soundly next to me. My heart started racing, I remembered that it was Saturday.

A warm feeling, Forcing my lips to curl up ever so slightly, As i gently brushed hair off her beautiful face.

I looked around, And there it was. The mysterious box on my dream

" So it was your bento all along "

I Gave her a kiss on the forehead as i stood up. I looked at the mirror, And there was,me. The same apathetic Expression. However, Not The same.

It all started yesterday

Flashback (Don't get your hopes up, Its not lemon (:

The bell rang, Signalling the end of the day.

After the troublesome events of this week. Ryueen held him self from attacking us while he focused on Class B And D. The spies around us backed down.

Today was a dayoff for all club members. So Shibata decided that we should have fun

" Where do you think we should go ? " Hamaguchi Said

" Maybe to Karao- "

" Not happening " Amikura was about to suggest, But were quickly cut off by Kanzaki " Should be go to the caf- Nevermind we are alot "

We were alot indeed. There was Me, Honami, Shibata, Kanzaki, Hamaguchi, Amikura, Shiranami, Andou and Minamikata. Our number doesn't help on a cafe

" Should we go to a theater ? " Suggested Shiranami

" No, We've already been there " Said Amikura

Everyone looked for ideas, I Aswell tried to think of something. But failed due to my lack my Social Experience.

" Uh- OH ! " Shibata suddenly screamed, He turned to us, He seems to have thought of something good. " You guys know that today is a club day off right ? "

" Yeah, What do you mean Shibata-kun ? " Asked Andou tilting her head

" Since it's day off no body would Practice Right ? " We nodded " Then I could ask the Rep to let us use the Field so we can play together ! "

" That's a splendid Idea Shibata-kun ! Good Job " Said Amikura as she Slapped Shibata on his shoulder, The Others Agreed to. Shibata out of the embarrassment scratched his cheeks " Alright let's get going~ "

We went towards the Soccer club, We opened the door and found a Senpai who was arranging some equipments. The sound we made attracted his attention. He turned with a surprised Expression

" Oh, Shibata-kun ! Don't you know it's a dayoff ? " Said the Senpai

" I know Fujimaki-senpai. I just have a request for you " Said Shibata. Fujimaki stood and face Shibata urging him to speak " Do you mind of we use the practice field for today ? "

Fujimaki was thinking, Until he looked at Shibata " For what reason ? " He seems to know, But asked Anyway. He's most likely going to reject.

" After our stressful week, We decided to chill and have fun today. However, We are alot and there would be limited places where we can go " It wasn't Shibata who spoke, It was Honami " So Shibata-kun came with the idea of Renting the Field so we can play "

" Renting huh ? " He said, Honami Noticed it too. So she added the factor of private points for the best Chance. He then Turned to us " You have permission to use it. However, You shouldn't stay longer than 6 PM, There would be workers tidying the field "

Shibata perked up " Thank you Senpai ! " Fujimaki smiled warmly at us. We left the room

We reached the field, It wasn't a huge one, But not Small either, Around 50 Meters Length. The grass was Clear and green. The soil didn't seem sloppy. It was a good Environment.

We went towards the changing room and switched to Jerseys. We met outside and Shibata went to the equipment room to Grab A Ball.

(As i was writing this, I Got the idea to bring Nagumo and have him Try to Impress Honami. I'm regretting Expelling him Right now.

Feel free to steal this idea)

We were Chatting While waiting for Shibata. However, Three Students Were walking past the corner. The tallest guy noticed me and yelled

" Hey Ayanokouji ! "

" Sup Sudou " He Approached me with his two friends Behind. However, Sudou was wearing casual clothes. Meanwhile Ike and Yamauchi were in their school uniforms.

" Good Evening Sudou-kun, Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun " Said

Honami Warmly which made the boys Blush. *Wait a minute, How does she know their names ? Appart from Sudou, I didn't see Honami talk with the others. No way Is she cheating on me ?*

" Good Afternoon Ichinose, Oh Amikura you're here too " Said Sudou

" We heard About what happened Sudou-kun. We are very sorry for not being able to do much " Said Honami Looking down

" You don't have to Apologize Ichinose ! You did your best. It's Sudou's fault for not being as mature as me " Said Yamauchi Proudly and with a Arrogant tone. Is he trying to Impress her ? More Importantly ...

" Honami What did you do ? " I said Looking straight at her.

" I'm sorry for not telling you This Kiyotaka, You too Kanzaki-kun and Shibata-kun " She said looking down " You were busy with Shibata-kun's case. Asking for your help would only burden you. I hate to keep secrets but it was necessary " I see

" You did the right thing Ichinose. I am abit disappointed, But everything worked out " Said Kanzaki.

" You did the right thing Honami. Here " I gave her headpats. She instantly got back, Acting more Cheerful

However, I felt The three boys Glaring Daggers at me. I looked at them, Their Expression softened, But Hostility and jealousy still in their eyes. Sigh

" Sorry It took longer than i- " Shibata Came back Holding a ball " Oh Hey Sudou-kun and Uuuh "

" Ike Kanji " " Yamauchi Haruki "

" Ike-kun, Yamauchi-kun. Say are you joining us too ? " Said Shibata with a smile

" No w- "

" Yes, We would Wish to join " Ike cut through Sudou, Yamauchi Nodding Alongside him.

" Great, We'd be 12 Then, We'll split into teams Of 6. Let's get going ! " Said Shibata

" Yeah ! " " Woohoooo " " okay " Ike and Yamauchi were overjoyed. Sudou was somewhat happy. But not as the other two. I have a bad feeling about this

We were split into two teams. My team Had Sudou, Ike, Yamauchi, Andou, Shiranami was nervous about being a goalkeeper. I believe none of us has experience, But we are formidable.

Soccer was one of the sports on the white room. We played it in order to improve our motor skills and Control. But i'm not as good as Shibata.

The match started, Sudou kicked the ball towards Ike who

instantly tried to score from the middle of the field, However it missed

" Tsk. Just warm up " That's what he said

Amikura who was the goal keeper, Passed the ball towards Minamikata. She seems to be nervous, I took the chance and bolted towards her snatching the ball

" Eh ?! " She fell on the ground Shocked.

I started Running towards the net, Honami and Kanzaki both came in front of me. I noticed Andou running on the sides, So i passed it to her. She skillfully controlled it and walked on the Penalty Zone. However, Hamaguchi appeared out of nowhere and kicked the ball off lanes, It was A Corner.

We decided to put Yamauchi on the serving. I decided to go close so he could pass, Minamikata was tailing me. But i could brush it off.

However, Yamauchi Tried to kick the ball on a ridiculous stand. He ended up giving it to Shibata who instantly passed it To Honami who Passed it To Kanzaki and bolted. It was a counter attack.

Sudou started Running, But Kanzaki was far off. Sudou was faster, The Distance was just too big.

He ended up scoring. Shiranami was scared by the ball and covered her head instead.

" Hey Move it guys, Stop trolling or i'll beat you " Said Sudou looking Frustrated. I wasn't gonna be surprised if he Yelled At Shiranami. He forwarded that statement towards his 2 Friends, Who clicked their tongues.

" Yeah Yeah, Let's show them our True powers Kanji "

" Yeah Haruki. With the power of the boobs and butts we'll win ! "

They screamed, Making everyone uncomfortable. The girls were scared, While us were disgusted. Bunch of perverts.

The match Continued, We were holding our own but it wasn't good enough as they scored a second goal with a brilliant assist from Shibata.

" Shit Haruki, The power isn't working "

" No, We aren't fully charged yet. Kanji, You play, I'll go recharge, You hold them "

" Got it Haruki, Don't Forget to leave some for me "

I was concerned about the " Charge " word, I'm not sure what it meant, But i have an idea.

The match Continued Again. However, Yamauchi went towards the Enemy and started getting closer to the girls ogling them. More specifically, Honami's breasts.

I instantly ran towards Them, And stood Between him And Honami, He looked Mad. But when he saw me, He instantly ran

away, Trying to play Normally. Honami looked at me with a blush. And muttered somethings i couldn't hear.

I ran towards the ball and snatched it again. I Turned around to Find This Time Ike who was ogling Honami

" Ike ! " I Yelled as i passed him the ball, It took him a second to comprehend. But it was too late as he panicked and lost the ball. Sudou was getting frustrated by the second. I have to make sure he doesn't Go on a Rampage.

Shibata received the ball from Kanzaki, Who looked Around. Noticing Hamaguchi he Threw the ball Higher to him. Hamaguchi Jump and Scored with a Head Kick. It was 3-0

I kept Pushing the Two Horny Dudes away from Honami. They just got frustrated each time until they gave up.

Andou passed me the ball, I Took a quick scan. Calculating the ideal Path.

I Bolted towards the Center Completely Outrunning Shibata. I passed to Sudou who Quickly Returned it back With a beautiful touch outsmarting Both Hamaguchi and Kanzaki. Infront of me was Honami who tried to stop me by taking a gamble on which side i would run. I took advantage of that and threw the ball above her while Giving her a quick kiss on the Cheek. She became flustered and couldn't catch up, Perfect Plan.

Now Only Amikura was Infront. However, Minamikata tried to tackle. I'm running at 17.64 km/h. The distance between me and Amikura is 7.21 meters. I estimate Minamikata Ariving at 1.34 seconds. Amikura is Right handed so i would Shoot the ball at 43 degrees to the southwest. Taking the equation of $F(x) = 7.21x + 1.34$. Adding the wind Factor. Would lead to $F(W) : 568/342.68 + 789 = 5.89$. Divide that by 2 and i should shoot the ball With 2.98N

I shot the ball. Before Minamikata completly Obliterated my leg. I'll probably won't be able to run as fast for Somedays.

Amikura Jumped trying to catch the ball. But she ate the Dirt as the ball entered on the 90° angel.

I heard screams of Joy as they Rushed Towards me.

" Ayanokouji ! That was Amazing " Sudou Said

" That was So cool Ayanokouji-kun ! " Complimented Andou

" That was a Flawless Shot Ayanokouji-kun " Said Shibata. Who looked that she had more to say " Are you okay ? I mean your leg "

" Yeah, Probably won't heal in few days. But i can still Wal- "

" I'm So Sorry ! " Minamikata went and grabbed my leg. Guilt written all over her face " Does it hurt ? I'm So Sorry Ayanokouji-kun "

" You don't have to Apologize Minamikata. I won't report you to

the student Council " I said Trying to crack a joke. However, Only Shibata laughed " Cmon, I thought it was a good one "

" Well if i may be bold, It was because of your Voice Ayanokouji-kun " Ah it made Sense.

" Hehehe~ " Giggled Amikura who approached us slowly " That was a cool Shot Ayanokouji-kun. I am very Impressed. However, Aren't you caring alittle too much Kozue-chan ? He said he's okay but you kept worrying. *Gasp* Could it be ? "

Minamikata got Flustered as she backed away. I stood up.

" You should Rest Ayanokouji. You're hurt pretty badly " Said Sudou

" Are you sure you'll be okay ? I can still run for a couple of Minutes. It's not a big deal "

" You shouldn't force yourself over a game Ayanokouji. You rest and we'll handle " Said Yamauchi

" Yep ! It's just a fun game Afterall " Supported Ike

They both seemed overjoyed, But tried to hide it. However, I've already came with a counter

" Hey Shibata " I called

" Yes Ayanokouji-kun ? " Responded Shibata with a warm smile.

" I would like to go back to the dorms since i won't be able to play " I Continued " However, I can't carry my qtuff alone. Can i borrow Honami to aid me ? "

" That's no problem. I don't see why would you ask for permission tho "

" That's because you were the one who gathered us. Leaving without your permission is impolite "

Shibata looked surprised at my statement " I see. It's okay Ayanokouji-kun, We'll see you later ! " He said as the rest started waving farewells.

I started walking away With Honami. More precisely Behind her. As we Turned the corner i gazed back at Ike and Yamauchi who were Glaring at me. I smirked and Disappeared into the Corner.

We both went and grabbed our stuff and started heading towards the dorms

" Thank you for Earlier " Said Honami, Blushing

" Hmm ? " I feigned Ignorance

" Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun " She Continued " From when i met them they were staring Lustfully at me. Even more than Nagumo. So thank you "

" Don't mention it. It's my job after all "

" Hehe~ " She chuckled Blushing " You kinda went Alittle Over protective for me eh ? Aww So cute~ My Kiyotaka got Jealous "

" Well, That's just how much i love you " Love huh ? Do i actually

love her ? What i felt before didn't seem like a strong feeling. Maybe it was lust ? I'm not sure

" I love you More Kiyotaka " She said With a warm Smile. My heart skipped a beat, I could feel some sort of warmth. Maybe this is love ?

We reached my Dorm and Entered, I Quickly went and sat on my bed. Laying My Injured Leg. I've dealt with worse. So it's no biggie.

" Hmmm- " Honami, Was carrying a first-aid kit " Do you mind ? I'll help you " With no reason to Refuse i nodded. She perked up as she sat

" Put it here " She gestured to me to put my leg on her lap. I gulped before putting it. She put alcohol on top of the bloody Injury, I Winced. " Hehe~ This is the first time i hear such a sound Kiyotaka "

" I couldn't help it " She put a bandage over my leg and put the medicine back on the box " Thank you "

" You can say this is Part of the Payback from Earlier " She said Giving me a kiss on my cheek " I'll use the bathroom to change. Joining me isn't allowed~ "

" Will do " She closed the bathroom door and started changing. Not to long She Emerged with Casual Clothes " I thought you were gonna wear your Pyjamas "

" Did you miss me on my Pyjamas that much ? " I nodded, She Sighed with a cute blush. " Anyway, Since you're injured i'll cook Dinner for you. And as Payback " I nodded.

She started boiling water and gave me a cup of Tea with milk. I started watching TV while chatting With Honami.

After Half hour She came with two plates of curry

" It smells Good " I Exclaimed " It looks Juicy aswell "

" I Know Right, I've put my love Jui- I mean My love and heart in cooking this Hehe~ "

" So the Secret Ingredient is Love ? " She Nodded Enthusiastically

" Every Bento i give you is also filled with love. You failed to notice it ? " She pouted

" Not at all " I Continued " Should we dig in ? "

" N-No you go first " She said Blushing. I obliged and took a bite. The flavor instantly dominated My Mouth.

" This is Amazing " I Said as i was munching. I Took Another bite. However, Honami looked on the ground " What's wrong Honami ? "

She sat silence, Looking at the ground. I took another bite, It looks like something is troubling her. I waited for her while eating. After Two Minutes She decided to speak.

" Kiyotaka be honest " I looked at her Confused. Sadness and Guilt

over her face " Do you enjoy My Company ? "

The suspense that came behind her words allowed me to raise my Guard. But i didn't expect this, Not exactly.

" Of course i do " I responded

" Then why don't you look Happy ? " She said. Happy ? I wonder if i can be " I've never seen you look happy or be excited, I only saw you smile once. But it wasn't that big. Do you hate me ? "

" No i don't. And the reason why i can't be happy is " I stopped, Like a spell binding me to not talk about my self. As i was going to utter a word Honami spoke

" Is it because of your past ? " We are heading towards a dangerous territory, I could tell that this is bothering her alot, A Half-baked answer wouldn't work, I'll try being more vague

" Yes, I don't think i can smile, Or be Happy. Not anymore " I said, I could feel some darkness leaking from my eyes. However, Honami Looked Directly at them, She was Shacking. But bravely Stared into the Abyss. The Dark Pit that Stares back at you, She Challenged it, But No avail.

" Not anymore ? Kiyotaka why ? Did something happen to you " Her plea came with tears forming in her eyes. Someone as good Nurtured as Honami, Was Sad and bothered by me not being Happy. I decided To Atleast give her some answer, She deserves that much.

I Sighed And Spoke in a cold voice

" I can't Feel Emotions. Not Anymore, I can't be Happy, Someone Like me who never loved Anyone. I didn't even love my parents, I Someone Who abandoned their Humanity doesn't deserve Anything " She was shocked. She stared again at my Abyss, Her eyes full of Sadness and Anxiety, Were questioning me *Why ? Why are you saying this ?*

" A human Without emotions is a monster. I am a monster, And A Monster Shouldn't be happy. A monster who didn't care or love anyone else. " Honami was silent, Listening intently at my words. Her eyes were filled with despair, I couldn't take it so i unconsciously gazed down on the ground while continuing

" My parents never loved me, Neither the people i was around. I was locked on a cage, On that world for 16 Years. And Rarely Got to see the outside World. I was curious, Fascinated by the outside world. But my first Experience with it that. People wouldn't accept me. A monster in a Human Flesh. They were scared, Afraid of me. That's when i realized it. I'm not normal. Then i questioned, What is normal ? What does normal people do, What is love ? What is friendship ? What is Happiness ? " I Continued " That's why i came to this school. I came to find answers, I came looking for freedom.

Away from them. I came to experience what's normal, I was, Overjoyed finding people the same age as i. I made friends, I even have Someone like you who genuinely loves me. Pitiful, Truly pitiful. You loved a Monster, A Heartless one. One wh- "

" SHUT UP ! " Honami Yelled, Cutting me off my Monologue. Looking back i kinda spoke alot. I got carried away " I won't let you speak about Kiyotaka like that EVER AGAIN ! " I raised my head and looked at her, Tears flowing from her eyes. Why ? Why are you doing this ? Ichinose Honami, Why ? I can't understand you.

" The fact Still Remains Honami. Nothing can be Done about it, No matter how nice you can be to a monster. You loved the fake me, The Facade i've been putting to hide my Past. T- "

" I still Accept you " She said and looked into my dark eyes with her Crystal Blue Eyes " I knew you were suffering. More than anyone else. You got treated Horribly, To the point you'd get your humanity Stripped away. You are a Horrible Human Kiyotaka- "

The next thing i felt is a warm Sensation came directly from my lips. My eyes blacked out, I couldn't see anything. Only Warmth, It came freeing my eyes and senses. To only notice Honami kissing me. She put her hands on the back of my head pulling me in.

However, I didn't do anything. I was paralyzed, Analyzing my core. This woman

She pulled Away and licked her lips with her tongue and smiled warmly " You are horrible at being a human Kiyotaka. But i still love you "

This woman is

" You are Stupid Honami " I Grabbed her waist and pulled her in for another kiss

" nnhghnnnn~ "

She was surprised, Shocked. But the kiss Overtook all those feelings as she deepened our kiss.

This isn't a moment to Experiment, Or Analyze... It's a moment that would go to waste .. No, Self-satisfaction. I would waste it on it.

That man said that Emotions are irrelevant. I agree, But they are important in making us human.

Human is what we are.

And What we would be no matter what.

We kept kissing like there is no tomorrow, Fighting Violently over dominance. She pushed on the bed and kissed me Even Deeper. I could hope the time stops and Feel this Forever. I felt warmth, Everywhere, My hand were warm my body was warm, Even my cheeks.

She slowly started letting go away. Her hot breaths could be felt.

A thick line of Saliva Linking us as she stared at me. We both started slurping it slowly connecting us for Another kiss.

" Kiyotaka you pervert~ "

" Sorry, I'm a teenager going through Adolescence "

" Don't make excuses. Pervert " She giggled. She stared at my face on top of me. Her eyes widened

"K-K-Kiyo... " She was flustered, Her ears were red. She stared at me in disbelief " Y-Y-You ! You Blushed ! "

" Did i ? " She nodded. Her hair was falling around mine. It made some sort of a room where both Of me And Honami's faces were inside

" W-Was i the First person to make K-Kiyotaka blush on the school ? "

I unconsciously smiled and stared at her. She smiled more and kissed my smiling lips before hopping off. She touched her lips. Giggling while being a tomato

" I Guess i won today~ "

" Guess so. You are the first person to make me blush as far as i can remember Honami "

" Hehe~ An Achievement i'm so proud off~ ! " She stood. After some time She Blushed even more and Went to grab her bag. " I'll be right back~ " She closed the door after walking towards it. And gave me a cute smile.

I was left speechless. Staring at the door she left from.

I touched my lips again. This time i can feel the shape, It was a smile.

The warm sensation lingering, The Smell of the citrus perfume followed up with it.

That woman Is someone Special.

That man would be pissed off if his masterpiece is getting flustered over a woman, Maybe i should Take a photo and send it to him.

The sound of the TV on the background along with the Air conditioner floated around. As i stared at the door.

15 Minutes later, The door opened. Honami came in and looked at me

" You didn't move an inch since i left ? "

" No i was waiting "

" Ah jeez. Your food is gonna get colder ya know ? " She said flustered

" Who cares ? " I Shrugged it off

" Don't be a pervert~ " She closed the Bathroom door and started Changing.

I took another bite of the Curry, Somehow it felt more delicious

than before

Honami came out, Wearing her Pyjamas.

" I thought you weren't gonna wear them " I noted

" You said you liked them .. *baka* " She went and sat beside me and we started eating. Talking about the random stuff we're seeing.

We kept chatting until 10 PM. She turned off the lights and came crawling Beside me.

" Good Night Kiyotaka~ "

" Good Night Honami "

The last thing i felt was Honami's finger on my Chest. Before i fended off to a deep slumber.

5k words. I'm dead.

Anyway, My tests are almost done. It's not like i went on hiatus or slow updates during those 2 weeks but i thought i'd inform you anyway.

I can't wait to read V6 for some Uhm.... Unobvious reasons.

I mean i want to see a lemon from Kinu. Everyone does right ?

However, He may get dumped by his wife.

One more thing: If you think this is rushed aswell i'll half-confidently tell you that you're half wrong or completely on my opinion. This fanfic is Kiyō x Honami and i think this was the best time to open up.

And i said before some characters are gonna be OOC. Kiyō is one of them. But don't worry, He'll just love Honami and care more for his friends.

Im so excited on Discovering this story more. Im enjoying writing this. Thank you for the support.

Anyway cya in the next Chapter !

Arc 2 Special Chapter : The scholar Event

" Good morning Kiyotaka~ "

I was staring at the Mirror, Recalling the events of yesterday. A Cute voice broke me out of thought as i turned to look at the girl who was laying on my bed, looking at me.

But it wasn't a normal gaze, She stared at my body hungrily and lustfully. She licked her bottom lip like a predator was about to devour it's prey. *Does she have a fetish over my body ?*

" Good Morning Honami, Were you Awake ? " She didn't give any signs of someone who just woke up. The reverse, She looked completely energetic.

" Hehe~ Thank you for the Kiss " She was faking sleep when i kissed her forehead. She said without taking her eyes off my 8-pack
" And for the meal~ "

I sighed as i put on a shirt, She pouted in disappointment before Standing up

" Did you sleep well ? "

" Yep ! I Really liked sleeping next to you, So i decided to make the most use of it~ " She came closer at me and hit me on my chest

" Ouch "

" Hah, Like that would Hurt you, Pervert~ I won't forgive you for disturbing my sleep with " She stopped, Trying to recall something. Suddenly she flushed and Started Stuttering " With With With your hot Body ! Hehe~ "

I just stared at her scratching her cheek while blushing. Cute

" Sigh. You're weird "

" Hey- " She hit me with much more force than before " I'm ... Not ... Weird ... baka "

Honami kept punching me cutely until she was satisfied, After muttering some words about Pitching a huge Tent. She Walked towards the kitchen

" What would you like to eat Kiyotaka ? "

" Hmmm- " I faked thinking, I Already have a dish on my mind. *No it's not her.* " Can you make me some pancakes please ? "

" Pancakes huh ? Sure i guess " She opened the fridge and Grabbed Ingredients " But why pancakes of all ? "

" I Heard about it from one of our classmates, They said it was Extremely Delicious so i bought ingredients for it. But i was lazy "

" You speak like you never ate them "

" Well you're not wrong "

" WHAT ? " She blurted, Looking at me In Shock, Disbelief
Written on face " Did you seriously Never ate Pancakes ? "

I Shook my head " This would be the first time i eat them "

" This adds more pressure " She muttered " Don't worry, I'll cook
you the Best Pancakes you'll ever Eat in your entire life ! "

" Looking forward to it " I Responded, She Smiled Warmly which
made my heart Throb on it's place. *Honami's smile is dangerous*

" At this point, I wouldn't be surprised if you never ate Ice cream
too "

" You are correct "

" Called it " She said as she started Mixing the Ingredients
skillfully. I couldn't help be think that she'd be an Amazing House
wife. I bet she'd Feel Flustered if i said it out loud.

" Can i ask you a question ? " She said, I noticed Some Anxiety
behind her words.

" Sure "

" Is it because of some sort of place that you never ate Ice cream
and Pancakes ? "

" Care to explain ? "

" I know you don't want to talk about it but " She took a deep sigh
before continuing " Yesterday ... You mentioned something about a
place, You were locked on it for 16 years. Is it because of that place
you can't feel emotions ? "

There was a contradiction in her words, She wanted to talk about
the white room in the reason of Never eating Pancakes. But She
stated the real reason behind it on the second explanation

She seems to realize it too " I-I'm sorry ... I Shouldn't Pry on your
Pa- "

" Yes, That place never Offered Something sweet, All the food
carried little to none Sugar " I said Giving Her a satisfactory answer,
I couldn't keep hiding the white room from her for too long. It
could damage our relationship, She was brave enough to tell me
about her past. She deserves the same, But not now.

" I still don't understand ... That place and your parents " She
continued " But i understand one thing. that is you don't want to
talk about it. Probably for my own good "

" Most people wouldn't take it well. I'll open it up with You One
day Honami. When i'm ready for it " She nodded with a anxious
smile, Honami Genuinely loved me. So her Uneasiness Was
Explainable " The pancakes wouldn't be delicious if the secret
ingredient is Anxiety "

" Haha ! Sorry " She seems to be back, Good.

We chatted about Random stuff. I decided to check my phone over a conspicuous Message, It wasn't a message from a friend or Group Chat. It was a School Announcement

" School event ? " I blurted loud enough for Honami to hear.

" School event ? " She seems to have no idea. She is at the student council after all. I thought she'd atleast know about today.

" Apparently, The school is holding a little event where The students would be able to demonstrate their skills. Ranging From Physical to Academical Activity and Mental Activities "

She Went and checked her phone, Upon seeing the message she started Silently reading it

All the students were allowed to participate, Even the Student Council President, Gathering would be held at Gymnasium 1 on 2PM. To join You must pay a fee of 10000 P.P You would be rewarded properly if you win. Ranging From 5000 Points To 20000

" What do you think ? " She asked me After Done Reading.

" Well, The rewards are attractive. I Bet there would be alot of participants there. So winning would be Difficult to Normal People "

" I Responded Honestly, If you're an Average Highschooler Winning would be Difficult especially in this School. On the contrary, If you find something that you're the best at. Then it would be a different Story

" Are you planning on participating ? "

" Yeah, This is a free Chance for me To Earn Points "

" You're Confident that you can win ? "

" Yeah, I Doubt that i can Lose to Anyone " I said Confidently

" That's so cool " She muttered Flustered " Don't force yourself, You're injured "

" Will do "

I've had More severe Injuries back on the White room and we still didn't get excused for it, We were forced to Exercise while being Injured. So this Injury would pretty much be non existent. However, It could get more severe if i Participated on Something Pressures My Leg.

I Kept scrolling around my phone while Honami was making breakfast. I Couldn't help but find some memes funny, The ones at the top of each Chapter of a certain story. The author has a good Taste.

Moments later Honami Came with two Plates of Pancakes, She poured the Syrup making them look Juicy. I Stared at my Pancakes Ready to devour Them. I Grabbed one and

Slap

Honami Slapped her forehead as she looked at me, She then Giggled

" Kiyotaka, That's not how you eat pancakes "

" Sorry " She sighed, Then took a Fork and A Knife, She Cut part of her pancakes and grabbed it with a fork. She Held it Close to my mouth lightly Blushing

" Say Aaah "

" Ahh- " She put the Pancake Cube On my Mouth. I Unconsciously closed my eyes and started enjoying the Deliciousness of the Piece of Heaven on my mouth. I Munched on it, Over and over. And i couldn't stop

" Hehe~ " Honami started Giggling Cutely. I opened my eyes and She was looking at me with an Adorable Expression " You're so cute when you enjoy your food, Makes me want to see you Eat everyday~ "

I Ignored her and started eating. She pouted before She dug into hers, We kept Eating in a comfortable Silence.

After we were done She Asked with a Happy and Cheerful Expression

" Sooooo~ How was it ? " Her bright Eyes were full of Excitement and anticipation, She Already knows the Answer.

" It was Amazingly Delicious, I Didn't Expect it to be this good " I Smiled back at her, While saying the next words " Probably because you made it "

She Flushed, She Calmed her Self down before muttering " Thank you "

We finished Our plates and Honami Went back towards her room, Getting ready for Later.

*** Timeskip 1:50PM ***

Me And Honami walked together towards the Gymnasium, We weren't Surprised on How Much Packed it was. Around 200 Students

We spotted some of our Classmates, Homani grabbed my arm and started Dragging me, But Stopped at a Weird Laugh

" Fufufu, This is an Interesting Sight. Don't You think Masumi-san ? "

" I don't care, Just Speak with him already "

" Fufu, Not Nice " It was Sakayanagi with a Purple Haired Girl Who looked back at me in disgust. While The Other had her infamous Smug Face

" Good Evening Ayanokouji-kun. Sorry for Disturbing your little moment "

" It's No Problem Sakayanagi. So what's up ? " Honami's eyes widened. She looked at me with a surprised Expression

" Sakayanagi ? You mean the leader of the Sakayanagi Faction on

Class B ? "

" Yes Ichinose-san. Let me Introduce My self, I'm Sakayanagi Arisu, The Leader of Class B " She continued " And this is Kumoro Masumi, My Loyal Fateful Slav- I mean Follower " Kumoro Kicked Sakayanagi on her leg. She responded With a Fufu.

Honami looked perplexed. She then looked at me and spoke in a worried tone " Kiyotaka How do you Know her ? " Before i could speak

" You could say We are Childhood Friends " Said With a big Smirk, I Took a mental note to take revenge on her later.

" Childhood Friends ? " She muttered

" Not Exactly, She knows me but i don't " Honami Rose Her head abit

" Ah i'm so hurt Ayanokouji-kun. How can you Forget about me ?

" She said Touching her heart like she got Shot

" You know that I Don't know you Sakayanagi. Stop teasing Honami " I gave Honami i head pat, She Instantly got better. *Headpats Noted.*

" Fufufu, I Can't believe you Started Defending her Ayanokouji-kun, Guess i was wrong " She said, Amused by this Current Situation.

" So what did you want to talk about ? "

" Ah that. I thought you'd come so i did, I only Came here to Defeat you Fufu "

" Do you have anything in mind ? "

" How does a Chess game sounds ? "

" So you chose Chess Huh ? Sounds good " She gave me a satisfied Look Before She Started walking away

" I'm looking forward to it Ayanokouji-kun. I can't wait to bury you alive Fufufu "

We stood in silence watching her Back disappear into the crowd. Honami decided to Interrogate me

" What did she mean by burying you Alive Kiyotaka ? " Seeing her worry about me always Makes me Happy

" Since the moment she knew about me, She strove looking to the day that we would face off. Her meeting me at this school is what She Called 'fate' "

" You said that she knows you. Does that mean " I nodded

" Yes, She knows about that place and aware of how Capable I Am "

Before she could pry more, Mashima-sensei Went and stood on the Podium Microphone in hand, Behind him were the Teachers.

" Welcome to the Scholar Event Everyone. I am Mashima Tomonari one of the Organizer " Mashima Spook on his Usual tone

and Expression, He Continued " In this event, Tasks would be scattered around Campus. At the task Site, You could join by simply requesting from the Teacher there. In order to find info and Location about a task, You should just click on it in the School Map Menu " Mashima-sensei grabbed a phone to demonstrate.

I Took my Phone and opened the Map app that came with it. I clicked on A Blue Circle with a Flag inside of it, A list containing the info of this Event appeared

" A Blue Circle Signals the Location of a task. And it contains the Shape of the task's content. For example, If a task was about a race. Then A person Running would take shape inside the Circle " Mashima checked the students for Questions. None came so he Continued " Most Tasks Reward the Top 3 With Private points. The amounts depends on the Task "

The variation in tasks make it Eligible for anyone to get first place if he found a Task that he is the best at.

" To Participate, You have to go to your Homeroom Teacher and Pay the Participation Fee. And They would be the ones who activate the Tasks on your map. They would also serve as Proof when Participating on a task " Mashima-Sensei Stood Back and allowed Chie-Sensei to take The stage.

" The Teachers would be available for those who want to participate on the Stage. Thus, I Officially declare The start of The Scholar Event~ " She Said enthusiastically. She Climbed off and went towards the stage Where teachers stood. It was wide enough to contain 10 students each Teacher.

Most of the students flocked Over their Respective Homeroom Teachers. While The rest Left.

" Say are you Participating ? " I asked the Silent Girl Beside me, Who was deep in Thought

" There is much more students than i originally anticipated. Around 200, I don't think i can win anything " She said gazing at the floor. I gave her headpats along with Encouraging words

" You could use more Confidence, You are Much capable than most students "

" Hehe~ " She Blushed lightly " But i prefer to observe you. Do you want me to accompany you~? " So that was her real Reason

" Sure " She Perked up, As she Started Following me.

We spotted some of our classmates around Chie-sensei. We greeted Eachother and wished us luck.

" Ara~ If it isn't My Favorite Love birds~ Do you wish to join ? " Chie-sensei Spoke in a rather lewd tone. Love birds ? I don't remember a bird called like that. Is it some type of expression used for Lovers ? That would Explain Honami getting Cutely Flustered

ver it

" Yes, I do wish to join Chie-sensei " She nodded enthusiastically, I Transferred 10k Private points to her. She Grabbed my Phone and linked it to a Computer. 5 Sec Later She Gave it back

" All set and done~ Go make me Proud " I nodded, And Started Walking away With Honami. However " Kiyotaka-kun. I'm gonna hold a Task to Decide the Hottest Male Students~ You can Join and win Ya know~ " She said while glaring Lustfully at me.

" I'll pass " She pouted. And I walked away Before Honami could Say something.

Entering the hallway I Stumbled On Someone i Predicted i'd meet

" Kukuku I Thought i'd meet you here " Ryueen With His Usual Smirk stood in the Hallway. Behind him was Ishizaki, Albert and Ibuki. " Ichinose, Mind if i borrow Your Boyfriend for a sec ? We unfinished Business "

" I Don't Remember having Any business with You Ryueen "

" Cmon Don't be like that. This Event is the perfect Opportunity To Settle The score You Dodgy Monster Kukuku " He Said, While laughing at his joke " I expect to see you on one of the Fighting Tasks Ayanokouji, You can't keep evading my attacks forever ya know "

" Sorry. Yesterday My leg Got Injured, I Can't Figh- " He Threw An Uppercut which i instinctively evaded. He took the Opportunity to try to swoop my legs. I Jumped And put some space Between us. Honami was Anxiously Staring at our Exchange

" Cap. You can still Move Perfectly " He said with a serious Expression, Before He smirked again " Anyway, Don't forget our Challenge Ayanokouji, I'm looking forward for it Kukuku " He started walking away, His lackeys gazed at me before following suit.

" This Would be troublesome " Muttered Honami, I couldn't help but Agree.

I Took my Phone and Looked at the map making Space For Honami to see. I scanned through the Scattered Tasks

" Choose a Task between these ones. They are near " I made her pick so that she wouldn't get bored and have some Control.

" Hmmm~ How about this ? Seems like a good warm up " She clicked on a Circle

English Test - 10 Participants

Rewards :

1st Place : 5.000 Private Points

2nd Place : 2.500 Private Points

3rd Place : 1.000 Private points

" English Test it is, Let's go "

3 Minutes later and we were at a Classroom. Mashima-sensei was Present Along with 7 Other Students. I went And Registered. Honami got permission to sit at one of the back seats

" Good Evening Kiyotaka-kun " Hiyori, Came back from Mashima-sensei after registering with her angelic smile. She sat at the seat beside me.

" Evening Hiyori " I greeted, I could feel Honami's Stare behind me " Are you participating Too ? "

" Yeah, I've Read alot of Novels and books in English. So I'm Confident that i can score high "

" I see. Good Luck then " The Tenth Student Came and Registered. We received Our papers

It was very Easy and it takes Approximately 20 minutes to finish. If everyone here is decent, They would Score Minimum 75 Points. I Decided To Ace it.

Mashima-sensei Corrected The Papers and Announced The results

" First Place : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka with 100 Points

Second Place : Shiina Hiyori With 97 Points

Third Place : Morishige Takuro with 95 Points " He then Proceeded to send us our Points

" Congratulations On first Place Kiyotaka-kun " She congratulated with her usual Happy Expression

" Congratulations On being The second to me Hiyori, It was a good Fight "

" Yeah, But you Won at the end. I Don't understand where i did mistakes. I wish they give us the papers so we could Check "

" It Happens "

" Congratulations Kiyotaka, You Too Shiina-san " Honami came with a smile, But it wasn't reaching her Usual Spot. Oh no

" Thank you Ichinose-san "

" You seem to be close, Calling Eachother by First Names " She said a hint of Jealousy and annoyance.

" No no no ! It's not like that Ichinose-san " Said Hiyori with a troubled Tone, She realized how grave this is

" How so ? "

" Kiyotaka-kun and I Share the same Hobby of Reading books. So we became Friend on the First day of school. I Told him To call me By my first name because i was used to it. And he told me to Call him by his too " Explained Hiyori, I nodded Alongside Her

" I see I see " Honami nodded multiple times with crossed arms. Hiyori gave me an Apologetic Look before Getting separated.

Honami Was interrogating me. She tried to hide it but she was Anxious. It is understandable. I reassured her, After Some time she was satisfied and was back to her usual Self

I checked the Next tasks.

Hanging - 7 Participants

First Place : 10000 P.P

Second Place : 5000 P.P

Third Place : 1000 P.P

" What do you think ? "

" You should participate, The rewards are High. Should be a free win for you~ "

" If you say so "

" Hehe~ "

We Went towards the Task. The Teacher accepted my Registration and Put me on the 4th " Thing " I Came across Ike and Yamauchi, They Glared at me. But when they noticed Honami at the Audience sitting. They waved at her and Said somethings about secret Powers.

The Fifth Participant Came, He was the worst person i could face off against

" My my Ayanokouji-Boy " Kouenji, Looking as proud as ever. Swiftly Went to the Fifth Thing " To think we'd Have our First Competition This soon. I Can't Say that i don't Like it "

" Competition ? I Don't want to be your punching bag. You'll clearly Wipe the floor with me "

" Haha ! You aren't Wrong, But i expect a Great Fight Coming from You Ayanokouji-Boy " He smirked at me I Was about to say Something Then

" My my Kouhai-kun. I Never Thought I'd See you here " The second Worst Person Appeared and went towards The Sixth Thing, What is it with Enigmas Today ?

" Good evening Kiryuin-senpai "

" Ha ! Hello Lady, You seem To be superior compared to ordinary people " Kouenji Said While Smirking Towards Kiryuin, Who returned His Smirk " But don't hope in a million years that you'd Defeat me. I am The perfect Human After all "

" You look quite Strong Yourself Perfect-human-kun. I'm looking forward to your face when you're Defeated " The Seventh Person Joined. The Teacher's Whistle Blew and we all hung ourselves on the Thing.

Slowly But Surely, All the people Dropped While Ike and Yamauchi Dropped first after 10 seconds only. They made a fuss over how sweaty the Rod was. But left anyway

We, The Enigmatic Trio. Were the last Standing

We sat there for Over 5 Minutes. None of us showed Any signs of Fatigue.

30 Minutes later. Kiryuin started Breathing Heavily

" Ha ! To think you'd Get Tired Already ! I Overestimated You " Said Kouenji, Who didn't Look Tired At all

" Don't Believe you Have the Upper Hand Perfect-kun. I'm not losing, Not to you nor Kouhai-kun "

" Ha ! Keep dreaming "

Not long After, Kouenji's Stance Lowered Abit. He had a serious Expression on his face, He was getting tired. Kiryuin Noticed This and Mocked him

" What's Wrong Perfect-kun Can't you hold Any longer ? You can still Give up you Know " She mocked while Breathing Heavily

" Nonsense ! A Perfect Existence Never gives up. This is a Child's play to me " His Smirk Got back, He Threw a glance at me " You're Still Hanging Ayanokouji-Boy, I Thought You'd Give up After a While "

" I have all day "

He Smirked at me. However, There was a glint of worry on his expression. I couldn't wait all day, Honami would get bored. But he didn't notice it.

Moments Later, Kiryuin Fell on the Ground. She Gazed at both of us and laughed Loudly

" This is Amazing Kouhai-kun. You don't Even Look out of Breath after that long " She Smirked as she Stood " To think I'd Lose, No get Completely Outclassed. You are amazing "

She Went in front of me And Started Staring at me Hungrily. Honami was Staring intensely at Kiryuin. She lifted her Finger to place it on my Chest. However....

" First Place : Kouenji Rokusuke

Second Place : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka With 37:24 Minutes

Third Place : Kiryuin Fuka with 36:45 Minutes "

Kouenji looked displeased, And Kiryuin had a serious Expression.

" I was planning on not wasting time anymore Kiryuin-senpai. Don't worry "

" Still. It's my bad Kouhai-kun, I'll treat you to a fancy dinner as an Apology " She smirked before leaving. Honami Came Towards me, Proud.

" Kiyotaka, That was amazing " She said in a Warm voice

" I Still lost though, Kouenji Did beat me " I Shrugged

" Ha ! Don't Give me that. It's disrespectful " He went and grabbed his bag " But a win is a win Ayanokouji-boy. To think someone like you lost, Ha ! That man would be disappointed " He said Laughing. He then Walked away

" Before you could ask Anything, Kouenji also knows That Place. As far as i know, Those are the only People " She was about to open

her mouth after Kouenji left. But i cut her Right through and answered.

She Nodded in satisfaction.

Before leaving I Apologized To Honami for Wasting her Time, But she said that she had Fun. I guess it wasn't that bad.

" Kiyotaka, Don't Tell me you're Thinking of joining "

Duels - 8 Participants

Rewards :

First Place : 20000 P.P

Second Place : 10000 P.P

Third Place : 7500 P.P

" Yeah, If i don't Ryueen Would Just Start Wining over it "

" But .. But Your Leg ! "

" I'll be Fine, I Can still Move Perfectly "

" B-Be Careful " She muttered while blushing. My heart started Racing.

We made our way towards the Room. I Opened The door and Found Ryueen With his Lackeys And

" Oh Kiyotaka ! "

" Good Evening Manabu " Manabu Came Walking Towards us, He Bowed To Honami, she Replied with another bow " Are you Participating ? "

" Yeah. You're Participating too ? " He said Which i Responded with a nod. He smirked " Go easy On me Then "

I went and Registered Chie-sensei was the Organizer, She Tried to Flirt with me but i Brushed her off.

Ryueen Noticed me And Approach me With a wide Grin on his Face

" Kukuku So you came "

" Of course, This is once in a life Time Change to Silence you For good " I Said with Arrogance. He Smirked Back

" You cocky Bastard. I'll Teach you your Place, Don't You Dare Lose until i beat you. Or i'll Beat the Shit out of you "

" Will do "

The Fights Started and i Observed The Participants. Specifically Manabu, He Dominated his Fight. He was Highly Trained and Surprisingly Nasty.

Ryueen Completely Wiped The floor with his Opponent.

Albert won his Fight With ease aswell.

I Was Next and Knocked The Other person Out just after The Whistle Blew. Everyone Stood There in Silence. Even Ryueen Had a Serious Expression, Before He Smirked Widely

" Fucking Monster "

Ryueen and Manabu kept winning until they were matched

together on the semi finals. I got matched against Albert. His build and strength was no joke, He is a terrifying opponent to go against.

Honami was Worried, But i reassured her with headpats. This time it didn't work

" HAVE FUN FRIEND " He said Bowing. I replied with the same.

The Whistle Blew

Albert Instantly Charged at me, Abusing the Fact That i am Injured. He Tried To Crush me with His Body so i just Dodged To the Side and Raised my leg and Kicked him on his Face. At the Speed He went, It wouldn't be Unnatural to Drop Unconscious. However, He Didn't Even Falter.

He Grabbed My leg and pushed me Towards him. Using my Stance to his Advantage.

However, As he Pulled My Leg i rose my Other leg. Midair, A Powerful Kick landed on his Face Again. we both Fell on the Ground. I Quickly Stood and Charged at him, He Was Half-way Through Standing and wasn't Ready for my Next move.

I Threw a Punch on his face which he Blocked with One Hand. However, Fear Came From his Eyes as he Realized That my Left Leg was Going Straight into his Face Again. He Fell on the Ground Unconscious.

However, Pain Rushed through my entire body coming from my Injured left leg

" Winner : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, And For The Grandfinals "

Ryueen was sitting on a chair. Arms closed, He looked quite pissed off. Manabu was Clapping at my Performance.

There was a 5 Min rest, I Went and sat Next to a flushed Honami

" Kiyotaka That was so Co- "

" Way to go Ayanokouji-kun ! "

I looked around to find Amikura and My other Classmates.

" That was a splendid Performance Ayanokouji. However " Kanzaki said Gazing at my left leg " You are against the President who is Rumored to be the Strongest on this school. With that Injury i don't think you can win "

That was True, Manabu was Nasty and i believe that He's still Holding back. After kicking Albert i lost more of my Agility and Firepower. But for some reason i was getting Excited.

" I'll try my best "

" We will be cheering you on Ayanokouji-kun ! Go get em " Cheered Shibata

I Noticed Horikita sitting at a seat alone. She was intensely Staring Manabu, Manabu on the other hand didn't give a damn about her.

The Break was done and I walked towards the Arena Facing

Manabu. We both started at each other, His Sharp Gaze appraising Every Inch of my Soul.

" Seems like Everyone is doubting my Abilities Now, Thanks to You Kiyotaka "

Normally, A lot of people were cheering for Manabu. But they stood silent in anticipation for our fight

" It's a shame that you are Injured. I wanted to battle you on your Prime " He Rose his hand For a handshake " But i won't be holding back, So Get Ready "

I shook his Hand " Same here, I won't use it as an Excuse. Show me something interesting Manabu " He Replied with a smirk

" Get Ready ! " We took our fighting Stances. But he used a different one, I Unintentionally Grinned.

" FIGHT ! "

At that Exact Moment, I Bolted Towards Manabu. He Crouched and Turned, Throwing a kick on my face. I Crouched Barely Evading his Monstrously Fast Attack and Threw A Powerful Punch to His Abdominal. He Blocked It using his Forearm Wincing Alittle. I Backed Off.

He Chased Me and Tried To Grab My Neck, But i Just Slapped Away his Hand. He Went for a Uppercut which i evaded, But it was a decoy. He threw a kick on my flank. However, I was gonna back away but my Left Leg Betrayed me. Forcing me to block. It caused me to lose Balance that was quickly Recovered.

I Put some Distance Between us. He was Holding back, But so was i.

I Bolted Towards Him with full speed, He was Surprised And Tried To block Me but i Already Landed a hit on His Abdominal.

" Aah ! "

He Recovered Quickly and went to Grab My neck, I Crouched and Threw a roundabout kick. But before i could lift my leg. I Unintentionally Crouched, Putting my left Leg on top of the floor out of pain.

Sensing the Opportunity he Threw a Fast Kick Towards my face. I blocked it But it caused me to fall on the Ground. I quickly Stood up. However, He Jumped at me and Threw me back on the Ground.

Now both of his hands are Strangling my neck. I tried to remove it but he applied more Pressure. I started losing strength as i could feel my arms getting weaker and Weaker. My vision was Limited, As i could only See his Arms.

He suddenly let go of me. And i started Chocking for Air. A warm touch can be felt on my back. After regaining my senses, The first thing i smelt was a Citrus Perfume. After that

" First Place : Horikita Manabu

Second Place : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

Third place : Ryueen Kakeru "

" It was a good Fight " Said Manabu Giving me a hand which a gracefully Took " I won't really consider this a win, Your injury clearly got in your way "

" Win is a win Manabu-senpai *Cough*Cough* The fact Remains that i lost " He started Gently Hitting my back " What Happened ? "

" Oh, It was Ichinose who requested your retreat, Things were heading towards a Dangerous path " I turned To look At Honami who was Sitting on the Ground With a Worried Expression, Tears were on the Corners of her Eyes. Amikura and the others were close too

" I Guess i owe you one " I said Smiling at Honami, A Tear fell from Her Eye. She Quickly wiped it and stood, Coming closer and embraced me

" Baka ... I was so worried. How could you "

" I'm sorry okay ? " I brushed her hair. Amikura Grinned widely with a light blush, While Shibata gave me a thumbs up. Kanzaki was smiling.

" Anyway Kiyotaka, Thank you for today. I'm not sure i would be lucky enough to win next time " He said with a smile, Horikita who was standing behind him Widened her eyes in surprise.

" Don't sell your self Short Manabu. I'm not sure if i can win even while being Healthy " He Smiled and Started walking away.

He Walked past Horikita, Completely Ignoring her. She looked sad and Disappointed. Staring at Manabu's back.

She didn't take long to leave. However, She gazed back at me before doing so

They seem to have a problem

" Hehe~ You surely are taking your sweet Time Honami-chan~ Do you like it that much ? "

" Eh ! " Honami Blurted, Putting some Distance between us, She had a Huge Blush " No ! I was just worried ! "

" Yeah yeah we believe you Pervert~ " Teased Amikura while Snickering. Shibata and Kanzaki started Laughing.

" Anyway, How did you Guys come here ? " I Said Changing Topics

" Oh, Chie-sensei messaged me About you Going against Ryueen. Amikura-san dragged the both of us here " I Looked at Chie who was Waiving at me with a Bright Smile. I Sighed

I Checked my map again. And found the Task i was looking for
Chess - 8 Participants

First Place : 15000 P.P

Second Place : 5000 P.P

Third Place : 2500 P.P

We bid farewell to Shibata and the Others and made our way towards the Task site.

We took a shortcut into a Shady Alley, There were almost no Security Cameras. It wouldn't be weird if a lot of fights and bullying happens here.

" So you're going to Battle Sakayanagi-san ? " Asked Honami

" Yeah, I thought it was obvious " I Shrugged " Are you worried ? "

" She may be Crippled, But she is the Leader of The original Class A. She must be very smart " She Continued " But i believe that You can Win Kiyotaka " She looked at me with a bright Smile, I instinctively gave her headpats. *How can i resist it ?*

However She was about to say something, But i sensed something on the corner. I grabbed her mouth and went close to the wall. She was surprised, I could feel her face getting hotter.

" Please, Stop Sending me These ! " a Female voice said, As she dropped some sort of papers.

I took a look on the corner, And found a girl who had Pink Hair almost similar to Honami, In front of her was a shocked adult, On the ground were letters mostly in pink.

" Why Why can't you accept my love ? From the moment i saw you on the Magazine i loved you " Said the adult with a shaky voice

" Please ! Stop it ! You're Bothering me ! Don't you Ever get Closer to me ! "

" Why ? Fate brought us here Shizuku, It was fate. don't you understand how much i love you ? " He said Taking closer steps.

I took out my Phone and started Recording what's gonna happen, I looked back at Honami who nodded while blushing, I released her. She was Having a Grave Expression

" I'll Show you how much i love you, You just need to see it Then you will Change your mind " He Grabbed her by the Shoulder and Started forcefully unbuttoning her Blazer

The Girl Pleaded but he didn't stop. He pushed her on the ground, As he grabbed her breasts and Started Lowering her skirt.

" STOP ! " Honami couldn't take it Anymore stood out regardless of my instructions. Soon i followed behind Still Recording

The Adult was Shocked, Terrified at the scene on front of him. I turned off the recorder and hid my phone.

" N-No.... I-I-It's wrong You're Wro- "

" Well it doesn't seem wrong to me "

The Girl Named Shizuku Crawled away, As the man sat trembling in silence. Flashbacks, Regret, Despair. Seeing him like this kind of

amused me.

" Honami call the Securi- "

Rage overtook the man. As he stood up and Threw a punch at Honami

I Quickly Grabbed his wrist and Pushed him towards the wall. He hit it hard, I Bolted towards him and slammed his face against the same wall.

Blood came out as he fell to the ground in Agony.

I looked towards Honami who was Dialing her Phone. The man tried to crawl away but i Punched Him, Two teethes came flying out.

I looked towards Shizuku who was trembling in fear, She Met my gaze and instantly averted towards the Man.

" Shi...Zu...Ku " He rose his hand trying to reach her, But Pain Stopped him from moving, It was pathetic.

The Security Came and took our testimonies. Thankfully, They let the Injuries slide this time, As a thanks.

They took Shizuku and left. I looked at Honami who was shacking, Gazing into the air, She had a Complex Expression on her Face.

" Honami Honami " I called out to her but no Response. I sighed then went closer to her and Kissed her

" ?!!!! "

She was baffled by my move. She stared at me with wide eyes, Before Her Eyes Softened. Feeling Satisfied I broke away

" You should respond when i call you " I Scolded. She touched her lips, Before grinning

" Hehe~ But it got me a kiss from you~ " She said licking her bottom lip.

I sighed and Checked my phone again. The task has disappeared..... Maybe it turned out for the better anyway.

I dialed Sakayanagi

[Hello Ayanokouji-kun] She said with her usual tone. However, I could sense some Irritation behind it

" Hey Sakayanagi. Sorry for not coming Today, Something happened "

[I see. Too bad then, I'll find another time to devour you the-]

" I am the only one allowed to Devour Kiyotaka ! " Said Honami with a huge Blush. I had my on speaker to Honor her Demand

[Fufufu i see. Then cya Kiyotaka-kun, Love you Mwah~]

" Wai- " She Immediately Hung up. a tone of 'fufufu' Played on my head. It irritated me

I had To calm down a furious Honami on our way back Towards the Dorms. It was painful but i'm Glad it worked out on the end

Today was a pretty long day. I made 10000 Private points worth of Profit. Not bad but could've been better.

I Separated With Honami on the elevator and made my way towards the bed. I laid Down Looking at the Calendar.

" Summer vacation huh ? I hope "

This is it for Arc 2 ! Alot of things Happened and I'm so proud of What i've accomplished on it so far.

I'm planning on making Special Chapters at the end of Each arc. It doesn't necessarily need to be as long as this. Or have Some impacts on the story, You could say it's like .5 volumes.

I have a Question for you guys if you don't mind answering : From the earliest Memory i have as a kid, I've had a unknown memory that it felt like it happened but it didn't.

However, I was one day at My Mother's office, When that Exact memory Happened. It was like i was watching a movie that i already watched, The exact same things happened.

Did it happen to you before ?

Anyway i can't wait until i read Vol 6. Spoiler Alert :

There are Rumors that Kiyo would Transfer to Honami's Class. My thoughts are that if it's true then he won't stay for long

I have this weird feeling that if he Transfers, He will Transfer back after some volumes.

I may be coping.

Ryueen Kakeru SS : Defeat

I've never been defeated before. Not in mind games
I have been on Countless Fights, And got beaten up Countless times.

But after each defeat, I come back Stronger and stronger.
My schemes Were one of my strongest points.
Seeing people fall in to my schemes. Seeing their faces after being outsmarted. Was amusing.

Seeing everyone dance at the palms of my hand Brought me Joy.
Seeing their beaten face brought me Thrill.
I always tried to imagine what does it feel like to be outsmarted, Seeing stuff from their POV.

It brought me Joy, I always knew that wasn't the case. But never thought i'd imagine tasting defeat.

That's when i found about this school, An elite School that gathers Talents from all around the country.

I Enrolled hoping for amusement. But it hit me like a giant Rock.
Everyone here was Pathetic, They didn't even realize the Hints that Goblin Teacher gave us.

Knowing fully that they won't listen, I warned them, But those Retards just brushed me off. That's what i was hoping for

I proved my Intellect to those Idiots and forcefully lead them. They couldn't resist me, I gained some Powerful Foes that acknowledged me and with them i took over the class.

However, When i noticed that The Class B has been Promoted to Class A. I was Overjoyed.

Someone, Who thinks exactly like me. Already figured this out and Prevented their Fall.

I had to find that Individual. So i investigate their Figures.

I completely Brushed Ichinose off. She is too naive and her Happy-go-Lucky Attitude pisses me off.

She had an Assistant, Kanzaki Ryuuji. He was a candidate, Aswell as Ayanokouji Kiyotaka.

However, Ayanokouji was a fucking Monster. Someone who is as strong or even Stronger than me.

It was worth coming to this school after all. That Class Has Two fucking monsters, So i decided to play with them.

However, I didn't expect to be outplayed, Not that badly.

Realization hit me, Flashbacks came to me when i outsmarted people and when i was Overjoyed at their pitiful State.

Someone is doing the same to me....

I was dancing at someone's palm, I was so pathetic that they would be laughing hard.

However, It was the same as i imagined. My Defeat brought me joy, I was thrilled, I went with sloppy measurements and Actually get punished for it.

I Heavily underestimated Them.

I stared at the only Potential Candidate for That. His fucking expression never changed, Even after gazing at him for any minor movements. He didn't budge, Even after requesting who it is. He didn't.

It was like he was mocking me, urging me to do better. His eyes were challenging me, I'm sure of it.

I Grinned Widely

" BOSS " Albert said in English, Staring at me grinning like a madman

" Boss Lost Albert, Can you believe it ? "

" BOSS LOST ? " He was surprised, I guess he held me very high.

Listen here.... You fucking Monster, I won't let you look down on me. Ayanokouji, I will Crush you

So Challenge Accepted

Ichinose Honami SS : Stupid

Horrible. A Horrible Human being
Yes, Kiyotaka is a horrible human Being.

I am Horrible too

I always knew that he suffered, Was in Pain, Despair, Stress.

But what did i do ? Nothing....

He was treated horribly by his parents, They never loved him. So
he never loved anyone.

He never had someone he could talk to, He was locked in his
Thoughts and Suffer in silence.

He never knew love or friendship, I never knew such a word
existed, But i was Oblivious.

'I Can't be happy anymore'

No, Everyone Deserves to be Happy

'I abandoned my Humanity'

'I am a heartless monster'

'a Monster that never loved anyone '

Why ? Why is he saying this ? I can't.

'A Ruthless Monster'

Please stop it, I can't.

'Someone like me doesn't deserve to be happy'

" Shut up ! " I blurted. And That cold voice stopped " I would
never let you talk about Kiyotaka like that ever again ! "

'Why ? Why are you doing this ?'

That

'I Don't understand you '

That's because i love you

' You loved the fake me '

No, That's not true.

'The True me is a monster'

" I know that, But i still Love you. "

" You are a horrible human Kiyotaka. But i'll still love you "

I will Help this monster, Regain his Humanity. I don't care what
happens to me in return, I'll do it.

' You are stupid '

Yes i am stupid.

*I'm not particularly proud with this, But i felt the need to do it.
Thank you for reading until now.*

The next Chapter is the special exam

*I have a secret plan that i'm gonna pull. I can very confidently
say that you will like it. Except if you Really Really Really despise
that person. But i doubt it*

Let your imaginations Run Wild :)

Arc 3 Chap 1 : The Loud Waves

6 A.M 1 August

We were ordered to gather around the Entrance, Ready to part towards the Port.

The students were excited, As they chatted amongst themselves about their plans on the ship.

My group wasn't different. I along with Honami, Amikura, Kanzaki, Shibata, Hamaguchi, Minamikata, Andou and Shiranami

We were having the same talk on our own. Shibata talked about checking the restaurants which received support from Amikura.

" Alright Everyone, Form a line alongside your Pairs "

Everyone started pairing up and going inside our bus in a line. I obviously paired with Honami, We walked inside and sat on the corner backseat. It was spacious, But Honami decided to stay close Very close to me

" Ara~ Honami-chan, You're so bold getting this Close on public~

" Amikura on the seat infront of us, Turned around with a wide grin. On a side note, Shibata was with her.

" I'm free to do whatever i want with my Boyfriend~ " Honami stood her ground. While Amikura was watching, She held my hand and gave me a peck on the cheek. Amikura grinned widely at that challenge, So did Honami.

" Ah you poor thing~ You should learn to not go against the Storm Honami-chan. Or perhaps you want me to tell Ayanokouji-kun about what you told us some time ago ? " Said Amikura with a menacing Grin

" Huh Wha- " Honami Flushed, She Glanced at me before she pleaded " Y-You Win Mako-chan ! Please D-Don't snitch ! "

" Huh ? What did Ichinose-san tell you Amikura-san ? " Shibata Joined in the conversation, Amikura giggled before whispering in his ears. Not long after Shibata's lips curled up and looked at me, Slowly raising his hand for a Thumbs up.

I tilted my head in confusion.

" You don't have to know Ayanokouji-kun~ As long as Honami-chan stays like a good girl "

Hoshinomiya Chie, Our Homeroom Teacher, Clapped infront of the door Gathering Everyone's Attention. She firstly went through a roll call.

" Right~ Everyone is here~ " She said in an enthusiastic tone " Everyone~ This trip is gonna be a long one, Around Two Hours~ You're free to do whatever you want as long as you don't disturb others around you~ When we arrive, there would be a 5 minutes break waiting for the cruise to arrive back from the island, Does anyone have any Questions ? "

Everyone was too excited to ask questions. Chie-sensei gazing at everyone of us, When she gazed at me she smirked lightly before Shifting her gaze " Right~ Enjoy your trip everyone~ "

The bus departed and we started our journey towards the port. Everyone was having fun. However

I couldn't help but be suspicious. *Why is there a 5 min break ? Shouldn't the cruise be already there ? Why is it coming back from the island ? Did they check it out before coming ? If so they could've used the normal boats instead.*

" You look perplexed Kiyotaka " Honami broke me out of thought with her statement

" I thought my face never changes "

" Well, You could call it a woman's intuition " Woman's intuition huh ? It is correct this time

" It's just that i find this trip suspicious. Probably my imagination just running wild "

" You too huh ? " She muttered " We are probably overthinking it, Let's just enjoy this trip~ " She exclaimed enthusiastically, I nodded and squeezed her hand lightly.

" Do you mind giving me a lap pillow ? "

" Eh ! " Blurted Honami, A Light Blush on her Face. Amikura rose her head alittle in surprise. Sigh.

" Nevermin- "

" No ! I don't mind Kiyotaka " She Put some space and patted her thighs. I stared at them for a moment. *Well, That was easy.*

I laid my head on her Lap, There was enough space for me to completely lay down my body. I looked at her staring at me while blushing.

Her thighs were so soft, They were forcefully absorbing my fatigue, Leading my eyes to unconsciously close too.

She started gently brushing my hair, Giggling alittle. I couldn't focus on that much and i got driven into a slumber. With one thought on mind

This is the best

Honami POV

It has been 30 minutes since Kiyotaka asked me to let him sleep on my lap.

I couldn't do anything but look at his Cute face while brushing his hair gently. I giggled for 26th time

" I hope he likes it~ " I muttered. He looks like he's enjoying it, I'm Gla-

" Of course he'll like it Honami-chan " Mako-chan turned around with a wide grin on her face. However, I heard some mumbling

" Damn it why him ? " " I'm so Jealous " " So cute "

That's when i realized that half of the Class were Gazing at us. I felt my cheek getting warmer as i started to panic

" You were so focused on him that you weren't aware about your Surroundings Ichinose-san. It's been like this for the past hour " Exclaimed Shibata-kun. *How embarrassing*

" Hehe~ Ayanokouji-kun looks so cute when he is sleeping. Don't you think we should take a photo of him Shibata-kun ? "

" Yeah- Oh we could Show it to him Later and see if he gets Embarrassed ! " Shibata-kun Exclaimed with a evil Grin

" Great idea Shibata-kun ! " They both took out their phones

" N-No ! Don't you think it's wrong to take his picture without his permission ? " I said

" Don't worry Honami-chan, We'll just show it to him and see him get embarrassed, We'll Delete it afterwards " Mako-chan said with a wide evil grin. *Kiyotaka's embarrassed face, So cute*

I nodded enthusiastically while grinning. I feel bad, After all It is Rude

They took a photo of his face and got back to their seats. They both giggled and fist bumped celebrating Victory.

" Hey Amikura-san, Do you mind giving me a lap pillow ? " Moments later, Shibata-kun asked while scratching his cheek

" Sure i don't mind Shibata-kun " She said

Shibata-kun was lowering his head towards Mako-chan's lap. He was about to lay his head When Mako-chan stood and led to Shibata-kun hitting his head on the seat.

" Ouch "

Everyone watching started laughing, I started laughing lightly as to not wake Kiyotaka.

" Why did you do it Amikura-san ? " Questioned Shibata-kun with a sad tone while scratching his head in pain.

" It was just a joke Shibata-kun ! Here " She patted her Lap, Shibata-kun lowered his head. But Mako-chan stood again, This

time Shibata-kun was ready

" You devil "

" Hehe~ "

The Trip continued peacefully. We arrived at our destination

" Right time to wake up Kiyotaka~ "

Kiyogod pov :)

" Wake up~ Kiyotaka " a Soft Voice woke me up while shacking my hair. I opened my eyes and looked towards Honami " Good morning, Pervert~ "

It took me a moment to realize where i was. I rose my head from the pillow and Stretched..... *Wait, Pillow ?*

I looked towards where i was sleeping and realized that i slept on her thighs. I could feel some sort of warm rushing from my body through my face. I averted my gaze

" Morning Honami " I stood up alongside her and went towards the door, It was the port.

The blue Shiny sea that took the color of the clear sky. It was vast, Way Way Way bigger than the water surrounding the School. It was mesmerizing

" It's more beautiful than i thought " I muttered

This isn't my first time looking at the ocean, But my only time was when i was looking at it from the window in a plane. It was flat and boring.

" Is this your first time seeing the ocean ? " Asked Honami

" Yeah "

We both walked and joined our group who was exploring. I felt energetic for some reason, Could it be because of the lap pillow ?

" It's Here ! " One of the students shouted as an Approaching Cruise could be spotted

" Woah It's Huge ! " :)

That's what she said, It was Huge compared to the others. It's length, Width are no joke.

I guess that's what is expected from a Government sponsored school.

The Ship settled on the deck, We all made our way inside. On first glance, It was very luxurious, The deck was made out of clean brown wood, It was brilliant.

The Cruise staff introduced themselves and gave us a handout layer of this cruise.

I went towards my room with my supposed new roommates

" This Ship is Amazing ! "

" I know right Shibata-kun, I can't wait to explore it "

" The food is also free, This is too good to be true "

" You didn't have to ruin our fun Kanzaki-kun. This is our summer vacation and we should enjoy it to the most. Right Ayanokouji-kun ? "

Shibata, Kanzaki and Hamaguchi. We were given the same room number on the desk, I can't say i'm not happy with it. I'm glad i didn't get assigned to random people

" I have to agree with Kanzaki, This vacation is Shady at best "

" You too ?! " Shibata pouted

We reached our room. It was spacious enough for 4 people, It also had a shower room and a Small window on the back peeking towards the ocean.

We all sat on our beds, It was comfy and Comfortable. But i miss Honami's lap. Wait did i just say that ?

Shibata jumped from Laying into Sitting. His eyes beaming with excitement as he asked

" Kanzaki-kun, Hamaguchi-kun. Do you like Any girls on our class ? "

Hamaguchi and Kanzaki looked towards eachother, Before Kanzaki spoke

" Not particularly, There is alot of attractive girls in our class. But i don't feel that way "

" Yeah, I have the same Opinion as Kanzaki-kun " Said Hamaguchi with a small smile " What about you Shibata-kun ? "

" Can you guys keep a secret ? " We all looked towards eachother, and Nodded. Shibata Clinched His resolve, Determination On his eyes. He spoke in a proud and Confident Tone" I think that i like Amikura-san "

'Amikura huh ? It makes sense' The three of us had the same thought

" Amikura huh ? Ara Ara Shibata-kun. Who knew you were a maiden in love " I Grinned widely trying to imitate Amikura. However, My monotone voice ruined it. I Took a mental note to take revenge on my father.

" Stop it Ayanokouji. It's creepy " Exclaimed Kanzaki

" Sorry "

" By the way Ayanokouji-kun. How is it going with Ichinose-san ? " Asked Shibata with a curious tone

" Things are going great for the both of us. Although Honami became Dominant. But i'm enjoying my time with her " Honami has been indirectly forcing me to go on dates and sometimes sleep with

her on her room. I Didn't have any problem with it

" No i'm not talking about that " Shibata gave me a mischievous grin " I'm talking about if you've already did it "

" Do what ? "

" Cmon we are friends right Ayanokouji-kun ? You don't have to be secretive about it " I honestly had no idea what he was talking about. I tilted my head in confusion. He sighed " Did you have seggs ? "

Ah that " No, I'm not planning on breaking the school rules Atleast not yet " He looked disappointed before the 'yet'. He instantly perked up, I had another reason for adding that up. Hamaguchi and Kanzaki suddenly became Interested. I guess it's a big deal

" Not yet Huh ? So you're going to do it ! " Said Shibata enthusiastically

" Yeah, If she's okay with it i guess " I shrugged

" Don't worry. She's definitely Okay wi- " He stopped shutting his mouth close with both of his hand. I gave him an alerted look, He started Waving his hands and panicking " No ! It's not like that Ayanokouji-kun. Uuuh how do i put this. I- "

" Is it related to what Amikura told you earlier ? " His aura quickly faded, Before he nodded " Don't worry, I'm not gonna snitch. I owe you one for telling me " I said giving him a smirk

" Yeah, Amikura-san trusted me with this. I've failed her " He said " But i believe you Ayanokouji-kun ! Go get em " *I Expected it to be way harder to fish what Amikura told him earlier, Guess it worked*

It wasn't a surprise, Honami has became a degenerate and started lusting over me. Just what in the world did i turn her into ?*Sigh.*

Shibata received a notification on his phone, He read it and spoke to us

" Amikura-san and Ichinose-san are gonna explore the ship along with The others. Do you want to join us ? "

" I'll pass. I'm just gonna take a nap, I'm tired " Refused Hamaguchi

" I don't mind Coming. But i'll probably not hang out for too long " Said Kanzaki, Shibata turned towards me with puppy eyes

" Guess i'll tag along "

" Right ! Let's get going ! "

The three of us left the room leaving Hamaguchi with bed-chan.

We started making our way towards an Italian Restaurant, The hallways were well Designed. I Couldn't shake the feeling of uneasiness.

" I Think something Big is gonna happens " I Said To Kanzaki.

" I feel the same way. I Couldn't help but think that something

will happen that would greatly affect our Class points " Thought Kanzaki, Classpoints huh ? It's not a bad Thought

" Are you talking about some sort of an Exam ? " He Nodded " If that happens, The class would erupt into Chaos. It would be your job and Honami to calm everyone down and lead them " Kanzaki was Elected as the second-in-command after Honami, He is very smart and Observant, Probably the smartest on our class. *After me of course.*

" Yeah, I'll do my best alongside Ichinose " He said, Turning towards me " If an exam comes, I'll be counting on you Ayanokouji. Not only you, You too Shibata " We both Nodded and entered the Restaurant

We instantly spotted the Group of Girls on a table alongside 3 free seats. Minamikata who was munching on a slice of pizza spotted us and waved.

We went and sat on the seats, I Grabbed the Menu and scanned through the list. Everything was expensive, But since we were First years we were allowed to eat for free.

The waiter came towards us with a bright smile, I Ordered a plate of Lasagna. The Waiter got our food and we started Chatting among our selves.

Kanzaki shared his thoughts about this trip with Honami, Which she took seriously, She was having Her own doubts aswell.

We continued Chatting while eating. While i was eating i received a message. I Grabbed my phone to check it to find a picture of my sleeping face sent from Amikura. I looked towards her Grinning Face. Not only her, The girls and Shibata also were Staring at me, Kanzaki was confused by the sudden attention on me, Decided to look at me too.

" Delete it " I Commanded

" Nope~ It's so Cute to be Deleted " Said Amikura with a Teasing tone. I Felt uncomfortable with their Evil gazes at me. I Looked towards Honami for Backup, She refuted me with a evil Grin.

" Where in the world did you get that Anywa- " I Tried to recall when i was sleeping. Until it hit me like a giant wall. I Looked towards Honami who flinched alittle " I Trusted you " I Said in a dejected tone, It was very hard to pull out but i did it.

Honami's smile didn't waver, She Still Gazed at me with her Grin. Amikura and the others were Smirking, Witnessing the Emotionless boy gets Embarrassed

We continued Eating and soon after went Exploring. We Checked almost all the floors, It was a very big Ship, There were alot of Restaurants and Saunas, Pools, Theater and alot of facilities.

We kept Exploring for Hours, It was very fun, I Can confidently

say that i enjoy my time with this Group, I am happy with my friends. I Bet i'm smiling right now but no one noticed it.

It was noon when our fun got interrupted by an announcement came over the Ship's P.A

" Attention, Students. Please assemble on the deck. You will be able to see the island soon. This is a good time to take in some rather significant Scenery " *What a strange Way to phrase it*

" What a strange way to word it " Muttered Kanzaki. Honami was perplexed by that announcement too.

" Shall we head and see ? " I Suggested, They Agreed and went towards the deck.

The Deck was slowly flooding with students, The island Slowly But surely coming into View.

" There it is ! " " Woah It's Beautiful "

The students around us were mesmerized, I Noticed Katsuragi also there, From his expression i could tell he was curious about the island.

" Fufufu Fancy meeting you here Ayanokouji-kun " a Familiar Voice spoke behind me. The Familiar cane bumps were also there, As she came closer to us. Alone

" Good morning Sakayanagi-san ! " Greeted Honami. Everyone was surprised on knowing that This loli was Sakayanagi the Leader of Class B. She found their Reactions amusing.

" Good morning to you too Ichinose-san, Did you come here to see the Rather Significant Scenery too ? " As expected of Sakayanagi, She Noticed it too. However, Kanzaki spoke

" Good morning Sakayanagi, I'm Kanzaki Ryuuji. May i know what Business you have with Ayanokouji and Ichinose ? " He gave her a suspicious look

" Fufufu, We are just friends Kanzaki-kun. No need to be suspicious "

The Island now is a few dozen meters away from us. However, The ship Increased It's speed and started Turning around the Island multiple times. Show casing it.

I Noticed some Cut trees and a Man-made Roads. Along with a Cave and a Tower, It was hard to notice but i saw some Corn fields too, There was a water fall alongside the east.

I Glanced Around to see everyone enjoying the view. The same couldn't be said to Katsuragi, Kanzaki, Honami and Sakayanagi, They were Hyper focused on the Island.

An announcement Came from the P.A Speakers again

" We will disembark in 30 Minutes. Please assemble on the deck. All the students should have changed into their jerseys, Make sure to check your designated bag and your luggage, and do not forget

your cell phones. Please keep all other personal items in your room. There is a possibility that you will not be able to visit the bathroom for some time, So please do so now "

" Alright, I'll see you later Ayanokouji-kun. I Can't wait fufufu " She said walking away, *Can't wait ?*

We got separated and i walked towards our room, Kanzaki Questioned me about my Relationship with Sakayanagi. I Told him the 'childhood friend' response, He was Shocked as well as Shibata, But i reassured them that i wouldn't go easy on her just because we are friends.

We reached the Room and Found Hamaguchi Already Changed and is now Checking his Luggage. I Switched to my Jersey and brought my plain Back pack. We returned towards the Ship's Deck. Not long after the Girls joined us.

The ship was drawing nearer and nearer, And the Excitement was getting higher and higher.

" We will disembark now, Beginning with the students from Class A. Cell phones are prohibited on the island. Please hand your phone to your Homeroom Teacher as you leave "

We followed the speaker's orders and Gave our phone to Chie-sensei who was in a jersey too, We then started Disembarking, When we landed down i noticed the Teachers setting some tents with computers inside. There was also a helicopter on the Cruise's pad.

" Right~ Now i'll now do a roll call~ " Chie-sensei came towards us and started going through roll call. They went to great length for a mere Summer vacation

The Class B Students were disembarking with Katsuragi going out first, Followed up by a Green Haired boy, and the rest of the Class B Students. However, Sakayanagi wasn't there, Kumoro came out but she was with Hashimoto, His name was on the TOP 5 Hottest guys on the first year.

Speaking of that, Amikura told me that on the Start of May i was in Third Place after Hirata. However, On July my Ranking dropped and i disappeared from the Top 10. It was a consequence of Dating Honami. Not that i care with such a things.

All the students Disembarked. The teachers set a white Platform, Which Mashima-sensei stood on with a speaker

" Firstly, I Would like to say that i'm happy that you arrived safely. However, It's unfortunate that one of you couldn't participate due to illness "

I'm guessing that Person is Most likely Sakayanagi. Due to the Nature of this Island and probably what's gonna happen next, Her Cripple wouldn't help.

" Well then. We shall commence the current Academic year's first Special Exam " Mashima-sensei uttered those words in a cruel and cold Tone.

" Special exam ? " " WHAAAAAT ? " " Are you serious ? "

Class D Students were Yelling very loudly, Chabashira-sensei Tried to silence them, But no avail.

The Other Classes weren't so different, The surprise hit them, And it hit Hard. Kanzaki and Honami Tensed but they were Ready for it, They instantly Started Calming down our Surprised Classmates. Soon Mashima-sensei Continued

" The Exam commences now and lasts for one week, Concluding on the August 7th. This test would determine if you can live in a deserted island together as a group. In addition, I Should warn you that this special Test is both Practical and realistic. Designed based on real world Corporate Training "

" Living on a deserted island. Does that mean we're not staying on the boat, but the island? "

" You are correct. During the test, you will not be allowed to board the ship without a suitably justifiable reason. It will be necessary for you to fend for yourselves on this island while you are here, from creating a place to sleep to preparing food to eat. Once the test starts, each class will receive two tents, and two flashlights. You will be provided with one box of matches. There is no limit to the amount of sunscreen you can have. Each student will be provided with one toothbrush. As a special case, girls will be allowed to have as many feminine sanitary products as they'd like, without any restrictions. Please ask your respective homeroom teachers for those. That is all " With that, The teachers Started Distributing the items

There was some students from Class D, Namely Ike and Yamauchi. That voiced their Complains of unfairness, However Mashima-sensei Refuted them for their Laziness. In order to live the Luxury on the Ship, We gotta pass this Exam first.

" But, teacher, isn't this supposed to be our summer vacation? We were brought here under the pretext of going on a relaxing trip. Don't

you think
that bringing us here and then springing this corporate training on
us could be
considered unfair? " Some of the students in our class began to
protest along these lines.

" I see. I suppose that you're not wrong about that. I can understand
why you would be discontented."

Mashima-sensei's response showed that he recognized the soundness
of such an argument, unlike Ike's complaints. There were students
who were
dissatisfied with the current situation, and those who were
dissatisfied with
the process as a whole. " However, please do not worry. It would
make sense for you to have
complaints if you were being forced into a harsh situation.
However, even
though we're calling it a special test, there's no need to think about
it in such
unhappy terms. In the coming week, you can go swimming, or hold
a
barbecue. It wouldn't be a bad time for you to occasionally have a
campfire
and chat with friends, either. The theme of this special exam is
'freedom',
after all. "

" Huh? Huh? The theme is freedom? We can have a barbecue?
Hmm?

And this is still called a test? I'm so confused... " Students's Doubt
only Rose, After all this was a Test but we were allowed to have
fun.

" As a major part of this special test, we've decided to distribute
300
points to each class. By using your points well, you might be able to
enjoy
this week's special test just as you would a normal trip. We've also
prepared
a manual just for that purpose." Mashima-sensei received a booklet
that looked to be a few dozen pages thick from another Teacher "
This manual lists all of the ways you can obtain points. It also
explains where to get drinking water and food, as well as essential
necessities. If you wanted to have a barbecue, it explains how to

prepare the equipment and ingredients. We also have numerous tools for you to be able to enjoy playing in the ocean to the fullest."

" But sensei, You said this was an Exam Right ? Shouldn't be there any difficulty to it ? " Honami asked an Excellent Question. The students who was Happy and excited Turned Grim.

" No, There is nothing Difficult. This Exam would have no Negative Effects on your Classes. You are Free to do whatever you want. Of course there is some boundaries that shouldn't be Passed "

So there was no difficulty or negatives at all ? What's the point of this test then ? However, What Mashima-sensei Said next Clarified Everything

" When this special test period is over, each class' remaining points will be added to their total class points. Your point totals will reflect this change once summer vacation is over. "

I See..... The Students were in a disarray, Their Leaders managed to contain atleast some of them.

" Each class will receive one copy of the manual. If the manual is lost,

you may have another copy. However, it will consume points, so please be

very careful. Also, the student who Isn't Participating was from Class B. According to the rules of this special test, should any student

have to leave due to illness, there will be a thirty-point penalty to the class as

a whole. Therefore, Class B will be starting with 270 points. "

The Students Of Class B were Shaking. Other Classes were Shocked too, The Penalty was merciless and Class B Fell victim for it without doing anything. This helps our Class, But if we are Careless. We could Drop to Class B at the end of this Exam

We went Towards Chie-sensei for Supplementary Instructions, She gave us a wristwatch which is to Monitor us in case of an Emergency.

Kanzaki Grabbed the Manual and started Reading the Penalties. Such as Missing Roll calls, Polluting the environment, Withdraw, The most Serious Penalty Was Guilt of Violence Towards another Class. I Guess we are Somewhat Safe from Ryueen's Tyrannic Acts.

We would be given 2 Huge tents, 2 Flashlights, A Box of Match and a Cardboard Toilet.

My classmates were Disgusted by the mere sight of it, Especially the Girls. It is understandable, Some people tried to convince us that we could save points and go through with it. But at the end

Honami decided to buy new Toilets.

" Well then~ Allow me to explain some Additional Rules~ "

" There is more ? " Blurted Shibata

" Yes~ There are Designated spots located around the Island, Those spots is what we call ' The right of exclusive Possession' Any class that Claims that spot gets the Right to make use of it. You may Claim as many spots as you like. However, If you try to claim a spot that would be already Claimed by Another Class you would Lose 50 C.P " She Continued " Also, The right of exclusive Possession would revoke in a period of 8 Hours since The Claim. When it invokes you would Gain One provisional Point to your Total points. You can't spend them. Also, On the Spot you camp on, The roll Call would be held~ Does anyone have any questions ? "

" Sensei~ How can we Claim a spot ? " Asked Honami, Chie was Expecting This Question. She took the Manual and gave it to us

" Each Class would be Assigned a keycard, With that Keycard, You can use it on a device located on each spot to claim it~ The keycard gets Assigned to a specific person you choose as your Leader, That leader would be the person to claim a spot ! Only the leader is allowed to claim and using another person to claim the spot wouldn't work. The Keycard would contain the Name of the Person you Choose However~ " Her Expression Turned from Happy to Serious, The students Gulpd at the Scary Change " At the end of the Exam. You would be allowed to guess other classes's Leaders, Read the Manual for more Info "

Kanzaki Opened the Manual and Read Again. If you Guess the Leader Correctly you would be awarded 50 C.P while Taking 50 C.P From the Guessed Class, It also Negates the Bonus Points from the Designated Spot. The Leader Couldn't be Changed without a Justifiable Reason. If you Guess a Leader Incorrectly. You would lose 50 C.P, Only Fair.

With that, The Explanation was done. Chie-sensei Left to Check Class D which had her Childhood Friend Chabashira-sensei While we discussed over where to go. We decided to choose a leader whenever we find a spot.

At the end. Honami Chose to go to the Waterfall, As we were Departing Kanzaki Approached me

" Hey Ayanokouji, Do you mind Accompanying me ? I Think i saw another Spot " He Asked

" Are you talking about the Cave ? "

" Yeah, Thinking about it, It would be a hard spot to not have a device " Deduced Kanzaki, It was a fair Assumption. I Was also Curious about the Cave so

" Sure "

Arc 3 Chap 2 : Suspicion

Me and Kanzaki both Set our way Towards the Cave.

After checking it out with Honami first. She agreed to stay and lead the Class instead of following along.

We were Walking past the Trees, Brushing leaves aside and carefully Stepping in the uneven Ground, In silence.

After some time i decided to break the Silence

" What do you think of this exam Kanzaki ? " I was Curious about his Opinion, He possesses a Remarkable Intellect and Observation afterall. He took some time before Responding

" Well, The General idea is to save points. But it may very well turn to a Leader identification War, We have to be careful in Choosing our leader, We can't Choose someone like me or Ichinose, Maybe even you too " He said

" Yeah i agree, I Would've been the best option If not for my Confrontations with Ryueen " I Can almost guarantee that Ryueen already knows that i was the one who defeated him. It was simple really, The only ones who could intentionally allow their classmates to be injured for victory is pretty much only me. Kanzaki would've been The most suspected if not for his Confrontation with him on the Roof top. Ryueen is a genius, I doubt that he wouldn't see through Kanzaki's poker face when he was on the rooftop. So the only Natural Conclusion is me.

" I would be lying if i say wasn't concerned. But i'm convinced that you can More than defend yourself against Him. The problem is our Classmates " He Exclaimed, I Was about to correct him but he Already found the flaw " Errr Never mind that, I Forgot about our Agreement. But it's still not a foolproof Plan, There is no such thing as being Too cautious with Ryueen " I Nodded, He Certainly was Right. Ryueen is famous for his underhanded tactics, He got away with it many times, Not only in this school.

We Reached the Cave, And we were about to walk out when i grabbed Kanzaki's hand. He turned around with his usual stern Expression

" What's Wrong ? " He Asked

" Not too loud, Wait and see " He looked Confused but Nodded and we Hid our selves.

Not long after, a Green haired Boy, He was the one who came

right after Katsuragi when Class B was Disembarking. was Running towards the cave and checked the inside, He then looked at where he came from

" This is Amazing Katsuragi-san ! It's a spot ! Just as you told us !

" He Exclaimed Enthusiastically

" Yes, It was a hint from the school " Katsuragi came out walking towards the Green Haired Boy

" A Hint ? "

" Yahiko, Why do you think the School turned around the island Multiple times with Increasing Speed ? "

" Uuuuuh, Site Seeing ? " He said in a confused tone, I'm honestly impressed..... By his Stupidity.

" No, It was a deliberate move from the School to give us a hint about the Locations of the designated spots before the test could actually start. Through the P.A Announcement "

" Woaaaaah, That's So amazing Katsuragi-san, You can see even through the school's schemes. That's what is expected from the Leader of Class A ! "

" I'm not the Leader Anymore Yahiko, I only have you as my remaining Follower, I Appreciate it " Katsuragi said in a emotional Tone " Also we aren't Class A. Atleast for this Exam " *Atleast for this Exam huh ?*

Yahiko Started Shedding tears while Katsuragi was patting his back in a warm smile, It was Pathetic. Kanzaki was having the Same opinion too.

They both entered the Cave, We could hear their voiced reverberate inside

" Woah, It's so Big ! It's so deep too ! " ***Okay sorry i kinda abused this Joke***

" Yeah, This may be the Best Spot. Be Careful Yah- "

" Right ! I'm Gonna Claim it ! "

" NO ! " Katsuragi's screamed loudly, Then there was silence. I Looked towards Kanzaki who had his Eyes wide, He noticed my Gaze and turned towards me with a grin on his face, I Grinned back for the sake of Comedy. Our Situation Reminded me of a story when The Protagonist Won on the End and grinned at his Heroine who grinned back too. Maybe I'am the Protagonist and Kanzaki is the Heroin- What am i thinking ?

After the long silence, Katsuragi came out of the Cave with a sort of Green Card on his hand. He checked his surrounding and noticed no one. Yahiko Shortly followed, His Expression Was gone and now had a serious face.

" Now that you claimed the Spot Katsuragi-san. Are we gonna Deliver the News to the Class ? " Said Yahiko in a scripted Speech

" Yes, But be mindful about what you say and do Yahiko. There may be someone eavesdropping on us, It is my Responsibility as the Leader to ensure the safety of my identity" He said Raising his Keycard Towards the Serious Yahiko

" Yes Katsuragi-san. Should we head back before anyone comes ?

" Katsuragi nodded and they Started Walking to where they came from.

We waited around a minute and Came out from our Hiding spot

" Seems like we got some Valuable information " Said Kanzaki " So Totsuka Yahiko is Class B's Leader. That's good news "

" You're right, Are you gonna Report it To Honami ? " I Asked, He started walking towards the Cave Entrance and i followed suit

He nodded. We went inside the Cave, It was spacious. The shapes looked unnatural, It must be Man-made. Inside was a Device who Carried Class B's Name on it. There was also a Timer 7H 57Minutes 37 Seconds.

" Let's head back before they Come back. We got more than we wanted " Commanded Kanzaki and i followed.

We made our way towards water fall though a Man-made path between the tall Brown Trees, The landmark made it easier for us to return back, Most likely Intentional from the school to hint towards another spot.

I Could instantly spot our classmates on the sandy ground. The view was amazing, But Kanzaki didn't think so as he walked towards Honami who was Tying a Hammock. I Stood there admiring the view, But i catch up to him Eventually

" Oh Kiyotaka, Kanzaki-kun. Welcome back~ " Greeted Honami " So did you find any more spots ? "

" We found something more important than a spot " Said Kanzaki. Honami instinctively rose her eyebrows " a Class's Leader "

Honami's eyes widen, She Quickly finished Tying the Hammock and sat on it " Do you mind Sharing ? " She spoke in a serious tone and expression. *Leader mode : ON*

" Class B's leader is Totsuka Yahiko, He claimed a spot when we were around " Honami looked towards me for confirmation. I nodded, Her expression softened and now she was visibly excited

" Great Job You Two~ " She said with a bright smile that would smite anyone. I wasn't an exception

" It's all thanks to Ayanokouji. If it wasn't for him stopping me we wouldn't have gotten this Information " Kanzaki Turned towards me

with a small smile. Honami looked at me blushing a little and Thanked me. It was cute.

" Yo Do you guys mind helping us ? " Kobashi Yelled, I Decided to let the leaders and go help

Kobashi Yuume. She mostly hangs out with Amikura, I am surprised that i didn't come in contact with her sooner.

According to her, Shiranami was Chosen as the leader. They set a routine where the Claim would Expire Exactly after Roll call. It was Brilliant but not foolproof. Overall a nice Plan

There were some interesting ideas on the Discussion. The trees around allowed us to tie Hammocks instead of buying more Tents and saving points. We had people who were Wild experts, Our surroundings had many food resources. The drinking water was no problem as we could use the water Shower to boil at free cost.

Only 2 Hours passed and the situation is at it's best. All thanks to Honami's exceptional leadership and unity of our class which is also thanks to her.

We spent around 50 Points and now we have around 300 Points including Yahiko's name. Class B's already down to maximum of 220 Points. You could say that we already won as long as we keep our leader hidden

However, I wouldn't be so sure. After all, Who knows what *she can do* ?

" Ayanokouji-kun. Can you lend me a hand ? "

I'm probably overthinking it. Let's just wait and see

" Coming "

The Rest of the day were spent on Preparing the field. We finished just before night time and i instantly went to sleep. Tomorrow we'll be checking other Classes Bases

I'm mostly Curious about how Ryueen would tackle an exam like this. He is an Enigma who wouldn't find using a ridiculous idea ridiculous.

I'm Interested in what Ryueen-chan is up to

The next day

I along with Kanzaki, Amikura and Shibata decided to go and scout the other Classes Bases. We decided to check Class D First and walked alongside a river. Soon we reached their Base

" Oh Ayanokouji-kun ! " Kushida was carrying some branches, She Put them close to a camp fire and Walked towards us with a warm Smile " Kanzaki-kun, Shibata-kun and Amikura-san too. Welcome Welcome "

" Hey Kushida-san ! Sorry for Disrupting you guys, We came for a visit " Said Amikura

" No no, You don't need to Apologize Amikura-san. You're always welcome "

" Oh, Ayanokouji-kun ! " Hirata walked close to us with a warm smile, His Face was wet. I Assume he just Woke up

" Hey Hirata, How are you ? " I Asked

" I'm doing great Ayanokouji-kun ! What about you ? "

" I'm fine, For the most part " I asked " How is your Class doing ? "

" Weell~ Everything has been Great yesterday, We found a spot thanks to Ike-kun and we spent around 100 Points " Kushida Answered, But her Expression was saying otherwise " But Kouenji-kun decided to leave at the end Costing us 30 Points "

I Guess that wasn't very surprising. Kouenji is an self-centered enigma who does stuff that only Interests him. That was from my Experience with him, Kiryuin is similar to him too.

Speaking of them, One day i was with Honami on a cafe when they Both entered and went on what it seem like a date. Kouenji and Kiryuin were both Laughing loudly while speaking, So it was pretty hard to not Notice them. Thankfully, We were under the radar.

" That's depressing " Said Amikura.

I checked their camp, It looked Similar to us yet not. Objectively speaking we were in much better Condition. However....

" Hey Hirata, Isn't That Ibuki from Class C ? " Asked Kanzaki. Ibuki Mio, One of Ryueen's Lackeys. She had a visible Bruise in her face as she sat isolated from the Rest of the camp. There was also Horikita who wasn't far away from her.

" Yeah, That's Ibuki-san " Hirata said, His expression depressed alittle as he said the Next words " She got kicked out after Opposing Ryueen-kun's way of handling this exam. As a result, she got injured, We found her yesterday laying around and decided to take her in "

In other words, Ibuki went against Ryueen who just kicked her out. Class D Found her and decided to take care of her.

" I see.... " Kanzaki was somewhat suspicious, But decided to stay silent

We exchanged information telling them about what we've done and so on. Kanzaki didn't mutter a breath about Yahiko's identity for obvious reasons. There was nothing Worth Mentioning because everything they told us we've already done or done better.

As we were about to leave, 2 Students came from the Direction of the Beach. Taking potato Chips and eating it, While carrying Soda cans.

They looked kinda Drunk to me. They came and started examining Class D's base, One of them took a sip from his Soda and burped, It was Disgusting. The other Erupted in a fake Laughter

" OH MY GOD AS EXPECTED FROM THE DEFECTS AHAHAHAHAHAHA " he held his Stomach to go with the Act. The Class D's students were furious but they didn't Interrupt, It was Obvious that this is a provocation

" Don't tell me you guys have been Living on eating bugs and snakes, I guess that's what Filthy defects like you Deserve. It's funny how you're taking this exam seriously when you're bound to lose any way " The other person started Mocking. Sudou was about to Lash at them, But Ike instantly stopped him, Sudou pissed off went inside the tent.

" Here, We'll help you you morrons " He dropped a Bag of Chips on the Ground " I Have a message From Ryueen to you, Class C is inviting you to share their Luxuries if you really want to enjoy this summer Vacation, So be Grateful "

Both of them started walking towards our Camp, One of them thought he was so cool passing us like we were Garbage and started laughing. However Amikura had Other plans

" Hey you " The both of the Turned around and looked at Amikura

" What ? do you want a back of Chips too ? " Asked one of them

" You shut up " She turned towards the Second person " Fix your pants, Your underwear is sticking out. It's gross " She gave him a disgusted look

The second guy started Checking his Pants, Amikura Snickered and Exclaimed

" Are you Gay or something ? Stop touching your Butt it's gross " She turned looking away while Silently Laughing.

" Y-You Bitch !- " The Guy was about to lash out but the other person Stopped him. *They weren't drunk after all*

Everyone started Laughing at him with the exception of Hirata, who didn't find it funny.

They both walked away pissed off. Amikura stroke a victory Pose, Before we made our way towards the Beach. And we couldn't believe our eyes, I Too was Too shocked to let out a word

Jet skis, Volley balls, The smell of a smoked meats, Screams, Yells, Laughter....

" What in the world does he think he's doing ? " Blurted Kanzaki at the nonsense in front of him

The students were laughing and having fun, Playing around in the water and having a barbecue, It was the Definition of a vacation

We started walking towards the Beach. We got instantly Spotted

by someone who called out towards another person, Then he Rushed towards us

" Um, Ryueen-san Requests your presence " He said meekly, It looks like he is scared

Kanzaki nodded and we followed right Behind Him

" Well well, If it isn't The Fucking Monster. Alongside, Some unimportant people Kukuku " Ryueen was relaxing on his Chair. His usual smirk plastered on his Face as he mocked Kanzaki and the others

" Seems like you're having quite the High life Ryueen, I'd expect nothing less from you " Kanzaki composed him self and faced the Tyrant " But aren't you having a little too much fun ? You're throwing the exam "

" Kukuku who cares about this Shitty exam ? I'm basically enjoying my summer vacation " He took a sip from his Drink " I Absolutely hate Hard work. You wouldn't understand because you're too Short Sighted Kanzaki, You understand Right Monster ? " He said looking towards me. As i suspected, He already knows

" I Don't know what you're talking about. You're basically going through last place for temporary fun. Doesn't seem too beneficial to me " I Played dumb

" Kukuku stop playing Dumb Ayanokouji. This shitty exam is basically Shitty. Working so hard for one week seems like a pain in the ass for me so i decided to go with a different approach " Ryueen's Tyrannic method allowed him to chose this option.

" Guess i couldn't see it " I glanced at my surrounding analyzing them, There was alot of bought stuff. Almost like a waste. However....

" You've spent all of your points ? " I Asked

" Isn't that Obvious ? " He took a sip from his Drink again

If he spent all of his points during this two days. It would be impossible living the next 5, Feeding the rest of your classmates out of the food you find in the island isn't going to be enough. Unless....

" Are you planning on making everyone drop out by the time your 'luxuries' are done ? " I Asked, Kanzaki looked baffled alongside Amikura and Shibata. Ryueen Grinned more widely

" As expected from you Monster. Yes, I'm gonna force everyone to drop out and enjoy the rest of our vacation on the Boat " *Zero points Strategy huh ? That's interesting*

" By the way Ryueen-kun. Do you know what happened to Ibuki-san ? " Asked Shibata who was silent during this whole time. Ryueen Glanced at him and smirked

" Oh that Bitch ? She opposed me and i just Dealt with her " He said gesturing with his hand like he Slapped her " Don't tell me

she came running towards you guys for help ? Kukuku i wouldn't take that out of Consideration "

" No, She was at Class D's Camp. She was at a pitiful state " Said Kanzaki. Ryueen Laughed

" Anyway, Enough about the Exam shit. If you wish you could join us, We are offering our Luxury " He said Moving both of his hands welcoming us

" No i'll pass. I Won't Collude with the Ene- "

" Don't mind if i do " I Went and grabbed a branch of meat that was on his Plate. The Guy that welcomed us Clearly got pissed off, But Ryueen Stopped him and started Laughing

" Kukuku, You really know how to enjoy your time Monster, Feel free to take more "

I took a bite out of the Branch full of meat. It was Tasty, I Finished Gulping and spoke while looking at him

" Nah, I'm not gonna Ruin your Vacation Ryueen " I Said " But since you want to go so far to be nice. There would be a thing we would appreciate if you give us "

Ryueen Rose an Eyebrow " And What would that be ? " He seems to have an idea

" Class C's Leader " I Said as i took another bite

" Kukuku why would i give you that ? "

" Since you're going for a zero points Strategy, It wouldn't hurt to give us the leader right ? " I Said taking another bite

" But you'll get more Class points, What would i get in Return ? "

" Nothing " I Said as i took the last Bite and threw the Stick to the Trash " You would Give us Class C's Leader while you get Nothing in return. Take it or leave "

Ryueen's Smile Reached his Ear as he Clutched his Stomach, Laughing Loudly. Moments later he calmed down

" Kukuku You're a funny Guy Ayanokouji, Thank you for your Offer but i must Decline " He said smirking

" That's a shame " I Said walking away " Thank you for the meal Ryueen, It was Delicious "

" Kukuku You're welcome " With that we left The Beach on a very interesting note " I'll crush you and your Class Ayanokouji, Just so you wait "

We walked towards Class B's Cave that me and Kanzaki checked the other day. I got interrogated about the food ate at Ryueen but it didn't last for long

We reached the Cave, But this time it was Different

" I Can't see anything in the Inside " Shibata Exclaimed as he was checking the cave from very different angles " Are those Vinyls ? "

" Seems so " Kanzaki spoke " I Wonder what they are so secretive

about "

" Then we will just have to go and check Right ? " Amikura spoke.
We all nodded and went towards the Cave Entrance

" Eh ?! " Yahiko was standing near the entrance, Looked shocked at us " W-W-W-What do you want ? This is Claimed by Class B "

" We know, We just came to check That's all~ " Said Amikura

" I-If you do that We won't hesitate to report you ! " Threatened Yahiko in a quite Troubled tone and he was quite Shaky.

" But there aren't any rules that prohibit us from Checking your spot right ? Don't worry we just want to take a quick peek inside " Said Amikura as she Bounced Towards The Vinyl to unwrap them. However, Katsuragi came out

" What is this ? I Don't recall allowing you to bring guests in here Yahiko " He said with his Stern Expression

" I Didn't Katsuragi-san ! It was them who came trying to sniff around ! " He said lifting a finger towards Amikura who responded with a grin. Katsuragi turned to look at us

" What do you want ? " He asked with a commanding tone

" Why is there Vinyl on your Entrance ? are you hiding something ? " Probed Kanzaki

" That's none of your business Class A "

" Then we'll make it our business " Said Kanzaki as he went towards him to enter

" If you'll do that I'm gonna report it to the school " Katsuragi Threatened

" What are you gonna tell them ? That We came snooping around ? Don't make me laugh "

" I will report that you used forceful methods to gain an advantage during the exam "

" You think that would work ? "

" No, But it will be a nuisance for you, I Doubt that you want that especially since you are Class A. Any distraction would deviate you out of your path " Reasoned Katsuragi, He wasn't wrong, If Class A's hands get full with this Case, It makes us vulnerable to other Classes especially Ryueen " Not only that i'll report it, I'll also come with the Students of Class B to your Camp and inspect everything, I'm sure you don't want that "

" Tsk " Kanzaki Clinched his Tongue and backed off " You're right, Anyway Let's Head back. This is useless " We nodded and followed him, But Katsuragi Called out to us

" Do you mind telling me who is Class A's leader is ? " Asked Katsuragi, It is kinda out of character for him to ask something

unnecessary, But looking at him he was inspecting everyone of us. I see

" Sure, The leader of Class A is Ichinose Honami, But if you're talking about the Leader who has the right of the Exclusive possession then that i can't say " Said Kanzaki clearly Mocking Katsuragi, But Katsuragi stood with his stern expression unfazed

" I see, Thank you then " He said walking back into the Cave.

Every class has used their own methods of tackling this exam, But in Class B and C exactly. There is some vague parts that i couldn't grasp yet. Ryueen is definitely up to something, Same goes for Katsuragi Let's just wait and see.....

1. Katsuragi has lost Against Sakayanagi already and now his faction only has Yahiko against The full Class B. But he put as a leader in this exam and the Sakayanagi faction is following him, Atleast on the Surface.

2. The Reason Katsuragi asked that Question is to try to Jog out a reaction from any of them, Since he thought that one of them is most likely the leader.

Arc 3 Chap 3 : Hidden Movements

We walked back towards our camp after our visit to Class B. I once again Remembered what Katsuragi said

'We aren't Class A. Atleast for this exam'

I've decided to mostly take a back seat, But i don't think i'll be able to keep this up whenever They make a move

I have full faith in Honami's abilities alongside Kanzaki. But against Ryueen and Katsuragi it would be though, Especially the Former.

Besides, Some of the blame could fall on me because Ryueen is targeting our Class to challenge me. It would be a direct challenge so leaving it to Honami would only burden her.

Class D isn't a threat. Hirata and Kushida are too nice to go against us. Although i have my concerns about the Latter, She won't do anything.

There is Also Horikita, Manabu's Younger sister, But she's a bro-con.

She'll most likely try to do something stupid just to prove her superiority if she takes the leader's Role. Manabu occasionally opens up to me, He is deeply disappointed on her. He didn't tell me the specifics of their relationship but it's safe to assume that they aren't talking with eachother at all. Like complete strangers as i saw during the Scholar event.

In other words, Class D is almost completely Harmless.

We reached our camp, The pleasant atmosphere and the fresh air around it. Truly Beautiful..... Not

I noticed something ugly, An Ugly presence. It was coming from an ugly student who had glasses and had the same armband as Ryueen's class

Bruises, Visible on his face. The same as Ibuki.....

He was helping on springing water around the camp. Alongside some of my Classmates

We asked some of our classmates about Honami's whereabouts. They gestured towards an inconspicuous place behind a tent and was rounded by trees. It was like a small room

Honami who was sitting on a hammock checking stuff on the manual, noticed us approaching and smiled warmly

" Welcome back Kanzaki-kun, Kiyotaka~ and the rest too "

" Thank you very much Ichinose " Kanzaki turned towards us " Shibata and Amikura, You may go. If you want you can stay Ayanokouji "

Shibata and Amikura left, I Stayed. Kanzaki wasn't displeased at all. He focused back at Honami

" We have checked the other Classes's bases and got some very valuable Information " Honami hummed, urging Kanzaki to continue " Before i start, What's the situation ? Why is there a Class C student in our camp ? "

He didn't try to hide his displeasure when asking this. Doubts, Suspensions, Anxiety was showing in his eyes. Honami wasn't too dense to not notice them

" No need to be afraid Kanzaki-kun. We are keeping a close eye on Kaneda-kun " She said with a reassuring tone and smile. But Kanzaki's doubt didn't waver " We found him sleeping outside not long after you left, He was quite beaten up. He told us that he opposed Ryueen and got kicked so we decided to take care of him. I also thought about making him miss Roll-calls so Class C would lose a great deal of points "

Keeping an eye on suspicious movement while forcing him to stay for the week so Class C would lose 60 points instead of 30 if we forced his withdraw. Honami decided to take the risk to inflict as many damage as possible towards Class C.... However

" Normally that would work ... But " Kanzaki briefed her on Class C's situation. Honami was perplexed, It was an insane strategy after all.

" I see... " Kanzaki also informed her about Ibuki in Class D alongside Class A's secretive. Honami's plan was solid but useless " This calls for concern. I think we should let Kaneda-kun know that he can withdraw. Kaneda-kun is unfortunately a spy, It is Obvious "

Kaneda claimed that he opposed Ryueen for going for zero points strategy. There was no need for him to be here, and he should realize that it's worthless.

He could've dropped out but he didn't, Instead he went to our camp and started helping the enemy. Ibuki was more or less the same.

For them to be present when all of their classmates are dropping out is extremely suspicious. Honami seems to grasp that much

" Right, I'm gonna inform him of that " Said Kanzaki, After receiving confirmation from Honami, He left towards Kaneda

When he left i followed after him " Kanzaki "

" What's up Ayanokouji ? " He turned towards me

" You should " I briefed him on What to do

" I see. I'll do that, Thank you Ayanokouji "

With that he left towards Kaneda, I Walked back towards Honami who was stressed out

" Are you okay ? " I asked

" Oh ? Yeah it's just that..... " She thought a bit, Before she patted her hammock. I obeyed and sat beside her, Our shoulders are leaning against Eachother.

She stared at the ground for a while, Before she spoke " I still can't believe that Kaneda-kun is a spy. Ryueen-kun tried to abuse our kindness and use it against us, I can't believe someone is evil enough to do that " She sighed " I guess it's Ryueen-kun who we're talking about. He won't hesitate to use underhanded tactics to win "

Honami was tugging her pants out of stress, So i put my hand on top of hers and squeezed it.

Honami's kind nurtured nature made her oblivious to evil motives, Which makes Ryueen the most dangerous opponent against her. They are the opposite

However, Honami showed great intellect and leadership, She is somewhat naive but not stupid.

This revelation made her fully understand that people aren't as kind as she thought

It first started with the assault attempt then Nagumo, Then came Ryueen and ended up with me

Honami is someone talented and has alot of potential, If she fully evolves she would become a force to be reckoned with. She would surpass Ryueen and even Sakayanagi, Although the Latter's abilities are unknown but i'll put her at the same Level or slightly higher than Ryueen. Hypothetically speaking

Honami is going through a series of constant growth, and now she's Evolving

" Kiyotaka " She turned to look at me, Her beautiful blue eyes were full of worry and anxiety. She squeezed my hand before muttering the next words " Do you think we can win this exam ? "

" I don't see why we wont " She loosened up a bit " You've been working so hard already, We're still half way through Day 2 and You've done a marvelous job, But it's taking a toll on you. Take a break and let us handle the rest " I squeezed her hand back.

She loosened up and leaned completely on me, Resting her head on my shoulder

" There is no point in arguing about it, Right ? " She asked

" Nope, You will take a rest " When i said that she giggled.

She then took me offguard embracing me tightly, Her sudden movement caused us to fall on the hammock. She took the opportunity and put her lips into mine.

Anxiety and tire leaked from her soft lips, But Warmth overtook

them. A Pleasant feeling that yet i can understand, A Feeling that makes my heart throb in Its place, A Feeling that sometimes force a smile on my apathetic face

Honami Pressed her Chest into mine as she deepened our kiss, Both of us were fathoming eachother's mouth. She rose her self abit before breaking it, I was on a deadlock and she used her whole body to do so.

" You don't know how much i love you~ I'm so lucky~ " She said happily and in a warm tone

" That's a lie, I'm the lucky one "

She giggled and gave me a short kiss

" How about.... We both are lucky~? "

" Sounds good "

She nodded happily and laid on the hammock beside me, still hugging me.

Guess i'll stay like this

I stayed inside the hammock for 2 minutes. And that's what it took for her to fall, She overworked her self in just two days. But thanks to that, Our camp is even better.

Although Overworking yourself in 2 days sounds unbelievable, But she was assigned to Night watch and was awake from 3 AM today. Adding the countless times she managed and ordered, But she stayed strong until the end.

I sneaked out from the deadlock carefully not waking her up. I silently walked towards the the exit of the small room. However, I found a Rat

" Ara~ Sorry Sorry it was a coincidence, I'll go back to my wor- "

" What are you doing Chie-Sensei ? " Chie was concealing her presence at the entrance eavesdropping since the second kiss.

" Nothing~ I was just passing by~ " She said with a good facade consists of a warm innocent smile. But not good enough for me

" You see Chie-sensei.... Eavesdropping on one of your students's private life isn't something to be tolerated " I Exclaimed. She tensed up lightly.

" Sorry Kiyotaka-kun~ I got a warning saying that two of my students were having an Increase of heartbeats above normality~ So i decided to check.... My bad Teehee~ " She knocked her head with a sly smile " I didn't expect to find the two of them just having a moment~ Ah ! Well, I'll see you later Teehee~ " A Lie, *Chie-sensei seeing Me and Honami's heartbeats increase and thinks nothing of that sort ? Cap*

With that she started walking away

" Do you think i'll easily forgive you just because you're my teacher Chie-sensei ? " She stopped and turned around, A Grin on

her face

" Oooofcourseee Not~ I did something terrible so i deserve punishment~ Punish me Kiyotaka-kun~ " She said with a seductive tone. A lustful smile and gaze were plastered on her face. *There is one response*

" I'll punish you then "

It has been a while since Honami went to sleep and Kaneda leaving our camp. Kanzaki took over the leader at her Absence and started organizing. Our camp was complete by night time.

It was Around 7:30 PM when i excused my self to go towards the Toilet. However, There was no vinyl paper *Who in the world did use all of them ????*

" Damn it " I muttered loudly

" Is everything okay Ayanokouji-kun ? " Shiranami appeared behind me holding sticks for the camp fire. She had some colored sticks for a game called Werewolf we are gonna play later.

" Apparently, Somebody had his stomach run wild and used all the Vinyl paper " *I Can only think of one person that can possibly do that*

" Is that so ? Do you mind if i get you one from Sensei ? " She offered, Shiranami is a kind girl and one of my close friends too. So it would be natural for her to help me

" I'd really like that. And oh, Can you bring 3 or more instead ? " I asked

" Sure, I'll just drop the sticks and help you Ayanokouji-kun ! "

" Thank you very much "

Shiranami went towards the camp fire, I looked towards the Cardboard Toilet. *Whoever made this is a genius*

Not long later, I could hear some Vinyl scratches approaching.

Shiranami appeared holding 5 Bags

" Here you go Ayanokouji-kun ! "

" Thank you very much Shiranami " I Went and placed one of the Bags and started answering Nature

*** 5 min Later ***

I Finished whatever i was doing, and walked back towards the camp

My friends was sitting around the campfire and started chatting happily, Laughs and Jokes were scattered around.

Ofcourse There was Teasing since the Amikura Mako was present alongside Shibata, Those two have gotten close lately. They are both probably the most liked in our class, and i could instantly tell how casual and cheery the mood around them. It was pleasant

When it Reached 7:50. I Stood up and went towards Honami's hammock, She was sleeping like a log. I Started gently shacking her and calling out to her

" Nhghh~ Please one more minute " She moaned and turned to the side

" If i give you more time you'll miss Roll-call " I Explained

" Roll-call ? " She muttered, Before she rose her head and looked at me " Roll-Call ! "

Her sleepy surprised face alongside her messy hair made it hard to not giggle. So i did

" What's so funny Kiyotaka ? " She asked before she stood

" Sorry it's nothing, There is still 10 min left for the Roll-call so you can fix your mess " I Noted

She quickly fixed her hair and slapped her face twice as to wake up, A Cute blush on her face while doing so

We left and headed towards the Water Shower. When we reached there i found a bucket of water nearby it

" Seems like someone left it there " I Noted

" Yeah, Probably because there is no water left " She suggested

" Let's see " I Opened my lid and slid my left hand inside of it

" Kiyotaka ! "

" Ah ! " I Slid my hand a little too carelessly and ended up drowning it completely in the Extremely hot water. My hand was getting burned to a crisp. It was painful

" Are you Okay ? " Honami yelled worryingly as she Grabbed my hand and started Checking it. Her warm touch against my Burned hand made the pain go away. *Is that magic ?*

" I'm Okay, I Was too careless. Sorry for worrying you " I Said apologetically

" Are you sure ? Do you want me to tell Sensei to treat your hand ? " She offered

" No No, It's not that big of a deal. It'll probably heal in a few hours " My words made Honami back away. I Can't believe i was so careless that i burned my hand in a stupid way, I Didn't expect the water to be at a boiling degree

Honami started washing her face after mixing the water in the bucket with the Extremely Hot water inside the lid. She then was done and we walked towards the Camp for the Roll-call

** 5min Passed **

Roll-Call has ended and now it was time to have fun.

Shiranami Started walking towards the Device to Claim the spot. However, I Stopped her

" Shiranami "

" Ah ! " She turned around nervously " How can i help you A-Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I Just wanted to try something. Can you let me Claim the spot instead of you ? " I Offered

" B-But only the leader can Claim the spot.... It won't work as Sensei Said " She Marked

" That's why i said i will try something " Shiranami gave up and handed me the Card " Don't worry, I'll be right back " She meekly Nodded

I walked towards the Device and grabbed the Keycard alongside Something. I Slid it with it and

It worked

The spot has been Reclaimed for Class A, And i was the one who did it. It is a pretty useful trick.

I Walked back towards the camp and sat on the Camp fire. I Returned the Card to Shiranami who was Holding the Sticks for our Werewolf Game. It was a pretty fun Night

** Next Day **

After confirming it With Shiranami, I Became the one who would claim the spots instead of her. She agreed on it while i added another condition, But it wasn't a harmful one.

After Claiming the spot using the same Trick i walked back towards the Camp.

Since our Camp was Complete we decided to assign Scout parties

for More spots, I Decided to Go Solo. I wanted to check the Corn field which i spotted on the ship so i grabbed a bag, alongside a Map and pen i walked away

I Firstly went and checked Class D's Camp. Or to be more Specific, Ibuki.

I Sneaked Around their Camp and Started Watching them concealing my presence.

Their camp has improved, If so Slightly. Kushida was at the Center Giving Commands while Hirata was checking the Manual. I Observed Kushida, Her angelic smile was on her face for that Entire time, Yet The feeling of uneasiness was still there, When i thought it was Just a fluke that happened

When Ike and Yamauchi left her, She gazed at them in Disgust, Her angelic Act dropped for a moment, It was unnoticeable. But not for me

It was a little spooky seeing that Degree of the attitude Changes in just a mere half a second. So it is Confirmed, I May be able to use it against her later.

I glanced around until i noticed Ibuki laying on a tree. However, Horikita was alongside her, Ibuki appeared Disgusted by Horikita and didn't Try to hide it. Horikita was having her usual cold expression

I Decided to not stick any longer and left the camp towards the Beach.

When i arrived the Loud Noises was no where to be found. The Beach was dusted and no soul was to be found, It was 180 degrees different from Yesterday. Ryueen actually Did it

I Walked alongside the Beach and noticed a unclaimed Device, I Noticed it's whereabouts in my small map and slid it inside.

There was nothing worth mentioning to i walked towards Class B's Spot.

The reason the Cave was the best spot is Due to is Location. Claiming it would secure you the Other spot right Behind it, The Tower.

When i walked towards the Tower i noticed a ladder Leading under the cliff

It was Hidden well around the Bushes. I Tested it's Durability before Sliding down wards, It was a Spot alongside a man-made Fishing Farm. There was Some dusted Equipment, It was weird.

However, This Weird is beneficial as i yanked the Fishing Rods and Climbed Back up. I Hid them somewhere before Going to the

Tower.

The Device was standing in a very conspicuous place, There were alot of Spots where you could Spy from, I Wouldn't be surprised if this spot isn't Claimed.

However, It was Claimed around 10 minutes Ago. I Don't think it's Katsuragi who is doing this, Rather Yahiko going at his own accord. But Yahiko wouldn't disobey Katsuragi, Then ho-

" Damn it, Why you ? " The two Persons Hiding behind a bush Came out. Kumoro alongside Hashimoto. Kumoro had a disgusted face while Hashimoto just watched her with amusement. He then Turned His attention towards me

" Seems like you two have History " He marked

" Shut up, It's not us. He and That Loli are childhood friends. They are both annoying as fuck " Exclaimed Kumoro Angrily

" Childhood friend ? AHAHAHAHAHA " Hashimoto started Laughing, Kumoro started at him in disgust

" What are you doing here ? " I asked. Hashimoto Calmed down and smirked at me

" That's Our line Mister..... Uh" Hashimoto Tilted his head

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka " Hashimoto's Eyes widened abit

" You're the Rumored Boy who almost Defeated the President ? "

" I Don't know what you're talking about " I Shrugged. However, It only made him more Curious

" No need to be Humble about it Ayanokouji. You're Quite a celebrity You know " Celebrity ? I Don't Remember doing anything that made me famous. Fighting Manabu isn't something to get famous for. Hashimoto noticed my Confusion due to the silence and clarified " I Know that Fighting the President isn't something that would make you a celebrity. But it first Started When the news about you Dating Ichinose, The most famous Girl in our Grade. You fighting him made it a big deal "

" I see " That makes sense

Hashimoto Grabbed a Walkie-talkie from his pocket and started Calling Someone. Not long after that Someone Responded, Hashimoto didn't use Their name. And their voice was muttering at best. Then Hashimoto Handed me the Walkie-talkie " Here, They want to talk to you "

I Grabbed the Walkie-Talkie and turned on the Microphone

" Hello ? "

[Fufufu It's Been a while Ayanokouji-kun] The other voice was loud and Familiar

" It has been a while..... Sakayanagi "

Arc 3 Chap 4 : The Final Showdown

On the Third day After My Chat with Sakayanagi, I went to Explore the Rest of the Island. I Marked Around 15 New spots. I Ended with the Corn field and Walked back towards the Camp, Nothing important happened after that

On the Fourth day, I Went and spied on Class D, But Something happened..... The only way to describe it. That it was a Class D thing.

Karuizawa's Underwear has been stolen. The girls are furious about it and suspected the boys, The boys naturally fought back, It was an annoying back and fourth.

I Thanked the Chairman on my head for not placing me on this Class. I'd go mad

The important thing is that Ibuki was nowhere to be found. The boys started throwing the blame at her but the girls blindly defended her because she is a 'girl' I Felt my blood boil by the second of watching this. But I'm Thankful for them for making me feel a new emotion called frustration.

The girls Asked Hirata to preform a backpack check which he accepted. The boys lined up with their bags and started going one by one. However, Yamauchi was talking to Ike who was pale.

He tried to hand Yamauchi something but Yamauchi declined. So Ike forced it into his hand and Yamauchi unconsciously Yelled gathering the Attention of everyone including the girls. Underwear in hand

Yamauchi Told them that it was Ike who gave it to him and Ike refuted back. The girls and the boys relentlessly tormented the both of them to the point where they started Crying.

I Knew that they were innocent but i didn't feel any pity, The opposite actually, It was amusing.

That's what you get for Ogling my Honami you idiots

I Kept mocking them internally on my way back towards the Camp.

Same Day 08:00 PM

As soon as Roll-call ended. I Excused myself and went to claim our spot. This Trick is pretty handy, They would agree.

After i returned the key card to Shiranami, I bolted towards the woods with a flashlight.

I Have to reach it before they do

My classmates were questioning what i was gonna do. Thankfully Kanzaki and Honami came to my aid. I owe them

After 5 minutes of running i Reached the Tower, The spot that was claimed by Class B. I quickly hid myself without any noise and waited

The Class B's Roll-call ended around 2 minutes ago. So they should be here any minute now

Not long after, a student came towards the Tower, It was Hashimoto. He walked towards the device carefully checking his surroundings. He grabbed a keycard and claimed it.

He took another look around him before going back towards the base.

I sat hidden for 2 minutes, Until i saw someone go out from the bushes. They went and checked the device, and quickly ran away.

Interesting

I Quickly tailed them deep in the Jungle without making much of a noise.

Around 10 minutes of constant moving they Stopped. I Instinctively hid behind a tree as i sensed another Person Approaching

" Ryueen-kun, Are you here ? " Said the Approaching Figure.

" Kuku " Ryueen, The figure i've been Tailing kuku'ed, And the Person instantly recognized him and sat beside him " Same as always eh ? "

" Yeah, It's Ayanokouji-kun who claimed the spot again " Said The Person.

After claiming the Spot multiple times, I confirmed the presence of someone hiding in the bushes. A Spy to be exact waiting for the Leader to walk into the Trap, Much like what Ryueen did Earlier.

" What am i expecting Anyway ? " Grumbled Ryueen

" Ryueen-kun if i may. Why aren't you convinced by Ayanokouji-kun Being the Leader ? " It is strange that Ryueen isn't buying this whole thing, Or could it be....

" You see. That Ayanokouji thinks like me, And someone who thinks like me would never do something so careless, He is gonna sell his name and Drop out Right before the Competition end. Do you get it now ? "

That would be the plan i would use if i was the Leader. Since i'm

not, Ryueen is wrong in a sense.

" I See... So he already knows that I'm spying on him ? "

" Most Likely " Ryueen started igniting the Campfire " Kukuku It doesn't matter now Does it ? Our plan Wasn't to win this exam anyway, We already got what we wanted "

I Took this opportunity to slip away. Ryueen apparently Achieved something and now he is trying to Destroy the other Classes while trying to salvage whatever he can, The only method left for him is Guessing Class Leaders. It's sad that he is suspicious of me for something i didn't do.

But his suspicions would come in Handy....

5:55 AM Last Day

Me and Shiranami woke up and claimed the spot. I took her keycard and bolted towards the island running at a very high speed.

In the Time frame of 2 Hours, I claimed Every single unclaimed spot i came across. Even the Class B's Tower. I bet they would be pissed off.

After my crazy run i returned at 7:58AM on the dot. All my classmates were infront of Chie-sensei

" Oh Ayanokouji-kun ! " Shibata shouted as he spotted me. Instantly all of them turned towards me

" Sorry I'm late " I said as i joined them. However, Most of the girls were blushing, Honami wasn't an exception Chie-sensei was staring at me lustfully. I tilted my head in confusion and stared at them

* *Honami POV* *

When we woke up, Kiyotaka wasn't present. I Thought he was somewhere washing his face but he didn't Return, Even when there is 5 Minutes left for Roll-call. I Started Getting anxious by the second *Did something bad Happen to him ? I Hope he's okay*

Chihiro-chan Noticing my Anxiety, Rushed to calm me down. She claimed that She saw Kiyotaka Leave Early when She woke up. That was supposed to calm me down but i became paranoid *Does he have a secret Girlfriend ? Is he Cheating me on ? I Believe him, No He won't do something like that But ...*

I Could feel those thoughts affecting my Body negatively as i stared at the ground, I Could feel Tears forming in my eyes.

" Oh Ayanokouji-kun ! " Shibata-kun yelled snapping me out of my thoughts. I Instantly Turned towards him, To meet a surprise

" Sorry I'm late " Kiyotaka, But His Shirt was drenched in sweat making it almost invisible.

I instantly felt my cheeks getting hotter, I would've buried my face but i couldn't take my eyes off him.

He was so handsome, His sweaty face and His 8-pack and chest were clearly visible.

He killed my heart when he tilted his head sideways with an innocent expression. *Oh my god So Cuuuute~ My heart can't stop beating*

" What happened to you Ayanokouji ? " Asked Kanzaki-kun. However, That's when i realized that every girl around me was blushing or averting their gazes while blushing too.

" Nothing, I just went and claimed every spot on the island " He shrugged

" You mean you ran around the island claiming every single spot ? " Shibata-kun was confused. So Kiyotaka wasn't Cheating on me. I Sighed in huge Relief.... Wait What did he say ?

" Not exactly, There were spots claimed by other classes. So i claimed the unclaimed ones.... Around 21 "

He said it like it was nothing. Honestly how cool can you be ? He doesn't even appear out of breath

" Ara~ Kiyotaka-kun. You see if you keep standing there you'll probably seduce every single girl present~ Don't tell me you need more than Honami-chan and myself- Ah It's time for roll-call~ " Chie-sensei said slyly. She was also blushing, *Even you ?*

Our last Roll-call for this exam started, But i couldn't stop glancing towards Kiyotaka. He noticed me and i panicked and turned around. *So embarrassing*

The Roll-call ended and Kiyotaka instantly approached me

" Sorry " He said with an Apologetic tone

" Hmph- " I crossed my arms and looked away pouting. *Let's tease him*

" I'm sorry okay ? I had to go to claim more spots so we can get more points "

" I'm not talking about that " I turned to look towards him. He tilted his head cutely, My cheeks instantly heated up as I walked closer to him " You think i'll forgive you after making every girl in our class crush on you ? " He stared at me with his Golden eyes for a bit

" Are you Jealous ? " He called out my feelings. But i composed myself and looked away from him with a pout

He Sighed before closing the Distance between us, He forcefully grabbed my Chin and kissed me. However, I Wasn't surprised, I Was expecting this, He fell on my trap heehee

After 5 seconds he Broke away.

" I only love you and you alone " But i wasn't expecting this, My

Heart Started jumping up and down furiously.

Honestly Kiyotaka, What have you done to me ?

Final Day 12:00AM

" Right, All Classes are here " Mashima-sensei standing in front of The First year teachers holding a speaker " Thank you all for participating in our Special exam, Each class has used their own ways of tackling this exam, While there was some interesting ideas thrown in the bowls too "

All the Three Classes were nervous, Our class wasn't an exception, We all know that we did well but we are still nervous since it's the Results. Who knows what's gonna happen

" Cmon- Let's get moving " " Shut up, You don't have to tell me "

Two Students appeared behind us, They were Kaneda-kun and Ibuki-san. Our Class and Class D both were Confused while some of us were alerted. I Calmed down my Class Before anything happens

But Class D Were noisy, They didn't try to contain their surprise. Hirata-kun and Kushida-san both worked hard to calm everyone down, But it was No avail.

Soon Chabashira-sensei intervened and Coldly threatened her Class. They all erupted into Silence, She then looked towards Mashima-sensei and nodded.

Chie-sensei received an envelope and handed it to Mashima-sensei

" We will now Announce the Results. Please keep in mind that everything is Final and there would be no point in arguing about it, Use those results to develop and improve on your weak points for future special exams. You've all worked hard for the past week so you would be boarding the Ship after this " Mashima-sensei Exclaimed as he opened the envelope.

I Glanced back towards my Classmates, Everyone was having a stern expression waiting in anticipation for the Results, It was a nerve wracking moment. But i couldn't cheer them on like i usually do since it's already too late, and it would mount to nothing.

Mashima-sensei Grabbed a paper inside the envelope and opened it, His Expression went Dark. But he quickly recovered and started Announcing :

" Coming in Last : Class C with 26 Points "

Ibuki-san Spat, Looking frustrated. Kaneda-kun calmed her Down. The Class D Students started mocking them, Ibuki-san grew frustrated but she held her self

Then Kushida-san Asked everyone to stay silent, It worked for the most part. Soon Mashima-sensei Continued with his announcement :

" In Third Place : Class D with 70 Points "

Ibuki-san broke into a laughter as she stared at Class D

Class D Erupted into Chaos, and everyone started blaming each other. Soon the previously Casted Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun Got dragged into the mess. They were depressingly sitting on the back looking down, I Wondered what happened to them.

a girl who had a short black hair started relentlessly insulting them, Calling them Perverts and Underwear thieves. Soon their class joined in insulting them too

I Instinctively Tensed up alongside the Girls, They had different Expressions while most of them Were disgusted some were scared. I Felt scared, Anxious and uneasy. However, Kiyotaka came closer to me and held my hand gently absorbing all my negative feelings, I Smiled at him which he responded with the Same.

Yamauchi-kun started screaming back defending himself, But Against the whole class it was useless. He clenched his fists in anger and punched the Black haired Girl, Chabashira-sensei rushed to stop Yamauchi-kun.

The other teachers also came rushing and they handled Yamauchi-kun, He was screaming that she was at fault, But it was pointless as they carried him towards the Ship. Soon the Situation calmed down, And Mashima-sensei Continued :

" In Second : Class B With 120 Points "

Class B started Questioning Katsuragi-kun who was shocked, It was the first time i saw his composure break. His stern expression was not to be found, He couldn't believe it

Yahiko-kun started defending him by Blaming the others, But soon was stopped by Katsuragi-kun who regained some of his Composure.

This Announcement made the Nervous atmosphere on our Class Turn cheery and light, All my classmates had smiles on their faces and anticipation in their eyes as they looked towards the podium.

I Looked towards the boy who was holding my hand and he smiled towards me, My heart skipped a beat and i smiled warmly.

" And Finally in First Place : Class A with 332 Points "

" We Did it ! " Shibata-kun jumped from Joy

" We Did it Honami-chan ! "

" Ah ! "

Mako-chan jumped towards me and Hugged me Tightly. My hand got separated from Kiyotaka's as a result. Soon Chihiro-chan, Kozue-chan, Sayo-chan and Yume-chan Joined in, Embracing me from every side. It was a well executed Siege on me

However, There was one question Running through my head
What Happened ?

*** Back on the Second Day * Kiyogod POV**

After Kanzaki left to Kick Kaneda, I Decided to follow him to give him a piece of instruction

" Kanzaki "

" What's up Ayanokouji ? " Kanzaki Turned towards me

" After Kaneda Leaves. You should follow him, We don't know what Ryueen would be up to " Letting Kaneda run loose wouldn't benefit us in the slightest

" You mean Returning to Ryueen ? " Kanzaki questioned

" Not Quite, He may very well camp outside our base and monitor the Spot device for the Leader to move into it. If you follow him and you make sure that he retires then we won't worry, And if he goes somewhere else just inform me and i'll take care of it " Kanzaki thought about it alittle, Before he nodded

" Very well then " He Then walked towards Kaneda

" Well then " I now have an anxious Girlfriend who overworked her self to calm down. Let's hope i be successful

*** Later ***

I Caught Chie-sensei Eavesdropping on my little moment with Honami, After she was a sleep i confronted her

" Do you think i'll forgive you just because you're my Teacher ? " I Asked, This may be a good opportunity to ask her about what's on my mind

" Oooofcourse nooot~ I did something bad so i deserve punishment~ Punish me Kiyotaka-kun~ "

" I'll punish you then " I received a lustful smile as she started walking closely

" So What kind of punishment i would receive~? Would you tie me down and start spanking me~ Or start playing with me~ *gasp* Or you would order me to do lewd stuff with you~ Ara~ You're so naughty Kiyotaka-kun~ Is Honami-Chan not enough for you ? "

She gave me a long monologue of ideas how to basically harass her. She was rather excited on receiving my punishment. *What a masochist*

" Nothing like that, You only have to answer one question " She pouted in disappointment. However, She instantly got back into her lusty self " No it's not about your Chest size "

" You're no fuuuun~ " She grumbled. Honestly what kind of a

teacher that encourages students to sexually harass her ? " If your question is within my capabilities as a teacher i'll answer it~ "

" So you would rather offer yourself to me rather than out a school secret or two ? "

" Ara~ You're interested~? " She said lewdly

" No, As for my question " I continued " There is a rule states that only leaders can claim a spot, Correct ? "

" Yes~ Anyone who isn't the leader cannot use the keycard " Good

" What would happen if someone other than the leader tries to use the keycard ? "

" Then the keycard wouldn't work~ " So it's all about the keycard.

" Very well. I have another question Sensei " She rose her head slightly permitting me to speak " How does the keycard identifies the leader ? " Fingerprints would be the only logical conclusion. But i asked anyway

" Through Fingerprints~ If the keycard doesn't recognize the fingerprints as the leader's. It won't work "

" I see... " I got an idea to try something

" I can't see what you're thinking Kiyotaka-kun~ But i could tell it's goooood~ " She said narrowing her eyes and speaking lewdly " Care to share~ "

" You don't have to concern your self with something trivial Sensei. I'll be counting on you when the time comes "

" Hmmm~ Okay~ " She gave me a satisfied nod and started walking away " Remember the offer is still up~ " She turned zt me and winked

I brushed it off and walked towards the Cardboard toilet. As i walked i passed through the water shower..... Hmmm

I set the water boiling at maximum heat while I grabbed a bucket and fill it with water from the water fall.

This may be pointless, But it will increase the chance of success.

I walked back and turned off the heat and put the bucket there

1st step. Done

I'll have to wait alittle to execute my little experiment. Whenever i implement it or not Depends on Kanzaki's Info

After 20 min Kanzaki came back. When he spitted me he instantly walked towards me

According to him, Kaneda deviated towards the beach. Where Ryueen was, Thanks to this i now can Implement my little experiment

It was close to the Time of Roll-Call. And my Target hasn't arrived, I decided to take the chance and execute the part two.

I walked towards the cardboard toilet and disposed off all the vinyl bags. While doing so i spotted my Target

" Damn it " I muttered loudly enough for them to hear

" Is everything alright Ayanokouji-kun ? " Shiranami bit into my little act.

I pushed her into bringing Vinyl bags. When she gave it to me i cut the parts she touched that contained a clear set of fingerprints on them. And put them near the toilet for later....

After waking up Honami i faked an Accident and burned my hand. It would ruin the outer parts of my skin so my fingerprints wouldn't be completely shown.

After Roll-call i grabbed the piece of the trick and walked towards Shiranami. Convincing her of my little experiment, Which it ended in a success

After i was back Shiranami was confused, So i explained to her what i did. I used the incident later as a coincidence which gave me this sudden idea. It worked and she agreed to provide me with fresh sets of fingerprints as long as she successfully keeps her identity hidden.

Next day

" It has been a while Sakayanagi "

After getting caught sneaking around Class B. Hashimoto gave me the radio to speak to the Leader of Class B Sakayanagi Arisu

[How have you been Ayanokouji-kun. How is the exam treating you ?] Casual conversation ? I don't think so

" It has been good so far. Honami has been organizing stuff flawlessly. So i didn't do much "

[Fufu how dare you bring another woman's name when you're talking to me] She said teasingly

" Anyway, How did you manage to get a line of contact between you and your comrades ? " I think i know

[Fufufu As you've guessed. Private points are quite handy] Private points are probably the second most important thing after Class points. You can buy anything using them, As long as it doesn't pass the natural limits. They are pretty handy

[It's sad that it wasn't worth it] Now that's interesting

" What do you mean ? "

[What i mean is that Class B is doomed to fail. Even if we win this exam, It's probably not worth it]

She then filled me on the contract between Class B and C and i could instantly sense the flaw.

Nothing is guaranteed and Katsuragi acted the complete opposite

to this rule.

Sure, His plan is good, But it was too short sighed from him.

Katsuragi is getting desperate, So using successful plans for the short run was a valuable option for him. Even if he won and claimed the Class B's leadership which is very unlikely, Those wins would come to bite him in the future. And if he lost, All the blame would fall on him and lose it all.

In other words, Class B is in a dilemma.

" Why did you tell me this ? " It was strange from Sakayanagi for leaking this. A blunder on her side, But i believe she has something

[No reason, I felt like telling you] I see

" Well, I won't do anything regarding that "

[Fufu i didn't expect you to] Then why did she tell me this ? If she didn't want me to act according to this then why ?

However, This is useful. Now i can get a better read on what's going on Ryueen's mind and know him better

[Ryueen-chan is Really interesting]

" Indeed "

The last day

I finished claiming all the available spots on the island. And went for my last appointment.

It was 7:30 AM, So they Should be already awake now.

I Walked towards Class D's camp, And found Hirata washing up his face close to the River.

" Hey Hirata "

" Oh- Ayanokouji-kun ! What are you doing here early on the morning ? " He asked, If it was me i would be alerted. But Hirata was relaxed with a warm smile. " What happened to your shirt ? "

" Oh i just did some morning exercises. Anyway I Came to talk to you and Horikita if you don't mind. It's quite important " Hirata's tensed up alittle, Switching from Chill to serious. He nodded and walked towards a girl. He spoke to her and she nodded before walking towards a tent. Soon She came out alongside a sleepy Horikita.

When Hirata spoke to her she looked at me and tensed up. Her Look turned into a glare as she followed Hirata lacking slightly behind him

" So What do you want ? " Spat Horikita while Glaring at me.

" Hirata, both of our Classes are Allies right ? " I Ignored Horikita and looked at Hirata who nodded with a warm smile

" Yes Ayanokouji-kun. What are you implying here ? " Hirata sensing something unusual about my speech questioned

" Since we are allies it's our job to help each other right ? "

" What do you want ? " Horikita this time came in front and blocked my line of sight with Hirata. She had enough and thought that i was the one who needs help. Pathetic

" I'd be blunt. You guys are screwed " At my words Horikita's face dropped.

" Ayanokouji-kun, What do you mean by that ? " Hirata who was confused, But there was a hint of uncertainty on his Voice

" Ryueen and Katsuragi already has your leader's name " Horikita pulled a side looking down, She seems to be aware. Hirata's smile dropped and he looked at me with a serious expression

" Where did you get that information Ayanokouji-kun ? " There was still hope on Hirata's voice, Poor guy

" Me, Katsuragi and Ryueen know that Horikita is your Class's leader. and both of them Are putting her name today " The hope in Hirata's eyes completely vanished, As he stared at the ground. Now they both are staring at the ground. It was amusing

" So did you come here to mock me again ? Like last time ? " Horikita Lift her head and started at me. Eyes full of sadness and despair " Or did you come here to offer us some pity and save us ? "

" You guys are beyond saving " At my words Horikita's face grew angrier. When she opened her mouth i spoke " But i can help you salvage as much as you can, Since we are allies, Right ? "

Horikita closed her mouth and gulped the words, Hirata at my words regained some of his aura.

" So what do you have ? " Horikita faced me with determination, That's the Face I'm looking for

" Class B's leader " I Offered

" What do you want in return ? " She asked, It was a natural conclusion to draw. Since i'm basically offering them free points

" Nothing. We are allies right ? " Horikita was baffled at my offer. She had her doubts

" How can we be sure that you're not lying to us ? "

" You're not in a position to complain. It's up to you to trust me or not. It wouldn't end up well for me if i would lie will it ? " If i lied, The relationship between our Classes that Honami worked so hard to build would fall apart. The last thing i want is to make Honami sad.... *I can't believe i just thought of that*

" I believe you Ayanokouji-kun. You've helped me countless times, I Hate to admit it but we are probably a burden to you guys " Said Hirata with a bitter smile

" Don't concern yourself about that Hirata. As long as we stay friends, That's all what Class A Wants " My words were true in a sense, But they weren't my words. It was the typical words that any Class A Student would say, So i shouldn't be suspicious " Roll-call is

gonna come soon so i better go. Class B's leader is Totsuka Yahiko "

" Thank you Ayanokouji-kun ! We'll make sure to repay you guys some time in the future " Said Hirata waving at me with a warm smile.

I Decided to share Yahiko's name to add more fuel to Ryueen's Self-destruct plan against Class B. That's not all

Horikita Suzune, A Bro-con that strives for her Brother's acknowledgment. This defeat would deal the greatest damage to her especially since she was the primary reason, I Decided to give her a hollow life line so she could hope for a chance.

However, I am well aware that it was a hollow one. If it reaches Manabu's ears that she used my help as a scapegoat for her failures. He would be disappointed in her even further.

And that's what i'm gonna make sure of happening.

Sakayanagi's Plan

When i realized what Katsuragi did. I Already gave up on my plans and now we need to make the most of this Situation. That's when i scrolled through the Rules and found something that may help us

I Ordered Hashimoto-kun to ask Mashima-sensei about the Leader claiming Rule.

After knowing the identification process. I Proceeded to order Hashimoto-kun with a trick i thought about using Vinyl bags and Fingerprints.

And it worked. So it was decided that Hashimoto-kun would claim the spots using our little trick.

I Didn't do much after that other than listening to the Reports.

Ryueen's Plan

That Contract was everything i was after.

After Katsuragi approached me for that Offer, I Knew that this man would do anything to gain an advantage that's why he found colluding with me Valuable.

And i knew that i could take advantage of him.

After we finalized our Contract, My plan finalized with it too.

I Sent Ibuki towards Class D and Kaneda Towards Class A. While i myself spied on Class B

I found out that Class B's Leader was Hashimoto, After him going to the spot and claiming it countless times. It became obvious.... Or

so i thought

Anyway, Ibuki Came with Results while Kaneda got kicked out, I was expecting this so I Made Kaneda spy around the device, Just like i did. And he brought me something.... But it wasn't Right.

Kaneda was giving me an answer, But i couldn't believe it. Even after him taking multiple photos of him, It didn't feel right. That monster isn't stupid enough to do something so carelessly. If he was the leader, He would drop out.

I Decided to ignore Ayanokouji and focused back at Class B.

I Gave Katsuragi Class D's name alongside the pictures of Ayanokouji, Katsuragi was reluctant, And said that he'd think about it. But i'm pretty sure that bastard would type his name directly.

Abusing Katsuragi's greed. I Staged a Traitor in Kaneda alongside my keycard and have him give it to him. Kaneda came back and Informed me that it was a success.

Before Dropping out, I Made Ibuki the Leader. Alongside the names of the Leaders, Hashimoto and Horikita.

I Ate a poisonous food and retired from intoxication. It was reckless but Reckless I Am

I Didn't know how to implement what Happened on Ryueen and Sakayanagi's part so i just briefed it on their POV's.

Today's Chapter was kinda rushed since i had an Author's Block and i couldn't find how to resume it so i pushed it

The next Chapter is a special Chapter, When Kiyo played Werewolf alongside his Classmates. I Don't think i'll make SS since there isn't anything interesting.

If you didn't understand the results, Here is the Analysis

Class A : Honami's Class

Started with : 300 Points

Spent : 60 points (After Calculations according to the LN)

Leaders : Class B + 50 Points

Points for the Spot : 42 (20 for the Water fall spot + 22 for Kiyo's speed run through the island)

Total : 332

Class B : Sakayanagi's Class

Started With : 270 (-30 points for Arisu)

Spent : 0

Leaders : + 50 for Class D/ -50 For Class C/ -50 For Class A/

-50 For Class A Guessing them/ -50 for Class D Guessing them
Points for spot : 60 (Annihilated)
Total : 120 points

Class C : Ryueen's Class

Started with : 300

Spent : 300

Leaders : + 50 For Class D/-50 For Class B (Wrong guess)

Points for Spot : 26

Total : 26 Points

Class D : Whorikita's Class

Started with 300 :

Spent : 180 (150 for stuff + 30 for Kouenji's retirement)

Leaders : + 50 Class B/ -50 Class C/ -50 Class B

Points for spot : 20 (Annihilated)

Total : 70 Points

Arc 3 Special Chapter : Werewolf

It was 8:30 PM on the second day of the special exam.

I, Honami, Shibata, Amikura, Hamaguchi, Shiranami, Minamikata, Ando, Kobashi and Himeno

We, Sat around the campfire facing eachother in circle, appraising each other carefully.

The fire slowly eating the air infront of me. Partially Covering Amikura's face

We waited in the atmosphere that had a taboo rule of silence. A gag order were placed on the camp.

Kanzaki Ryuuji known as the Gamemaster, Brought 10 slips of paper and mixed them together in his hand, Then started passing around to distribute them.

After they thoroughly explained the rules to me I Grabbed a paper and checked my role 'Wolf'

There were 8 Villagers, Between them were a Seer and a Doctor. And 2 wolves. The chances were 20%

After everyone was done, Kanzaki announced the start of the First night. We all stared down pretending to be a sleep

" Wolves, Raise your head "

I slowly rose my head not making any noise and checked my surrounding, Himeno sitting three seats on my left rose her head aswell. Kanzaki recognizing the two of us as wolves nodded.

Himeno looked at me and pointed towards her left where Ando was laying. She wanted to get rid of her.

I also pointed towards Ando, Kanzaki did a count down with his fingers to three.

Confirming our votes, He urges us to lay back.

" Doctor, Raise your Head " There was a moment of silence, Then he Asked the Seer the same thing

The campfire was getting on the way of my hearing, So i couldn't detect where the Seer was, *No that is Cheating right ?*

" Rise and Shine everyone " We all rose our heads and stared at Kanzaki, We instinctively checked our surrounding " Our first Casualty is Ando, Unfortunately The doctor failed to save her "

" Aaaah~ Meen " Ando pouted as she walked towards a tree and started spectating. There was enough space for her to listen

" Now, Let the discussion for the first day Start " Kanzaki

announced

" Right, Who voted for Sayo-chan ? " Honami took the lead and questioned, It may seem like a sly question, But it works.

" Me " Shibata rose his hand jokingly. *As you can see*

" Right, Let's vote for Shibata-kun. Discussion closed " Said Honami sarcastically. Shibata started panicking

" No no no, I was Joking ! "

" Ara~ Why are you so desperate Shibata-kun ? Are you perhaps a W.... O..... L.... F~? " Said Amikura staring at him with a mischievous grin.

" No ! Tha- "

" Don't worry Shibata-kun. I believe you~ " Shibata sighed in relief as he composed himself.

" Right, Two minutes has passed. Now voting time " Said Kanzaki

" Eehh ? That's so little Kanzaki-kun. Make it 5 minutes " Requested Honami

" Do you guys want 5 minutes talk time ? " We all nodded " Okay, We'll use that then "

" Okay, I'm gonna say it Right now that I'm a villager " Minamikata Announced her Role while raising her Hand High

" Same " I Followed

" Me too " Himeno Followed right away. Then everyone said that They were Villagers...

" Hmmm There is a problem " Honami said as she gazed at us " There is 4 Liars here " She gave us a disgusted face

" Isn't that only Natural ? The seer and The Doctor would hide themselves so they won't be targeted " Said Shibata

" I know Shibata-kun, The seer probably didn't find anything yet. Or is waiting for another catch "

" Yeah "

" Time's up " Kanzaki spoke. And now it's voting time

Everyone was clueless, This discussion wasn't enough to start pointing fingers. The most suspicious one was Shibata but he didn't reach that level yet.

However, A Person Pointed at someone and exclaimed " I'm Voting for Shibata-kun~ "

" Nooo Amikura-san ! Didn't you say you believe me ? "

" Who told you to trust me ? " She grinned at him. Seeing this I joined in too " Looks Like Ayanokouji-kun Agrees aswell~ "

" Nooo You too Ayanokouji-kun ? " Shibata turned towards me with a plea on his eyes

" Sorry Shibata, You're sus "

I could tell that Everyone would join in Shibata Vote-Train.

Most people as wolves would tend to wait and see what's gonna

happen then follow the majority. However, That's the typical behavior which would draw suspicion towards them.

I would appear the least suspicious if i jumped at the beginning then people followed. However, It could very well back fire

" Sorry Shibata-kun, It's bad luck " Himeno rose her hand and pointed aswell.

Soon everyone followed. And it was Decided that Shibata is a lost cause

" Right, Shibata has been executed ! " Shibata stood aside near where Ando was standing and joined in the spectate. Ando patted his Back to comfort him " Right. Good night everyone "

We all laid our heads again

" Wolves, Raise your Heads "

I rose again alongside Himeno, Ando and Shibata naturally started Glaring at us. But i brushed it off

Himeno looked towards me for suggestions. I pointed towards Minamikata, She was the second last person to jump after Shiranami

I could just accuse the latter and she would panic making her an easy target. While Minamikata would refute back making her the most annoying to deal with. So getting rid of her now is beneficial.

Himeno nodded and also pointed towards her. Kanzaki did a countdown and nodded, We laid back.

After that He went through Calling the Doctor and The seer

" Rise and Shine Everyone, Today our casualty is Minamikata "

Minamikata sighed and walked towards the Spectators. 7 remaining

" I Think I know one of the wolves " Claimed Kobashi

" Yes Yume-chan ? " Honami urged Kobashi to speak

" I think it's Hamaguchi-kun " She pointing towards Hamaguchi

" Huh ? Why is that ? " Hamaguchi was surprised at the sudden accusation

" When we were preparing for the midterms. Hamaguchi-kun and Sayo-chan had a fight about a math problem. However, It appeared that both of them were wrong and since then they've had alittle hostility between them " Kobashi Narrated

" Are you gonna vote me because of that ! " Hamaguchi was baffled by her reason, It was ridiculous.

" I never said i'd vote you. I just said whatever i was thinking " She shrugged

Her reason wasn't completely invalid, If Hamaguchi and Ando had alittle hostility between them. It wouldn't be weird for one of them to vote the other to gain some peace of mind. However...

By her dropping a half-baked accusation and retaliate would

make her the Suspect Number one. On the other hand, It casts a shadow of doubt on top of Hamaguchi, But nothing is final and there is still time left for the discussions

" That is pretty shady not gonna lie " Muttered Amikura

" What do you mean Mako-chan ? " Honami asked

" Yume-chan Accusing Hamaguchi-kun but says that she doesn't want to Vote for him, She wants us to believe that Hamaguchi-kun is Guilty but doesn't want her name getting stained as a result " Amikura Explained

" That is a good point " I Jumped in

" Yeah That is a half-baked Accusation Yume-chan " Said Himeno

Kobashi Sighed " Listen, I Just said what i thought. I'm not planning on voting Hamaguchi-kun, But if push comes to shove i'll vote him. That's what i said "

" You'll vote him just because he doesn't agree with Sayo-chan ? " Honami pressured Kobashi

" Yes "

Her persistence is admirable.... That is if she was a wolf, She knows fully that she's innocent and believes that people would see that, However, If she fails she'd be the next on the List. And that's what gonna happen

" I May be Dense but, I've never sensed this Hostility you've talked about between Ando and Hamaguchi " I Noted

" Y-Yeah, I-I Agree with Ayanokouji-kun " Shiranami supported " I Don't think Sayo-chan and H-Hamaguchi-kun are in bad terms "

" That's because you weren't there to see it, I Knew that you wouldn't get it " Grumbled Kobashi

" If you knew it's pointless then why did you push your luck ? You know you still have the nights to kill people, You don't have to out yourselves to do it in the morning " I Threw a roundabout Accusation, It would come as natural, But not for Kobashi

" Are you Saying that I'm a wolf ? " She questioned, I Nodded " Just because i accused someone doesn't mean i'm a wolf "

" You've tried to throw Suspicion around while not trying to be suspicious yourself. If you're confident that you are a villager then why are you so afraid about staining your name ? "

This Argument would work as an insurance for myself while throwing the blame at Kobashi. Basically in the eyes of a normal villager, I am blaming Kobashi while telling them that i'm not afraid of being suspected, And Kobashi is. They would unconsciously follow me since our beliefs are The same, That would be the case for any normal villager.

In the eyes of a Seer or a Doctor, They would understand the desperation in Kobashi. Since if she's a special role, She would be

afraid, And i Think that's the case

" The reason is that I'm the Doctor, I Didn't want to out myself so Quickly, So I- "

" Then why did you risk it ? " I Couldn't allow her to finish her statements and save herself. My constant questioning are becoming suspicious, I'll have to stall until the Voting time comes

" Bec- "

" Time's up ! " Kanzaki Announced. And i instantly rose my Hand and aimed towards Kobashi

Himeno was reluctant but Jumped in too, Aswell as Hamaguchi. Shiranami was the last one to join in

" Kobashi has been Executed ! " She stood and walked towards the 3 dead people

We all laid our heads and stared at the ground. I Would definitely be questioned next Morning, And if the Seer is alive then they would check me, Now that a Doctor is out of the way. We will get rid of one more

I Rose my head at the Signal of Kanzaki, Himeno did too. Kobashi glared at me but i brushed her off like the rest.

Himeno Pointed towards Amikura, When it comes to arguments she is one of the best in our class. I Nodded and pointed towards her too.

Kanzaki Called out to the Doctor and The seer. Then Woke us up

" Today's Casualty is Amikura " Amikura just smiled bitterly and left. Now There is the 5 Of us, If i push them into voting for one more person we win

" Kiyotaka What are you ? " Honami Questioned me as soon as the Discussion began

" I am the Seer, And I Know one of the wolves " The chances of the Seer being alive is still high, But if i don't take a risk right now i'd be doomed. Honami Narrowed her eyes at me, She was about to speak when a voice shouted

" That's a lie ! I'm the seer " It was Shiranami who yelled " And Ayanokouji-kun is a wolf ! I Just Checked him now ! " She pointed towards me

Since she's the Seer, Her performance is very convincing, Even if i pull out a miracle, I'm doomed. I Hoped for Hamaguchi to be the Seer or Honami since They are calm. But Shiranami's emotions are here for everyone to see, And now i'm The suspect Number one

" I Believe her, Kiyotaka has been suspicious. He pushed Yumechan who is the Doctor into a corner and voted for her " Honami Pointed towards me

" Honami, I Know that you are innocent since i checked Y- "

" You expect me to believe that ? " She looked at me, Instantly

She looked towards Himeno " I found it strange that Yuki-chan was jumping right after you almost all the times. But You're the Wolf, So it makes sense "

" Huh ? No I'm not, I Just found Ayanokouji-kun Convincing " Himeno fought back

" Do you find him Convincing now ? " Honami narrowed her eyes towards Himeno

" No..... "

" Hmmmmm... Okay~ " Honami Turned around and looked towards me " Nice Try Kiyotaka "

" Time's up " Kanzaki Said. Honami, Shiranami and Hamaguchi Instantly pointed towards me, I Sighed in resignation and stood up

" Ayanokouji has been Executed ! "

I Walked towards the tree where the Spectators were, They were all glaring at me. I Just gazed at them and smirked, This pissed them off.

" Ayanokouji... You bastard ! " Shibata Shouted, But he had a small smile on his face

" Shibata-kun, You brought it to yourself, It's not Ayanokouji-kun's fault for taking advantage of your Stupidity " Mocked Amikura

" Hey ! " Shibata glared at her, But she was unfazed. Her grin seems to annoy Shibata as he turned around to watch

Himeno Chose Shiranami, But She was in a losing position. Honami and Hamaguchi both voted for her and i can confidently say that..... We lost.

I've had fun, Honami Clearly saw through our Co-ordination tactic and took both of us down. It was brilliant from her. But the most important part is that I Enjoyed my time here

I Want this to Continue.....

Note : I Can't Have Kiyogod tryhard in a game of werewolf now can i ? It would ruin the fun

Arc 4 Chap 1 : The Zodiac Exam

August 10th

It has been 3 days since the end of the Deserted island Exam. With a landslide victory for Class A

This win boosted our Morale alongside our Class points. Right now they Are like this :

Class A : 1406 C.P

Class B : 1122 C.P

Class C : 598 C.P

Class D : 152 C.P

Our Class extended the lead even further thanks to everyone's work. The School's reward was a full week on this Luxurious Cruise

Objectively speaking, This is the Best vacation anyone could wish for, Everything is free since we are first years, Yes, Every Facility on this Cruise liner is free of charge, The Quality isn't something to scoff at, It may even be better than the School's.

We were free to roam about everywhere, Except for the Lower levels where the engines and stuff are. We weren't allowed to leave our rooms past Curfew, If you were Caught, You would be in trouble, That is if you were Caught.

I On the Other hand. Slept One day and a half, While i explored some parts with my Roommates. It's safe to assume that i wasn't active and i may come to regret it

Ichinose Honami, My Cute Girlfriend, got annoyed because of my Shut-in mood and invited me to go hang out with her on a restaurant on the 7th deck

I Put on my Shoes and Started walking towards the meeting Place, It was 1:45PM and the restaurant is around 10 minutes, So i took my time and observed the Luxurious Hallways.

Those colorful and Lively Hallways are completely different from the White Hallways i'm used to, The difference is Tremendous. That Hallways always gives off a feeling of uneasiness, And Despair for some people. The security Cameras used to be on every corner monitoring our every move.

These Hallways however, It gives you the feeling of Luxury, It's not comfortable for some people but it's not bad either. Comparing them it's like Morning and Night, It is Truly Beautiful.

" Oh If it isn't Ayanokouji-Boy " A Familiar Voice Snapped me out

of my Thoughts. I Turned around to find Kouenji.... But Wet.

" Hey Kouenji, Did you just come out from the Pool ? " It was Obvious, But for the Sake of Conversation i asked. He simply flipped his hair scattering Water which resulted in drenching the Walls, I Simply moved away to evade it

" Truly Beautiful Isn't it ? " He opened one eye and looked at me with a smug.

" Aren't you worried about the Trouble you'd get in if a staff sees you like this ? " He was dripping wet, But he didn't seem to care

" Oh ? There were some insignificant Beans came infront of my perfectness, So i just brushed them off " He waved his hand and Laughed " A Perfect Existence Such as myself doesn't need to wipe himself dry, The water would just go in few minutes so why should i bother ? "

It was a typical response coming from an narcissist like Him, His Perfection Complex just severed it. Kouenji is Superior compared to the other students in almost everything, It wouldn't be unnatural to be arrogant but he took it on a whole another level

" Since you are the masterpiece allow me to give you some perfect words " Now he looked at me with both of his eyes " Congratulations on your Win on that insignificant Exam, I Expected more but That's fine... Ha ! "

" I don't deserve such a praise from your perfectness. I Didn't do much " I Said the first part in a sarcastic tone, Kouenji Laughed again

" Are you making fun of me Ayanokouji-boy ? Well, No matter " He said as he Walked past me, But he Stopped " I'm looking forward for a challenge Masterpiece-kun. I deemed you Worthy enough so Rejoice, You have been Chosen to challenge the Perfect Existence himself ! " *Honestly what's wrong with him ?*

" Challenge you ? In what ? " I Asked

" Hmph- When the time Comes Ayanokouji-boy i'll message you, Now You may go " He said as he Started walking away, Water still dripping to the ground.

I Sighed and Walked towards the Deck in a faster pace than before.

" Challenge.... Huh ? "

I certainly wouldn't mind that..... Bring it on Kouenji

" You're Late~ " Honami who was sitting With Amikura and Shibata Scolded

" Sorry, Something Happened " I took the seat next to her " Is this for me ? " There was an Extra milkshake on the table.

" Yep~ I know you like sweet stuff so i ordered it ahead of time !
" She said with a Bright smile " Do you not like it ? "

" Not at all " I took a sip from the Cup. It was a chocolate shake,
The flavor spread on my mouth " Tasty "

Honami giggled and took a sip from hers, She had the same as mine

" Awww~ You two are So Cute~ Don't you think Shibata-kun ? "
Amikura who was gazing at us warmly spoke

" Yeah, You guys really suit eachother " Shibata marked. Honami started blushing and cutely playing with her hair

" I know Right ! Oh did you already kiss ? " Amikura said enthusiastically

" Umm~ Yes... " Honami flushed and now averting her gaze " M-Multiple times A-Actually... "

" Hoooh ? I Didn't know you were so aggressive Ayanokouji-kun !
" Amikura exclaimed

" What are you on about ? I'm the one getting abused here "

" So you're saying that Honami-chan is the dominant one ? " She looked at me with wide eyes. I simply nodded, She grinned and turned towards Honami " Pervert~ "

" N-No Mako-Chan ! I'm not a pervert ! " Resisted Honami, This made Amikura's grin even wider

" Really ? I still remember last time when you told me about *that*. Are you sure Honami-chan ? "

Honami buried her face in her hands. And here i thought she became more immune to Amikura, I guess no one can defeat the Masterpiece of the teasing room.

" You two have gotten close Lately " I marked, Switching from defense to attack. This made Shibata tense alittle

" What do you mean ? " Amikura said

" What i mean is, I always see you together, Are you dating ? "

" No we are not..... Not yet " Amikura said as she gazed towards Shibata who flinched at that. She wanted to tease him. However, Shibata told me about *that*. So i gotta repay him

" Not yet huh ? So you do like Shibata " I said with my usual monotone voice. By doing that, She would most likely take it as i heard it from someone and i confirmed it now.

" Hmmm, For the most part " However, This is Amikura we are talking about. I can't believe i overlooked such a obvious thing

Shibata now is sweating bullets trying to stay calm, But he is in a mess right now. *Does she really mean it ? Does she actually like me ? It could be one of her teasing... But what if it's true ?* That's probably

what's going through his mind

The rest of the our hangout went by a fluke, And now it's already 4:30 PM

We bid farewell to Shibata and Amikura and now i'm left Alone with Honami.

There was silence between us, So i decided to suggest something

" Honami, Do you know a place where they offer ice cream ? "

" Ice cream ? I believe there is one on the 6th Deck, Do you want to go and eat there together~? " She suggested

" Ye, I wanted to try it with you "

" If i'm not mistaken, You've never ate ice cream right ? " I simply nodded. She then grabbed my hand and started dragging me " Right ! Since this is your first time, Allow me to choose for you ~Kay ? "

" Sure " She smiled brightly while dragging me like a little child. This scene filled me with warmth, I could tell i was faintly smiling too

We reached the icecream shop and placed our orders. Honami ordered 2 Citron Flavored Icecreams

The worker got two cups and pulled a lever, From it came a snail shaped cream filling the cup, He filled the second one and placed a plastic spoon on each one of them and gave it to us, We sat at a table nearby

" You may dig in~ " I nodded

I took the spoon filled with ice cream and placed it in my mouth. The Lemon's flavor is brilliant, My mouth started watering requesting for more. The cold sour yet sweet cream started melting on top of my tongue and slowly gulping it. It was the experience

" Sooo~ How was it ? " Honami asked, I simply took another spoon as a response. She pouted cutely before taking a bite herself.

We finished eating our ice cream in a comfortable silence. Once we finished we stood up

" Thank you for the experience Honami. I loved it " I voiced out my Honest thoughts

" Hey, You said that you only love me~ " She pouted cutely. I chuckled and gave her a headpat " Anyway~ What's next~ "

" How about hanging out in my room ? " I offered. But she flushed

" Eh?! K-Kiyotaka, W-What are we G-Gonna do ?..... " She muttered while blushing. There was a small hint of excitement on the last part

" I thought i'd offer my Cute Girlfriend a massage. If you're not Okay with it then We can find something else "

" N-No ! I'll Come " She strengthened herself and agreed. She walked infront and moved towards the Chambers " Right ! This Way

!"

I Started following her towards the Chamber. However, After a little both our phones vibrated at the same time, It was a loud dinging sound means that we've received a message from the School. Honami turned around confused. Before she could utter a word an announcement came

" Attention. This is an announcement to all students. All students should

have received a message from the school, as indicated in the contact line.

Please check your individual mobile devices and follow the instructions

accordingly. In the event that you did not receive a message, we apologize for

the inconvenience. Please go to the nearest faculty member for assistance.

Because the contents of the message are extremely important, please do not

miss it. We repeat—"

We both pulled out our phones and read the following message :

A special test will begin soon. Please gather in the designated room at the designated time. Anyone who arrives later than ten minutes after start

time may be penalized. Please gather in Room 202 on the second deck by

20:40 today. Because it takes about twenty minutes to reach the area, we ask

that you please use the restrooms now if necessary. Either silence your phone

or turn it off, and make your way over.

" Special Test ? " Honami muttered, She stared at the message deep in thought before turning towards me " Can you show me your phone Kiyotaka ? "

I Obligated and showed her my phone. She took it and re-read the message

" It's the same.... " She muttered. She then showed me her phone and i read the exact same message " It's weird, Don't you think ? I mean them gathering us at a Private room "

" It is strange indeed " The private rooms compared to places like Decks are smaller, Making it impossible to announce an exam for all the 160 students present. Except.....

" Honami can you ask what time our classmates got ? " She nodded and started texting.

" We got times Ranging from 18:00 to 20:40. It seems that

Kanzaki-kun is also in our room " So it would be a group explanation. *But why ?* " There is 3 to 4 people per group assigned to a designated time. Our group is the last in our class "

" I see... "

" Why would the school explain in groups instead of announcing it like they did in the Island test ? " Asked Honami, That is a very good question, The school wouldn't gain anything but pain if they went through explaining it individually to everyone

" Probably this exam's rules are hard to understand so they decided to explain it this way ? " I Suggested, That could be the case. Or the school just wanted to avoid the chaos that would erupt if they explained it. Probably both

" If that's the Case then... " She Trailed off while Gazing at her Phone " Then we should wait for our classmates to finish and let them fill us of what's going on so we would have a better understanding when our time comes " I Nodded

This method allows you to focus on potential loopholes during the explanation, If this exam's rules are hard to understand at first glance, Then it would make sense putting Honami and Kanzaki, The Leaders of Class A in the last group.... At this point, The school is begging us to find them. But if they are easy to spot then it would be a blunder on their part since we would just clean sweep the whole thing without much of a struggle. However, It is Certain that The Leaders of the Other classes are on the Last group too, Since this school's Exams are as fair as possible.

" Shall we wait until the First group comes out~? " Honami suggested, I Simply nodded.

It Was 20:30 PM. Me, Honami and Kanzaki are currently waiting outside door Number 202 on the second deck.

After receiving multiple explanations from our Classmates, We have an idea about how this exam would proceed.

Rumbling sounds could be heard inside, And the door suddenly opened. There left 4 Students From Class C, Glaring at us while doing so. Chabashira-sensei, The Homeroom teacher of Class D was inside. She looked at us, urging us to enter

" Pardon the Intrusion~ " Honami said as she Started bouncing towards The Middle Chair. I Went and sat beside her, Kanzaki took the Seat Next To her.

Chabashira-Sensei Sighed before Turning her Sharp gaze towards us, She was known as a teacher who is cold towards her students

and very serious about her work. She is the childhood friend of Chie-sensei and started teaching at the same year together. *What a happy friends*

" I'm pretty sure you already know the Rules from your Classmates but i'll explain *once more* for the sake of formality " She isn't enjoying this at all. Well as expected " I Will now start Explaining what we call The Zodiac Exam. In this Exam All First-Year students would be split in twelve groups based on the signs of the Zodiac "

Each 12 of the groups contains a set number of 3 to 4 Students from Each Class. And they are required to Participate in their Respective Group.

" The previous exam tested your Teamwork. Whereas this Exam tests your Thinking, In more than four Ways : your ability to thoroughly process information, which is essential component of this test. Your ability to analyze your current situation and clarify the task at hand. The ability to solve the problem after you've clarified the process and identified the task. The ability to utilize your imagination, and the ability to create new values. Those are the qualities you'll need. Are there any Questions so far ? "

We Shook our head. Chabashira-sensei grabbed a paper and handed it towards us " Your Group assignment is The Dragon Group, This is the list of the members in your Group. You would be required to return it before you leave, If you think it's necessary i recommend you memorize it before you go "

Honami took the Paper and started reading it, Making enough space for us to move in too :

Class A : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Ichinose Honami, Kanzaki Ryuuji

Class B : Sakayanagi Arisu, Katsuragi Kohei, Nishikawa Ryoko, Matoba Shinji

Class C : Ryueen Kakeru, Oda Takumi, Suzuki Hidetoshi, Sonoda Mashashi

Class D : Horikita Suzune, Kushida Kikyou, Hirata Yosuke

Every Class Representative was on this Group. That's what we all thought at the Same time, This wasn't a coincidence, That's for sure.

" I Prepared a handouts explaining the rules on this exam. You aren't allowed to take them or Photograph them, You must check the Contents Here and now " She handed the Three of us some papers

AN EXPLANATION OF THE SUMMER GROUP SPECIAL EXAM

This assignment centers on a 'VIP' assigned to each group. By providing answers to the school via a defined method, you will earn one of

four outcomes.

The exam starts at 8:00 AM on the first day. An email will be sent to all groups of the fact that the VIP students were already chosen. The exam itself will mostly take place between 1:00 PM and 9:00 PM. Students are free to act as they wish during the day. For about an hour each day, twice, groups will need to gather together and discuss. Content of the talk will be left up to the discretion of each group. At the end of the exam, the VIP students of other groups must be identified. This will be done between 9:30 PM and 10:00 PM. Only one answer can be submitted by each group. The answers must be sent to faculty members through a certain address that will be provided to mobile phones. The VIP student cannot be the one to send the answers. The identity of the VIP student of the group you are assigned must only be sent. Any other answer will be marked as invalid. Details of the results of the exam will be mailed to students by 11:00 PM on the final day. Possible End Results

OUTCOME # 1 :

Share the identity of the VIP and clear the exam together as one.

If the answers of the VIP student as well as the other group members are all correct, They would Receive 500,000 private points Whereas the VIP student would Receive 1,000,000 private points

OUTCOME # 2 :

Answer incorrectly and the group loses but the VIP still receives points. If there are incorrect answers or unanswered questions by people other than the VIP student, only the VIP student will receive 500,000 private points.

If i didn't know better, I would say this is just a game rather than a special exam. The rewards for the First 2 Outcomes are way too favorable towards the VIP. However...

" You can Flip the Pages. It's not like you need explanation for these " Chabashira-sensei Coldly said. We flipped the Pages and unraveled the biggest Catch for the VIP

OUTCOME # 3 :

A traitor uncovers the identity of the VIP. In the case that someone other than the VIP answers the question before waiting for the allocated time and answers correctly, the class the answerer belongs to will receive 50 class points each and the answerer themselves will receive 500,000 private points for themselves. On the other hand, classes whose VIP have been identified will receive a penalty of -50 class points for their whole class. Once this has

been achieved, the test will be over for the group. However, if a member that belongs to the class of the VIP answers correctly, the previous result will be made invalid and the examination for that group will continue.

OUTCOME # 4 :

The traitor disregards the judgment of the VIP. In the case that someone other than the VIP answers the question before waiting for the allocated time and answers incorrectly, the class the answerer belongs to will receive a penalty of -50 class points each but the VIP will still receive 500,000 private points. The class which the VIP belongs to obtains 50 class points. If the answer is given incorrectly, the group's exam will end. However, if a member belonging to the class of the VIP is the one who answered incorrectly, the answer will be considered invalid and will not be accepted.

" The school will take anonymity into account during this test. At the end, only the outcomes for each group and the increase or decrease in points for each class will be announced. In other words, we will not announce the names of the VIPs or those who submitted answers. Also, if you wish, you may have a temporary ID assigned to you, to which you can transfer points. It is also possible to divide points up and receive them that way. If you yourself remain quiet, there should be no fear of discovery after the test. Of course, if it's not necessary for you to hide your identity, you may receive your points openly. That is perfectly fine " Chabashira Explained after we handed her the papers back

" There should also be a list of prohibited actions on the sheet. Make sure to examine it thoroughly "

A List of prohibited acts like stealing someone's phone to submit answers, Using threats to confirm the VIP, and all the Ryueen like acts are prohibited. Meetings members from other classes outside of your Group is also prohibited. The highest Punishment you would Receive is Expulsion

" Also, You are very limited when it comes to Contracts. Any contract that directly influence the Results of this exam would be invalid. In other words, You cannot use contracts to exchange VIP names and so on "

These set of rules works to ensure that this exam revolves on your Thinking and Thinking alone. However, When people think of Thinking, They would try to think outside the box.

" Tomorrow, You will go to your designated room at 1 P.M and 8 P.M Your group's name would be displayed on a nameplate outside. You are required to attend it for an hour before leaving, Leaving before that isn't Allowed "

Leaving Mid-session is a no, You have to attend it for atleast an hour, After that you would be free to remain or leave.

" Is there any questions ? " Since we already grasped everything already, We already understood what's going on " Right, With this The explanation is complete. You may leave now "

" Thank you Sensei " Honami Said. We stood and walked outside, We could see Students also leaving. Since the leaders of each Class already Grasped rules, This explanation was just supplementary

I Started seeing the Bigger picture now, I Thought of taking a back seat. However, I Decided against it. Sakayanagi would most likely try to have a match me During this exam, Since it only revolves on Thinking, And thinking is what She excels at.

Speaking of Sakayanagi, I Was wondering why did she come here instead of staying on the school Camp. I Have thought about the possibility of another exam but i wasn't so sure of it, The most logical conclusion would be that she wanted to enjoy this Cruise, Yet it wasn't Fully Valuable.

Not that I'm complaining, This group would've been less fun if Katsuragi was the one leading Class B. I can imagine him coming up with a stupid strategy, Probably similar to Horikita's. Since Sakayanagi is present she would be the one in charge. Adding in Ryueen-chan in the Group makes it 100 times better, This group is the best. Thinking about it makes me excited

This is fun

Notes :

Chabashira didn't explain the rules using the scripted speech because she deemed it useless and just gave the gist of it. Kiyo and the Others already know what's going on

Yahaloo~

I Kinda went through an Author Block again Writing this

Chapter, I'm too lazy to check for Grammar errors and etc so just let it slide.

Anyway, This is the Start of The Zodiac Exam. Not Quite, Since SAKAYANAGI WOULD BE PRESENT.

Yes, Since she would be present i have to think about a plan she would implement so she could win. I Already have an idea so Yeah Wait for it

Also, My exams are coming next week. It is Quite a packed schedule with Physics as the Final boss (The other days have 2-3 exams while Physics is sitting alone at the end. Final boss Vibes no ?)

So expect Slow updates. That's all Bye bye~

Arc 4 Chap 2 : Prelude

Just when the students started recovering from the previous exam, The school hit them with another. They naturally felt displeased since they were promised a vacation. However, We were still able to do as we please except for the meeting times, So there wasn't alot of grumbling

Bzzt...

I, Honami and Kanzaki were sitting at a restaurant when our phones vibrated on top of the table just when the clock hit 8 AM. I Checked my phone and found the message :

After Thorough consideration, You have not been chosen to be the VIP. Please remember to be a team player as your group tackles the challenges of this test. The exam begins today and would be held during a period of three days. Members of the Dragon group should gather in the Dragon room located on the second deck

" So ? " Honami spoke after she was done reading " I'm not the VIP "

" Same " " Me too "

" No luck huh ? Well it might be a blessing is disguise "

However, One thing bothered me. If the assignments are random then this message says otherwise, The first part indicates that the VIPs have been carefully picked up after considering the factors. Which factors is what i don't know

" Isn't it weird ? If the assignments are random then why did they add the first part ? " Questioned Honami

" I agree, It indicates The existence of a common trait between the VIPs. Or this could be just a bait from the school to mislead us "

It all depends on what consideration they took. The school would never lie to mislead the students, atleast on times like these to ensure the fairness.

This makes me believe that there is some sort of a pattern to the VIPs assignments. The school took in consideration our classes and most likely distributed 3 VIPs on each Class. If that's the case, Then the number of patterns drastically decreased.

Honami was fidgeting her phone, After a while she spoke

" It seems that Yume-chan, Chihiro-chan and Kozue-chan are the VIPs in our Class "

Kobashi Yume VIP of the Cow Group

Shiranami Chihiro VIP of the Tiger group

Minamikata Kozue VIP of the Monkey group

" Did they only pick girls as the VIPs ? " Marked Kanzaki

It is strange that only girls in our Class got Chosen as VIPs. Again our Class is 60% Girls

That doesn't mean anything. We have close to none information about the choosing method, So it could be a coincidence.

" It's probable Kanzaki-kun, But it is most likely a coincidence. It could also be that they chose the leader's friends "

If the school's intention by this is to make a new way for tackling this exam by creating a pattern, Then that pattern has to be very specific, With no room for error.

If that's the case then we can instantly cross off any random or common elements like personality traits, Gender etc...

That creates another question, Which factor that is common by no more than one student on each group ? Only few comes to mind but the most logical one is.....

I already have my answers. Let's see what Honami and Kanzaki would do

" You're Late " As i entered the room. Ryueen yelled without taking his eyes out of a book. I instantly recognized it

" What do you mean by late ? It's 12:59. The discussion hasn't even started " In fact, I came right in time.

" Now, Let the first discussion of the Dragon group begin ! " An announcement came from the speakers inside the room

" See ? I'm not late " I persisted. Ryueen threw me an intimidating gaze that caused his classmates to start trembling. He then closed the book and put it aside

I shrugged and moved on from the entrance. Sakayanagi was sitting between two of her Classmates welcomed me with a smug. However, Katsuragi was sitting alone on a corner, He glanced at me and averted his gaze quickly

Horikita paid me little to none attention. Hirata and Kushida both smiled warmly at me.

I walked towards Honami and sat beside. Soon she spoke

" Kiyotaka, Ryueen-kun is Right. You're late " Scolded Honami

" I wasn't late tho. I came right in time " I resisted.

" Yeah, But it's impolite if you don't arrive early. You should apologize " Honami said Sarcastically

" No "

" Apologize ! " She commanded

" No "

" Apolog- "

" Can you both Shut the hell up ? " Yelled Nishikawa who was

sitting beside Sakayanagi

" Fufufu Is this your plan to piss all of us off Ayanokouji-kun ? If so it's working beautifully " Said Sakayanagi

" Who knows " I said vaguely with a small confident smug. It was indeed a small little plan Honami thought about for testing out their mental states during this discussion. It was impressive

Honami took a deep sigh before standing up, Looking as cheerful as ever.

" Everyone is here, Good. Well, Since we will be working as a group from now on, I Think we should introduce ourselves ! Even if most of us know eachother, It won't hurt to do it again right ? " Honami asked, Everyone didn't show any signs of disagreeing, So she Nodded and started " Great, I'll go first ! I'm Ichinose Honami From Class A Pleasure meeting you~ " She bowed and sat back on her Seat enthusiastically

I couldn't help but admire her, She took the lead on our group and pushed everyone into following her. That is something i could only hope to achieve.

" Kanzaki Ryuuji " Kanzaki nonchalantly introduced himself, He didn't seem to be particularly interested

" I'm Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Pleasure working with you " I Said trying to add some enthusiasm in my voice, It worked for the most part. Sakayanagi was surprised at my introduction and grinned widely

" I guess It's our Turn " Sakayanagi Continued " I'm Sakayanagi Arisu, Leader of Class B. Pleasure " She said with her usual Smug smile.

" Nishikawa " " Matoba " Both of her followers introduced themselves. We turned towards Katsuragi " Don't lump me in your discussion, I'm not participating "

Katsuragi's Refusal of participation earned him Glares from his Classmates. Strangely enough, Nobody protested against him, I Expected atleast abit of persuasion but nobody tried to.

During Class D Introductions. I Moved closer to Honami's Ears and whispered " Did i miss something ? " It seems i startled her, But She quickly recovered and whispered back

" Yes. When we came Katsuragi-kun told us that he won't participate during discussions and stay silent. Sakayanagi-san left him be and said that she isn't responsible for his actions " Honami Explained

Since Sakayanagi is here, Katsuragi is a mere Student in the eyes of Class B. He most likely suggested to stay silent to Sakayanagi but she refused and he rebelled.

Class D has finished their introductions, And now all eyes on

Ryueen who was touching his Chin While Smirking

" Kukuku I Can't go against the flow now can i ? " He stood up " Ryueen Kakeru, This is Oda, Suzuki and Sonoda " He Pointing towards each one of his Lackeys while muttering their Names

Honami Nodded and stood up " Nice to meet you Everyone ! Now for this exam, I'd like for all of us to cooperate and Reach Outcome #1 ! I Already talked with Kiyotaka and Kanzaki-kun and we are willing to Cooperate ! " Suggested Honami

" I Agree with Ichinose-san ! We should all work together and Reach Outcome #1, Right Guys ? " Kushida instantly jumped to support Honami. Hirata Nodded with a warm smile indicating his support to the Plan.

" Fufufu What an Interesting Idea " Sakayanagi Voiced with some interest " And how are you Gonna Achieve that Ichinose-san ? From What I've seen, It's very hard " Honami was about to speak, But she instantly Got Cut by Ryueen

" I Support this " Ryueen Rose His hand with a smirk. His Statement stunned everyone in this Room, I Wasn't an exception. Even Katsuragi who showed no interest looked at him in Shock " Why all the Surprise ? Couldn't i agree to an idea when i find it convincing ? "

" No It's just that, You would normally refuse and go with your own Methods. So this is some surprising developments " Marked Kanzaki, Ryueen just Laughed

" Kukuku Who said that i won't make any moves ? "

" What do you mean by that ? " Kanzaki Questioned

" Since i already know who the VIP is. I'll just Hunt them down until they submit to me " Ryueen said while leaning on his Chair staring at Kanzaki with a wide grin. Everyone tensed up at that Statement

" Fufufu it doesn't count when the VIP is in your Class Ryueen-kun " Sakayanagi Said with arrogance in her Tone. Ryueen just laughed at her

" Kuku Believe whatever you want to believe, It would be easier if you guys fool yourselves anyway " He claimed. His statement was doubtful, But There is still the possibility that he is saying the Truth.

" If you already know who the VIP is. Why didn't you send their name Already ? " Horikita spoke glaring towards Ryueen. It was the question that was running through everyone's heads

" Kukuku it wouldn't be fun that way would it ? " Horikita..... No everyone was baffled at Ryueen's Reason. It is unthinkable that you would throw your chances of victory just to have fun, Especially in this School where your Future is at stakes. That's what everyone

thinks, But not Ryueen

" Are you serious ? " Horikita muttered " What happens if someone else finds the VIP and submit their names before you do ? "

" Then That's that " Ryueen Nonchalantly said

" You're Insane " Horikita Muttered. Whispers could be heard around doubting Ryueen's Statement. So i decided to ask my Question

" Did you already find the Pattern Ryueen ? " My question silenced everyone, Murmurs erupted

" Pattern ? " " What does he mean by that ? " They Stopped when Ryueen spoke

" Damn right i did. Fucking Monster " He then glared at me " Did you figure it out too ? "

" Maybe " I Said Vaguely. Ryueen smirked at my response

" I'd like to hear what you found Ayanokouji. Care to share ? "

" I've took into consideration alot of the factors which seemed to Align with Class A's VIPs. I Applied them to the rest of the groups and i think i know every single VIP " My Response stunned everyone. Sakayanagi and Ryueen both Laughed hard at their Reactions.

Ryueen being the first one to calm down, Turned towards me " And what Factors did you take in Consideration ? "

" Sorry. That i can't Say " I glared back at him with a small smug on my face.

" Kukuku You don't look like the emotionless Monster i'm used to. What happened Ayanokouji ? Did you enjoy a piece of heaven before coming here ? " Asked Ryueen while smirking, The term 'piece of heaven' was quite popular between the boys, So i understood what it meant.

Honami flushed and started twitching cutely on her seat. Ryueen noticing this laughed

" I don't intend on breaking the rules " I said with my Monotone Voice

" I don't think you get it, Ayanokouji. That is if you get caught. You can still do it no ? " Ryueen's attacks which are borderline sexual harassment got the better of Honami's feelings. She was now blushing furiously.

Sakayanagi and other girls had faint blushes on their faces too.

" Ah... Umm... N-No ! Umm. Yeah..... B-But... NO- " Honami tried muttering words, But couldn't.

" Kukuku Just a friendly advice Ichinose. If you want to do it so badly but your Boyfriend is dense, Just spike his drink with an Aphrodisiac, Works 100% of the times " Ryueen Suggested with a

wide grin on his face. *He is enjoying this way too much* I was about to speak when suddenly Sakayanagi Spoke

" Fufufu you seem to be speaking out of experience Ryueen-kun. Did you already use that with Shiina-san ? " Ryueen's face dropped at the mention of Hiyori but he quickly regained it, He faced Sakayanagi

" Shiina ? What's up with her ? " He shot the Loli with an Intimidating Gaze. Sakayanagi Fufu'ed

" You seem to be reading alot of books Lately Ryueen-kun. Are you sure it's not because of you-know-what ? " Mused Sakayanagi. Ryueen's was deep in thought, Probably out of panic.

" I Think we should focus on the Exam instead of bickering " *That's what he said*

" If i remember Correctly. The Contents of the discussion is up to us, Right Ayanokouji-kun ? " Sakayanagi Turned towards me with a sadistic smile, I Simply nodded " Besides, It was you who started this Ryueen-kun. Take Responsibility "

Sakayanagi Relentlessly teased the Dragon, Who was powerless against her, She was enjoying this way too much.

I Finally turned towards the Pair of eyes that has been staring at me for a while now. Honami with a big cute blush was spaced out while staring at me, Kanzaki didn't want to interrupt her Fantasies just dropped me a glance.

" Ah~ Awwwww~ " I flicked her Forehead causing her to come back to reality. She cutely held her forehead while crying like a sad Puppy. My heart started racing at the cute noises she made " Meanie~ " She pouted

" Pull yourself together Honami. What happened to our plan ? "

" Oh~ ! " She realized that she has a role today. She quickly slapped herself twice and stood up, Still Blushing

" Alright Everyone ! Since we won't do anything for the rest of the discussions How about we~ " She started pulling something out from her pocket, A set of cards " Play Cards~ "

" pfffft..... " Sakayanagi tried to contain her Laughter, But didn't succeed " Sorry Sorry, It's just that, I never expected you to do this " She calmed herself down and stared at me, Her smug smile is as bright as ever

" Right~ Does anyone want to join ? " Honami Announced

" Meee " Kushida enthusiastically rose her hand. Hirata followed up and rose his hand too

" Fufu I Don't mind a game or two " Sakayanagi stood, With the help of her cane she came closer to us

" Right~ That makes 6 of us. Anyone else ? "

" Kukuku I'll join " Spoke Ryueen, Kanzaki Looked Skeptical but

Honami didn't mind " If you want to join aswell you can " Ryueen gave permission to his subordinates to join aswell. However, They refused

Nobody else joined, So The 7 of us started playing cards for the Rest of the session

People tend to drop their guards when they are having fun, And this is exactly what Honami tried to exploit. It is sad that only Class Leaders joined, But anyone of them could still be the VIP.

Honami has been better than i expected so far, Setting aside Ryueen Exploiting her feelings earlier, She dealt with this exam brilliantly. I am curious about her plans, But that can wait

The first meeting of the Dragon group has concluded. Katsuragi not wasting any second left the room after staying silent for the whole hour, Horikita doing the same However, She glared at me and Ryueen before leaving. Ryueen smirked finding it amusing before he got up and left, Sakayanagi sensing her Dragon escaping, She went on her heels and walked out of the Room.

Me, Honami and Kanzaki followed right after, We exited the Room and started walking in the Hallway

" Maaan~ That was really something huh ? " Honami said while Stretching " What do you think of what Ryueen-kun said at the start ? "

" I Don't know. I Can't trust any word that comes out of his mouth. Do you think he already figured out the pattern ? " Kanzaki thought

" I Don't think so, If he did then this exam is all but over " Voiced Honami. She thought alittle before Speaking " But again, I Don't think the school would set a pattern that is easy to find. It contradicts our understanding of a special exam "

What Honami said wasn't wrong in a sense. Special exams are supposed to be hard and require alot of hard work, And luck too. However, This exam tests your *thinking*

Thinking outside the Box is also a part of Thinking. And it's a very valuable skill to have, If you basically hung yourself on the initial clues and ignore everything around you then that would end disastrously for you.

" Ayanokouji " Kanzaki Called to me, I Glanced at him urging him to speak " Did you actually figure out the Pattern ? "

" Yeah " I Nodded

" I see.... " He drove deep in his thoughts. Honami looked at me

and smiled warmly

" Do you want me to tell you ? " I Asked. It is strange that he didn't ask me for it, They weren't surprised either.

" No " Kanzaki refused

" Why not ? You could basically win the exam right here and now "

" We can't have you carry us everytime Ayanokouji " *That's something unexpected* " We are the leaders, It should be us who work hard not you. I've talked about it with Ichinose, We will tackle this exam alone without your help "

The Impression i got from Kanzaki is someone serious who wants to win, So i expected him to try and interrogate me about the Pattern, I Didn't expect this

" Kanzaki-kun is Right Kiyotaka " Honami Spoke " We also want to prove that we are worthy of being leaders. We are well aware that you had to do what you did because of our incompetence, We are grateful for saving us. But now we want to win using our hard work "

Honami and Kanzaki has grown alot lately, If it was Kanzaki at the start of the year, He would've definitely did a fuss over me holding back the winning weapon. However, Both of them wanted to prove that they can do something without me, That they are reliable as Class Leaders, *Who am i to refuse their wishes ?*

" I wasn't gonna give it to you anyway " Honami Smiled warmly and Kanzaki nodded with a small smile " I was curious about what will the two of do, So I'll be watching, I can promise that i will not get in your way "

" Thank you Kiyotaka~ We won't let you down~ " Cheered Honami

That's right, I am not gonna do anything this exam, I Wasn't intending on doing so from the beginning. I Will leave everything to Honami and Kanzaki, I am curious about what would they do on their own.

But i have to say. I have expectations.....

Notes :

If you didn't understand why would the school pick a specific pattern i'll explain :

Since the pattern is pretty hard to find, Then it has to be a game winning tactic. So the pattern has to be very specific and the factor has to be specific too

If the pattern says that Girls are the VIPs. That would be like nothing but a clue, If someone spent alot of time just to find that, It wasn't worth it. So the pattern has to be specific, Like in this Case. Your Zodiac group's number dictates the VIP on the list, It is something that only 1 Student shares and only 1. Does it make sense now ?

Arc 4 Chap 3 : Deal

I used my humble skills to draw the Dragon group room and where everyone is seated.

T = Teammates (Insignificant Characters)

R = Ryueen

S = Sakayanagi

A = Kiyo (Ayanokouji)

I = Honami (Ichinose)

K (Bottom side on the right of I) = Kanzaki

KK = Katsuragi

K (On top of H on the Right) = Kushida

H = Horikita

Y = Yousuke (Hirata)

Dunno why i did this but i wanted to look somewhat professional. Anyway enjoy the Chapter

3rd POV

5 PM First day of the Special exam

At a certain room on the 3rd Deck, A Certain Class held a meeting, Discussing a certain exam.

All 40 students were gathered in that place, Their leader which they put a lot of trust and faith in, Invited them to hold a strategy meeting for the exam.

" Alright~ Before we dive in, Does anyone have any ideas or suggestions ? " Asked The leader

No one rose their hand, Some of them have ideas but decided not to share, Because they already know that Their Leader, already have a plan in mind.

The leader waited for a moment, Noticing no one was going to talk, She Cleared her throat and spoke

" Alright Everyone~ I Already have thought of a plan with the Help of Kanzaki-kun. For the next days, We will try and get close to our group mates and make friends. We will appear that we have no plan, At least on the surface " Announced the Leader

Everyone was somewhat confused, They thought that their Leader have thought thoroughly of a plan to win this exam. One person Raised their hand

" Can you explain in more details Ichinose-san ? " Asked a Boy with blue hair

The leader... Or Rather Ichinose Honami, Looked at the boy and nodded

" Yes, Shibata-kun. You will get close to your group mates and try to find the VIPs. Meanwhile Me, Kanzaki-kun and Kiyotaka~ are gonna try to find the pattern using our VIPs and possibly the VIPs you guys find " Explained Ichinose.

Everything made sense for Shibata and the Rest of his classmates. Ichinose's plan wasn't bad, It makes use of the greatest advantage they have over the other Classes, Which is trust.

Since Class A in the eyes of everyone, Is the kindest and most trustworthy, Kanzaki suggested to make use of that, Which Ichinose Agreed to.

" And if you are the VIP, Then try to think of a plan to deceive your group mates, You have your classmates to help you and you can consult me or Kanzaki-kun for any help " Her statement made a group of 3 easy, After all, Deceiving your group mates convincingly isn't an easy fate

However, One person rose their hands

" Honami-chan. What if you guys fail to find the Pattern ? " That person asked a good question

Ichinose's plan revolves on stalling until they find the pattern, If they fail on finding it then this plan would fall apart.... Not exactly

" If we fail on finding the pattern then we can push all the groups in Outcome #2 or Possibly Outcome #1. This will benefit us since we are at the top, But it won't be easy. If we fail then it's up to you guys "

The best possible outcome for Class A is finding the Pattern and clean sweep the whole exam. However, If they fail, They would try and push all the groups in an outcome that won't affect their Class points.

" Honami-chan. I Have a suggestion " One girl rose her hand

" Yes Yuki-chan ? " Ichinose urged her to speak

" If you guys will try to find the Pattern using as many VIPs as possible. How about we ask our allies, Class D for VIPs and in return, We share our winnings after we find the pattern, Then Class A and Class D would come on top "

A Certain Brown haired boy with golden eyes was intrigued by this idea. In fact, He already thought of using it, Since he wants to Humiliate a certain girl with no apparent reason.

However, Since he promised Ichinose and Kanzaki that he won't help them, He quickly abandoned it, But if Ichinose accepts this idea, Then it's a W for him.

" Yes~ I already thought of using it and i'm gonna hold a meeting with Kushida-san and the others. But without memorandums, Negotiations would be hard~ "

The Ban on the memorandums closed the option of any deals regarding the exam. However, You could still use trust which is way less reliable than a contract, But it is still usable.

They discussed about trivial details after that, They dispersed when it reached 6 PM.

Kiyo POV

After the meeting was done, Honami instantly approached me

" So~ What do you think of my plan~? " Asked Honami

" It has some flaws, But a great plan in general. Good job " I Gave her head pats. She perked up at receiving and blushed lightly

Her plan wasn't bad by any means. Using trust, their strongest weapon to get closer to their enemies and extract information, She didn't completely rely on that but instead focused on the bigger fish.
the pattern

This plan has the possibility of utterly dominating the whole exam. On the other hand, The worst case scenario is that It would be Outcome #2 on each group, That is if Ryueen and Sakayanagi did nothing which is impossible.

" I'm worried about what Sakayanagi-san and Ryueen-kun are up to, They could also be looking to find the pattern and did a similar plan to mine~ "

The reason that Outcome #2 Across the board is unlikely is because of Ryueen and Sakayanagi. I'm positive that they are also looking to find the pattern, So it would become a race of who finds it first. If someone found it then it's a good game for the rest

" Don't worry about that, We all have 3 VIPs at the moment, Figuring out the Pattern with that low number is impossible " I explained patting her head even more

" But~ You already figured it out with just 3 VIPs~ So it's not impossible " Honami persisted while blushing. *Don't compare me with them !*

" That's true, But Sakayanagi and Ryueen aren't as smart as i am. It would be impossible for them to figure it out with just 3 VIPs "

" That's..... so cool..... " Honami blurted out " I Tried to figure it out earlier with Kanzaki-kun but we gave up not long after 5 minutes "

" I Can give you a hint if you want " I Offered

" Nope~ We promised that we will tackle this exam alone "
Honami Rejected

" If you say so " I Said " Just don't overwork yourself okay ? "

" Ara~ Are you worried about me ?~ " Teased Honami

" Obviously "

" Heehee~ Thank you~ " She jumped at me and hugged my arm. She hugged it tighter pressing her Giant breasts against it, I Felt dizzy for a moment.

" We still have 2 hours until our second discussion, What do you want to do ? " I Asked

Honami pondered over abit. Before she flashed me with a mischievous grin " Let's hang out in your Room~ "

" Sure "

After that we walked towards my Room, While she was hugging my arm. Naturally, Everyone passed by glared at me *Well i'm kinda used to it anyway*

We entered my Room and started out little home date

It was time for the second meeting of the Dragon group. As we made our way towards the Meeting Room

Honami was more cheerful and Energetic than ever. Probably because of what *we did in my room*.

Curious about what we did ? Well, *That's a story for another time*

Anyway, We arrived and found Kanzaki alongside Class D were already there.

" Welcome Ichinose-san, Ayanokouji-kun " Hirata beamed

" Good evening Hirata-kun, Kushida-san and Horikita-san " Greeted Honami. I Followed up with a bow and went and sat in our seats

" Just to confirm Ichinose-san. We are gonna meet tomorrow at 9 AM Right ? " Asked Horikita.

" Yes~ I Hope it's not a bother~ "

" Not at all " Horikita shrugged and kept reading her book

We waited in a comfortable silence for some time. Ryueen and Sakayanagi, Both entered at the Same time and both looking like usual, Followed up by the Rest of the Dragon Group

" The second group discussion of the Dragon group has began ! " A Voice came from the speakers

" Right~ Anyone want to play Cards again~? " Honami Offered, The same people from last time agreed. However

" Are you just gonna play cards all discussion again ? " It was Katsuragi who spoke, He seemed quite annoyed. He just blundered and revealed his plan this early, Normal people would think that he is just annoyed, But not me

" Kukuku getting impatient eh ? " Ryueen snickered, It looks like he noticed it too. Katsuragi glared at Ryueen before Shifting his gaze

" Do whatever you want, It doesn't involve me anyw- "

" But you just involved yourself Katsuragi-kun " It was Sakayanagi who spoke with her usual smug smile " You said that you won't participate, But here you are trying to change the way the discussion is going. Are you sure ? "

" Last time you were playing you were very noisy, it annoyed me, My bad " Katsuragi didn't even look apologetic, Shifted his gaze to his phone. I Caught glimpses of what he was doing, He had an App called Reddit open on a subreddit called Dad Jokes, Does he miss his dad or something ? No, He seems to be enjoying them. Well good for him

Ryueen Appeared Suspicious of Katsuragi, He caught my Gaze and gazed back with a smirk

" Kukuku What a fucking Monster, Nothing gets past you does it ? "

" I Don't know what you're talking about " I Feigned Ignorance

" Don't fuck with me. I Thought you'd be more active, What the hell happened to you ? " Ryueen exclaimed. I was about to speak when someone cut me

" What do you mean by this Ryueen-kun ? " It was Horikita who spoke. She glared at me before focusing back at him

" Kukuku it is as you think Suzune, This Ayanokouji Right there is a fucking Monster, I bet he is even stronger than the President "

His Statement made everyone in the room Yell in shock. Now all eyes were on me

" Well played Ryueen " I couldn't help but compliment him

" Kuku "

It was indeed well played by him. He fully understands my superiority, And my mindset of avoiding attention... Rather unnecessary attention. By doing this he is attacking the only weakness i have

" He is stronger than nii-san ? " Horikita Muttered, She couldn't believe what Ryueen said " But they fought in the Scholar Event and Nii-san Clearly won. Nobody is Stronger than Nii- "

" You truly are Defective aren't you Suzune ? " Ryueen Shot Horikita, She got mad and glared at him " Didn't you see how he clapped your nii-san ? If not for his Injury at that time he would've

definitely won. Hell even he said that he won't be lucky to defeat him next time. Are you gonna go against what your 'nii-san' said Suzune ? "

Ryueen used the fact that Horikita is a bro-con and started attacking her using her Brother, While attacking me as well. Sakayanagi was sadistically enjoying this show

" N-No ! Nii-san said that because he is Humble, Nii-san is great ! No one can defeat him " Horikita Claimed, A Light blush could be spotted on her Cheeks

" Fufufufufufufu Are you Blushing Horikita-san ? " Sakayanagi Marked, This Made Ryueen narrowed his eyes. Horikita looked At Sakayanagi, Ryueen's eyes widened as his Grin went wider

" Kukukukukukuku You really are a bro-con. *Disgusting* " Ryueen's expression said otherwise, He was grinning like a mad lad, Sakayanagi too. Horikita was flushed, She just grabbed her book and hid herself behind it

" You two are lunatics " Kanzaki Muttered

However, I Noticed something interesting, Kushida was trying her best to not show her amusement. In fact, She was trying her best to look uncomfortable at the state Horikita's in

I noticed this too during that time when we were discussing the alliances. I Came to a conclusion that Kushida despises Horikita deeply. If i abuse this fact correctly then i can earn for myself a new pawn....

Second day 9:00 AM

Me, Kanzaki and Honami were sitting on a table, In front of us Were Horikita, Hirata and Kushida respectively

We chose a unpopular cafe that is located on the 4th deck, It wasn't that unpopular but we can hold meeting without the risk of eavesdroppers.

" So what did you want to talk with us about ? " Horikita bluntly asked, But she tried to not sound rude.

" Right~ I Wanted to discuss a deal with you guys " Spoke Honami

" Deal ? " Horikita repeated. She then gave me a look, Before glancing back at Honami " What kind of deal ? "

" We are working to find the pattern of the VIPs. But 3 VIPs isn't enough " Said Honami leaving everything to Horikita's realization. The latter pondered abit before shot us a glare

" And ? You want us to help you by giving you Class D's VIPs ? "

" I'm Glad you catch on fast Horikita-san. You will give us Class D VIPs and we will find the pattern. In return, We will give you the VIP names of Class C while we take the VIPs of Class B and we will both come on top of this exam " Offered Honami

Horikita was skeptical of this offer, And understandably so. You're risking your entire life line on this bet and there would be no memorandum to protect you, If we chose to betray Class D then they would be doomed

" We can't provide you with any memorandums to ensure your safety, But i want you to trust us Horikita-san "

" I Believe you Ichinose-san, You've been a big help to us so far. Trusting you is the Least We Could do " Hirata voiced his agreement

" Hirata-kun is right. We humbly Accep- " Kushida Voiced her Support to Hirata, But Horikita cut her

" We want insurance " Horikita Asked

" Insurance ? " Honami muttered

" Yes, We will be giving you VIP names. But i don't fully trust you, So we want Private Points as insurance that you won't betray us " Requested Horikita

" That's Fine, How much do you want ? " Asked Honami

" 5 Million " Honami... No Everyone was baffled, Kushida and Hirata too " If you give us that Much, We will help you "

" T-That's alot Horikita-san " Voiced Kushida

" Kushida-san is Right Horikita-san. They offered us VIP names in return, Isn't that enough ? " Hirata supported Kushida

" That's a fair price isn't it ? If you Betray us you Will pay it dearly " Horikita Threatened

" But what if we don't Betray you ? " Kanzaki asked

" Then I'll return your Money "

Honami gazed at Kanzaki then me, She pondered over it alittle before she spoke

" 5 Million is alot Horikita-san, So I'll lower it to 1 Million for each VIP. That makes it 3 Millions, Does that sound fair to you ? "

" We will still get Class C's VIPs correct ? " Said Horikita. Honami nodded " Okay then, I Agree " Hirata and Kushida both looked Relieved

I Can tell that Horikita somewhat Trusts Honami. However, That's not the Reason she accepted, Since one of Class D's VIPs is in The Dragon Group, They could request our assistance to mislead the Rest so they would gain extra class points

Honami Proceeds to Transfer 3 Million to Horikita. Horikita Nodded towards Kushida, She then pulled out her phone and Showed us her e-mail message from the school

" I am one of The VIPs of Class D. The Other two are Karuizawa-san And Minami-kun "

" So Kushida Kikyo, Karuizawa Kei and Minami Setsuya, Right ? " Asked Kanzaki, Kushida responded with an Enthusiastic nod.

I was positive that Horikita Won't lie since Kushida and Hirata are Here. Not sure about the Former but the Latter is a genuinely good person, Even if Horikita somehow someway convinced him to turn against us and lie, He wouldn't be able to hide his discomfort

" Ichinose-san, I Have a request if you don't mind "

" Yes Kushida-san ? "

" I'd like you to help me hide myself from the Rest of the Dragon group, If that's okay with you " Here it was

" I Don't mind Kushida-san ! I already have a plan in mind so i'd like your assistance later on~ "

" Sure, Thank you very much Ichinose-san ! " Kushida beamed Brightly. Honami nodded to her

" Pleasure doing business with you Horikita-san, Kushida-san and Hirata-kun " Honami stood up with a warm smile

" Pleasure is all ours Ichinose-san. I wish you the best of lucks " Hirata said with a warm smile. Horikita didn't say anything much

We now broke from them and we started heading towards a hallway

" Now that we have 6 VIPs, The pattern should be easier to find " Said Kanzaki

" Yep~ We can disregard the VIPs being only females now " Exclaimed Honami, She then Turned towards me " What do you think Kiyotaka~? "

" You have gained a huge advantage on your race towards the Pattern, The chances of Ryueen and Sakayanagi having a deal like this is close to zero. Good Job both of you " I Said as i patted Honami's head, She instantly blushed

" Now we need to work to converse our efforts to turn this advantage into a win " Said Kanzaki

" But~ I'm worried if Ryueen-kun and Sakayanagi-san already have seen through our plan and are preparing to defend against us. They would surely cooperate when they know ~ "

Honami's worries were valid. If Ryueen and Sakayanagi heard about this meeting, Then they would both be pushed into a situation where they must cooperate if they don't want to fail. It is very unlikely that they would hear about this, That is in the Eyes of Honami....

I Don't know to which extent does Kushida hate Horikita, But i have to consider the chance that she could go as far as to betray her by colluding with Ryueen and Sakayanagi to ensure her defeat,

Regardless to the fact that It hurts her Class. If that's the Case then Honami most likely would lose this exam due to our allies

I Have a promise to keep, I'll just observe this situation Closely.....

Arc 4 Chap 4 : Kouenji's move

This Chap is a prelude to the next one, It is Short compared to the others (2K words). But the next Chapter would be the Battle

Also there is something interesting for you guys here :) Let's see if you can guess what it is (Hint : It happened in Canon)

The third discussion of the Second day was spent on playing cards. Clearly no one was in the mood for discussing stuff about the exam, But behind everyone's laziness was some scheming, Even Katsuragi has his own trap and he is waiting for the correct moment to pull

On our Part. Honami and Kanzaki, Mainly Kanzaki has been working hard to try and figure out the pattern, They are in a definite advantage compared to the others. Honami has been taking care of the matters of our classmates and our group

At the Rate Kanzaki is going, I am positive that he would find it, He is somewhat going through the Right way, But not quite. That's why i cannot exactly tell when he would find it

The school has really done a magnificent job when it comes to this exam, The pattern is a very basic one, But difficult to get through the illusions and baits the school put.

It really tests your thinking, By trying to find the pattern you are technically going against the school itself. Naturally, It wouldn't be easy at all, So you would have to consider every possibility when doing so.

Honami and Kanzaki are being put at a tough test right now. It may look great on the surface, But things are actually grim, But no one is aware, And it's not like it's their fault

Kushida Kikyou from Class D. If you ask anyone about her, They would tell you that she's an angel, Her popularity even rivaled Honami's. However, Honami's Popularity decreased since i started dating her, As a result Kushida has become the most popular girl in our Grade.

People take her as an Angel, Or a goddess. But little did they know, Behind that mask is a nasty demon. Normally, I Would've went and blackmailed her into becoming a pawn of mine, But since i have a promise to keep, That can wait.

Enough of that

I Closed my eyes and my cleared my head, The sound of water splashing slowly started fading as i laid on a chair on the pool. It was truly relaxing

" Here is your drinks " A Waiter snapped me out of my thoughts as he placed two drinks on the table on my right

" Thank you sir " Honami who was laying on the chair next to mine thanked the waiter.

Honami with her Red swimsuit and voluptuous figure was breathtaking, Her long silky Hair beautifully laying on the chair, She opened her mouth and took a sip from the tube, It was truly stunning. Her white smooth thighs were beautifully resting on top of the Chair.

" Hmmm~ " Honami started twitching uncomfortably, That's when i realized i was staring a little too much

" Oh I'm sorry " I Said Apologetically

" N-No ! Don't be~ You can stare all you want~ " She permitted me with a blush " You can even have them if you want~ "

" Sorry i didn't hear you " She muttered that last part under her breath. I Couldn't hear it

" N-NO ! Nothing~ Heehee~ " She started nervously chuckling while scratching her cheek who were as red as a tomato. She looked so cute, I Was about to say something when

' Oh my god I'm gonna die from cuteness '

' Ichinose-san can get like that ? Damn i'm so jealous '

' She's sooo Hawwwt '

' Why Him ? Just look at that body ! '

Since Honami was in her swim suit, She attracted alot of attention from the boys unfortunately.

I Glared at them intimidatingly, They all tensed up and started meekly backing away to whatever they were doing. *Good*

" Heehee~ " Honami Giggled beside me " Look at you getting so defensive over your Girlfriend~ You're sooo Cuute~ "

I ignored her teasing and took a sip from my drink, Then i laid back on the Chair I Heard her pout. However

' Woaaah Look at him. He's so handsome~ '

' I'm so jealous of Ichinose-san '

' He's soo hooooooooooooot~ '

' Look at that Body~ He looks so delicious '

I Opened my eyes to see a bunch of girls staring lustfully at me. Since i wasn't wearing my rash guard, Due to a High IQ play by Honami, I Gathered alot of attention. Boys started glaring daggers at me saying stuff like *' Is Honami not enough for you ? '* Or *' You had to steal other girls '* Internally

Honami Glared at them intimidatingly, The girls tensed up and

and meekly backed away to whatever they were doing.

" Good " She muttered

" What's good ? " I Asked

" They are so annoying. I mean can't they see that you're mine~?

" She asked

" Look at you getting desperate. So cute " I Mirrored her teasing

" Why can't i be ? " However, I Didn't expect that

" No reason " I took a sip from my drink and relaxed

I've spent the Rest of the evening in the Pool. Some classmates joined us too and we enjoyed our time there.

The fourth discussion came and it went like normal, We sat and played cards with the same members.

Honami and Kanzaki still haven't figured out the pattern yet. It's abit premature from me to hope that they would find it in one day, But i guess they needs some more time. Tomorrow is a day off from the exam

It was 8 PM. The announcement of the Curfew has began. I Was laying on my bed, Having a conversation with Shibata and Hamaguchi. Kanzaki was sitting on the Desk trying to figure out the Pattern

" How is it going Kanzaki-kun ? " Shibata asked out of curiosity

" I Don't know. I've tried alot of stuff, I Even used the rules of Probability to try and figure out the placements. It still didn't make sense " That was overboard

" You don't have to worry Kanzaki-kun. You still have time, Just don't overwork yourself " Said Hamaguchi

" Yeah, Thanks " Kanzaki Responded " We have 6 VIPs and it's still hard to find " He turned to look at me, As our gazes landed he instantly shifted back. I bet he wanted to ask me how did i find it with just 3

" Just don't overthink it Kanzaki " I Offered a hint " Try and look at it from a different approach. It doesn't have to be with math does it ? "

" Yeah i know. I Didn't ask for your advice " He snapped back

" I Just offered you one worth your effort, You're free to use it or not "

I Doubt he won't use it. That's just how the human brain work, He won't keep going on a path while he knows that he won't get nothing out. He would try and take a different approach, And Hopefully he would choose the right one

" Hey guys haven't you heard ? " Shibata asked, Trying to intrigue everyone

" What is it Shibata-kun ? " Hamaguchi asked. Shibata's lips are curling up, But he tried to stop grinning, But he couldn't stop them. *I have a bad feeling about this*

" The day after the Last day of the exam. We will hold a competition between us boys of all the classes " Shibata said while grinning like a mad lad

" Competition ? About what ? " Asked Hamaguchi Confused

" About who is the '*manliest*' " Shibata Giggled

" Manliest ? " Hamaguchi tilted his head in confusion, I Did too. But i think i have an idea about what he's talking about

Shibata put his finger up and aimed at his crotch " Yes, Who is the Manliest "

" Ooooooooooooooh " Realization Hit Hamaguchi " You mean who has the biggest ? " Shibata Nodded

" The Participation is a must. That includes you too Ayanokouji-kun, If you won't come, You'll be called a wuss and be bothered for the rest of your school life "

" Are you serious ? " I Blurted out

" Indeed. Every boy is coming, The winner would be our king and be awarded 10.000 ! " Shibata said while he perked up

Is this what boys in my age do ? Since every boy is coming then it must be right ? Well i wanted to try normal stuff so i guess i'll participate..... But what is a normal boy's size ?

Since i'm not normal, Then mine would be bigger than the rest right ? But the problem is, I Can't manipulate my erection to get a 50% on it. So i can't get an Average results, I'll just hope that there is someone bigger than mine and lose. I Don't want unnecessary attention.

On second thought, I Can't lose ! I am someone who is trained to be perfect. But wait, If i lost.... Does that mean that man would lost too ? Thinking about it, I Got my genes from him so it would be his loss. This is another Chance to lose

" Guess i'll come " I Said. Shibata started getting excited, He looked towards Hamaguchi who gave him a thumbs up While muttering.... *Good job ?*

" Right ! We will meet at a private pool on 9 PM. Since we were allowed to roam after Curfew on that day. Don't forget to be There Ayanokouji-kun ! "

" Isn't Kanzaki coming too ? " *I Wanted to check something*

" He is coming. As i said, Every boy is coming "

" So you had to convince me to come too ? " He nodded " Why wasn't i informed earlier ? "

Shibata flinched and started nervously laughing. Seems like i hit

the Jackpot

" Was It Bec- " My statement got cut through by the sound of my phone.... No Everyone's phone vibrating

" That's strange " Muttered Kanzaki. It was strange, All of our phones vibrated at the exact same time.

I went and grabbed my phone, The three of them did the same. When we opened the message they were shocked

The test for the monkey group has ended. Please do not bother the other students attending the test

" Monkey group ? " Muttered Shibata " Hey.... Isn't that- "

" The group where Minamikata is the VIP " Kanzaki completed his sentence. They were all shaken up

It was way too early to turn a traitor. The only two possibilities is that the person already confirmed the name of the VIP, Or they were too bored to continue this test

Instantly, A person flashed through my head, He is the most likely candidate for this situation

" Kanzaki " I snapped Kanzaki who was deep in thought

" What ? "

" We are in a grave situation "

" What do you mean ? "

" Kouenji most definitely guessed Minamikata as the VIP "

" Are you serious ? " Kanzaki asked, Doubtful and frustrated

" Frankly I am " Sensing my serious words Kanzaki's face dropped, So the Other two.

" How did it happen ? Did Minamikata-san do a mistake ? " Asked Shibata

" I don't think so, Kouenji is just good enough to see through her "

In fact, Kouenji might even figure out the pattern If Class D shared the Names of the VIPs with him. However, I Don't think Class D trusts him..... No even trust themselves.

Kanzaki was pondering over what to do, His phone vibrating from the messages but he ignored them. After a moment he grabbed his phone and dialed someone, Most likely Honami

When she responded they talked about the situation, He informed her about what i said and she had a similar reaction to him.

She decided to hold a meeting with Class D to discuss things out with them and ordered Kanzaki to not worry and focus on finding the pattern, She also requested that i accompany her to the meeting place which i agreed

Sooner or later things were bound to go south, This is just the beginning

Arc 4 Chap 5 : Betrayal

Rest Day 6 PM

After the incident with Kouenji Yesterday, Honami arranged a meeting with our Allies from Class D

That night, The whole ship erupted into Chaos, Honami told me that her phone didn't stop vibrating for a while from the messages, They were all questioning what happened in the Monkey group since Minamikata was the VIP.

Honami played dumb and fortunately enough, They decided to brush it off. This what led to this current predicament

We are waiting for Class D in the same restaurant as before. Honami was gazing at the table deep in thought, You could notice her anxiety in her oceanic eyes

I gently held her hand and started rubbing it, She rose her head a little and looked at my eyes, Moments later She gave me a small smile

" Doesn't this situation work in our favor ? " I Said

" What do you mean ? " She responded, She seems uncertain of something

" I'm talking about your plan " She looked shocked for a moment

" You figured it out huh ? " She glanced back at the table, Blushing lightly

" It is a good plan, I Don't see why you're anxious " In fact, It was the best course of Action

" It's not that " She then turned back and looked at me " I Just don't want to disappoint you~ "

" You don't have to worry about that. I'm already impressed " I Said while giving her a head pat, She instantly perked up and giggled a little.

Even if she lost, Which is very likely. It's not gonna be her fault, If someone is to blame then it would be Class D. More specifically, Horikita and Kushida.....

" Are you gonna implement the SIM plan today ? " I Asked

" Yes~ After we discuss things out, I'll talk with them about the SIM plan "

" I see, I'm still surprised you found such a plan. Great Job " I Patted her head even more. *I May get addicted to this*

When Honami talked to me about the SIM switching plan, I was

rather shocked, I didn't expect her to find such a loophole and figure out a plan to mislead the opponents. That was something i would do if the VIP was on my Group. All i could do is be impressed

" Hehe~ Don't underestimate me~ I'm your girlfriend after all~ "

She seductively said

" You sure are "

Not long after, Horikita and the Rest of Class D's leaders came, Hirata and Kushida were both smiling warmly while Horikita has a stern expression. They went and sat on the seats in front of us

" Thank you for coming here Horikita-san, Kushida-san and Hirata-kun " Honami bowed after that

" That is no problem Ichinose-san, We will always be here to help "

Hirata said, Kushida nodded alongside him.

" So as you know, I Called you here to discuss the continuation of our plan. But before that, I Want to speak about the Incident Yesterday "

" You mean with the Monkey group ? " Kushida spoke, Honami nodded

" You see.... The VIP in the Monkey group was from Class A "

" And ? Why did you want to speak with us about it ? " Horikita Spoke

" Kiyotaka~ Believes that Kouenji-kun was the one who sent the VIP's name..... And he got it right " All three of them widened their eyes in shock. They glanced towards me

" Do you have proof ? " Horikita asked

" I Don't, But you can ask him yourselves " Horikita seems to not want to cooperate with me at all, Crossed her arms and shot me another glare

" How are you so sure ? Did you ask him ? " Horikita

" I Didn't ask him, But i know that he got it right "

" How can you be certain ? " She rose her eyebrow with a light smirk. *She thinks she's winning, Poor girl*

" Kouenji may be an Enigma who does whatever on his mind. But he isn't stupid, He knows that if he pulled the same thing it won't end well for him. So he helped you and your Class this once so he could enjoy his freedom "

" Helped us ? And how did he figure out the VIP ? " Horikita doesn't want to believe what i'm saying. In fact, She is lying to herself

" Simply put, He figured everything out "

" How did that Narcissistic mongrel figure it out ? " She holds a deep grudge against him Somehow

" He has Talent to back up his Narcissism. In fact, He is superior

to almost all the students here, That includes you too " Horikita stared intensely trying to intimidate me. I Just attacked her Weakest point which is her superiority Complex. I Could've attacked her Bronchial side instead but that seems like a pain

" Don't you Dare Compare me with Hi- "

" That doesn't matter now does it ? The fact remains that he figured out our VIP and now we are on a losing Position, That's one of the Reasons you came here in the First place " Horikita fell silent while glaring at me, I Could feel her Hatred and Hostility coming from her eyes. But that won't Matter

" Ayanokouji-kun has a reason for believing that Horikita-san, We are in this Together so we should trust each other " Hirata Calmed down Horikita. Horikita sighed

" So what do you want us to do ? " I Glanced towards Honami, She nodded And kept going.

" That can wait, Allow me to Explain our Plan first "

Honami started explaining her plan, With Horikita and Kushida listening intensely. After she was done a look of understanding Appeared on their faces

" If that happens, Then we will clean sweep this exam " Kushida Noted

" Yeah, I Have to say, That is a very well thought Plan Ichinose-san. I'm on board " Hirata smiled warmly. Then both of them looked at Horikita

" We'll cooperate " Horikita nonchalantly said. Almost as if not impressed. But her words made Honami Satisfied

" Oh and Also " She looked towards Kushida " I have thought of a plan to hide your Identity Kushida-san "

" Oh Really ? " Kushida beamed

" Mhm~ "

" What do i have to do ?! "

" We will switch phones~ " Kushida's Enthusiasm Dropped. However, Recovered Quickly. *impressive*

" But, That won't work tho, It is an old trick " Horikita noted

" We will switch phones alongside our SIM cards too. Then we will edit our contacts and make it appear like it's our phones. With this, The E-Mail from the School would move from you to me without breaking the rules ! "

In other words, They would exchange their devices while keeping their SIM cards on their new phones. Then Honami would edit everything to appear that it is her phone while keeping the E-mail the School sent to Kushida.

Horikita and Hirata were Both convinced and on Board. Kushida However, Appeared Reluctant, This confirms everything.

" Umm Ichinose-san. Are you sure that it's not breaking the School rules ? "

" Nope~ They didn't mention anything about this. I even went and Checked it with our Homeroom teacher who said that i was Fine "

" I see " Kushida Trailed off, She went and Grabbed her phone and started Checking something

" Is there something wrong Kushida ? " I Said Glaring at her. She Flinched lightly and Gazed back

" N-No, I Just..... Here " After she was Done using her Phone, She gave it to us.

Honami grabbed it and Stood up " Great~ Let's go then~ "

The Five of us went towards the Phone repairing section and executed our Plan, With the use of Private points, We unlocked the SIM lock and beautifully finished our Preparations

However, Kushida was glaring at me from time to time, She seems to become wary of me, Not that i care Anyway.

I Could've stopped her from Deleting the Messages with Ryueen, But i have a promise to keep. I know very well that we will lose, But this can come as a lesson to both Honami and Kanzaki.

The Rest of the Day passed By, It was 5 minutes before Curfew when I Returned to My room, Kanzaki was Already there wracking his head over a piece of paper, We Greeted Each other and i went and laid on my bed.

Shibata and Hamaguchi also came after me, We kept chatting about our Day and Trivial matters like how we always do before going to sleep. It was a night like Everyda-

" Uh... OH ! " Kanzaki Shouted

" Kanzaki-kun.... " Shibata seems to Realize what happened, Aswell as Hamaguchi

Kanzaki Turned to me and Showed me it.

He Figured it out

4th Day 12:00 AM

After Kanzaki found the Pattern, We alongside Class D met on the Dragon group way earlier than discussion time.

Everyone was looking nervous, It is understandable, The outcome depends all on this meeting right here right now.

" Is the Preparations done Horikita-san ? " Honami asked Horikita who has her Phone in hand

" Everything is in place Ichinose-san. We are ready " Horikita said. Hirata and Kushida nodded confirming their part

Honami's plan revolved around a surprise Attack. We alongside Class D would send the Names of the VIPs of Classes B and C at the exact same time.

Meanwhile, We would send a signal to our Classmates to trigger Outcome #4 on their Groups so we would leave no Chance for Ryueen and Sakayanagi to bounce back. Since Kouenji guessed the name of our VIP, We will trigger Outcome #3 on the Dragon group

Impressively Done Honami

Honami received a message of Confirmation on her Phone. She glanced at me and Kanzaki which we both nodded

" Everything is in Place for us Aswell " She Announced. Looking at Class D which they all Nodded, She nodded " Then. Let's Sta- "

Bzzzt...

" Huh ? "

Bzzzt....

Bzzzt....

Bzzzt....

Bzzzt....

Bzzzt....

My Phone Vibrated 6 Times. Alongside the Rest, Everyone wore a perplexed expression. I Checked the messages and

The exam for the Rooster Group has ended....

The exam for the Pig group has ended....

The exam for the Dog group has ended....

The exam for the Sheep group has ended....

The exam for the Snake group has ended....

The exam for the Rat group has ended....

Honami's Face dropped, Kanzaki stared at his phone without much of Emotion besides a Surprise. Class D was staring shockingly at their phones

Clark Step

During the Confusing, We heard a Footstep alongside a cane bumping in the ground from the Entrance. Everyone instinctively looked towards where 2 figures emerged

" Fufufu Why the long faces ? I thought Surprises were supposed to be Fun "

" Kukuku You said it, loli "

They Were Ryueen and Sakayanagi, Both having their usual smirks on, But it was wider a little today.

" Come on, What's wrong ? I Thou- "

Bzzt...

Ryueen's phone vibrated on his pocket, Cutting through his

words.

Bzzt....

Bzzt....

Bzzt....

Bzzt....

I Typed one last Message into my phone and slid it in my pocket.

Bzzt....

Silence erupted in the Room. And we all Realized what happened.

" Fufufu Stalemate ? I guess that's not too bad " Sakayanagi said while looking at me

" Too bad that your plan fell apart, I was getting interested " Ryueen said While glancing at Honami and Kanzaki, Not me.

" How..... " Honami muttered

" Nice Try Ichinose. You ended up with a draw, But Remember, You won't be so lucky Next time " Ryueen stated. As if he was losing interest, He Made his way to the Door and Left the room

" Fufufu It was a valiant attempt Ichinose-san. I am tipping my hat to you " She said with her Smirk. Seeing that Honami didn't give much of a response she looked at me " It's sad that i wasn't able to do much this exam Ayanokouji-kun. Let's compete next time " With that She followed Right after Ryueen.

A Heavy Atmosphere erupted in the Room, It was so thick that you could slice it with a knife.

I looked towards Kushida, Who was looking down. However, Since Horikita was glaring daggers at me for some reason, She had to raise her head to see her, From this Angel i could see her Eyeballs staring right at Horikita.

After a little more silence Horikita stood up and glared at Honami who was looking down

" I Will return your points Ichinose-san " She as she walked out from the Room, Indifferent with her surroundings and tone.

" We are so sorry Ichinose-san..... " Hirata Wasn't looking good either, Offered an Apology

" N-No... It's Okay... It's my F-Fault " Honami Responded while trying to hold her tears.

" No It's not Ichinose-san, You tried your Best to carry both our Classes. We should've worked harder to help you and not leave everything to you " Hirata Comforted while regretting slacking off.

" Hirata-kun is Right Ichinose-san " Kushida Tried to comfort Honami. But i doubted her words

" I-I see... "

Hirata couldn't say anything more, Started walking towards the Entrance. Kushida followed suit, She glanced at Honami's state and nonchalantly walked past us. Before she could leave she stopped

and looked at me, I Gazed back at her which made her instantly leave.

" We are sorry Ayanokouji " It was Kanzaki who spoke. He looked dejected and Frustrated

" Don't be Kanzaki, I'll explain later what went wrong " My statement made him look directly at me. I Glanced at Honami Who was quietly sobbing and back at him

" I see " Kanzaki regained some of his Aura, Stood up and left the Room.

I Pulled Honami who was tugging her Skirt forcefully while sobbing into a one arm hug. She Reciprocated Started tugging my Shirt instead, She planted her Face on my Chest and started Crying.

She kept crying on my Shirt while i gently caressed her long silky Hair. After some minutes she hugged me tightly before going back in her seat

" I-I'm Sorry.... " She said Apologetically while looking down.

" Don't be " I went and Sat on my Knees in front of her. Her sobbing face was Right in front of me. My heart started racing at that sight " You've Handled everything Perfectly, It's not your fault "

" B-But... "

" Not buts. Even if you were more carefully, I Don't think the results would've been better " Her Eyes widened in surprised " Do you want me to tell you the Reason why ? "

She responded with a nod. I stood up in front of her while putting some space.

" Let me ask you a Question Honami " I Said

" Y-Yes ? "

" Why do you think you lost ? "

" Because i W- "

" Wrong " She looked up at me with confusion. She Opened her mouth but i spoke " Okay Let me ask you another Question "

" " She closed her Mouth and started listening

" How did Ryueen and Sakayanagi Know about our plan ? " She gazed at me in Silence before she Responded

" I-I Don't K-Know.... M-Maybe Because I Was Careless "

" If you were Careless. Ryueen and Sakayanagi wouldn't have grasped this amount of information over us. Think of how did they Acquire this many " She contemplated before her Eyes widened in Shock. *Good*

" Ryueen and Sakayanagi didn't do anything to interrupt us or ask us about our plans during this exam. Yet their timings were perfect, They knew When and Where we would be meeting to execute our plan, And they knew the exact details of it "

" Y-You mean.... There was a Traitor ? " I Nodded

" There was a traitor in Class D "

" I see.... " Honami Drove into her thought again " T-This makes sense " She then looked at me

" Why did they Betray their Class ? "

" There are many reasons why someone would do that. In this Case, It's out of *Hatred* " I Responded

" Hatred ? "

" That person didn't exactly like someone. So They decided to betray them "

" Do you perhaps know who the Traitor is ? " She asked with some uncertainty on her voice

" Kushida.... " Her eyes widened

" Are you serious ? "

" I am, Kushida despises Horikita deeply for some reason, That hatred went as far as to betray her to see her fall "

" Kushida-san would do that ?..... "

If you go to someone and tell them that Kushida is a traitor. Trust me you wouldn't receive pleasant words, She is the Least expected person to turn Traitor in the eyes of everyone, People may not even consider her in the list of potential Traitors.

" She Already did. Why do you think the Reason she didn't instantly give us her phone ? Instead she started fiddling it before accepting ? "

" So she could delete the evidence..... "

" Indeed " There was silence

" I found it a little weird when she did that... But i decided to brush it off, I Didn't know "

" As i said before, It's not your fault that we lost. You've handled everything perfectly, But your allies failed you " She looked slightly down " Nevertheless, I am very Impressed Honami. Not only you didn't disappoint me, But you exceeded my Expectations "

Honami perked up, Her Gloomy Aura dissipated into the thin air and looked back up with wide eyes. I Gave her the warmest smile i could make, She Blushed at the receiving end of it.

" I'm glad i didn't disappoint you... " She said as she wiped the Tears off from her Eyes and stood up

Honami has won this exam, That is on my book, She has a lot more potential than i originally thought. It would be interesting seeing her on the move on the next Special exams.

10:50 PM

We were sitting on an open restaurant on a deck. There was quite a lot of students there, They were all chatting among their friends waiting for the Results to be Announced

After Explaining things to Kanzaki, We decided to not share the Info we have about Kushida. Instead, We decided to not let our guard down when it comes to Class D.

Kanzaki was quite frustrated when he received the Explanation, Understandably so, He was the one who worked the Hardest to find the Pattern. To have his work get ruined because of a traitor isn't something desirable

" I see... So that's how it is " Honami gasped

" It is. To think the Pattern was this Simple " Kanzaki Grumbled " The school really did mislead us with the Initial Clues, It took me a while to actually try this. Well played "

" I know right~ But Kiyotaka figured it out long ago " She blushed

" Yeah, I'm surprised you didn't get baited by those Ayanokouji " Kanzaki marked

" I got baited at first, But when i realized it was pointless, I took a different approach "

" But still. You figured it out like Super Fast~ " Honami Complimented

" It was a coincidence, I just remembered that this exam was named the Zodiac exam. So i decided to sort them out by Group " I Shrugged

" **We believe you** " Honami and Kanzaki said in Unison. I Sighed internally

" Hoh ? Fancy Seeing you Here Ayanokouji-boy " Kouenji who was passing by met my gaze. I Sighed internally again

" Hey there Kouenji. You seem to be enjoying yourself " I Said. His face was wet while he was holding a bottle of water, I Can imagine what he was doing

" Enjoying my self i am. This ship is truly magnificent Don't you think ? " He smirked at me

" Indeed " However, A Figure Approached Behind Kouenji. The latter didn't even falter

" Kukuku What an Interesting little group " Ryueen, Behind him was Ibuki and Albert " Mind if i join ya ? "

" Not at all " I Accepted

" Since Ayanokouji-boy Accepted, Then i don't mind Blessing you with my perfectness Dragon-boy, Only this time " Kouenji Smirked.

Ryueen got Irritated at the nickname, But his smirk came back as Went and grabbed a seat and sat beside me, He Ordered a drink and officially made himself at home.

" Anyway. What did you want Kouenji ? " I Asked Kouenji who was standing there doing nothing, Almost as if waiting for me to say something.

" You see Ayanokouji-boy. I want to know if you are Coming tomorrow at our Competition " Ryueen Choke on his Drink and started Laughing

" Yeah i was kinda forced to attend. Don't tell me you're coming too ? " Kouenji Responded with a laugh

" Fufu Who knows ? " Kouenji Responded Vaguely

" Kuku Since Monster is Coming, I guess i'll come too. This is another Chance to defeat you even in *that* "

" Don't get so excited Dragon-boy. Who knows how much he's Packing ? Maybe Ichinose-girl does "

" Huh ? What do you mean ? " Honami tilted her Head in confusion. Kanzaki was trying so hard to contain his laughter

" Kuku Don't concern yourself Ichinose. It's nothing " Ryueen said while smirking

When it Reached 11 o'clock. All the Phones on the Restaurant Vibrated, We went and Checked Our phones :

The First-year's second special examination has concluded. All the Group's results and the Change of Class Points are displayed here, Remember that we will only show the outcome of each group without disclosing more Info :

Rooster Group : Outcome #4

Rat Group : Outcome #4

Sheep Group : Outcome #4

Rabbit Group : Outcome #4

Dragon Group : Outcome #3

Snake Group : Outcome #4

Monkey Group : Outcome #3

Dog Group : Outcome #4

Pig Group : Outcome #4

Cow Group : Outcome #4

Tiger Group : Outcome #4

Horse Group : Outcome #4

These are the Changes in Class points on Each Class :

Class A : 1406 C.P (+ 0)

Class B : 1122 C.P (+ 0)

Class C : 648 C.P (+ 0)

Class D : 88 C.P (+ 0)

(I Forgot to apply the Results of Sudo's Trial in the Last time i posted the Rankings, Alongside Yamauchi hitting Shinohara [-50 C.P for Class D and +50 CP for Class C / Sudo's suspension for a month - 10 CP / Yamauchi Hitting Shinohara -5 CP] The deductions are made up by me)

As expected nothing changed, Except for Pocket money for the VIPs and Kouenji and I

" By the way Kouenji " There was something i was curious about

" Hmm ? How may i help you Ayanokouji-boy ? " He responded with some interest

" If it's not too personal, I saw you the other day hanging with Kiryuin-senpai on a cafe. Were you on a date ? "

" Ha ! Damn right Ayanokouji-boy. After She lost to me, She got attracted to my Perfectness and asked me to go on a date with her. Beautiful isn't it ? " Kouenji Spoke Proudly

" I Guess that makes sense. I never thought i'd see the both of you together so i was kinda shocked "

" Remember Ayanokouji-boy. I am the Perfect-Existence, Women flood over me, Don't forget that " He said as he started walking away

" What a weirdo " Ryueen Muttered. *I couldn't help but agree*

Kouenji Kinda OOC, Sor... On second Thought, Everyone is OOC on this Fic. Well yeah as i said before everyone in this fic is Buffed. So expect something fun on the Future :)))

Next is the Long awaited Chapter that everyone has been drooling about. Well I'm pretty sure you know what it is, So I won't say it

Arc 4 Special Chapter : King's Election

" Come on Ayanokouji-kun ! We are late ! "

" Yeah yeah " I Stood up from my bed and followed Shibata's orders

It was 9 PM... Which means..... The Competition of who is the *manliest* would start

Shibata was too excited for this one, Kanzaki and Hamaguchi were just following the Flow so i just did the same.

Someone Rented the biggest private pool on the Cruise for an Hour to hold this competition. If someone went as far as that then this competition is a big deal

" Who do you think would win guys ? " Shibata enthusiastically asked

" How would we know ? " Kanzaki Responded quite Strongly

" You're no fun Kanzaki-kun. We will never know who would win, But isn't it fun that way ? You can try and guess randomly "

" I don't want to do that " Shibata Pouted at Kanzaki's refusal

" What about you Ayanokouji-kun, Hamaguchi-kun ? " He asked the both of us

" Sorry, I would feel kind of uncomfortable taking a bet like that " Hamaguchi Said apologetically. Shibata turned towards me

" Maybe you would win Shibata " Shibata's eyes went wide at my statement

" Nah i don't think i'll win. I'm not insecure or anything It's just that I'm not the Biggest " Shibata Said Honestly while Scratching his cheeks " But i appreciate your Trust on me Ayanokouji-kun. If you end up winning, I'll serve my king for the rest of my life " He gave a salute which was quite Amusing

We Reached the entrance to the Pool, We slid the door open to be greeted with more than 70 Boys inside all wrapped up in a bath towel. *They didn't lie when they said that The whole Boys are coming*

" WELCOME " Albert who was standing beside the door greeted us loudly.

" Oh Shibata ! " Hashimoto who was chatting with someone walked up to us and greeted Shibata

" Hello Hashimoto-kun ! " Hashimoto Smirked, He then Gazed at me

" Good, You Brought Ayanokouji " Shibata Nodded while beaming

What ? " You arrived Just in time, Go change we will be starting soon "

Following Hashimoto's words, We went towards the Changing room and switched to bath towels.

" What did he mean by that Shibata ? " I Questioned Shibata about what Hashimoto said Earlier. Shibata started laughing nervously while Scratching his cheek

" Well you see.... Hashimoto-kun asked me to convince you to come today "

" Why ? "

" Well.... Fine, Because You're Dating Ichinose-san, We were curious about what you've been packing "

" I see... "

We Quickly Changed and Walked back towards the pool. All the Boys were assembled below a small platform where Hashimoto was standing, When he noticed us he Cleared his Throat and started his speech

" Everyone... Thank you for coming to my Humble Competition. Today, We will see who is the manliest student on the First-years. As you've known, The winner Here would be branded as our King and gonna win 10.000 Private points for WHAT'S WORTH ! " Hashimoto shouted the last part making all the Boys Cheer alongside him. *This is gonna be troublesome*

" Kito are there any absences ? " a Muscular Guy who had long black hair went through the papers

" There is only 1 Absence Hashimoto "

" Who is it ? "

" It's Kouenji Rokusuke from Class D "

" I see "

I Kinda expected Kouenji to come, From our Speech Yesterday, He seemed to Be Intere-

Bang

The Door barged open, Everyone turned around to see the Man in question standing there, His Smirk never wavering from his face

" What ? Are you all Attracted by my Perfectness Already ? Ha ! " He flipped his bangs and started walking inside The room

" Oh It's this guy.... " Hashimoto Muttered

" Aren't you Happy with my Appearance Snek-boy ? "

" No Not at all. Everyone is welcome ! "

Kouenji went to the Changing room, After some time he Came out and flipped his Bangs again. Hashimoto Cleared His Throat and spoke again

" Good, There is no Absences ! " Everyone cheered with excitement " Well then. I Officially Declare THE ELECTION OF THE

KING START "

Everyone Cheered Louder, It grew to reverberate through the Room. Sudo and Some others Threw their bath towels on the air standing Completely Naked. He then Started Running around Chasing boys for competition

Some people like Hirata just Stayed at the Side while watching the Boys start Competing. Katsuragi However, Was Relaxing inside the Bath while washing his Bald head with a shampoo. Alongside him was Ryueen, However, When he noticed me he instantly smirked and came to me

" Kukuku So you Came " Ryueen Spoke, He was Covered in a bath towel

" Apparently i came " I Shrugged

" Hey Hey Ike ! Let's Compete " Sudo who was running towards Ike who was still Covered in a Bath Towel

" Hmmmm YES ! I WON AGAIN. I am Currently the King with 7 Times in arrow " Sudo Stood and and flexed his biceps. Ryueen Gazed at him and smirked

" Hey King, Come Here " Ordered Ryueen. Sudo still flexing his biceps, Looked at Ryueen with a smirk

" You want to Compete with me ? Are you sure ? " Sudo Said Proudly. He then Started walking towards Ryueen " I'd take my sweet revenge on you Today, I'll degrade you from your Dignity and you'll never get bitches again you Bastard ! "

" Kuku Let's see about that " Ryueen's Confidence didn't even waver at Sudo's Threat. In fact, He became more Confident

" Oh.. Ryueen-san Is competing, Albert, Komiya, Kondou, Come here " We could Hear Ishizaki's voice from the Background. Moments Later all of Ryueen's Gang arrived

Sudo was Confidently Staring at Ryueen's Crotch. Ryueen Slowly but Surely started to remove his Bath towel, Everyone around stared at the Big reveal 'Would Ryueen win against Sudo ?' 'How big is Ryueen ? We were about to find out'

Ryueen Destroying the whole suspense, Dropped his Towel Midway. Sudo's Face dropped, Staring at Ryueen's Thing, Some gasps were around there and there

" I-I lost.... " Sudo The Current King Fell to his Knees at the Hands of the New King Ryueen Kakeru

" Kukuku You shouldn't be confident when you don't know what's in for you Sudo, Just an Advice " Ryueen exclaimed, Sudo held his head on his Hands and fell

" Woaah Ryueen-san Is so Big ! Albert go inside and Compete with him ! " We all forgot about the Bigger Fish. *Yamada Albert*. Everyone stared at him in anticipation, If there was a bet i think

most of us would vote for him

Albert Strolled inside the Circle against His Tyrant Leader Ryueen, The person in question was reviewing his life as he stared at Albert with a serious Expression

" SORRY BOSS " Albert Removed His Bath towel, And it is as everyone expected it would.

" THE KING HAS FELL " Shouted Hashimoto, Who seems that he gave up on Competing.

Everyone was too scared to try and Compete with Albert. However, One person Nonchalantly went to Albert and stood in front of him. Everyone Gaspd at the Scene in front of them

" Are you all Surprised about mine ? I still haven't revealed it Yet " The Boy stood in front of Albert who was somewhat nervous at the Sight in front of him

The boy in Question was still covered in a bath towel. However, His Thing was too big that it pushed against the Bath towel Revealing it's Length

" I am the One and Only Yamauchi Haruki, The Sole king of the boys. How dare you go against my Supreme Authority " Yamauchi spoke Dramatically while gesturing with his hand over his crotch " This bad boy Over here would beat the Shit out of you, All. So you better Think twice about Competing With Me "

Everyone stood silent at Yamauchi's Words, Even Albert Backed away. Yamauchi Gaining More Confidence

" Yeah Damn Right. Don't you Eve- "

" Shut up. You're annoying " The Voice came from Kanzaki who was observing so far

" The Hell did you say ? How Dare you defy me ! " Yamauchi Threatened. Kanzaki However, Walked in the Circle and Stood in front of Yamauchi. He then threw his Bath towel and everyone Gaspd

" Kanzaki-kun.... " Shibata was Staring at Kanzaki with admiration, Most boys were. Yamauchi Started Trembling in fear. Kanzaki was even Bigger Than Albert, I am Impressed.

" Show me What you've got " Kanzaki Provoked Yamauchi, It was Obvious who is the Winner. However, It is weird That Yamauchi hasn't Removed his Towel

" Don't You dare Speak to me Like that Inci- "

" Sprub " Ike Snatched Away Yamauchi's bath towel while Running at Lights Speed and saying some weird Stuff. However, Everyone Gaspd

Yamauchi's Thing was..... *Fake*

" Yamauchi..... " It was Hashimoto who said in a cold voice that made Yamauchi Shiver to the spine.

" N-No ! It's not like what you saw ! " Yamauchi pleaded while he Tried to run Away. However, The Previous King, Albert Blocked his path. That made Yamauchi fall in the Ground and the Fake Thing Came off and to our Surprise.... It wasn't as even half as big as Sudo's

" Yamauchi " It was Shibata who said in a cold voice that made Yamauchi Shiver to the spine again. Him and Hashimoto both lead the verbal attack against Yamauchi with the support of every boy inside.

It was Rather funny that Yamauchi thought that he'd get away with something like that. He is now laying on the ground Crying from all the Verbal Abuse. If i was in his place.... I Can't imagine myself being in his place, The level of stupidity Required is immeasurable.

When We were Done with Yamauchi who at this point Went and hid in the Changing Room. Every boy stared at Kanzaki with Admiration, He was the current King Which no one dared to Challenge him. Except for one guy

" Ha ! Impressive Kanzaki-boy " Kouenji Nonchalantly strolled inside the Circle and Stood in front of Kanzaki with a Smirk " But not enough "

" Huh ? " " What do you mean ? "

" It is as i said, He isn't big enough to defeat me Ha ! " Kouenji Laughed and Flipped His bangs

" Oh Yeah ? You think you can defeat him ? Show us what you've got " One boy yelled

Kouenji Smirked and unbuttoned his Towel. The Moment it fell on the Ground, The Room silenced.

'*Oh my god*' I Heard Albert next to me Mutter those words under his breath, While he gulped.

If Albert was a rifle, Then Kanzaki was a Bazooka. That makes Kouenji the Tank.

Kouenji Nonchalantly Flipped His Hair " Good Fight Kanzaki-boy. But you went against the Perfect Existence Himself, It's unlucky for you "

Kanzaki who was somewhat Traumatized walked back to our group, I mean who wouldn't ?

Everyone stayed silent at Kouenji who was smirking. Clearly, They all Wanted to give up already, Even those who were confident on their sizes while wrapped in a bath Towel.

Kouenji Scanned His Surrounding until his Eyes Laid on me. *Oh no*

" Come Here Ayanokouji-boy " Kouenji Gestured for me to come

" Why ? " I Said. When i responded, Everyone turned towards me

" Why well it is Simple. I think you're *Holding back* " Kouenji Smirked

" Holding back ? "

" Yes Ayanokouji-boy. You're holding back your powers right now, Remove that Stupid Towel and come fight me " Kouenji Ordered, Gesturing with his Hand to come

" Wh- " However, I Felt Danger. I Instinctively Dodged to the Side

" What ? " Shibata who grabbed the air yelled with Shock " How did you even Dodge that ? "

" Errr Men's Intuit- Who knows " I Responded

" Come on Ayanokouji-kun. Remove it " Shibata Said. Instantly, Some Boys Jumped on support

" Yes Yes Yes Yes "

" Show us what you're saving for Ichinose-san "

" TAKE IT OFF !!!! " Yelled one boy. Instantly all the Boys jumped into the Train

" TAKE IT OFF "

" TAKE IT OFF "

" TAKE IT OFF "

"TAKE IT OFF "

" TAKE IT OFF "

Even Ryueen was Cheering with amusement on his face.

" Fine Fine I'll Take it off "

Shibata and Hashimoto both Fist Bumped Celebrating their Victory, And now every boy is staring at me. I Sighed. *Right Here Goes nothing*

At the Boys's Cheers, I Removed my Towel. The moment it landed on the Ground the Pool erupted into a deafening silence.

Everyone was having serious expressions. Even Ryueen who was amused a moment ago was now no better than the Other boys, All of the Stared Intensely at it.

" God does have favorites after all.... " One Boy muttered. At his Words Everyone went Crazy

" HOW IS THAT LEGAL "

" WHAT THE FUCK "

" HOW CAN YOU BE THIS BIG "

" IT LOOKS LIKE A T-REX "

" JESUS MAMAMIYA "

" ITS EVEN BIGGER THAN KOUENJI "

Kouenji was the sole person on this room who had a smirk on his face. He walked towards me and Patted me on the Shoulder

" You've Defeated me This Time Ayanokouji-boy. However, I am Superior in experience ! " Kouenji Nonchalantly Flipped His Bangs. As he walked towards the Changing room

The Stunned Hashimoto Cleared his Throat and Stood at the Platform

" Everyone, We have a clear winner " He aimed his Hand at me " From this day onward, AYANOKOUJI KIYOTAKA IS OUR KING. and All of you Should be loyal servants to your KING. Is that Clear ? "

Everyone Cheered, They looked at me, Their eyes full of admiration. I Sighed internally as i went and grabbed my towel.

Hashimoto Transferred to me double the amount, Out of respect to his new King

It seems like i have the whole grade as my servants. *What a troublesome day*

Hehe You didn't expect it so soon did you ? Well i was excited to write this Chapter so i just wrote it in Two hours or around that.

This Chap was Heavily OOC. Kinda, But it was fun Right ? Now Kiyo has the Whole Grade as his Toolbr- I mean Hare- I mean friends....

Arc 4 Bonus Chapter : A Misunderstanding

Ha didn't expect 3 Chapters on a day now did you ? Well i'm feeling generous so yeah enjoy

AMIKURA POV

After Honami-chan finished with her explanation after Gathering us on the First day of the Special exam. I Went and walked up To Kozue-chan, She seems to be nervous about being the VIP

" Hello Kozue-chan " I Greeted

" Oh hey Mako-chan " Kozue-chan is a cheerful person, This short reply indicates that there is something bothering her

" Don't worry about it right now Kozue-chan. It's just the start, I'm pretty sure Honami-chan has something for us " I Said Trying to Cheer her up. It worked for the most part

" Yeah, Honami-chan sure works hard doesn't she ? " Yume-chan who was beside her Spoke.

" Yeah, I Hope she doesn't overwork herself " I Said as i scanned the Surrounding to Find Honami-chan.

I saw her With Ayanokouji-kun who was patting her head, She Blushed and jumped at his arm hugging it tightly while pressing her Giant Breasts against his arm.

" HeeHee~ " I Giggled. If i could only Record this, This would be great tease-mailing material.

I saw that Ayanokouji-kun was at a loss, Even for a half a sec, He rarely Changes his expressions so when he does you would notice

" Honami-chan Suuuuure Does work hard as you Said Yume-chan~ " I Said Lewdly. Yume-chan along with Kozue-chan and Chihiro-chan started Giggling. I am glad that i can ease them even for a little

Honami-chan and Ayanokouji-kun started to walk away while she was hugging his arm. *I Wish i had a boyfriend too*

" Oh Hey Amikura-san " Shibata-kun called out Snapping me out of my thoughts " Kobashi-san, Minamikata-san and Shiranami-san too. Good evening "

" Good evening Shibata-kun ! So What's up ? " I Asked Shibata-kun

" Oh You see... I Wanted to check out a restaurant " Shibata-kun

started Scratching his Cheeks. I Can tell where this is going " Hamaguchi-kun is focused on his Homework while Kanzaki-kun is busy with finding the pattern. And Ayanokouji-kun is with Ichinose-san. So i am alone, I thought I'd ask you if you want to accompany me "

" Sure~ I Don't see why not. Do you want to come you three ? " I Turned around to the Three of them, They all nodded " Great ! Let's get going "

All 5 of us went and Checked a Restaurant which was located on the 5th Deck. I Couldn't complain in the Slightest about the quality of this ship and it's restaurants, Especially since they are free

After we were Done eating, We left the Restaurant towards our next Destinations. However

" Ah ! " Shibata-kun who was panicking while Checking his Pockets and Blazer

" What's wrong Shibata-kun~? " I Asked him

" Ummm.... I Forgot my Phone on my Room " Shibata-kun said while looking down

" It's fine Shibata-kun~ Let's go and get it ! " I Said Enthusiastically, The Girls Responded positively aswell " Let's Go~ "

Shibata-kun thanked us as we made our way towards the Boys's Deck. We passed along alot of people, Familiar and Unfamiliar ones.

" Here, This is my Room " Shibata-kun stopped and aimed towards a door

" Right, We will be Waiting her Shibata-kun ! " Yume-chan Said

Shibata-kun went and Grabbed the Door's Handle. However, He froze in his place.... He was staring at the Door intensely

" What's wrong Shibata-kun ? " I Asked as i made my Way closer to the Door. Shibata-kun Gave me a horrified Expression. However, I Only understood what he meant when i came closure to the door

" Mmmmmmmmmh~ "

At the other side of the Door, Was.....

" Ngghhhh~ "

Honami-chan.....

" Kiyoooo~ Mhhhhnnnn~ "

Moaning.....

" This~ Is~ So~ Gooood~ mnnnnnnnh~ "

My heart started racing while i felt by cheeks getting hotter. No way, *Are they doing it ?*

Shibata-kun meekly let go of the Door's handle and slowly backed away. I felt by body getting weaker as i tried to move away too.

" What's Wrong Mako-cha- "

" NGGGHHHHH- " A Loud moan came from the Door. This made the Three Girls tense up, They all stiffened up at each moan came

from the Door.

" Kiyo~taka~ You're so good at this~ "

We all Stared at the Door doing nothing..... As more and More moans came out

People passing by were wondering why are we all stiff. But no one dared to ask us.

Moans..... Moans.... Moans.....

That's all what we heard on the Other side of the door.

Someone on my Peripheral vision came in and stared at us with a confused Expression

" What are you all doing here ? " The person who came Was Kanzaki-kun.

We all just glanced at him weakly, He responded with a Confused Expression

" Shibata this is our room, You can invite guests we don't mind " Kanzaki-kun said as he went and grabbed the Door's Handle

" No ! " We all Yelled. Instantly, Kanzaki-kun Froze

" What ? " He turned and looked at us

" Ummm... It's just Tha- " The door behind Kanzaki-kun swung Opened. There stood Ayanokouji-kun gazing at all of us, He was still in his uniform and it looked tidy. *Haha He can put on clothes so fast*

" What are you doing here ? " Ayanokouji-kun asked all of us with that Usual poker face of his

" What's Wrong Kiyotaka~? " Honami-chan voice came from inside The room. Not long after she Stood behind Ayanokouji-kun " Oh Mako-chan ! And the Rest too, What are you doing here ? "

Honami-chan's clothes were also tidy, And She looked Happier than Usual. *Haha She wears clothes fast too but she isn't blushing.... Haha what a nice Poker face*

" Ummm... Honami-chan " Yume-chan spoke nervously

" Yes Yume-chan ? What's wrong ? " Honami-chan asked, She has no idea

" W-What were you doing inside ?..... " *Yume-chan.... I Admire your Bravery. You can rest in peace now*

" Oh... Kiyotaka was giving me a massage~ " *Massage ?*

" Massage ? " Kozue-chan muttered

" Yes Kozue-chan. Kiyotaka told me that he is good at giving massages and offered me one " Ayanokouji-kun nodded alongside what she said

" A Massage..... Hahaha " Yume-chan started laughing nervously " Of course it's a massage, What did we think anyway ? "

" I don't know..... " Shibata-kun said

" What did you think was happening ? " Asked Ayanokouji-kun. I

Couldn't read his Poker face but he seems to have no idea

" Hahaha Nothing ! Anyway Ayanokouji-kun. My phone is inside.... Can you get it for me ? " Shibata-kun switched topics *Good Job*

Ayanokouji-kun went inside and handed Shibata-kun's phone. Instantly, We left

Kanzaki-kun was very confused at our Strange Behavior... The Rest of the Time we spent was in an awkward atmosphere

All thanks to Ayanokouji-kun and Honami-chan....

Kushida Kikyou SS : Pleasant Feelings

I am the worst. Simply the worst
Since that day, I've been cursing on myself
But..... Who said that i hated myself ?
No, I didn't hate myself, Even knowing that i'm the worst.
Instead, I loved it

I love myself... Because it makes me feel pleasant
It is worth it, Being the worst but get praised for it.
It doesn't make sense but i like it
I like getting praised, I like getting everyone's secrets. Makes me
feel special.... I

I Love It
It is all worth the anxiety and pain i suffer to get the secrets
They are like drugs to help me feel better
When someone tells me their secrets... I simply feel overjoyed
It makes me feel that i'm holding someone by the neck....
Threatening their lives.

It makes me feel in control
It makes me feel Trusted
It is very pleasant..... I love it ! I love it I love it ! I LOVE IT !!!!
However..... I don't love it when someone holds my secrets
I hate it
Someone holding me by the neck
Threatening my life
Someone in control of me
I hate it..... I hate it I hate it I HATE IT !
Why ? Why did it have to end up like this ?
I just wanted to enjoy high school, And be the best.....
Why did someone from that School have to be there ?
WHY ?

Horikita Suzune..... I do not forgive anyone who holds that
damned information over me

I HATE YOU I HATE YOU I HATE YOU
I will make your life a hell, You will suffer for knowing my secret
I stared at the bitch while pretending to be sad. Her usually cold
expression was broken and now she was shocked

'Take that you stupid bitch. This is just the beginning'

The beginning of your despair

That's what you get for knowing my secret

After the Bitch left, I stared at the second bitch. She was looking down pathetically after her plan that she worked so hard on crumbled.... Because of me

'Damn right Ichinose. You lost because of me, I hold all the power. I hate genuinely good bitches like you. You should just fucking die, You irritate me'

I shouldn't insult the bitch too much. I might slip my mask if i do so

As i was about to leave i remembered to check on her Gloomy Freak

'She has such a shitty taste in men'

I stared at the Gloomy freak who didn't react at all.

I unconsciously remembered Ryueen's words

'Be careful around Ayanokouji'

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka... He is a gloomy freak who got himself Ichinose as his girlfriend, That's all that i know about him

I despise him.... Because i can't get his secrets.

He is very unfathomable.... Even for me

But.... That doesn't mean that i won't use him too...

He has some control over Class A because of Ichinose.

He doesn't like Horikita in the slightest, And finds her annoying.

I gotta give it to him, He entertained me when he insulted her and Humiliated her during the alliance discussion

So I'll cut him some slack, He wouldn't be a bad pawn at all

I will use Ryueen, Sakayanagi and Ayanokouji like my pawns to get my revenge on Horikita..... And i will succeed

Arc 4.5 Chap 1 : Fortune Teller

Guys i know this may sound stupid. But i didn't understand the meme above, Call me stupid i don't care, I seriously don't get it. Can someone explain ?

After the insanity of the past two weeks. Every student ended up being exhausted.

They didn't receive the dreamy vacation they were hoping for, Instead they were greeted by Hell itself

From The Island Exam to The Zodiac Exam. It ended up taking a toll on them

We were awarded freedom on The tests for What's worth, So the school didn't actually lie about having a vacation.

Many students have lost their trust in the School..... I believe they should've Done that since the start of May, And now they are suffering the consequences

During this period, Class A has came on top on both exams, You could argue about the latter. However, A Stalemate across the board benefits us since we are at the Top, But that is Very short-sighted....

There is still Two and a Half years left, There is no guarantee that things would stay the same. But that doesn't mean that everything is bad

Vrrrrrrrr

I was laying on my bed deep in thought when i heard the sound of my phone vibrating. I clutched it using my Right arm and Checked it

Honami is calling me. It was around 9 PM so i had no idea what she wanted

" Hello ? "

[Hey there Kiyotaka~ How are you~?]

" Hey Honami. I'm good, What about you ? "

[I am doing great Thank you so much for asking~] She spoke enthusiastically [So umm....]

" Did you need something ? " There was silence before she spoke again

[Are you free tomorrow ?] She asked unsure

" Yes i am " At my response, I could feel her perking up

[Great ! How about we hang out~]

" Gladly. Do you have a place in mind ? " She responded like she

was waiting for this question

[There is this Fortune teller that everyone is talking about, They say that it is very accurate and Stuff~ So i wanted to check it out with you~] *Fortune teller huh ?*

" Alright " I accepted

[Great~! Meet me at the Dorm's Lobby at 9:30 AM Tomorrow~ There would be alot of students checking it out so we will go early~]

" I see. That's no problem. I'll see you Tomorrow "

[It's a deal then~ Good night Kiyotaka~]

" Good Night Honami "

[HeeHee~] She giggled weirdly before we hung up.

I put my phone aside and stared at the ceiling again

An Accurate Fortune Teller huh ? *This is interesting*

" Good Morning Kiyotaka~ " Honami Emerged from the elevator with her precious warm smile

" Good Morning Honami "

She wore Casual clothes, Consists off a White sweater and a black skirt that covered her Front all the way towards her Chest. She walked closer to me and a Citrus perfume tickled my nose.

" You look Beautiful " I Complimented. *When you go on a date, You should compliment your partner's clothing when they arrive, Right ? That's what the internet Taught me*

Honami Froze on her place for a moment, Her Cheeks started getting hotter before she Smiled again at me

" Thank you~ You look pretty Handsome too~ " She Complimented Back

" Thank you " She walked closer to me and jumped right at my arm hugging it. She flashed me with a Mischievous Grin

" Shall we go~ " I nodded.

We definitely attracted a lot of attention on our way to Keyaki Mall. But Honami wasn't bothered by it, She kept hugging me all the way

When we arrived here, Honami was quite Shocked

" T-There is way too many people than i thought.... "

For a Mall to be this crowded at 9:30 is quite the Surprise. Just at the entrance there was around 20 people leaving and entering

" Let's go "

We walked inside, And to our surprise it was crowded. The elevators where packed so we had to wait around 5 Minutes to use it

We entered the third floor and found it almost empty, It was as if we entered another dimension, We walked towards The Fortune Teller store.

Honami Froze in her place as she Stared at the Massive line, I Found it weird that there wasn't a lot of people when we entered. But it made sense now

We meekly went and joined the line. There was a sign saying that it's for Couples only, Not long after A Waiter came and asked about it and we confirmed it.

" This is gonna take a while.... " I muttered

" Y-Yeah..... Sorry " Honami muttered under her breath and Looked down.

" Don't be " I Patted her head, She went Bright and looked up " On the contrary, We can spend more time talking with each other, Right ? "

" Yeah.... You're Right~ " Honami smiled warmly " I didn't expect it to be this crowded~ But I'll make it up to you~ "

" You don't have to do anything. It's Fi- "

" I refuse ! I Will make it up to you~ " When i saw her determination, Alongside her cute blush. I sighed in resignation

" Fine. But don't overwork yourself about it "

" Heehee~ "

It seems that each pair takes around 10 minutes, If we were to wait it'll take approximately two hours. But there are some people who already gave up and left, *Let's hope for more of those people*

" Hey... Isn't that Shibata-kun ? "

On the pair after next to us, Shibata alongside Amikura were standing

" It seems so "

" Could they be on a date~? " Honami asked

" Probably. Shibata likes Amikura after all " Honami started grinning like Crazy. She then looked at me

" They look so goood~ Together. Don't you think ? "

They were fighting to make the Other Flustered, Amikura kept teasing and teasing, While Shibata fought back and Teased back. On an Outsider Perspective, They look like a prankster Couple who has a lot of energy to spend on each other.

Shibata told us at the cruise ship that he thinks that he likes

Amikura. But during the last days he confirmed that it was the case. I don't know if Amikura sees him that way, But they are Close friends

Shibata started checking his surroundings after he was crushed. He trailed off until he met my gaze

" Ayanokouji-kun ? " Shibata Gazed at me with wide eyes. Moments later he started Grinning at me and Honami. He put both of his hands around his mouth and Shouted " **THE KING IS HERE** "

Everyone Looked towards Shibata, Following his line of sight they laid on me and Honami. Every boy in the line widened their eyes

" Oh It's Our King ! " Hashimoto who peeked From the Gaps between everyone Spotted me and Shouted

" *King* ? " Honami muttered. All the Girls Wore a Perplexed Expression at the Sudden Change in the behavior of the Boys and the Nickname they gave to me

" **MAKE SOME SPACE FOR THE KING AND HIS QUEEN** " Hashimoto issued such a command as he stepped aside, Shibata followed Right after. Amikura Just gazed at Him then me Confused

Soon, All the Boys on the Line followed up. The girls fought back, But it was Pointless against them

" You shall pass first, My King. " Shibata gave me a salute, Amikura was beside him confusingly staring at me, Well Every girl is.

" Are you sure about this ? It would lead to Prob- "

" Don't worry about a thing King. We'll handle everything, You should Head with your Queen First " Hashimoto smirked. *They are taking this way seriously.*

Seeing that There is no way out of this, I took a deep sigh and Started Moving forward. Honami who was silently hugging my arm followed me. Every boy gave me a smirk and some with a thumbs up too

" What do you mean by King ? " A Familiar Voice asked loudly and irritatingly, I looked around to Find Ibuki facing Ishizaki irritated

" Ayanokouji-san is our King Ibuki-san, He was elected when we were on the Ship " Ishizaki explained. Ibuki took a look at me, Disgusted she looked back

" I Don't know what the hell do you mean by King. But Couldn't you've at least elected a better Person ? Why is it this Basta- "

" **DON'T YOU DARE INSULT THE KING** " Ibuki Flinched at Hashimoto and Shibata's unison words

" Are you Stupid or what ? Why is it this guy ? " Ibuki pointed at me

" Why well it's Simple. He is the *manliest* one here " Hashimoto smirked, Shibata nodded alongside him

" Manliest ? " The girls were confused even more. However, Amikura was deep in thought

" Alright Next " Before anyone Could say anything, A Voice came from the inside. Instantly, a Couple came out with quite the Expressions, As if they just broke up. Honami gulped at that Scene and tugged my Arm more tightly

" You go ahead King " Hashimoto gave me the Final push

" Alright.... Shall we enter Honami ? " Honami Nodded anxiously. The boys Started Cheering as we Entered the Shop

The Room was pitch black. Not long after, A Crystal ball illuminated Revealing an old lady with a sharp gleam in her eyes behind it, She wore a hoodie that Made her look like a witch.

" Take a seat " She Gestured us to take the seats in front of us. We Obligated and sat in front of her, Some Light shades of Light illuminated on the Corners as we sat " Take this " She handed us a board that was on her right

Honami took the Board and started Reading it. It was the Prices of the Multiple Plans of the Fortune Teller. It ranged from Basic, Academics, Sports, Love life etc....

" What do you think we should take~ " Honami asked me

" The basic plan seems good for our first time " I Suggested

" Yeah~ We'll take Basic~ " Honami said as she Handed the board back. The lady brought a ID Scanner, We both scanned our ID's and it deducted 5.000 P.P

" We'll start with the young lady first. What's your name ? "

" Ichinose Honami "

The Crystal ball Illuminated more as she Said the next words " When i head fortunes, I See The Face, The hands and the Heart of the Person. I may say something that you won't like, Are you Ready for that ? "

" Mhm~ " Honami Nodded. The witch instructed Honami to extend both of her arms. She Obligated and the Witch Started Reading her Palm

" Young lady. You have a long lifeline, One that you can look out for. I Sense no Major illness so far " It was a prelude for what's gonna happen next. She was Done Scanning her Palm and moved to her Forearm " Your Academic Abilities aren't something to scoff at, Same with your Physical Abilities, But there is still a lot of Room for you to improve at both of them. You are a very smart and skilled person that has a lot of potential. So work to achieve that and you'll excel "

It was quite Bold of her to dive in to these Stuff, But She

Surprisingly wasn't Wrong. It is Getting Interested by the Second. However, The Witch Frowned

" It seems that you had a rough Childhood, You lost one of your beloved ones and suffered cause of it. Is it your Father ? " Honami nodded sadly. The Witch Received her nod with silence and kept Checking her Arm. She widened her Eyes when she touched one point " Young Lady. You've fallen deeply in love with this Young man right here, You are dedicated to live for him and make him as happy as you can. You cherish him and the time you spend together, And you want to spend the Rest of your life with him. Incredible " *What incredible ? Power of love ?*

The Witch Released Honami's Hands. Instantly, She Buried her Tomato face in them. I Unconsciously smiled at the Scene in front of me.

The Witch was amused by her Reaction, But She kept her professionalism and Turned towards me " Now for the Young boy. What's your name ? "

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka " I Said as i laid my hands in front of her. She Grabbed my Palms and Started Reading it, Honami Calmed down and Started Listening to my Fortune

" Young man. You have a long lifeline, One that you can look out for With no Major illness " She was Done with my palm and moved to check my Forearm. Not long after Her Eyes widened in shock " You excel at everything, Be it Academics, Physical Abilities, Intellect.... You are unrivaled, It is very Impressive. You seem to underestimate your Abilities Quite a lot "

Seems Accurate so far. The Witch's Expression Darkened, She Looked at me with an unreadable expression

" You had very Rough Childhood, Very rough that it is Comparable to living in hell. You... Are the Holder of the Fate tenchusatsu, You've lived a life full of misfortune. You lost one of your Parents too, And you never Received the Love of the Other. You suffered in a harsh World without anyone to turn at, You lived alone, Alone against that world "

Honami's expression went dark at the Witch's Statement. However, That is not basic reading at all, It seems that she dove in too much out of excitement, She seems to realize that too but she didn't care. When she clicked on one point, Her Expression softened

" However, You don't have to fret Young man. Your Life has shown to open some good sides for you Rather than the Cruel. Since you met this Young Lady, Your life has turned out for the Better, She is someone you Cherish and love, You weren't sure about it at first, But now you know that very well " Honami Smiled warmly at her words. The Witch Released my arms

" You are a very powerful Couple, Your love for each other is Pretty Strong, I am pretty sure you can face every hurdle that comes at your way. However, Your first Hurdle is coming Pretty soon, In order for you to pass it, You would have to stay Strong towards your feelings and Believe in Each other " *A Hurdle soon ? She didn't imply that we can't pass it, But i am curious now*

" Young man.... " As we were about to leave. The Witch called out to me " Allow me to offer you an advice, You don't have to pay extra for it, Nor you're forced to listen to me "

" What is it ? " Curious i asked

" I Said that you have a long lifeline, That is if you choose the Correct Option. Your past is bound to come and Haunt you, If you decide to give up and Allow it to swallow you, **You will die** " She emphasized that last part threateningly. Honami Flinched at that " However, You still have a choice to decide on your life. If you decide to fight against it, You would survive and live your life alongside your beloved one, This Young lady Right here, Would play a crucial part on it. So be careful "

" Thanks for your Advice " I Bowed, The Witch with Her Sharp gleam Smiled before Me and Honami left the room.

" So How was it King ? " As we left, Hashimoto who was next inline Asked us

" It was Great. The Rumors actually do her little, She is very accurate " I Said, Instantly Hashimoto Perked up and grinned like a mad lad

" Ohoho, Seems like King got something Interesting. Is it Related To Queen ? You know, You Could Kill her If you use T-RE- "

" Next ! " The Voice inside Cut through Hashimoto's Words. Instantly his Partner went inside

" Oops ! Seems like Miki-chan is Mad, Welp. Catch ya Later King ! " Hashimoto waved as he entered the Chamber. I Sighed and Turned to leave

Honami was silently Following me from behind. Shen then suddenly Stopped, I Turned towards her to see her Pained Expression while Holding Tears

" What's Wrong ? " I asked feigning ignorance

" K-Kiyotaka.... " She Fell silent. Tears started flowing from her eyes while she was looking down " A-Are you gonna be okay ? "

" Yes i would. You don't have to worry about it " I Reassured as i walked closer to her and Embraced her. She Reciprocated and Hugged me Very Tightly

" Y-You Promise ? "

" Yes i promise "

" K-Kiyotaka.... I Don't want you To D-Die.... " She Expressed,

With Tears Flowing freely from her face beautiful face " I-I Don't.....
Want you to Leave me..... "

" I Won't Leave you Honami " I Said while Caressing her Hair.

" DO YOU PROMISE ! " She yelled, Face on my Chest so it wasn't very loud

" I Promise that I Won't Leave you Honami, Nor i will lead myself to death. You don't have to worry about that "

This may be just a fortune telling, But it has been Accurate so far so that's a reason for Honami to believe it.

If it is True, That i have a choice to live normally even after i graduate, I would Take it and not go back to that place. I have learned everything that Place has to offer, So i will force myself to graduate from it, And now i am studying what it couldn't offer.

I Thought that i'd only enjoy norm for 3 Years. But i decided now, I will fight, Yes i will fight against That man for Control over my life and my actions. I have the Definite advantage since we are battling in my life, My Territory

However, It is not that simple, That man has incredible power, There are very few ways to defeat him without Revealing The White room. But if it comes to that, I will do it, For the Sake of my life, And this Promise i made here, I Cannot allow that man to control me anymore

I am free to choose whatever i want, This is my life we are talking about, I always trusted myself to accomplish things related to my life, I thought that I'll never let my fate to be attached to somebody's hands

But i was too delusional to see it, But now i can see it. My life up to this point has been in the Hands of that Man.

I won't attach my life to someone else. That includes him too

This is just a Fortune so i'm not Believing in it yet. But it gave me a push, The Push that i was looking for

Reality could be that i have close to none Chances of success, But there is Still Chances, And i will take them. After all, I am what he calls his masterpiece.....

She Kept Crying on my Chest for a while, It's good that we were Far away from the Shop or else, We would be the Center of Attention. She calmed down and looked up, Our faces were inches away from each other, She gave me a warm reassuring smile

" I-I won't allow you to break your Promise, S-So i'll make sure that you keep it "

" I'm counting on you then " I Said responding with a smile of my own.

She then closed to Distance between our faces and kissed me on my lips, I Reciprocated and Embraced her Even tighter out of

Instinct.

" Sorry For Ruining your Shirt " After we Broke away, Honami tidied her Clothes and Apologized, A Cute blush on her Cheeks

" Don't worry about it. Anyway Wha- " My Phone started Vibrating. *Damn i thought i turned it off*

I Clutched it to find that it was a call from

" This is quite a rare Call " I Muttered.

" Hmmm~ What is it " Honami Came closer and Checked my phone " EEEH ? " When she saw the Caller Id she Blurted out in Shock

" Sorry Honami, I'll Respond " Honami couldn't Respond as she Just stared at my phone.

I picked up the Call, And was instantly Greeted by the Other Side

[Good Morning Ayanokouji-kun] A Gentle yet somewhat Nervous voice Came from the Other side

" Good morning.... Chairman "

Arc 4.5 Chap 2 : The first Hurdle

" Good morning Chairman "

[How have you been Ayanokouji-kun. It's been a while]

" It has been a while indeed. I am doing great thanks to you, I owe you for letting me in your school "

[Oh no It's nothing Ayanokouji-kun. I'm glad i could've been a help to you]

" Thanks. Anyway, For what do i owe the Pleasure of your call ? "

[About that..... Can you come to my office ?] Honami's eyes went wide at his Question. I had it on speaker mode for her to listen so she won't get sidelined

" May i ask why ? " There was a long silence. I heard him Sigh before he spoke

[I'd be Blunt Ayanokouji-kun. Your father is here and he wants you to drop out]

" EH ? " Honami Blurted out of shock

[Are you with Someone Ayanokouji-kun ?] Sensing that Lying would be futile, I decided to respond

" Yes. I am with my Girlfriend Chairman. Your call kinda interrupted us " There was another long silence. He is most likely speaking with that man Right now

[Ayanokouji-sensei wants her to com-]

" Tell him that i'm not interested " I said uninterested

[That's fine Ayanokouji-kun. But he wants to speak with you]

" I'm not interested " I insisted

[I understand that too Ayanokouji-kun. But he promised me that he only wants to speak with you this once and he will leave you alone after this]

" You should know better than to trust that man's word Chairman. You know it better than anybody els- "

[Don't worry about that Ayanokouji-kun. I will personally interfere and stop him if it comes to that] The Chairman's words seemed Genuine, I couldn't completely Drop my guard when it comes to him, But i still trust him to some extent.

I looked towards Honami who gave me a determinant nod

" Alright, We'll come "

We were walking down the Hallway of the School towards the Chairman's office. He gave us permission to enter with our Casual clothes

" As i said Before, You don't have to come Honami. This is between me and him " I Warned her for like the 8th time. But she still gave me the Same response

" Don't worry about me Kiyotaka~ I resigned myself to meet him~ " She responded.

" Are you sure ? " She Nodded " Alright, If you say so "

We Turned around the Last Corner to the Chairman. However, A Familiar Figure was staying beside the Door nervously checking their Surrounding, When they Spotted us She instantly ran towards me

" Kiyotaka-kun~!!! "

" What is it Chie-sensei ? " It was Chie-sensei who was having quite the Serious expression, It was Very different from how we used to see her

" Kiyotaka-kun ! Please don't go, Don't Drop out ! " She Pleaded like a worried mother

" I am not planning in doing so, I'll just have a talk with him "

" Are you gonna be okay~? "

" I would, Thank you for worrying about me Chie-sensei " I Gave her a smile. She sighed in Relief and Faced me

" Your father is inside the Room with the Chairman, Follow me "

We followed her the big wooden door that had the nameplate 'Chairman's office' on it. Chie-sensei Knocked at it before Opening it

As i put my foot inside the room, I felt the Atmosphere shift, A heavy and thick one Replaced the Previous one.

Inside, Was that man. His intimidating Glare was as strong as usual or even stronger now.

He glared at me inspecting me with his Gaze. Instantly, He shifted his Glare to Honami who tensed up lightly, But her cheery expression didn't waver at his gaze. *I am honestly Impressive*

" Interesting..... " That man muttered as his lips started Curling up in a creepy smile.

" You may go now Hoshinomiya. Come back after 30 minutes " The Chairman who was sitting on his desk ordered. Chie-sensei Gave me a worried look, I nodded before she left.

I sat with Honami on the sofas Facing that Man, I noticed the The Cameras was detached, Probably at his orders. On the Table, There was a filled 'drop out' papers with my name on it, The only thing missing is my Signature, Honami stared at the Papers anxiously But steeled her resolve again.

" How is your high school experience Going so far Kiyotaka ? " Asked That man with obviously malicious intents

" Cut to the Chase already. I don't have time " I Bluntly Responded

" Oh ? I heard that i was interrupting your plans with your girlfriend, My bad " He didn't look apologetic at all, Instead he was amused " It must feels nice to have a girlfriend right ? That is something the White Room couldn't provide "

" White Room ?.... " Muttered Honami, But it was audible only for me

" But i believe in my Kiyotaka. You never loved somebody, Not even me. So i believe that you don't love her too, Right ? " He relaxed in his Sofa confidently smirking at the both of us. *That's where you're wrong*

" Sorry, I would never be in a one-sided Relationship "

" What do you mean " He snapped, Looking at me, Daring me to say that again.

" It is exactly as i said. She is the most important person in my life, I love her very much "

" You're Joking right ? " He was shocked at my response, I Received his Question with silence " How can you love someone ? I never taught you that "

" It is not something you learn in a lesson nor a book " My answer irritated him

" You know it better than anybody else Kiyotaka, Emotions are irrelevant, They hold you back. How dare you go and love someone without my permission ? " *Honestly, What a clown*

" I decide for myself how i live my life " I Shrugged

" You are my Property Kiyotaka ! You do as i say and OBEY "

" Sorry, I can't meet your expectations "

" I ordered you to stay at standby ! " He then averted his gaze and Looked at the Ceiling " You How Matsuo has been doing ? Yeah, The person who gave you the idea to enroll at this school "

" What about him ? " I Know exactly where this is heading

" You see, He's no longer Alive " Honami let out a gasp, While the Chairman was staring intensely at him " He committed Suicide after his life got Ruined, While begging me to spare his son who is in a pathetic state Right now "

" I hope he rests in peace. As for his son i hope he moves on and

find happiness " I Shrugged

" That's not possible anymore. He went insane, You know why ? "
I stared Silently at him " That's because of you "

" I fail to notice what does that have to do with me "

" Because you defied me, People ended up suffering. Because of you, Matsuo Committed Suicide. Because of you his son's life is ruined " *Is this a joke ? No he seems serious*

I Kept staring at him in silence, Seeing him desperately try to put the blame on me kinda amused me. So i gave him a smirk for what's worth

" It seems that More people should suffer to make you obe- "

" You are so cruel ! " Honami couldn't take it anymore cut through his words and Yelled at him" Kiyotaka told me about you. But you are far more Cruel than i imagined ! " It was brave of her to stand up to me. However, Her words aren't enough to defeat him

" You..... What's your name ? " That man asked. Honami tensed

" **Her name doesn't concern you** " That man's lips curled up at my cold, Threatening voice. However, He Started attacking Honami

" You are the one who corrupted my son, You made him feel some stuff he shouldn't. You too are responsible for this " He started Blaming Honami now

" I-I am not responsible for your Crimes ! " Honami fought back

" No, It is your Responsibility, Because of you Kiyotaka isn't obeying me, Because of your selfishness more people are gonna suffer the same fate as Matsuo and his son "

" You're So cruel.... SO CRUEL ! " Honami Yelled at him

" I know I know. But this all could stop if he just returns to where he belongs. Then no one would get hurt " That man Grabbed the Papers and handed them to me " This school doesn't fit you Kiyotaka. Someone like your Caliber doesn't deserve to be lumped with low-life morons, There is my Chauffeur just outside the school, He would take us straight back home, the White Room, Where you belong "

I stared at the Papers he handed them to me without moving an inch, Honestly does he think that this would work ?

" You're just making a fool out of yourself, I am determined to stay here " He looked disappointed at my Answer. He stood and made his way towards the exit

" I'll have you know that you're acting like the low-lives around you. It is truly pitiful to see someone at your Caliber act like that. I am deeply Disappointed Kiyotaka "

" I couldn't care less " His eyebrow twitched in anger, As he made his way towards the Door. He glared daggers at Honami who gazed back at him.

" By the way Sakayanagi " That man was about to leave when he Called to the Chairman

" Yes Ayanokouji-sensei ? " The Chairman responded with a smile

" Kiyotaka could still get expelled when he fails his exams right ?

" That is correct Sensei, Every student who fails During Exams would get expelled, The only Condition is that if they have enough Points to nullify it "

" I Trust that you didn't give Kiyotaka something like that Right ?

" The Chairman Nodded

" I do not favor any student Ayanokouji-sensei. So be at ease, If your son fails he would get expelled " That man Eased abit, Before leaving he Glared at me, Almost like a challenge

He knows it better than anyone else that i cannot lose, Is he praying that i would fail an academic or Special exam ? No, That man wouldn't do something like that, So what is he Plotting ?

" Sorry about Calling you Here Ayanokouji-kun. I know you came here because of outside contact rule, But i failed you " The Chairman said Apologetically

" It's Fine Chairman. It was a matter of time before he contacts me " I Said Reassuring the Chairman. I Stood up from my Seat, Honami followed up and i made my way towards the Door " Chairman Sakayanagi "

" Yes Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" You didn't give him Honami's name did you ? " That man did not try to Threaten Honami by her Family. Although the Rules state that he isn't allowed to Leak information, But i have to make sure. The Chairman Shook His head

" No i didn't Ayanokouji-kun. So be at ease " He smiled Warmly, I'll believe him for now

" I see, Thank you Chairman, Have a nice day "

" Have a nice evening Ayanokouji-kun "

However, As soon as we left and Closed the Door....

" Kiyotaka-kun~ !!!!! " Chie-sensei at me Hugging me Tightly from behind.

" Chie-sensei !!!!! " Honami yelled out of Shock

" Chie-sensei.... What are you- "

" He didn't do Anything to you Right ? " Chie-sensei Asked, I Couldn't see her Expression but i can feel her uneasiness behind her voice

" No he didn't do anything " Chie-sensei then Released me, Instantly i put some space between her and i

" C-Chie-sensei... Why did you do that ? " Honami asked Stuttering alittle

" Teehee~ My bad Honami-chan~ I was so worried~ " Chie-sensei Bonked her head Cutely

" B-But, You can't just Hug Him like that ! " Honami Said. Chie-sensei grinned at her

" Noooo~ Don't worry about that Honami-chan~ I'm not planning on stealing him from you~ Definitely not the Case~ " Chie-sensei Claimed, But it was very suspicious.

We bid farewell to Chie-sensei and walked outside the School, I had a small hunch that i would find him. But he was no where to be found. That's a relief

Honami after we left sighed in Relief while wiping her forehead. She regained her Bright aura alongside her Bright face

" Call me impressed Honami, Not a lot of people can face him like you did " I Commended, She looked at me with a bright smile

" I told you i'd be fine~ But he was way scarier than i thought " She drifted off, I Gave her a pat Snapping her back in reality

" But you bravely fought against him and held yourself, I did not expect that. Good Job " I Gave her more head pats " Moreover, Our hangout is ruined now "

" That's okay~ We can always hang out together " She Stopped for a moment " Kiyotaka, I'm not gonna force you, But i want you to tell me what is the White room "

I look deep into her Oceanic Blue eyes, and I was met with Determination, Care and Worry. I knew that the moment would come where i'd open up to her about me, And my past.

I unconsciously remembered what the Fortune Teller said. This was our first Hurdle and we passed it together, Honami would be a vital part on my fight against him. So, I Decided to open up

" Can we go to my room ? "

It feels good being done from exams does it ? I am sorry for the Short Chapters, There isn't much content to cover on the 4.5 Chapters, So I'll Try to add more scenes, And this is one of them.

After the Next Chapter, The Quality content would show up. I am gonna keep it a secret, But you should look forward to it :)))

Arc 4.5 Chap 3 : White Room

HONAMI POV

Currently, We are at Kiyotaka's room after we met his Father
Kiyotaka was leading the way while staying silent.

When i entered his tidy and clean room, I removed my shoes and walked towards the kitchen. Kiyotaka was surprised at my actions

" I can make the Drin- " I cut him

" No, Leave them to me. You should go and rest " I said with determination, He stared at me with his lifeless eyes, It was scary but i held myself from showing it

He nodded and sat on to his bed and stared at the ground, Contemplating about something. My heart started to ache at his sight. *I hope i can help him*

The kettle started making noise, Indicating that the water has boiled. I poured it into two cups of Cocoa and brought them to him

" Sorry for having you take care of that " He Apologized while gracefully accepting the Cup

" It's no problem " I responded while sitting beside him

He stared at the cup for a while, I decided to give him some space and take a sip from my drink, He looked somewhat Vulnerable right now. He then talked

" What do you want to know about The White Room ? " He gave me the choice to choose where to start

" What is The White Room ? " I think it should be better to start slowly

" The White Room is a Facility that man founded to Create artificial Geniuses " He answered almost like a robot, As if he got the words ready for each question

" A Facility to create Geniuses ? Is it like a school ? " I asked

" Yes. In fact, It is pretty similar to this school " He answered. However, He noted " But with far less freedom and Privacy "

" How does The White Room look like ? "

" White World. Everything inside is white. The white hallways that gives you uneasiness, The white Floor that gives you despair, The sounds of Children screaming in agony while you try to sleep, And more "

I fell silent at his words, I cannot imagine how can a world like that even exists. What's worse, Kiyotaka lived in it.....

I was gonna ask why did he got placed in such a cruel world. But it was his Father that Runs it

" Since when were you placed in there Kiyotaka ? "

" For as long as i can Remember.... " *I see*

I started feeling tears form in my eyes, But i can't let that happen now, I have to stay strong... For his sake

" What do you do in the white room ? "

" You have multiple sessions for multiple subjects and Fitness sessions. Just like a normal school " He continued " However, You are monitored all the time even in the bathroom. You go through multiple checkups during the day, They Inject multiple hormones so you'd have a better developments. You go through tests almost everyday "

" ... "

" Due to that, Stress and Anxiety took a toll on the students, They were suffering. But the Instructors didn't care, All they cared about was Results, So they kept going on with their Experiments no matter what the cost "

" W-What happened to those who didn't show any Results " I said Stuttering. Kiyotaka took a sigh

" They dispose of them " I gasped

" D-Do you m-mean..... T-They k-kill them ? "

" They didn't tell us what happened to them. However...

*** Flashback * Kiyo POV**

I was sitting on my chair, The same as usual, It was a day like everyday. However

Futaro wasn't here

Futaro was the closest person to me, He was like a sibling, We always studied together and read stories together. Today he was absent

The instructor came inside and started his lesson. *But where is Futaro ?*

When the sessions ended, I walked towards my Teacher

" Ummm Sensei ? " When Sensei saw me, His eyebrows twitched

" What do you want ? " He spoke in a harsh and irritated tone

" Do you know where Futaro is ? He didn't come to class "

" Oh that Brat ? " He spoke in an irritated tone. However, Now he tried to soften his tone " Don't worry Kiyotaka. Futaro failed his test yesterday, He is now far away from here "

" F-Futaro is..... Gone ? "

" Yes, He left and he won't come back " The Teacher's words

slowly sunk in. My eyes started watering and tears fell

" W-Will i not see him again ? "

" Yes " At his words, I gave in to crying. I started crying in front of the teacher who nonchalantly left

I Wish i only said goodbye to him

I was alone, Crying to myself for 20 minutes, There was no one around, All of my classmates were scattered around doing multiple stuff

After i calmed down i felt Hungry, So i walked towards the Cafeteria.

When i arrived there, I heard 2 people Laugh with each other, It was Sensei alongside another Instructor. I was about to enter when i heard

" Haha I'm telling you dude. His Reaction was so funny that i wanted to laugh in front of him " Sensei Stated

" Thank you for telling me this man ! My day instantly went better ! " Expressed the Other guy

" I know right ? That bastard was so sad about His friend's disappearance. It was so Funny to see the eyes we were scared from filled up with tears and Stuff. It was So Amusing Bwahahahahaha "

" Hahah, But you didn't tell him what really happened to his Friend Right ? " *What really happened ?*

" Oh no i didn't, But i wanted to do it so badly that i almost slipped "

" Yeah, I wonder what kind of face He'll make if we tell him that his Friend is Flying around the Heavens " *Heavens ?*

" Oh no. That is so nice that he wouldn't get it and thinks it's a good thing. We better just straight tell him that he died "

Futaro.... Died ?

" Haha You're so cruel man ! "

No.....

" You call me Cruel ? It was his father's orders to kill him. I just obeyed "

Father..... Killed my friend

I was taken by despair, The pain of losing a beloved one was slowly eating me alive. Futaro's face flashed in my memory with his usual gentle smile

I ran away from the Cafeteria, Holding my tears as much as i can. I walked in my room and closed the door Shut...

*** Flashback end * Honami POV**

" I was 7 at that time. But i still remember it like it happened yesterday "

" K-Kiyo.... " I muttered under my breath. I was silently crying, I couldn't Speak

" From that day, Everyone started Perishing, Slowly but surely, I was the only one Remaining "

" Kiyooooo " I couldn't stop myself and embraced him Tightly, Crying with all my might in his sturdy and Hard body " I am sorry "

So Cruel..... So Cruel

Why did kiyotaka have to go through all of this ? Why ? Why ? Why ?

I cannot understand such a Cruel Father. Why ? Why did he do this ?

How can a father do that ? I can't understand. I can't !

Kiyotaka was gently caressing my hair, As i tugged in his shirt and Cried even more.

Kiyotaka went through all of that, But he didn't complain. I never saw him complain, Not to anyone, even to me

I emptied all my emotions in his Shirt, While he was caressing my Hair. His gentle touch was mesmerizing

Sly me. I was the one who is supposed to Comfort him, But he is comforting me instead

I calmed down, After Drenching his whole Shirt, I hugged him even more tightly out of instinct

" Let's take a break " He suggested. I nodded and we sat like that for a while.

Time flew fast and it was already 7 PM. But i wasn't planning on moving any time soon

After Kiyotaka Revealed his Past to me, I felt a huge burden have been lift off my chest, A huge wall has been broken between us, I felt that our Relationship has advanced to another level.

I am very happy with this development.

The White Room's existence is classified. So i wasn't allowed to breathe a word about it

Kiyotaka Trusted me with this information, And i won't fail him

To think such a world existed, I was too naive.

He was afraid that His Father would go after my family if i tell anyone. That's why he Warned me. That's what led to this Predicament

" Alright~ I'll cook dinner~ " I said after we finished a movie. Kiyotaka nodded with a smile that mesmerized me. *He is so Handsome*

" Honami, Do you have a fever ? " Asked Kiyotaka

" N-No ! I'll go " I stood up and walked towards the kitchen,

Cheeks Red. I Opened the fridge and got ingredients

I decided to cook a Nice Medium rare Steak with French Fries, It was easy and delicious

After 20 Minutes i finished Cooking. When i brought The Plates, I was met by Kiyotaka who was sleeping cutely on his bed. *This day was Tiring, So it makes sense*

I was conteplating about waking him up or not. But I couldn't take my eyes off his Sleeping face, I unconsciously started poking his Cheeks, They were soft

" Heehee~ "

I kept playing with his face, Poking his cheeks, Pulling his both corners of his mouth to the side, Pulling them Together, It was fun

However, I played a little too much and he opened his eyes, Then stared at me

" Rise and Shine Kiyotaka~ " I said. He then rose and removed the blanket. He gazed towards the Table where he found two Plates

" Thank you "

We dove in our Food, He enjoyed it very much. And now it was Right before 8 PM, Curfew time

I walked towards The Door and Jumped at my Shoes, Kiyotaka came closer to say Goodbye

" Thank you for today Kiyo~ See ya " I said before giving him a quick kiss on the lips.

" Thank you for today Honami, See you too "

" Heehee~ "

It was a very long day, I feel exhausted from the stress, I could've slept with him on his room..... But

I'm saving it for Later.... Heehee~

Arc 4.5 Chap 4 : Hot day

The blazing hot sun dominated the whole school campus, It was so hot that if you wore your School uniform, You would be sweating buckets

Which is exactly what i was wearing, While making my way towards the school's building

I passed along multiple people who were wearing light summer clothes, I honestly envied them. But after all, It was me who accepted this Invitation

When i woke up today, I received a message from Manabu asking if i had time to hang out with him. Although i am sure that he would talk about the exam's results, So i agreed

The student council's room is undergoing a rehab, So one of the clubs were kind enough to let them borrow their Room

I entered the School building and walked towards the Club Chamber. I knocked when i arrived, And the door opened revealing a purple Haired Tachibana

" Come in Ayanokouji-kun " She welcomed me with a warm smile. Tachibana's attitude towards me has changed since the day where i helped her with Manabu, Which is nice.

I walked inside the room and i was instantly met with the pleasant cold air, It was very refreshing

Manabu was sitting at his desk looking as usual as ever, His Sharp stern expression were displayed on his face

Tachibana closed the door and happily went to the kitchen, Without Manabu muttering any word.

" Thank you for making time for my invitation Kiyotaka " Manabu Thanked with a small smile

" Don't mention it Manabu " I shrugged. I grabbed the chair in front of him. However he stood up

" Let's move to the sofa, It is much comfortable that way " I nodded and i sat on the sofa. Manabu went towards a shelf and started pulling something " I heard from Sakayanagi that You're good at Chess, Do you mind a game ? " *A game of chess against Manabu huh ?*

" Not at all " He Brought the Chess board to the table and started setting it " I am intermediate at Chess, So go easy on me "

" You expect me to believe that ? " Manabu Smirked

" No at all " He finished setting up the board, I turned it around " I'll take Black "

" Going with a handicap i see. You must be confident " I smirked at him, He responded with the same " Let's play, Intermediate-kun "

Manabu Played Pawn e4, King's Opening. I countered with Pawn C5

" Sicilian i see " He grinned. Tachibana came back with two cups of Tea. " Thank you Akane " *Akane ? Interesting...*

She handed me a cup of Tea while Flustered, I bowed to her and she responded with a smile, Stepping aside

" How did the exams treat you Kiyotaka ? " He asked with Interest in his voice

" It has been tough. The school baited us twice " I said as i played my next move

" But you managed to come out on top on both of them "

" Unfortunately, That last one ended in a stalemate " I took his Knight using my Bishop

" Aren't you happy about that ? " He traded using his Queen

" No, It's just that, Honami ended up getting betrayed so she couldn't win "

" It is unfortunate that you got Betrayed by Class D " He is a very strong opponent, As expected of someone from his Caliber

" It is what it is " I shrugged

" But you helped them during The Island exam right ? "

" How did you know ? " I looked at him, He had an unreadable expression. I didn't deny it, Since i want it to move in that way

" When i checked the Results, I saw that only you and Class D guessed Class B's Leader, Class C guessed it incorrectly. So i had a hunch that you figured it out and helped them "

" The student council sure has a lot of Power " *How could a student has so much Power ?*

" Let me correct you, The student council doesn't have power at all. It is all based on the Person Running it " In other words, If the president is Capable, he would have powers. *Did he just compliment himself ?*

" I see " I took a sip from Tachibana's Tea " Well you are correct. I gave them Class B's leader since they were losing and i wanted to inflict as much damage as possible to Class B "

" I see " There was a small hint of discomfort in his tone. *Damage done*

Manabu was Stuck, Trying to figure out the best move is. Moments later he found it. *Impressive*

" By the way, Did you elect a new Vice-President ? " Since

Nagumo got Expelled, Manabu needs a new Vice-President to take stuff after he left

" Not yet. But there is a lot of Candidates like Asahina and Mikitani, Even your Girlfriend, But since she's a first-year, She can't get elected just yet "

" If you had the Option would you elect her ? "

" Yes, She seems to be the best person to take charge after me " He Played his next move, But it was a small mistake

" Were you gonna elect her because of me ? " I exploited his mistake and I'm now up a pawn

" I would be lying if i said no. But she is Plenty Capable too, So i considered you as a small Bonus " He took a sip on his drink " I came to the decision to put KiriYama in charge, He works the hardest out of them. He would get elected at the start of the second semester "

" I see " I took another sip of my drink and started the Final attack. Manabu tried to desperately Defend, But i was up Material and positional Advantage

As a last resort, He threw a queen sacrifice. *Nice try*

" Good Game Intermediate-kun " I shook his hand, He started applying pressure on my arm to test out my strength. Satisfied he Smirked

" It was a good game Manabu "

" Yeah, But you won at the end " He stood up and Carried both of our Empty Tea cups " Thank you for Coming here Kiyotaka, It was Fun " I nodded and made my way towards the Door. However...

" Manabu, If it's not too personal i have a question " Manabu put both of the Tea cups on the Sink, Turned around

" Yes Kiyotaka ? "

" Are you dating Tachibana-senpai ? " Tachibana Flushed and Glared at me, I gave her a quick side glance. She quickly calmed down

" No " Manabu's Response was direct and firm

" I must've mistaken it when you called each other by First names "

" She asked me to move to First name basis since we've been working together for 2 and a half years and i agreed " He shrugged

" I see " I looked towards Tachibana and gave her a small smirk and a nod. She smiled brightly and nodded. Manabu was confused at our Exchange " Anyway, Thank you for having me Manabu. Have a nice day "

" Have a nice Day Kiyotaka "

" Have a nice Evening Ayanokouji-kun " Tachibana waved while Manabu smiled. It looked like they are sending their Child towards

School alone for the First time, Truly Cute

I closed the door and made my way towards the exit

On my way there i noticed a girl with Chocolate-Brown hair, It was Asahina Nazuna.

She was in her school uniform slowly walking towards the Student Council Room, When she met my gaze she stiffened up eyes wide. However, A Look of hatred, Resent leaked from her eyes for a millisecond, It is unnoticeable but not for me.

She quickly regained her usual cheerful-bright-happy expression and smiled at me

" Good Morning Ayanokouji-kun " I am surprised she remembered my name

" Morning Asahina-senpai, How are you doing ? " I greeted back with my usual monotone voice

" I have been great thank you so much for asking " She responded. She gazed deep into my eyes, Found nothing " Anyway, I have to go now. See ya later Ayanokouji-kun "

" See you " I said. She started walking towards the Student council Room

" Send my Regards to Ichinose-san Kay~? " She said as she turned around and waved. I nodded and with that she entered the student council room

Asahina Nazuna, A Second-Year student from Class A and a member of the student council. She was Nagumo's Classmate and secretary and she is friends with Kiryuin. *I may have made an enemy out of her*

Not that i care, I can think of some reasons why she despises me. The most likely answer is that i expelled Nagumo. Now that i am aware of her, I can put my guard up

But the question is : Is there more people like her ?

" You're late " *How many times did i hear this line*

" Sorry " I apologized, Honami smiled and bonked my Head " Ow "

" Can't you learn to arrive a bit earlier than Usual ? " Scolded Honami

" Well i am early by Fi- "

" Anyways Let's hurry up ! I'm dying from the heat " Grumbled Shibata.

It was around noon where we decided to meet up and hit the Pool. Our group consisted of the same members as usual. With the addition of Himeno Yuki

Shibata who was walking beside Amikura, Turned around with a mischievous grin

" Yo King. How was Yesterday ? " *Ah shit, Here we go again*

" Fine ? " I don't know which answers he expected me to give

" Shibata-kun. What do you mean by King ? " Ando asked. All the girls were confused..... Except for one

" You don't have to know Ando-san. It is an inside joke " It was Hamaguchi who spoke. Ando was even more confused

" Inside joke ? Care to fill me in~ " Amikura asked, With a big mischievous grin. She was the only girl who wasn't confused

" N-No Mako-chan. You don't have to know " Shibata Blurted out of Panic. *Mako-chan ?*

" Mako-chan ?! " Everyone was shocked. Shibata started scratching his slightly red cheeks

" Ummm, Yeah. We decided to move to First name basis " Shibata Clarified

" You're moving Fast Shibata " Noted Kanzaki, This made Shibata Flush

" N-No Kanzaki-kun. It's not like that, It is just a friendly Occurrence ! "

" Friendly occurrence ? You didn't even ask us, Your Close friends, To use First names. I am deeply disappointed " Hamaguchi crossed his arms while shaking his head. A Gesture of Disappointment

Amikura enjoyed every single bit, And sometimes jumped in, Teasing the Flustered Shibata. It was such a childish display, But i didn't mind it

Honami was staring at me in my Peripheral Vision. I turned around to see her with a warm, Adorable smile. It was as if admiring her own child who successfully grown to be a successful man

" Oh. Ichinose-san ! " A Female voice called out behind us. I turned around to find Kushida, Horikita and the three idiots

" Oh hey Kush- " Honami froze. She remembered that Kushida is the traitor in Class D. Kanzaki's face stiffened. Kushida noticed the strange reaction of Honami opened her mouth but

" Oh Kushida-san ! " It was Amikura who greeted. Honami calmed down and went back to her cheery self

" Good Morning Kushida-san " She smiled. I gazed at Kanzaki who nodded at me.

" Are you going to the pool too Ichinose-san ? " Kushida asked.

However, She glanced at me and quickly returned to Honami

" Mhm~ Do you want to head there together ? " Honami invited

" Gladl- "

" I'm leaving " Horikita said cutting through Kushida before starting to walk away

" Why are you leaving Horikita-san ? " Kushida asked

" I thought you needed Company Kushida-san. If you're going with them then you don't need me yes ? "

" That's not it Horikita-san ! I wanted to spend time with you ! " Kushida pleaded

After some convincing, Horikita agreed. Kushida pleaded very hard that it is hard to believe that she hates her, It was such a show of Desperation, I am impressed

Honami and Kanzaki started having second doubts, But they quickly Brushed them off and kept their Guard up.

However, Something doesn't add up. The idiot Trio would normally go and try to talk with the girls. But they are talking among themselves on the very back

Just when i realized it. Ike and Yamauchi both advanced and started talking with the Girls

Sudo was carrying two bags. One of which was wiggling, It was very heavy.

By how it wiggles i deduced that there aren't clothes in there. Instead, There was equipment.

" Hey Sudo, Mind if i give you a hand ? " I slowed my pace and reached Sudo

" Huh ? " Sudo asked confusingly. I extended my hand to reach the Heavy bag, He panicked and moved it away " O-Oh umm Thanks. But i can carry this " He gave me a smile at the end

" If you say so " He would reject no matter what i say, It is futile. I was gonna have a casual chat with him, But i noticed Yamauchi slowed down to reach Honami, So I quickened my Pace

" They say that kissing is a language of love, So would you mind having a conversation with me Ichinose-chan ? " *Wait what ?*

" W-What do you mean Yamauchi-kun ? " Honami was stuttering. Yamauchi was grinning creepily. He opened his mouth and

" I don't mind having a conversation with you. However, I only know the language of fists " I said. Pulling my hand in a fist and glaring at him with some darkness in my eyes. Yamauchi flinched and walked away Trembling in fear. Kanzaki was about to interfere but i came just before he could. I nodded at him as a thanks, He nodded back

" T-Thank you Kiyotaka " Honami Thanked while blushing

" Don't worry about a thing " I gave her a head pat

Honestly, There is a lot of girls out there, I don't understand why would you go after the taken ones. Truly disgusting

We separated with the girls after entering the pool to go inside the changing rooms. Sudo quickly ran inside and disappeared, His bag wiggling very badly. Kanzaki noticed the strange movement of the bag and looked at me to check my expression. I narrowed my eyes intentionally to give him the idea

We entered the room to see Sudo changing, The bag was nowhere to be found. Kanzaki acted that he didn't noticed and walked to one of the lockers, I followed him and changed beside him

" Don't you think their behavior is weird ? " I asked

" It is very suspicious. They are hiding something " Kanzaki said " That bag Sudo hid contains some sort of equipment right ? " He didn't try and play dumb. He knows that i know.

" Correct. Which sort is what i don't know " He was deep in thought

" If they want to desperately hide it from us, Then it is very important " He then looked at me " Could it be that.... They want to peep on the girls ? " *Good deductions Kanzaki*

" That's what i think too. If that's the case then i'm gonna do something about it "

" I'll leave it to you then. If you need assistance you can rely on me " I nodded.

We both finished Changing, Alongside all the boys. We walked towards the door with the exception Ike and the others who were sorting their lockers

" Aren't you coming ? " Asked Kanzaki.

" Errr. We'll sort our bags first. You go a head " Ike Said

" I see " Kanzaki Responded " Well, Don't take long okay ? " Ike joyfully nodded

We left the room and made our way towards the Pool, There was a lot of students there.

One of which noticed me as soon as i looked at her. She instantly stood up from her Chair and walked up to me

" My My Fancy seeing you here Kouhai-kun " Kiryuin smirked at me. She was wearing a very daring swim suit, So i averted my eyes alongside the three other boys

" Good evening Kiryuin-senpai " I greeted while looking at the sky

" You don't have to be shy you know " She walked closer to me, I instantly started feeling danger " I know that boys have no self control, So you don't have to pretend. I give you permission, Only you Kouhai-kun "

" Thanks but i'll pass " I put some space between us

" Ah~ How can you hurt the heart of such a young maiden like

me~ You're so cruel Kouhai-kun " Her tone wasn't sad in the slightest. The reverse, She was enjoying this. I could feel a lot of gazes at me. I was about to speak when

" Knock it off Kiryuin. Kiyotaka already has a girlfriend " It was Manabu who Appeared. I was relieved

" Good Morning Manabu-senpai " He nodded with a smile

" Oho ? You seem close to my Kouhai-kun that you call him by first name, Why is that President ? " *My Kouhai-kun ?*

" We are close friends who worked together before. So i suppose it is normal to call each other by first names no ? "

" Ara~ Did you perhaps take an interest in Kouhai-kun too President ? "

" If you'll put it that way then yes " His Answer Shocked every Senpai on the Pool. *Great , More attention*

' President Horikita took an interest in a Kouhai ? '

' Is he serious ? '

' Who is that Brat anyway ? '

Manabu glared at them, The murmurs instantly went shut, No all the Pool was dead silent.

" Umm... What's going on here ? " Honami alongside the girls came in their swim suits.

" Anyway. Kiyotaka, Do you want to join my team on the volley ball match ? " Asked Manabu with a welcoming smile. Horikita behind me was shocked

" Sure. But who are we playing against ? " I asked. Then he turned around, A person emerged from the Pool and walked to us. He was somewhat well built, But he didn't seem the best athletically

" Good morning. I am Kiriyama Ikuto from Class 2-A. Pleasure meeting you Ayanokouji " So this is Kiriyama, The soon-to-be-elected Vice-President

" Nice to meet you Kiriyama-senpai " I accepted his hand shake. He smiled warmly at me.

" Same here, Let's have a great game okay ? " He is way Friendlier than i thought he would

" Sure "

I resigned myself to the attention i'm gonna receive. At this point i wouldn't be surprised if the whole school knows my name

I walked up towards one of the sides of the net inside a pool, Manabu Joined right after..... Alone

On the other side of the Net, Stood 5 Students, One of which was Kiriyama

" Are you serious ? " I blurted out while looking at Manabu

" Frankly i am, I was getting tired playing alone against them to i decided to bring you " Manabu said

" I see.... " If i was a girl i would've blurted out *"That's so cool"* or something.

Kiriyama gave us the ball to serve first. I gestured for Manabu to start. However....

" Let's Go King "

" Beat their ass "

" Let's go King "

" Show them the Power of the T-REX "

" Show them who is the King !"

" KIIIIIIIIING *Monkey noises* "

The first-year boys joined in a line, Extended both of their arms on each other's shoulders and Started Cheering, Dancing, Laughing..... *Seriously ?*

Kiryuin with an amused Look on her face Joined them and started Cheering. *Even you ?*

" Seems like you got your own Fan-club Kiyotaka " Manabu noted with a wide Smirk

" I didn't do anything to deserve such a thing " I shrugged

" I'm sure you did, I am curious about what 'King' and 'T-Rex' means "

" If it's you, I'm sure you'll figure it out " He smirked

With the Cheers in the background, The match Started. Manabu flew to the sky and smashed the Ball, It deviated towards a student who Returned it back, Manabu walked in front and Threw it back, This time he scored.

Since we scored, We were allowed to serve, So Manabu Gave me the ball. I looked at him and he wanted me to shoot, So i did just that

The Ball went towards a student with Rapid Speed, He instinctively covered his Face, The Ball slammed in his Hands causing him to fall and drown, The ball Flew Back, I Shot it back Scoring another point

The Cheers went louder and Louder as students slowly but surely focused in our Match, Even some Life-Guards started Spectating

" That was a strong shot Kiyotaka. You could've killed the man " Said Manabu Jokingly

" My bad "

The Game went..... Well exactly as the Last Two rounds. The match ended up with a 10-0 in our Favor. It was total Brutality

" Good game Kiriyama " Said Manabu while patting Kiriyama's Back gently to comfort him

" Don't do me like that President. We had no chance " Kiriyama had a bitter smile, As well as his Teammates

" Good Match Kiyotaka~ " Honami Complimented. She handed

me a towel. My eyes unconsciously scanned her whole body, *She was very beautiful*

" Pervert~ " Honami said with a smirk. Jokingly covering her chest, But there was still a lot to see. " Hey~! "

She let go of her chest and threw a chop to my side, Her face was beet red. It made her look more cute

" Sorry if i stared too much " I apologized.

" It's fine.... You can stare all you want~ " She said. Before perking up " Or rather~ I am glad that you find me attractive~ You pervert~ " She lustfully grinned. I sighed

I scanned my surroundings until i found my targets. They were gazing intensely at me, From the movements of their mouths..... Well they were Jealous

I spotted another two people people i was looking for. I walked up to them, They noticed me

" Hey do you have a minute ? " Both of them looked towards each other. Until one of them spoke

" Yep~ What is it Ayanokouji-kun ? "

Today at the pool was great, Everyone enjoyed themselves, So was i

After everyone was done changing, I excused myself and waited around the pool for my Targets.

After a while they approached me, With looks of Discomfort and disgust in their faces.

" Hello Ayanokouji-kun " The first person greeted, While the second nodded

" Hello Amikura, Himeno " I bowed " Did you find it ? "

" Y-Yes... " Amikura opened opened her hand and showed me 4 SD Cards " They were well hidden inside a locker "

" I see " I stood up and faced them " It's good that you found them. I can imagine what they could do with them "

" Honestly, They are so Disgusting " Grumbled Himeno. Amikura was somewhat shacking too

" Ayanokouji-kun. Here " Amikura handed me the SD Cards " I can't stand holding such filth "

" Why are you giving them to me ? I am a boy after all " I marked

" I trust you Ayanokouji-kun. That's why " Amikura expressed

" That makes me Happy. Do you think we should report it to the school ? "

" Yeah ! What else should you do with them ! " Snapped Himeno

" No, If he does that, They would get expelled " Opposed Amikura

" Yeah ? It's well deserved ! "

" I don't think they should get expelled. It's too harsh " Himeno opened her mouth but Amikura spoke again " I know what they did ! It is horrible ! Those Filth deserve a hefty Punishment ! But expulsion is too much "

Himeno saw the Frustration and Determination in Amikura's voice. Decided to not press any further, It was Convincing to some extent

I pulled out a paper and handed it to Amikura

" What is this Ayanokouji-kun ? " She picked up the paper and started reading it, Her eyes widened " Did you write this ? "

" Yes. Just put it where you found the Cameras, If they read it, They won't try it ever again " Himeno was done reading it too

What the message Contained was, A Blackmail. On summary, We have evidence that they tried to peep on the girls, If they do it again they would get expelled.

Amikura rose her head and looked at me " Thank you Ayanokouji-kun. You saved us " She spoke with a Genuine smile. Himeno nodded alongside her

" Don't mention it, Any decent person would've done the same " I shrugged. Amikura chuckled

" But still. Thank you "

" No problem. If it makes you feel any better, I'd like your Co-operation in the future " They both nodded and walked back towards the Changing Room.

I've regained Amikura's Trust while i got Himeno's. They would carry out my orders from here on out. Although i wanted to leave everything to Honami

I don't know what that man would try, He could even stage an accident to replace our Homeroom teacher with one of his men so he would get me expelled. However, That won't work since The Chairman is here. I shouldn't think too much of it

When that time comes, Every single control i have over the class would be vital, So gaining allies right now is Crucial.

When Amikura and Himeno got out, We all walked back towards the Dorms.

I reached my Dorm room and took a shower, switched to nice Comfortable Clothes.

I checked my phone and noticed a message from Honami

H : [Kiyotaka. Do you mind coming to my room ?] With no

reason to Refuse

K : [Sure]

I left my dorm room and made my way towards the elevator. It came running back from the Top floor. When it opened a Figure inside was Revealed. She looked at me with her Almost dead eyes, It had no emotions. However, She quickly Regained some of her Gyaru Aura

" Are you coming or what ? " Karuizawa yelled at me

" Sorry, You can go, I'm actually going u- "

" Ghrrrh " Karuizawa Grumbled loudly as she Closed the Elevator door. I couldn't help but notice some Recently healed Bruises on her face. *I wonder what happened to her*

Moments Later, The elevator Reached my Floor, I pressed Honami's Floor and took off the Journey

When it reached her Floor and Knocked on her door. I sensed her presence behind the door Peeking from the peep hole, It took her a while to open it. Revealing only her Face who is red

" Kiyotaka. Come in "

I obliged and walked inside. I bent down removing my shoes, But i noticed her Smooth White legs were exposed. I instinctively followed up to see her. But i met with a Surprise

Honami Closed the Door quickly and stared at the ground embarrassed

" D-Don't stare too much.... Baka " Her words made me realize my mistake.

Honami..... Was only wearing an Apron. Other than that, She was completely naked.....

I don't have to tell you what's gonna happen next now do i ?

I'm gonna upload the next Chapter Right when i wake up tomorrow (Apprx 8 Hours from now ?)

Arc 4.5 Special Chapter : Hot Night R-18



**** Lemon Warning : Explicit Sex ****

" Oh.. Sorry " I was too caught up with her to realize that i was staring a little too much

Can you blame me ? She was only wearing the kitchen apron. What can you even call someone wearing that ? Half-Naked ? That is a heavy understatement, She is basically naked in front of me

I averted my eyes and started walking inside her room, It was nice and tidy, It gives off a nice feminine Charm

" Go and take the Chair " Commanded Honami

There was a table between her bed and a Chair, A Small one. I Gulpd and took the Chair. Honami smiled and went to the Kitchen

Soon She brought two cups of a pink smoothie, She placed one in front of the table, But she intentionally bent too much revealing her Monstrous Breasts. I Focused on the Smoothie, She giggled and sat in front of me

" This is a protein Shake i made. Try it " She Ordered. I took the Cup and prayed that it is not Drugged. I Drank a bit from it and put it back. Moments later nothing happened " Heehee~ Don't worry i didn't spike it~ So how was it ? "

" It is very good " She Clapped her hands in satisfaction and bent to grab her cup. She bent a little more again revealing her Cleavage

She checked my expression after doing that and grinned lustfully.
I feel like i'm gonna get devoured alive

I gulpd the rest of my drink, She did the same.

" Right~ Time for the next Meal~ " She stood up and walked towards the Kitchen.

I noticed a weird looking box under her blanket, My curiosity over took me and i stood up and grabbed it. It was

' Contraceptive Pills '

" Heehee~ " I fell in her trap

The Hungry Succubus approached me from behind and pushed me in the bed. I turned around and she instantly jumped on top of me in a dead lock

She laid on top of me catching my lips in a lustful aggressive kiss. There is no way out of this

" Nnghhhhh~ "

I reciprocated as i held her Waist, Our Tongues collided against each other, She aggressively fought for dominance and responded with the same.

Our hot breaths were hitting each other's faces, Raising the sexual tension in both of our Bodies, She aggressively held my neck and pulled me deeper, I instinctively grabbed her soft Butt causing her to moan

" Mmghnnn~ "

I took advantage of her moan and claimed more ground that was Quickly lost.

" Haaa "

We separated to catch our Breaths, Saliva linking both of our Mouths. She licked her lips before diving in for another Passionate kiss.

Warmth, Mixed in lust Rushed Through my Whole Body.

" Nghh ? "

I grabbed her with both of my arms by the wrist and turned the tables. I was now on top, I caught her lips in another Passionate Kiss while Slipping my hand inside her Apron to grab her Breasts

" Mmmhghhh~ "

I started running my Tongue against her Exposed Neck, She completely gave in and exposed it further moaning in Pleasure

" Mnnnghh~ "

I started poking her Neck giving her Hickeys that won't go for a while. I released her Boobs and Ran my Finger all across to her Entrance.

" Nghhhhh~ "

I slid one finger in her wet entrance, She moaned seductively.

" Kiyoooo~ Nghhhh~ "

She called my name when i snatched her Apron away, Revealing her Beautiful Pink Breasts. I grabbed it and started Playing with her Nipple causing her To moan in Immense Pleasure

" This~ Mmm~ Feels~ So~ Mnnnh~ Good~ Mmmmmnghhhh~ "

I was playing with both of her Entrance and Nipples, As i slid another Finger Inside Fiddling it Aggressively

" Kiyo~ I'm Gonna~ NGHHHH~ "

A Hot Liquid Came Running from her Entrance as she Moaned Loudly, If i didn't catch her lips, Her moan could've heard on the next door.

" That~ Was~ Amazing~ " She expressed. She instantly caught my mouth and went on top of me again.

She started unbuttoning my Shirt and throwing it away. At my

bare Chest she bit her lower lip and caught my mouth in another Kiss.

She Hopped off the Side and removing my Pants in Quick Succession. However, Her Progress stopped when my underwear was shown Revealing the Shape of my Member, She stared at it with a Shock

She resolved herself and Completely snatched my Pants away. She Walked in front of my legs and Slid the underwear down

" Ah ! "

My member hit her Face as the Cause of her underestimation. She Stared at it with Wide eyes

" It's so Big ! " Her Reaction was Similar to the boys. A lustful Grin started to creep in her Face

She started touching it using her fingers, Examining what the boys Called T-Rex.

" Ah ! "

I Rose up and that Caused my Member to hit her again. With her Body full of Hickeys she stared at it. I grabbed her Wrist and pulled her towards the bed in another Kiss.

" Nghhhhhhhj~ "

My member was Colliding against her Entrance Teasing it. After we were separated she Grabbed the Box of the Contraceptive pills and Threw it away

" Don't worry~ I took one of those~ Take me Kiyotaka~ "

I closed in another Quick Kiss, She Grabbed the Back of my Neck and Started to get herself Ready.

I placed Right at the entrance using my Hand and Slowly slid it in and pushed it Gently inside.

I Stopped when my Member hit a Thin piece of Tissue, It must be her Hymen. I looked up at her and She gave me a nod This is Gonna hurt

" Nnnnnghhhhhhhhhh "

She Screamed with all her might in her Blanket as i destroyed her Hymen *I took her Virginity*

Her eyes went Blank, Digging her Nails in my Skin aggressively, Leaving marks in there

Blood came Running out of her Entrance and Slid Across my member all the Way through my Legs. She Regained her senses and looked at me

" You can Move~ The Pain is gone~ " She smiled with Tears in her eyes

I slowly started moving my hips, As she Started Moaning in Agony, Soon turned Into Pleasure

" Kiyoko~ Faster Faster~ "

I obliged and Increased my Pace, Causing her to moan even Loudly and Seductively

" Ngh~ "

I grabbed her by the Wrist and Deepened my Reach.

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

With Each thrust she moans, She let her Mouth open sliding her Tongue out In Pleasure

" Kiyoooo~ Deepeeeeeer~ "

I obliged Pushing it even Deeper and Faster. She went Crazy out of Pleasure

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

I kept Penetrating her, With each thrust, She moans, It was such a Coordinated Relationship.

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

She went crazy out of Pleasure, I kept Thrusting her until she lost her mind

" Honami, I'm Gonna- "

My Member started getting More Sensetive and Filled, The Symptoms of an Orgasm

" Give it~ Ngh~ All to me~ Ngh~ Kiyooo~ Nghhhhh~ "

I increased my Pace at the Last Moments. At the Last second I pushed it all inside, She Screamed as she Started to get Filled up

" NGHGHHHHHHHGHGHHHH~ "

Her Body Started Twitching, As more and More of my semen Filled her. As i pulled it out, The same hot liquid as before came Running. She had her own too

" That~ was~ Amazing~ " She said. Satisfaction and Pleasure On Her Face

Her Entrance Started Dripping in multiple Liquids, Her Love Juice was coming out, Drenching her Bed sheet, But she Didn't Care

She rose up and Grabbed me by my Member and Pulled me towards her, She Crouched in the Ground and Faced my Member

" It's even Bigger than my head " She Marked as she started Touching it " But i love it~ Let me play with it~ I'll make you feel good too~ "

Without any warning, She grabbed it rounding her Whole Hand around it, Pulling it up and down

Some of my semen that was Stuck started Coming out. She Grinned as she Put the Tip in her lips cleaning it using her Tongue

I moaned a little as she Started Slurping it

" It isn't as Delicious as they claim in Manga~ But i don't mind it~ It's yours~ "

She Put the Tip in her Mouth and started Swallowing it, Until it Reached the Entrance of her Throat, My member Started feeling her

Hot Mouth as Saliva started Covering it. She Started Coughing up and Pulled away

She licked off the Saliva on top and Started Swallowing it again, This time playing with the parts that couldn't fit inside her Mouth

She spread the Saliva to those Parts making is Slippery, As she Started aggressively Sucking the Life out of my member. I couldn't help but Start Moaning as a Result

" Heehee~ " She Chuckled at me Moaning "

She Grabbed both of her Breasts and put my Member Between them. At that I softly moaned

" You like that ? You naughty boy~ "

She Started wobbling her Breasts off Sync around it, It was such a great hot sensation.

My Member was triggered to the fullest, I couldn't feel anything other than her.

" Honami. I'm Close "

She put her Lips all over my Top swallowing it with her Tongue as she Started increase her Pace Drastically

" Nghhhh~ "

I came right inside her Mouth, She Swallowed it even deeper as my Waves of Semen Poured inside her Hot Mouth.

She made sure to Swallow every single drop and Cleaned my Member after wards.

She Slowly Crawled on the bed and Caught my lips for a passionate kiss, I laid on the Side Embracing her to deepen our Kiss.

After we Broke up She Pushed me Face up and sat on top

" You can rest~ Let me move~ " I nodded

She Put my Member inside her entrance and Let it completely Flunk her

" NGHHHH~ "

She moaned loudly, My member was Completely Swollen by her Entrance, It started shaping to fit it

She Started Slowly moving, Moaning each time she moves.

" Nghhh~ Nghhhh~ Nghhh~ Nghhh~ Nghhhhhhh~ "

She was bouncing up and down, Making her Large Breasts bounce too, Lust over took me as i grabbed both of her Breasts causing her To moan Loudly

" Kiyo~ You pervert~ " She Stopped " This is your Punishment for groping without Permission~ "

She slowly started increasing her Pace, Bouncing at rapid Speed, She is way faster than i thought

" Take that~ Ngh~ Pervert~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Nghh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

She Kept bouncing up and down completely Dominating the Pace, A Look of Great Satisfaction and Pleasure on her Face.

" Ghrz~ Ghrz~ Ghrz~ Ghrz~ "

She slid her Tongue out and Moaned.

" NGHHHHHHH~ "

I came inside her without a warning, Her Body Started twitching and fell on top of me

I Embraced her in a tight Hug, Pleasure and Warmth came from the Colliding Skins of Ours

" You're still good to go ? " I asked

" What do you take me for~? I can stay all night~ " I kissed her in the Forehead

I grabbed both of her Boobs gently and Started Sucking them

" Mnnnnnnn~ "

I Violently Sucked the life out of them, Giving them Hickeys.

" Mnnnnnnhgh~ "

I placed two fingers on each sized and Twisted them, Pulled them, Played with them while licking her stomach giving her Immense Pleasure

I Grabbed her Waist and Forcefully turned her around, She Tried to stand up but i Pulled her Hips up causing her to fall at her Chest, She Turned her head around to look at me, Giving me a good look at her face

" Do Yo- "

Without any warning, I pushed my Member inside her for Anal sex

" NGHHHHHHH~ "

i Started Thrusting her from behind, Using my Full Length.

" Yes~ Yes~ Yes~ Yes~ Yes~ Yes~ "

With each Thrust she Voiced in Pleasure

" Faster Kiyo~ Faster~ Faster~ "

I increased my Pace, Throwing Strong Fast Strokes behind, She lost her mind.

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

I switched back towards her Entrance, And Pushed it all Inside

" NGHHHHHHHHH~ "

I quickened my pace even more, Pushing it inside in rapid speed. She Basically went Crazy

" Yes~ Yes~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Kiyo~ Ngh~ Ravage me~ "

With each Stroke i hit har Deepest Parts, Her Womb is my Punching bag

" Mnnnghhhhhhhhhhh~ "

I lost count on how many times She Came. I lost on mine too. But that wasn't important, The Important thing is Ravaging her and Making a mess out of her

I kept Thrusting her Behind for 30 Minutes, With her Moaning in great Pleasure as a result of my Strong thrusts. She Surprisingly has a lot of Stamina

We Kept going all night, It was such a pleasant experience, Especially with the ones you love

If those Walls weren't sound proof, We would've been dead Right now.

It was 3:10 AM when she Got Exhausted. She laid Gently beside me Completely Naked, We didn't bother to wear anything

" This night was very long Kiyotaka~ "

" It was a long exhausting Night, But did you have Fun ? "

" I had a lot of fun~ Did you enjoy it as much ? "

" Yes "

" Let's do this again sometimes~ But next time It would be no holding back~ "

" What do you mean ? I didn't hold back "

" Like i would believe you~ You decided to go gentle~ But next time i want you to Ravage me~ and Make a mess out of me~ Destroy me using your T-Rex and Make me Go Crazy~ " She Commanded Lustfully and Seductively. It was very hard to not Obey

" I would do that next time "

" Good night Kiyotaka~ "

" Good Night Honami " I kissed her on the Forehead and instantly went in a deep slumber

Fun fact : If you fapped to a lemon made by a guy that means a boy was,able to make you cum.

Sayonara Gae

Ichinose Honami SS : A Wish

The Future is uncertain. You would never know what it has for you

The Future cannot be Predicted or Foreseen

Then why ? Why am i believing this ?

I never actually believed in Fortune Telling, I thought of it as a fun activity to satisfy your Curiosity

This isn't my first time i went to a fortune teller, But this is Different

I never once thought much about what they say, But this is Different

Why is this different ?

Because she Accurately predicted what i have been through ? No

Because of the Future she predicted for me ? No

It is different, Because *he* is here

' You lived in a harsh world all by yourself '

' Your Parents never loved you '

' You had no one to call a friend '

' You never received love '

Those..... Are all true

Kiyotaka has lived through a very harsh past, Way harsher than what i lived

' If you return.... You will die '

No..... I don't want him to die

Please don't die Kiyotaka, I don't want you to die ! I Don't want you to leave me !

' I promise i won't '

His words were Warm and Reassuring, But i still couldn't stop worrying

When his Father Contacted him, I became Paranoid

I was scared that Kiyotaka would break his promise

But i have to trust him, That is the least i could do

When his Father invited me I decided to face him, And try to convince him

I know it well that it was Futile, But i decided to try my best

But i didn't expect his Father to be So Cruel. Even more Cruel than i imagined

How can people like him exist ?

How can someone be so cruel ? It was unimaginable for me
White Room..... Is the place where Kiyotaka is from
And His Father wants him to come back there
But if he went back.... He will die

Kiyotaka Rejected his Father and kept his Promise, But i couldn't
stop worrying

' What is The White Room ? '

Kiyotaka decided to let me in, On his darkest secret.

I was nervous to learn it, It could hurt him.

But he was Resigned to tell me everything, Just as i resigned
myself to him

I promised myself, Before he Tells me that

No matter what he'll tell me, I'll always love him and Stay by his
side

I don't know what fate has for us, But if it's a bad one, Then i'll
work hard to destroy it and Create my own fate alongside him

I wish that it doesn't come to that, I want Kiyotaka to be cured
from his Trauma and Become Human again. And i want to be the
one who cures him

That's my wish

Antagonist SS

I rushed this chapter and i didn't want to re-edit it or atleast make it better, I just wanted you to have the general idea

I've had an Amazing Childhood, I was a happy little girl with happy Family and a lot of friends

Many people dreamed to have a Childhood like me, And i was thankful i had it

My mother and Father were loving and caring, My friends were all nice and lovely.

I am good at studying and sports, I am not the smartest but i was smart.

I loved my life and everything in it

I wished that it will continue

I thought that things would stay the same, Life would keep treating me nice

But, Life wasn't as nice as i thought it would

I learned it the hard way....

....That life has cruel sides

I was in my second year of middle school, When that day happened

My mom was engaging in prostitution activities

That day, My family broke apart. My happy family that i thought it would never break, Perished in a single day

I was left alone, Neither my Parents wanted to take care of me

My Grandmother was kind enough to take care of me. But she overworked me and abused me in the Contrary

I still kept going to school, But the news were already Spread.

All of the friends i cared about deserted me, People started turning their back on me.

As a result, I was bullied. They threw harsh words and did violent act, They even tried to harrass me

The school just gave them warnings, But it was empty, I complained and complained, But even they didn't do anything

One day, I was dragged by force in one of the alleys

They started relentlessly bullying me, Punching me, Kicking me, Pulling me from the Hair. Even they started touching me

I fought back, But I was completely shut down

' Your mother is a prostitute, So you are '

' You inherited her Genes, So Prostitution is in your blood '
' You don't have to fight back you Whore, Just give up '
' Let us do it and you'll make your mother Proud '
They wanted to Assault me, Just because of my mother
I was about to get sexually assaulted, What is disgusting is that
even the girls were helping them
I accepted my fate against their unyielding force
However, *He Came*
' Don't you dare lay a finger on her, You filth '
He bravely fought against them all, And defeated all of them
He was my hero, The Blonde hero
He embraced me with his strong arms after he saved me. He was
my savior Nagumo Miyabi
Since that day He was protecting me from the bullies
I fell for him, How can't i be
He accepted my love with open arms.
After that, I regained some hope in life. But this time, I was
prepared
He helped evolve and understand life better.
He gave me a second chance, And i will not fail him
We were fortunate that we got accepted in this school, What's
more in the same Class.
At his request, We decided to keep our relationship a secret. So i
didn't refuse
I wanted to spend all my time with him. I was sad, But whatever
makes Miyabi Happy
He Joined the Student council, And so did i
We lead our Class Together towards Class A, Miyabi is such a
great leader

His birthday was coming up, I walked towards Keyaki Mall to buy
him a gift.

I checked his location, So i won't bump into him

" Good " He is at the student council room

Miyabi works very hard since he got promoted to the Vice-
President, And he is our Class's Leader

I walked across multiple sections, These are all good Gifts but not
good enough

Miyabi only deserves the best

I spent a lot of time running across multiple sections. However.....

I noticed a silhouette just disappeared from the Corner, It was
very familiar.

It was Miyabi. I thought he was at the student council

He was looking down Depressed, My heart started aching at his Sight

I completely abandoned my shopping and ran behind him

" Miyabi ! " I called out to him. He stopped and Looked back. But i stiffened, His eyes were dead, Emotionless, Depressed

" Nazuna " He muttered my name

" Miyabi, What happened to you ? " At my words, His eyes filled with emotions. But it wasn't pleasant, He was Angry, Frustrated. Hatred, Resent all overflowed from his eyes

" Nazuna " He muttered my name again

" Y-Yes Miyabi ? " I didn't realize it i was Trembling.

" This is Good Bye Nazuna "

" G-G-Good bye ? " No, Is he serious ?

" I got expelled " At his words something inside me broke.

" N-No..... Are you serious ? "

" Someone plotted all of this, And planned my expulsion " Someone did this ? " I am leaving you because of them Nazuna "

Tears started to flow freely from my eyes. Flashbacks of losing a beloved one played

I broke apart, Crying freely, Miyabi Gently embraced me

" Miyabi Noooooooooo "

I cried fountains while he was embracing me.

I felt anger, Hatred, Resent Rush through my body.

" Who did this Miyabi ? Who ? " Miyabi's lips went closer to my ears and whispered

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class 1-A "

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

It is awfully familiar.... Oh

He is the boy who Interested Fuka-chan. When he humiliated the President's Younger sister

His face Flashed through my head

Instantly, Anger, Resent, Despise, Hatred came from that name.

I will take revenge on you, For separating from my beloved one

Ayanokouji I will make you pay

I will make your high school life a living hell, I will Destroy you, I will Make you suffer

But i cannot carry my hatred Publicly, I sealed it inside

I took leadership after Miyabi in the class. Due to his expulsion we were demoted back towards Class B

I cannot lead the Class like Miyabi did, But i will lead it to achieve one goal

Taking revenge on Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

In summary, Asahina fell victim to Nagumo's hobby of prying in women at their weak mental states and became Obsessed

with him

And yes, She would be the Antagonist from here on out

I wouldn't disclose more details. You can find out in future chapters

Arc 5 Chap 1 : The Sports Festival

Today is the start of a New Semester in our First-Year of High school, The sky was Clear and Beautiful

It was 1st of September, the last Month of Summer. Fall is right around the corner

It has been 2 days since that night with Honami, It was my First Time experiencing it, And it was Amazing to say the least

Honami didn't leave her room yesterday, I sent her a message around noon which she responded to around 6 PM, She slept the entire day, She was exhausted so she remained in her room for the rest of it

I was walking towards the school alone, Reminiscing about The Previous events, Students were happily passing by, Excited for the second semester

However, Second Semester to me means more Classes, Which leads to me getting bored out of my mind since i learned and mastered everything the school has to offer

An idea came to my head, What if i pay Private Points to skip every Class ?

That would certainly give me more free time without damaging the class. However, Having a lot of free time would get you lazy

In fact, I know someone who is almost always free so he started to laze around and discover his talents. Currently, He is too hung up on his fanfiction since he is bored. I *hope he finds Salvation*

Back at the topic in hand, I doubt the Teachers would accept such a proposal anyway, It is too preposterous.

" Oh ? Good morning Ayanokouji-kun ! " A Sweet voice called out behind me. I turned around to find Kushida along with her Female friends

" Good Morning Kushida " I Greeted back using my monotone voice. She Sweetly smiled at me and walked closure

" Do you mind if we go to school together ? " Requested Kushida

" I don't mind. But do they ? " I said looking towards her female group friends who were somewhat reluctant

" Of course they don't~ Right guys ? " Kushida Turned to look at them, They all nodded slightly " See ? It's okay~ "

" I see " They caught up to me and we started walking towards school. I was gonna get Centered in the middle so i decided to go to

the Far left side, Kushida followed me and stood right on my side

" So~ How was the pool the other day ? " She asked

" It was a very fun day " *And night.* I added in my head

" That is nice to hear~ " She Expressed " You were so cool when you played with the President, You ended up capturing a lot of girls's heart ! Way to go Ayanokouji-kun~ " She nudged me with her elbow with a wink. *If i was any boy i would've been head over heels now.*

" They should know that i am already taken no ? " I asked. She giggled

" You would still capture the hearts of women Regardless~ I mean you're very handsome and athletic, Your personality is getting better. Even if you have a girlfriend, Alot of *bad~ girls~* would try and steal you~ " She said the last part with a seductive tone while grinning at me.

" I'm flattered Kushida. But their efforts would be in vain " I said, She looked disappointed. But quickly regained her cheery expression

We walked in silence, Kushida was deep in thought contemplating about something, I decided to ask something.

" By the way, Does Horikita hate me or something ? " It is obvious, But Kushida came to talk to me with an ulterior motive, I expected it to be about Horikita. Her surprise right now confirms it

" Oh ? Horikita-san ? " I nodded " I don't want to be giving you wrong ideas, But she appears to hold a grudge against you "

" It's probably when we discussed about the Alliance " I sighed

" Are you feeling sorry Ayanokouji-kun ? " Asked Kushida with a slightly higher tone

" Nope. Truth to be told, Her Bratty attitude is annoying to deal with "

" That isn't nice Ayanokouji-kun " Kushida marked

" But i only spoke the truth no ? Someone needs to giver her an earing " I continued " It is lame that someone like her is Manabu's younger sister. Such a shame " I shook my head. Kushida fell silent, She was trying her best not to laugh

" Her attitude isn't nice, I agree. But she is our Leader Ayanokouji-kun, She is smart and athletic too " Kushida Admitted

" Guess that's right " We Reached the school's building " Thank you for Accompanying me guys. I appreciate it "

I bid farewell to the girls and made my way towards the my classroom

Kushida wanted to talk with me about Horikita, But she couldn't find the opening to do so. I gave her a hollow one, But she avoided the trap

Kushida is smart when it comes to emotional intelligence, She knows how someone is feeling by the mere sight on their faces.

She tried to indicate that she fell for me to gauge some sort of reaction out of me as a test of her abilities, But that is too short sighted

It may be a common action by everyone to try and break my poker face, But that is not the case with her

I came to the conclusion that Kushida tried to seduce me to use me against Horikita, I may be reading too much into it, But the likelihood of this happening is pretty high

I pushed those thoughts at the back of my mind and walked inside the Classroom, Everyone inside welcomed me with warm smiles that made me feel at home

I sat on my Chair and scanned the Class Room, Honami hasn't arrived yet. It is strange since she always arrives early

" Good morning Ayanokouji " Kanzaki greeted me as he walked to his seat

" Good Morning Kanzaki " I greeted back

" Seems like Ichinose hasn't arrived yet " He noted

" Seems so " I said as i gazed through the window. Kanzaki sat on his desk and started revising

Moments later the door slid open, I turned around and Found Honami

She stood in front of the door and received everyone's greetings.

She started walking towards her seat, But her legs were wobbling very badly, She was barely able to walk

She avoided my gaze all the way towards her Chair, When she sat she looked at me with her usual smile

" Good morning Kiyotaka~ " Greeted Honami

" Good Morning Honami " I greeted back with a small smile.

She greeted Kanzaki too. And soon the bell rang.

Chie-sensei waltzed in the room carrying some Papers while looking as Cheerful as ever

She put the Papers on the teacher's podium and Cleared her Throat

" Good morning everyone~ I hope you're all doing well. Starting from today Classes would be back in action for the second term~ Isn't that exciting~ " She Jumped Raising her fist in the air out of cheerfulness, The students started cheering on. While i took a good old deep sigh

Honami glanced at me and started chuckling. Soon the teacher continued

" Also~ Starting now, There would be more Physical education sessions until the beginning of October~ That is for the Preparation

of the Sports festival~ "

" Sports Festival ? " Muttered Shibata. Chie-sensei nodded

" Mhm~ In the Sports Festival, There would be multiple events, Team and individual ones, Alongside The recommended events ! " All of my classmates were confused, I wasn't better " Oopsie~ I forgot to disturb those Hand outs~ They contain everything you need to know~ So check them out and if you have any questions Just ask me~ "

A hand out reached my desk that contained the Guidelines and explanations to the sports festival :

Guidelines

1. The sports festival's competitive system is built upon dividing all school years between the Red Team and the White Team.

Class A and Class D will be on the Red Team.

Class B and Class C will be on the White Team

2. Allocation of points for all participants in the competitions (Individual Contests)

1st placer gets 15 points

2nd placer gets 12 points

3rd placer gets 10 points

4th placer gets 8 points

1 point each will be deducted for placing lower than 5th place.

3. In the case of team competitions, the winning team will be allocated 500 points.

4. Allocation of points for participants of recommended competitions

1st placer gets 50 points

2nd placer gets 30 points

3rd placer gets 15 points

4th placer gets 10 points

2 points each will be deducted for placing lower than 5th place

5. The relay which will be the final contest will be awarding 3 times the points.

6. The impact of the outcome of Red Team vs. White Team

From the totality of all the school years the losing team will have 100 points equally subtracted from their class points across all school years.

7. The impact of separate ordering of school years

The class that takes 1st place will be awarded 50 class points.

The class that takes 2nd place will not have any change to their class points.

The class that takes 3rd place will have 50 class points deducted.

The class that takes 4th place will have 100 class points deducted

" We have to co-operate with other classes ? " Kanzaki's Mutter

was Heard by Chie-sensei

" Yes Kanzaki-kun~ Class A and D in each grade are placed together in the Red team. The reverse is True on the White team that you'll be fighting against~ But outside of that, You're all enemies "

In the Individual and recommended Events it would be a Class effort, In the Team Competitions we have to cooperate with our allies from Class D in order to gain victory to the Red Team

This is more like a special exam than a festival

I Checked the Back Paper and read the Rest

8. MVP Rewards : The student who receives the Highest Score among all grades would Receive 100,00 P.P (The reward Multiplies by 1.5x For Second-Years and by 2 for the First-Years)

9. MVP Reward for Each Grade Level : The student who Receives the Highest Score among their Grade would be awarded 10.000 P.P (The same for all Grades)

There is also some Individual Competition that gives you the Option between Private Points or Marks in a Written test. Those rewards would cause a huge fuss over Classes C and D which Grades aren't so good. The Bad-Academically Athletic students would be starving to Grind those easy points. However, The debate comes from the students who want to gain Private Points.

On the Contrary, If you come in last, They would deduct 1.000 P.P Or 1 Mark if you don't have them

Our Class aren't in poverty nor Bad Academically, So this isn't a Problem

There is also a list of the Events that is separated by Gender or mixed. And Finally some Rule Violation Warnings, If *you were Caught* you would be disqualified.

The 1200 Meter Relay race is the only Event that lumps all school years together, With Triple the amount of points for the winner Class. It could possibly be the tie breaker between the Red vs White Competition

" You may discuss the participation table right now~ You have until the end of this month to send it, In other words, A week before the Sports festival, You cannot Change it after that~ However, You only have this Hour to discuss it between each other~ The next hour would be a gathering in the Gymnasium~ So use your time wisely~ " Chie-sensei gave us permission to discuss. The Students assembled on Honami's Desk and Kanzaki's, I Didn't have to move since i'm between them

" Man i'm so excited " Expressed Shibata. The Athletic students like him are pumped up as well, Which is understandable.

" Does anyone have ideas ? " Asked Honami. No one tried to

suggest anything, Except for Kanzaki

" I have a plan "

" What is it Kanzaki-kun ? " Honami prompted Kanzaki to speak

" I Think we should focus on winning as many events as we possibly can using our Physical prowess students " Suggested Kanzaki

" I think that too Kanzaki-kun. But In order to do that, We have to sacrifice some events " Responded Honami

" Yes. But we can ensure that we would get first places " Kanzaki's plan was the best course of action for our Class, And i think everyone agrees with him

Our Class has no problems Academically, Nor we are in poverty. So we could give up on those rewards and focus on winning Points to increase our Chances for First place

By sacrificing the Weak students, We can ensure that we can dominate the other Competitions using our Strong students, That would also Increase the Chances of winning. However

If we end up putting students against unrivaled people like Me or Kouenji. Our Plan would fall apart. However, I Doubt there is people like us, The Closest one is Sudo but he is very far behind. And I Doubt Kouenji would actually Participate, Except if i am Participating too.

" I Agree with your Plan Kanzaki-kun. Do you guys have any problem with focusing on Victory instead of Rewards ? " All of my Classmates shook their Head. They are all onboard " Great ! Now that's settled ! "

Me, Kanzaki, Shibata, Ando, Minamikata and Ryouta were the Strongest Physically in our Class, So we were Assigned to Multiple events, Our Class is heavily Relying on our Performance and I can say for sure that i would get First place on all of them

The Bell rang signaling the start of our Second Homeroom Period, We were ordered to Gather in the Gymnasium

Every stood up and went Towards the Gymnasium. As for myself....

" Allow me to help you " Honami was still wobbling very Badly, I don't know what happened to her but She can barely walk

" Ah Kiyotaka~ Thank you.... " Her face Turned Red as she Accepted my Help. I crouched In front of her to give her a piggyback " I hate to Burden you~ I'm sorry "

" You aren't burdening me at all " I said before Adjusting my

stance for a more Comfortable Hold " What happened to you ? "

" Ah Ummm..... My legs are numb from that time " *I see*

I caught up with the rest of the students while Carrying Honami in my back. Fate has it that Amikura was the first to notice us

" Ara Ara Honami-chan~ What could possibly be wrong with you so that Ayanokouji-kun has to carry you~? " At this Most of the Class turned towards us. *Sigh*

Honami turned even more Red, She Tried to Respond but Air is what came out. Amikura's grin went wider

" She is Injured, She Can't walk " I Clarified. With this they lost Interest.

There was around 400 students gathered around the Gymnasium including Staff members. Multiple classes gathered each other

We walked as a Class and settled in a Corner close to Class D

" Mmmmmmm~ " Honami Moaned softly behind me.

I looked at her to see her Sniffing my Hair, Eyes Closed with a satisfied smile. At my Sudden movement She opened her eyes and looked at me, Her Cheeks started getting hotter as she smirked at me

Soon, Fujimaki From Class 3-A walked towards our Gathering. He is The Representative of the Soccer Club who gave us the soccer Field to play. Beside him was....

" Good morning Kouhai-kun. Already Cheating on me i see " Kiryuin with her infamous smirk appeared beside Fujimaki, There was also Kiriya and Manabu who both grinned at me

" Good Morning Kiryuin-senpai. And how can i cheat on you when we aren't in a relationship on the first place ? " I responded. Her smirk didn't waver

" Already Abandoning me Kouhai-kun ? What about the Future we promised each other ? What happened to having 10 Kids ? You Cheater " She Wiped an invisible tear while smirking. I could feel Honami nervousness, If even Slightly

" Stop it Kiryuin. We are on Important Business here " Manabu stopped the teasing and Looked towards Fujimaki " Fujimaki you can start "

Fujimaki cleared his Throat and faced both Our Class and Class D

" Good morning First-Years. I am Fujimaki from Class 3-A, The person put in charge of the Red Team " He Bowed. I thought Manabu was gonna be In charge. I looked at him and he nodded at me " You may not feel motivated Right now, But we are going and win this thing. I want you to hold in that feeling "

Fujimaki kept going on with cheering us all up, He was taking this quite seriously

" Honami " During his speech i Spoke to Honami

" Yes Kiyotaka ? " She Responded in a whisper

" Why is Kiriya and Kiryuin here, I thought they were Class B " I asked

" They reclaimed their Spot after Nagumo was expelled. They also won the last exam with an overwhelming margin " *I see*

Nagumo was the only Leader in his Class. So his expulsion must've threw them into disarray, Someone most likely took charge and failed

" Thank you Honami "

" You're welcome Very Much~ " She gave me a peck on the cheek.

Soon After Fujimaki was done, Class D with Horikita and Hirata leading them walked up to us

" Good Morning ! " Hirata Waved while Horikita didn't do much of a Gesture

I walked up towards them and Bowed. Horikita gave me a weird Look while Hirata was pouting. Never mind that

" I'm sorry to have to talk with you like this " Apologized Honami. Kanzaki slowly made his way to my side

" No It's okay Ichinose-san. We understand " Hirata Reassured. But there was something off about him

" What did you want to talk with about ? " Asked Kanzaki

" We wa- " Hirata was about to speak

" Simply put, We don't want you to get in our way " Said Horikita bluntly

" Get in your way ? " Kanzaki repeated for Clarification, Horikita sighed

" During individual competitions, We don't want you to get in the way of our runners " Her Statement wasn't complete, Is she testing our intelligence or something ?

" What do you mean by that Horikita-san ? " Honami asked. Horikita was visibly Irritated at her question

" You don't understand do you ? I'll put it in simpler terms, We don't want you to put your best runners against ours during individual events " Clarified Horikita irritated. *So that's what she means* " Did i really need to put it in that way for you to understand ? How ignorant can you be ? "

" You mean you want to co-operate with us Horikita-san ? " Asked Honami

" Yes " Horikita answered " Do i need to say it out loud for you to understand ? Are you that stu- "

" Are you a clown ? " I Blurted out, Horikita glared daggers at me

" What do you mean 'clown' You guys can't understand anything i sa- "

" Because anything you say doesn't make sense. If you wanted cooperation you could've come and asked nicely, But your words came as a threat " I Clarified

" A Threat ? I was nice enough to come and talk to yo- "

" Ayanokouji-kun is right Horikita-san. It was like you were threatening them " Kushida butted in the conversation out of nowhere

Horikita took a good look at Kushida, Before Sighing in Resignation

" You're right Kushida-san " Said Horikita

" You should apologize Horikita-san. It was your fault so don't you think they deserve at least that ? " Advised Kushida. Horikita was about to Fight, But Gave up and Faced us

" I am sorry for my Behavior " She bowed, But her irritation was Visible.

Everyone was shocked at her actions, I wasn't better. The ice queen apologized for her cold behavior ?

" It's okay Horikita-san " Honami Accepted. Horikita quickly rose herself looking embarrassed

After that, We started working on a Participation Table for Both our Classes. Honami and Kanzaki were Clearly Wary since Kushida is present, So we didn't leak any Valuable information

This meeting Helped Honami Finalize Her Table. There was some dispute between Horikita and Hirata but it all came down to Kushida, At the end we came on top with the best possible outcome.

" Do you think Kushida-san would Betray Class D Again ? " After they Departed, Honami asked me. Still riding on my back

" Undoubtedly, But this time it won't affect our Class "

Our Classes had the best Athletic Students on the Whole First-Year, By spreading them across every event we most likely ensured our High Placement for the Red Team Squad

All that Sakayanagi and Ryueen could do is Exploit the Blind spots on our Arrangement, But the best they Could achieve is First place on Two events at Max. They could achieve Second Places on the Rest, But it is Clear that The Red team would come on top in the Individual events

On the Surface, That's the Case. The Foul play Rule doesn't Completely Forbid foul play, Stated by ' *if you were Caught* ' Which means that there is bound to be Foul Play where Ryueen excels at better than everybody else

I can already Predict that Class D is bound to come Last, The Rest is unknown.....

Arc 5 Chap 2 : Nagumo's Shadow looming

*** HONAMI POV ***

The Preparations for the Annual Sports Festival has Started at the Same day of it's announcements

We alongside Our Teammates from the Red Team Class D assembled on a Gymnasium together right after The second Homeroom Period ended for one of our Physical Sessions

Everyone was Pumped up and Happy, Sudo-kun and Shibata-kun were the ones to take the Lead for The Practices

As for myself, I was still Riding on Kiyotaka's back for more than an Hour. My legs were still numb from..... *That time. Why is it stuck on my mind ? It's so embarrassing You should Focus, Find something to distract yourself With, Ah yes that*

" Kiyotaka are you okay ? You've been Carrying me for an Hour " He didn't look Tired in the Slightest

" I'm Completely fine, Don't worry about it " He Reassured

" But, You must be Exhausted, You've been Carrying me for a long time now "

" I've Dealt with worse on that place. So you don't have to worry, I'm not Tired at all "

" Right.... If you say so " That place which he means with it The White Room

It is still mysterious to me, Even after Kiyotaka explained to me what it is. He went through a lot in that place causing him to become Very strong and Very Smart too, But it came at a price

" Alright Everyone " Hirata-kun Clapped Gathering everyone's Attention " In order for us to put the Correct Participants on the Team Competitions, We have to Measure Everyone's Abilities. So I've requested some Tools to help us Measure and Practice too "

Hirata Grabbed a Device appeared to be A Grip Strength measurement " We will start off by Testing Our Grip Strengths. After you are done, I Will write down your scores and the Best students would participate in the events like Tug-of-war. Is everything Clear ? " Everyone Cheered as a Response " Great then. Let's Start with The Girls from Class D "

Class D Girls went one by one to test their Strength. Horikita-san Pulled out An Astonishing 35 KG, Sudo-kun Informed Hirata-kun with the Number and he Wrote it down. Next to her was a Girl

called Onodera with 34 KG. They are pretty Strong especially since they Are Girls

Next was Our Class, I tried to hop off but Kiyotaka stopped me. I Resisted, But so did he. He informed Hirata-kun that i was Injured and he understood *Jeez he can be so protective sometimes... But that side of him is Cute*

First was Mako-chan. She got 26 KG which is above average, Shibata-kun complimented her but she Teased him instead. They are a very sly Duo

Chihiro-chan got 22 KG which is Below Average. *Don't worry Chihiro-chan, Your Heart is Strong*

Kozue-chan and Sayo-chan Both got 32 KG which is Very Impressive.

Class D Boys went Next. Sudo-kun took the Lead and pulled out a shocking 82 KG. Everyone was Impressed and started Complimenting him which he Blushed at

The Next was Hirata-kun, And he Pulled a 55 KG Which is Way above average, All the Girls started Complimenting him. The disgusting perver- I mean Yamauchi-kun and Ike-kun went next and Started flexing their Biceps, At the end they both pulled 32 KG which is.... I don't know how to describe it. They Complained that the Device is Broken and they got Shut down by Sudo-kun.

" Right, Next is Kouenji-kun " Announced Hirata-kun.

" Fufu " Kouenji-kun closed the hand mirror and nonchalantly walked towards Sudo-kun " Give me that "

He snatched the Device away from Sudo-kun and Positioned himself to pull, He took a deep breath and got Ready. Suddenly, He Turned towards me and Kiyotaka

" Watch and Learn Ayanokouji-boy. I'm gonna show you some perfect Results " Kouenji-kun Boasted to Kiyotaka who Shrugged

Kouenji-kun Grabbed the Handle and Started Pulling it. It started at 60 and Rose to 70... 80...90....110

Everyone had a look of disbelief and Shock on their Faces. The Counter then Reached 125 and Kouenji-kun Started Struggling. With final Movements It reached

" 127.8 KG Truly a magnificent Results for a Perfect Existence " Kouenji-kun Turned Towards Kiyotaka with a smirk. Kiyotaka shrugged it again.

The Gymnasium Turned into an uproar, Kouenji-kun's Results shocked everyone Including Sudo-kun. No one could believe a High school student could pull something like that. I became somewhat Curious about Kiyotaka's Score

If Kiyotaka was Trained since he was born. Does that mean he is as Strong as him ? While we were doing it on that night, He was strongly

adjusting my position while i had no chance to resist his strength..... He was thrusting behind me with a lot of strength that cause me to go Cripple..... Wha- What am i thinking about ? Bad Bad Baaaaaaaaaaaaaad

" Now for Class A Boys " Hirata-kun Announced snapping me out of my dirty thoughts

" You should go Kiyotaka~ I'll be fine " I Told him while my face was still red. He walked towards a Chair and Crouched, I Slowly Descended from his Back and Slowly sat on my chair

I gave Kiyotaka a Nod with a smile, He responded with the same before going to Test His Strength. Mako-chan and the Others Joined me on my spot and started spectating

" Who do you think would win ? " Asked Chihiro-chan. Every girl was deep in thought

" Hmmmm.... I think Ayanokouji-kun is gonna win. Shibata-kun and Kanzaki-kun are also Strong, But Ayanokouji-kun may even be Stronger than Sudo-kun " Said Mako-chan. Every girl seems to believe that Kiyotaka is gonna win " What do you think Honami-chan ? "

" I also think Kiyotaka is gonna win. Not because he is my Boyfriend, I saw his Strength from up close " I Believe that Kiyotaka is stronger than Sudo-kun. But i don't know if he can Reach Kouenji-kun, But it is possible.

At my statement, Mako-chan displayed an evil grin at me, I know exactly what's gonna happen next

" Ho ? What do you mean by 'his strength up close' Honami-chan ? " Mako-chan Teased me " Could it be Related to why your legs are wobbling ? *gasp* Did you do it Honami-chan ? Kyaaaaaaaaaaa~ " Mako-chan went Crazy

" A-Anyway, Let's watch ! " I stuttered a bit. *Why does the scenes of that night always on my head ? Please do something about it*

Mako-chan chuckled and spectated.

The boys of our class went in line, First was Kiyotaka. He was about to test when

" No no no ! Stop Ayanokouji-boy " Kouenji-kun butted in and took the device from Kiyotaka " You should test the last. Just to build the suspense "

Kiyotaka didn't want to argue with him, sighed and walked towards the back. I was a bit disappointed but i can wait !

Shibata-kun was first, He pulled an 58 KG making him the Third between the boys at the moment. Kanzaki-kun pulled an 54 Slightly behind Hirata-kun, But it was Pretty high. Then the rest of our Class Went until Kiyotaka was left

" Lets go King ! " Shibata-kun Cheered. Instantly, More boys

jumped in.

Kiyotaka ignored them and went to the device, The cheers turned into silence of anticipation.

" Hey Hirata " Kiyotaka suddenly Called

" What is it Ayanokouji-kun ? " Hirata responded with a smile

" How much did Kouenji exactly get ? " Hirata-kun checked the papers

" 127.8 KG. Why did you ask ? "

" No reason " I somehow got a vague feeling. *No way.... Is he gonna....*

Kiyotaka took a deep sigh and Started pulling

It started at 40....50...60....90....120....

" 127.9 KG " Announced Kiyotaka nonchalantly. Everyone stared at him in silence, The whole gym was silent.

The First sound we heard was clapping, From Kouenji-kun

" Truly Amazing Ayanokouji-boy. To think you'd defeat me like that. Is this your way of proving superiority ? " Kouenji-kun smirked the whole time he spoke

" Prove superiority ? I am pretty sure i would lose if you didn't hold back Kouenji " Said Kiyotaka

" Don't do me like that Ayanokouji-boy. Even if i didn't hold back i am not sure if i can win " A Shock escaped everyone's mouth.

" All that and You're still holding back ? "

" You guys are crazy "

" How is that Human ? "

The gymnasium erupted into Chaos. But there was only one thing on my head

127 ???? And he's still holding back ????? How Strong is he ?????

I remembered the moment at that night when he grabbed my breasts

If he didn't hold back..... I would've lost them....

I unconsciously started touching my breasts, Checking their status. *Good they are fine*

Mako-chan stared at me with an open mouth, She couldn't mutter a word

" Right ! " Hirata-kun Recovered and Wrote Kiyotaka's score " So the Participants for the Tug-of-war are Ayanokouji-kun, Kouenji-kun, Sudo-kun and Shibata-kun "

Kouenji-kun went towards his phone and sent a message. He turned towards Kiyotaka and Smirked, Kiyotaka nodded and walked back to me

" Sorry for leaving you here " He Apologized. But i was still too shocked to move

" Ayanokouji-kun.... How did you get so strong ? " Asked Sayo-

chan. She knows how much training you need to get that strong

" Just a lot of practice. Piano and Calligraphy also came in handy as well " He answered

" You made Honami-chan scared for her life. You have to be gentle if you want your kids to have a healthy diet Ayanokouji-kun "

" Mako-chan said with a wide grin. *Kids ?*

" I see. I'll be gentle then " Kiyotaka nodded. *Did he want to go gentle so i can breastfeed his kids ? He is so considerate..... Wait his kids ?*

" Honami-chan is thinking about something hot~ Probably about having your kids Ayanokouji-kun " Mako-chan teased

" MAKO-CHAN ! " I Yelled. She alongside my friends started laughing at my face that is as red as a tomato

I glanced at Kiyotaka who was having a small genuine smile at our sly exchange.

I am glad that he is expressing more emotions

After the Crazy Fitness period, We returned back to our Classes for the rest of the day

I finally managed to complete the participation table for our Class. If i have to say, We have a pretty good chance of winning. I am not gonna submit it yet, Until the end of the month. If i was back in shape until then, I'll Participate.

Kiyotaka is now giving me another piggyback on our way towards the Dorms.

It is his way of taking responsibility for breaking me, Although i am the guilty one for that in the first place. But it feels good having other people take responsibility for my actions instead

I am gonna miss those piggybacks when i'm gonna get cured. But i can always manipulate him to break me again !

" Heehee~ " I giggled

" What's up Honami ? " Kiyotaka heard my giggles asked

" It's nothing important~ " I said before hugging him even tighter.
I love him way too much

" By the way. Does Manabu know that you would be absent ? " Kiyotaka asked

" Yep~ I messaged him about my condition and he understood " I Responded

" Cheating on me with my Senpai i see " Kiyotaka muttered.

" Hey ! " I tightened my hold on his neck. He choked

" Sorry " I Released his neck into an gentle embrace

" Do that again and i'll- "

" Oh ? Look what we found here guys " My words were cut by two Senpais who walked out from a corner in front of us. One of them was hiding something behind their back

" Oh ? You mean it's this guy ? " A Voice said behind us. I turned around to find 5 Senpais while 3 of them were holding bats

All 7 of them set a half circle siege on us, Cornering us against the wall. They were all angry and mad. My pulse instantly started running from nervousness

" Do you have business with me Senpais ? " Asked Kiyotaka with his monotone voice, He wasn't nervous at all

" Hell yes we do " Snapped one of them " We have a lot of business to deal with. You fucking Punk "

" Well if my memory didn't fail me, I Don't remember associating with anyone of you "

" Stop playing dumb. It was you who expelled Nagumo-kun True ? " So they are mad at Kiyotaka for expelling Nagumo.

" Me expelled the Vice-President ? Sorry but it wasn't me who issued his expulsion " Kiyotaka feigned ignorance

" Don't give us that bullshit. It was you who caused his expulsion " Snapped one of them

" If you put it that way then Yes " Kiyotaka triggered all of them, Killing intents were leaking from their eyes " But it wasn't me who manipulated his expulsion. It was his own stupidity "

" What do you fucking mean ? "

" Simply put, Nagumo was harassing my girlfriend so i expelled him. Seems reasonable no ? "

" You expect us to believe that ? Stop with the fucking excuses you fucking punk "

" It is not an excuse. I have proof to back it up " Said Kiyotaka confidently.

Doubt, Reluctance Replaced the upperclassmen's Hatred and Resent, But they still lingered. Kiyotaka is getting though them

" Oh yeah ? Show us then ! " Screamed one of them

" At the moment i can't, But if you don't want to wait you can go and ask Manabu-senpai himself " Kiyotaka Responded. Shocked expressions were plastered on their faces

" T-The President ?... " Muttered one of them

" Yes. Manabu was one of the witnesses too " All the

Upperclassmen stared at each other. *Yay, Kiyotaka Good job* " He also ha- "

" Are you believing him ? He expelled Miyabi ! " A Voice Appeared Behind one of the corners. Here a Figure emerged, It was

" Asahina-senpai ?! " It was my first time seeing her like this. Her eyes were full of hatred, Resent, Depression. It was completely different from her usual self " W-What happened to you Senpai ? Ar- "

" You stupid brat ! Why do you look so shocked ? " Snapped Asahina

" S-Senpai ?! What happened to you ? " I Asked. She looked like she is Ready to kill the both of us

" You ask what happened to me ? It was YOU who expelled Miyabi. It was YOU who turned me like this " Asahina threw the Blame at me. I couldn't comprehend what she said

" As i said. I only did what's right " Kiyotaka spoke

" You Liar ! " Asahina-senpai spat " You expelled Miyabi for your own Selfish Reasons. And you Dare hide behind that ? "

" Do you have proof ? Because i certainly have "

" Stop your Fucking nonsense ! " She Turned around to face her Classmates " What the fuck are you waiting for ? "

" Ummm.... The boy doesn't appear to be lying Asahina-sa- "

" Are you fucking believing this fucking snake ? He is a filthy liar ! He was good enough in lying to expel Miyabi ! Are you gonna let him use the same trick again ? " Asahina completely shut down every protest, She was blinded by rage at the loss of a loved one. All the upper class men were reluctant, Especially after seeing her Rage like that " Get this over already ! "

All the upperclassmen reluctantly started closing in on us. I instantly started getting paranoid. Not that i am afraid about Kiyotaka, *But i would be a burden for him*

" Are you believing her word over real proof ? " Asked Kiyotaka who wasn't nervous nor Paranoid in the slightest. *I have to believe in him*

" Shut up ! " Asahina-senpai screamed " Fuck him Already ! What are you all Doing ?! "

The senpais closed in the distance faster. Kiyotaka sighed

" Honami hold in tight " He whispered to me

" Oh O-Okay " I obliged and tightened my Embrace without Strangling him. He Held my legs firmly

He lower his stance and ran towards the front guy who was surprised and instinctively Swung his bat. But Kiyotaka...

" What ? "

" No way "

" How ? "

Kiyotaka deviated towards the wall and ran across it, Flying across the dumbfounded upperclassmen and once he was back on the ground, He bolted at an incredible speed completely deserting them. It was so fast that they gave up before running a couple of steps.

If Kiyotaka fought against them and beat them which is Most likely what's gonna happen. They could file a complain against him, There wasn't any cameras at that area too, So it would be Just like what Ryueen-kun did with Sudo-kun. So him Running away was the best course of action.

Kiyotaka kept running and Soon we reached the dorms, Everyone present at the lobby stared at us when we arrived.

We walked towards the elevator and I pressed for my Dorm's floor. We reached the floor and i opened the door.

Kiyotaka went in and placed me on the bed, Flashbacks automatically played on my head and my face started getting hotter. He gently removed my shoes and placed them on the shelf alongside his, He Closed the door and walked inside and opened the Closet, Giving me my Pyjamas

" Do you mind if i spend the night here ? " Asked Kiyotaka

" No~ I don't mind~ " I gave him a warm smile which he nodded at

He grabbed some of his clothes from my closet. I Kept them so i could snif- I mean so he can sleep over without worrying too much about his Clothes. I Kept them nice and tidy..... Hehe~

" Right, I'm gonna go to the bathroom and change. You can Call me when you're Do- " Kiyotaka walked towards the Bathroom door. But I Cut him right before he Opens it

" No ! " Kiyotaka turned towards me in confusion " You see~ I had a lot of difficulties this morning. So i want you to help me Change~ " *How bold of me.....*

" Are you sure ? " He asked me. I Nodded

" Yep~ No need to be shy about it~ We already did more than this~ " I Grinned at him

" Okay " He agreed and walked towards me, My Heart started racing " Brace yourself "

He took the Pyjamas and set them aside for the time being. He aimed his fingers at my hips and opened my skirt, Sliding it down all across my legs revealing my Thighs and undies.

My heart was beating to a pulp when he Ran his fingers across my Blazer Snatching it away, Followed up with my Shirt. And now i was only on my underwear

He stared at my figure for a long while, Admiring it and

examining every inch of it. Normally i would feel uncomfortable but it is him so i didn't mind. *But he won't escape*

" Pervert~ " I teased him

" Sorry. It's just you look so beautiful in your underwear " He Compliments

" *Baka* " I muttered

He grabbed my Pants and slid it across my legs all the way towards my hips covering it. He pulled the Hoodie and Helped me put it on. He ran his hands over all of my body Tidying it, *But he touched some parts. What a pervert*

" I'll go Change then " He Grabbed his Clothes and went towards the Door

" No ! " He turned towards me with a Confused Expression

" What now ? " He asked

" You think you can see me naked without a payback~? Change here~ " I Commanded. He sighed

" Alright " At his response i got excited

I got to see his body again, Not only that i am pretty sure he pitched a tent when he helped me get in my clothes so i'll get to see his massive member again !

I engineered this whole situation to see it again, Or at least the Bulge. I intentionally let him help me change so he would get a boner and use that as an excuse to see him change Heehee~ I know right ? I'm such a genius

" On second thought, No " A Lustful smile formed on my face and Kiyotaka noticed that.

" Noooooo " I Screamed dejectedly, He Chuckled causing me to pout.

He threw his blazer at the sofa alongside his Necktie and Shirt. Standing topless he Removed his Pants, And a massive Bulge appeared. *T-Rex was as big as ever....*

" Pervert " He Teased

" Can you Blame me~ I already miss it~ " I Pouted

" You know you can have it anytime you want. It's Claimed by you after all " *So T-Rex is mine ? Hehe~*

" I'll take you up on that offer~ " I Accepted his offer licking my lips. He sighed

" But i can't have you get addicted to it. So not anytime " I Pouted

Kiyotaka spent the whole afternoon in my room, We spent it on Chatting and watching some TV. He cooked me dinner and we Played some Truth and dare, It was a pretty fun time with him.

He turned off the Lights and joined me on the Bed Cuddling with each other, We shared a long passionate kiss before going to sleep.

" Good night Kiyotaka~ Love you " I Gave him another Kiss.

" Love you too Honami, Good night " He Kissed my Forehead

I Hope i would get back in shape as soon as possible, So i won't drag him any longer, He has a sports festival to prepare to.

But that process shouldn't be Rushed, If i do i would still be injured during the Festival, And it would end up dragging the Class Alongside him, I Don't want to be a burden, So I'll work Harder.....

Thank you guys all for your support and kind words at each chapter, It always makes my day to see you guys having fun on stuff i make, It certainly makes me Happy

When i started this fic i kept with daily uploads and now i covered 6 Volumes in a month and a half, It is great progress however....

I am moving a little too fast on this fic, Some chapters rushed and i am not even checking for Grammar mistakes, Which is bad...

Also i ended up too hung up on this fic and failed to do something else. Sometimes i feel underwhelmed to keep up or forced to finish some chapters and rush through them. This made me feel unmotivated....

So i decided to take my time on each Chapter and try to improve it as much as possible, I would also try to not write all the time and take Breaks to refresh my mind and come up with more amazing ideas !

I also noticed that i deserted some characters like Hiyori and gave Kiyohonami too much screen time. I mean 90% of this fic is about Kiyohonami together going through multiple stuff which is also bad. So i decided to not give the both of them too much screentime and focus on interactions with other Characters

That above is also related to future chapters, I need to think of fresh ideas for new special exams and those breaks would certainly help

I also considered writing a new fic, So my mind would be fresh all the time and work for more ideas ! Let me guys know what do you think. I Already have an idea in mind (It's not Kiyohonami but i bet you would like it very much even if you are a Dedicated Honami simp . You gotta trust me on that)

The Upload would be still consistent, But it would be more like 1 Chap in 3 days or something like that instead of Daily upload

And Thank you for 35K+ Reads on this fic, I don't celebrate such things but i'll try to thank you guys more for reaching milestones haha

I hope you guys understand and thank you so much for your support again. Cya

Arc 5 Chap 3 : Let the Fun Begin !

Finally, At long last, The promised day has arrived

6th October, The day of the annual Sports Festival, The day every student Prepared for, for the last month.

It is a very big day. The results of this exam can very well decide the standings of our Classes. The athletic students are pumped up, Ready to carry their Class towards victory, While the less athletic are hoping to not drag their Classes

All of the students of Class A gathered inside a tent, Formulating a circle around our Leader Ichinose Honami

" Alright is everyone ready ? " Honami building up a suspense. All of my Classmates cheered as a Response. " Great ! Everyone ! Let's win thing thing ! " She rose her fist up with Encouraging words

Our Class was in high spirits, Everyone was pumped up ready to tackle on this festival

They have been practicing hard this past month, With Shibata, Kanzaki and sometimes me Taking the lead in the Practice.

During This month, Classes C and B were Spying on us during our Practice, We were even tailed by them at some points. I Guess it's not too weird to spy on your opponents but

Class 2-B was also spying on us. I Don't understand why Asahina would go to great lengths just to harbor some information that would be useless for her, She could give it to Ryueen and Sakayanagi but they too are spying so she is just wasting her time.

I Couldn't care less at both of them anyway. This month was a tiring month for me, From morning exercises to Carrying Honami, To P.E sessions. I couldn't catch a break

However, I am not Complaining, Not in the slightest. I kept up with all of those physically exhausting activities and more. All for one purpose

*** Flashback ***

" So what do you want..... Kouenji ? " I asked the man standing in front of me

After requesting my presence during the practice, I met him two days after the first day. I have some ideas about what he'd want to talk to me about

Kouenji flipped his bangs and spared me an eye, Looking as proud as ever

" I'll cut straight to the chase Ayanokouji-boy. I want a competition " Kouenji requested. It wasn't outside of my imagination. In fact, It was the most obvious reason for him to call me here

" You want me to compete with you ? " I asked. He responded with a bang flip alongside a smirk " What would i get in return ? "

" You want something in return ? Isn't competing against the perfect human enough for you ? " He boasted

" You know that something like that won't interest me Kouenji " I marked, But his smug didn't waver, In fact, It became wider

" Then what do you want Ayanokouji-boy ? If it's within my capabilities then i'll provide. But i doubt anything is out of reach for a perfect existence such as myself " He flipped his bangs. *He expected me to bargain against him. Good to know we are on the same page*

" If you want me to compete with you, Then you'll have to cooperate with us on the Team events " I Offered. Kouenji hearing my Request, Smirked

" I knew you'd ask that " Kouenji Added " Very well Ayanokouji-boy, I'll Cooperate "

Kouenji didn't deny Hirata when he asked him to compete, Instead he messaged me. He expected it from the beginning that i would ask him to cooperate during the Team events, Which is what i expected from him too so i didn't try to change it.

" That's good to hear. Then you have yourself a competition " I Said. I turned to leave but Kouenji posed a question out of the blue

" Do you want to graduate as Class A Ayanokouji-boy ? "

" Where did that question come from ? " I Turned around to find Kouenji with a serious expression, It was quite the shift in his behavior. This shift caused me to Turn to face him again *It must be quite important*

" Nothing. Just asking "

" It doesn't interest me personally. But i want to help my Class reach it " I said honestly. I rose my eyebrow " Does this satisfy you ? "

Kouenji's smirk crept back into his face

" I guess " Kouenji laughed " Ha ! Look at you worry about your Classmates. I didn't quite expect that cold hearted kid i saw long ago to have a soft side. Truly amazing " Kouenji picked his hand mirror from his pockets and combed his hair. I sighed

" That cold hearted kid you saw isn't the real me Kouenji " I objected

" Ho ? Now that's interesting " Kouenji closed his hand mirror and listened to me. A Sign of interest

" I don't want to explain it. But what you see right now is the real me " I argued

What Kouenji saw in The White Room was a persona i developed to survive in that world, The cold hearted Calculating persona that triggers during danger to protect me, The Persona that prioritize my safety over everybody's and does whatever needs to be done in order to win

I didn't know what was my real personality, But i knew that i wasn't myself in the White room. So i decided to leave The White Room to discover my Real personality

With the help of Honami and Class A, I started to slowly discover it, Build it and Improve it. So i believe is what i am acting now is my real personality

One moment that Persona triggered is when that man threatened to destroy Honami's family. I was shocked to see that it adapted to care for her, She is my other half after all.

Kouenji seemingly satisfied with my answer, Opened His mirror and Started combing his hair

" I see Ayanokouji-boy. I Think i get what you mean " Kouenji added, His smirk widened " I Honestly thought for a moment that you were like a certain two-face. Sorry for my rude thoughts Ayanokouji-boy " *Now that's interesting. Not the part where the definition of narcissism apologized to me, But that*

" By a 'certain two-face' You mean Kushida ? " It is the only candidate that fits the bill for the person Kouenji compared me with

" Ha ! You noticed it as well Ayanokouji-boy ? I guess as expected from a fellow perfect existence " Kouenji Said " But i guess it's not too hard to notice no ? Fuka-chan-senpai-girl noticed it as well "

" Fuka-chan-senpai-girl ? " *What a weird nickname*

" Oh ? She asked me to call her Fuka-chan and i just used that. Nothing weird no ? "

" Not at all Kouenji " I Said " Anyway, Do you need anything else ? "

Kouenji closed his hand mirror and slid it inside his pocket, He turned serious again, So i guess he will open up to the real reason why he called me

" I have another Condition Ayanokouji-boy. You don't have to fulfill it but i want you to help me with it " Condition ? More like a request. But the sharp gleam on his eyes triggered my Curiosity

" I'm all ears "

Flashback END

Thankfully, Kouenji decided to co-operate. He changed the Participation table for Class D to place himself on the events he chose for us to compete on, That is the Hurdle race, 200-M Dash

and Obstacle race. I informed Honami about this and she put some weak students alongside me on those events. We won't use people like Shibata efficiently if we place them on my events where it's guaranteed that He'd at best get 3rd place.

Class D is going to be so confused after this move. But it is for that one purpose that i practiced hard during this past month

Kouenji isn't someone to take lightly. I wouldn't be kidding if i said we are equal in physical strength, It all depends on minor details to see who would win. But i believe that i am the superior, Because i can't lose.

As i was relaxing. Chie-sensei clapped her hands garnering everyone's attention, On her hand was a clipboard. She first started with a roll-call, Everyone was present. Soon she flipped the page

" Right~ Everyone is here. So i officially declare the start of the Sports Festival for your First Year ! " Everyone cheered. Chie-sensei nodded enthusiastically and Handed Honami a copy of the Participation Table " Right~ Here is your participation table~ Our first event is the 100 M dash~ The first group which has Kiyotaka-kun and Kanzaki-kun~ should go towards the Track and get ready "

I stood up alongside Kanzaki and nodded. All of our Classmates Cheered for us wishing us good luck. I Don't think i need it but It's better than nothing

" Let's win this Ayanokouji ! " Kanzaki said with determination. This is the very first event so it is important for Class's Morale

" I know, Expect to find some fast people. Winning wouldn't be easy " I Marked. Kanzaki nodded. We both entered the Track

All the Participants were already present, Soon we joined our lanes. Fate has it that the people around me was....

" Ew ! It's Mr emotionless pleb " Muttered the first person to his friend in disgust.

" You're right Kanji. It's the Queen's dog " Mocked the second

" Yeah, Poor guy. He is getting abused by his Girlfriend and he doesn't know it. Too bad he is just a muscle head and not as smart as us to notice it. Right Haruki ? " It was Ike and Yamauchi and both of them started mocking me. *Abused by my girlfriend ? Queen's dog ? I assume Honami is the Queen by their Conversation and i am her dog ? That doesn't sound bad but i'm pretty sure they meant it as an insult*

" Wha- "

" **Don't you dare insult the King !** " The person beside Yamauchi yelled in a threatening voice. It was Hashimoto

" Fu- "

" Don't insult the king ! " Hashimoto's voice reached the Spectating Shibata and he yelled from the Audience. *Seriously ?*

" I never once thought of this mothershit as my king. He is such a weakling " Said Ike. However, Hashimoto started Grinning

" It's funny how you guys are insulting him when he can literally crush you into pieces. Haven't you learned that you don't want to mess with him after the grip measurements ? " Hashimoto stated. But that set some alarms for me

" The Device was Broken ! We are way way way better than this dipshit ! Ichinose-chan should've been with me instead ! " Cried Yamauchi. This made everyone on the track cringe at him

" I know right ! Hey you pleb " Ike Called. I turned towards him " If i beat you then you have to give Ichinose-chan to me ! " *She isn't a property for crying out loud*

" What would you do if i win ? " I rose an eyebrow

" Then I'll allow you to have her, For now " *Right.....*

The Teacher came carrying a gun. Everyone got Ready and Crouched

" Kanji Let's show him ! "

" Yeah ! "

" What a bunch of fools " Muttered Hashimoto " I have full faith in you King. Show them Who is daddy " *Daddy ?*

" On your mark " I brushed that off and took my stance " Get set !

" I don't have to go all out to get first place. I'll have to conserve energy for later

Bang The Teacher's gun shot, And so the Cheers

At the start, I ran at an above average speed placing me right behind Kanzaki.

However, Hashimoto was quick to catch up so i increased my pace causing me to overtake Kanzaki. It was a battle between Them but Kanzaki was the superior one

" First Place : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka with 16.57 Seconds

Second Place : Kanzaki Ryuuji with 17.68 seconds

Third Place : Hashimoto Masayoshi with 18.06 seconds " Announced the Announcer. All of my Classmates cheered for the both of us from the audience

" Great work " I complimented. Kanzaki took a deep breath and Smiled lightly

" Let's head ba- "

" CHEATER ! " Ike came running towards me fists clenched. I simply took a step to the side, He panicked and Fell " Argh ! "

" Kanji ! " Yamauchi came running towards his friend and checked him " Ayanokouji ! What did you do to My friend ! "

I stared at them in silence, I Couldn't utter a word of how ridiculous this is. The Teacher came towards us " What's going on here ? "

" Sensei ! Ayanokouji hurt my friend ! " Yamauchi accused. Kanzaki grew frustrated by the second

" How exactly did i hurt him ? I didn't come in physical contact with him in anyway " I rose both of my hands " In fact, My hands are clean. If i touched him, They would be deluded with all sorts of filth "

" You SHIT ! " Ike snapped. However, He turned towards the teacher " Sensei ! He hurt me ! He dodged my attack and let me fall in the ground ! " Unbelievable

" Unbelievable.... " Muttered Kanzaki, The Teacher and the Rest of the boys too " Let's go back Ayanokouji, So i won't lose more brain-cells " I nodded and followed Kanzaki.

Maybe The Scientists should study Ike and Yamauchi's brains and experiment on them. Using them they Create antidotes of Retardation, They would contribute more to society that way.

We walked up towards our tent where Honami was sitting alongside Shibata and our friends spectating the Races

" Great job you two " Complimented Shibata while giving both of us high-fives

I took the seat beside Honami, She handed me a bottle of water which i gracefully accepted.

The second group went, Sudo and Miyaki was participating from Class D. But Sudo seems displeased at one person's appearance

Ryueen was in Sudo's group, He kept talking to Sudo to which he tried to ignore at first. But Sudo grew angrier, However Albert butted in and stopped them.

The Race passed with Sudo taking first and Ryueen second by a small margin. It was a close fight, Sudo mocked Ryueen and he kuku'ed. Albert took Fourth which is not bad

The Third Group came, And only Hirata appeared from Class D. They waited a little but that person never came, So Kouenji decided to ditch. On the group was Yajima from the Soccer Club. Hirata took first place regardless and Yajima on second.

Shibata alongside Ryouta both took Top places in their group too, And everything is going smoothly for the boys

The 10th group has just Finished their Race, And now it's time for the Girls

" Right. Let's Go Chihiro-chan ! " Said Kobashi. Shiranami nodded meekly

" Don't sweat it Chihiro-chan ! Just give it your all " Cheered Honami. And with that both of them left

The girls for the first group lined up for the race. Class D chose Kushida and Onodera, They aren't bad runners at all. So they would take first places

However, A girl named Kinoshita from Class C ended up taking second place after Onodera. Kushida took Third, It was not according to plan for Class D, But it's their problem to deal with. Kobashi surprisingly took fourth, While Shiranami took last but it was a gain

" That is not bad " Said Shibata. More than satisfied by this outcome. Honami was the same

The second group went, So as Amikura alongside Minamikata. They both took top places and everything is going according to plan.

Honami alongside Ando were put on the sixth group, So they both set their way to the field. Their group had Sakayanagi, But she is disqualified. They didn't have formidable opponents

Honami ran faster than i anticipated, Same with her breas- I mean.... And took second place with Ando on first

" Good job Honami " When Honami returned i gave her head pats. She reciprocated it like a cute kitty. I forcefully stopped my hand from getting addicted to it and both sat on our Seats

" Thank you Kiyotaka~ " She jumped at my arm and pressed her chest against it. I looked at her mischievous grin " What a pervert~ You think you can get away with staring at me with your pervy eyes~? " *She noticed*

" Sorr- "

" Take this as your punishment~ Pervert~ " While sitting she moved her face towards mine, I thought she was gonna kiss me but her mouth instantly went lower and bit my neck. I moaned a little as she ran her tongue around it, Feeling satisfied she moved away and licked her lips " I forgot to mark you as my territory~ "

I could feel the place where she bit me heat up, She gave me a hickey. I took a deep audible sigh

" *Oh my god. Sou bring the Camera, Sou Bring the Camera* " Amikura whispered somewhat loudly, I turned around to see her and Shibata both with wide grins and small Blushes

Honami turned around with an expression saying that she F##ked up. They teased her mercilessly.

I looked back towards the track where the 5th group lined up. Horikita was participating alongside Matsushita. Ibuki was participating too, She kept glaring at Horikita which she ignored

The Race started and Horikita took the lead, Which was short lived. Ibuki took the lead causing Horikita to increase her Pace, They were butting heads but in the end..... Ibuki won

Horikita frustrated walked back to her tent while Ibuki followed her a bit, She was Quite happy with her achievement.

Soon, The competition between first years concluded. It went

smoothly for us. The Red team Currently standing at 698 Points against 617 For White. As for our Class competition we are on the lead. Class C in second. Class B in third and Class D in last. I Couldn't help but notice something peculiar about the placements

" Something doesn't add up " Muttered Kanzaki with a suspicious gleam. Honami was the same

" It's weird that Class C's best Runners were matched with Class D's all the time. It's too good to be a coincidence " Honami stated

" So you noticed it too huh ? " Said Kanzaki to himself but it was audible. He was deep in thoughts until he glanced at me " Seems like what Ayanokouji said was true "

" So Kushida-san did it again " Muttered Honami " There is nothing could be done at this point. We need to focus on winning so we can Carry the Red Team ! "

Class D is a lost cause and Honami understands that. There is nothing to be done except for winning our events to carry the Red team

Next was the second years. Classes C and B seems to have gone to a similar approach to what we did. But The Red team stood their ground

To my surprise, On one of the groups Kiryuin appeared. She scanned through the whole audience until she found me, She waved at me with a smirk and asked me to watch her

I did just that and She steamrolled all the participants. She checked me again for recognition and i stared back unimpressed, She pouted and walked towards her tent

' *Take that* ' Muttered Honami with a wide smirk shortly after Kiryuin's pout. I looked at her and she gazed back, Joy and Happiness filled her eyes. As if she won a hard competition against a formidable opponent. *Why did she suddenly beam with joy ?*

Soon the second year competition ended with The White team Closing the gap. And the difference now is 23 points

However, The Third Years extended the Lead and now we are sitting with 2146 Points against 2016 Points. Manabu beautifully dominated his Race alongside Fujimaki and his other Classmates

He looked at me and raised his hand, I did the same. Tachibana bounced towards him with a bottle which he accepted.

Next is the Hurdle Race, I was on the 7th Group where i would face Kouenji for our first Competition

Shibata alongside Ryouta went first and both took first places, It is weird that Ryueen isn't trying to attack us. Does he have another plan in mind for us ?

On the Second Group Hirata went. However, He met Albert and Kito. He took first place regardless but it was very tough

The Groups went by and now it was time for the 7th Group

" Good luck Kiyotaka~ " Honami gave me one last warm smile. Before licking her lips seductively while staring at my crotch. *Is this her way to cheer me ? Because it is working*

I set my way towards the Track alongside my partner Hamaguchi we arrived Shortly after and found multiple people.... However

They were all scared from one man, The athletic and the nonathletic, No exception all of them. The person in question is currently stretching on his lane with a proud ignorant smirk on his face. He Turned his attention to me as soon as he spotted me

" Good to see you here Ayanokouji-boy " Greeted Kouenji. Hamaguchi instantly went to his lane scared. There was a lot of stares especially from Class D.

" Seems that your Class isn't too happy with your participation " I noted as i took my lane.

" Ha ! Those defects should be grateful that i decided to bestow on them some of my perfectness " Kouenji flipped his bangs. And soon the instructor came " Good luck Ayanokouji-boy. You're gonna need it "

" On your marks " I took my stance. Kouenji in my peripheral vision did too. Taking lanes into consideration, Kouenji has an advantage. However if i estimate that our legs has similar strength then i can say that i would win due to Kouenji's weight. If that's the case then this Race could go either way

" Get set " My mind cleared Focusing on the brown floor of the Track field. The Cheering noises drastically decreased. I was in combat mode, The only person i could see is my opponent, And i have to beat him.

Bang as soon as i heard that. I bolted towards the Track. Leaving everyone behind. Except for one person

Kouenji was right on my tail, The sound of his Legs kicking the Ground Strongly after each jump could be heard.

I Jumped, Ran and Jumped, Ran Jumped without faltering. All i need to do is beat this man and i couldn't afford any mistakes.

If you touch the Hurdle it would be a minus 0.3 seconds, If it falls It's 0.5 seconds. This could be Crucial on this Neck on neck fight.

As soon as i passed the Tenth Hurdle, I ran as fast as i can. Kouenji was Right beside me putting his all on this Final Race. However, My Calculations are Correct

" First Place : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka with 12.53 Seconds

Second Place : Kouenji Rokusuke with 12.78 Seconds

Third Place : Takuro Morishige with 18.83 seconds "

Cheers Blown across the Audience, It was very loud and filled the Whole Track. I saw Manabu, Kiryuin both Impressed, Asahina was

beside them with a disgusted expression, But there was some Shock on them. I couldn't care less anyway

" Hah ! It seems like it's my loss Ayanokouji-boy " Kouenji approached me with his unwavering smirk and Held his hand " But Remember. Even if i lost once i am still the perfect existence "

" Aren't you mad that you lost Kouenji ? " I said as i accepted his Handshake that could be deadly to some people.

" Why would i be mad ? There is always a next time ! " Kouenji Said as he walked away. Not a hint of Displeasure on his face. It's a good thing that i didn't underestimate him and put him at the wrong level.

I Sighed and returned back towards my Group, All of them were staring at me mouths open.

" Ayanokouji-kun ! That was Amazing ! " Shibata was the first one to speak and Ran towards me.

" Thanks i guess ? " I responded. Shibata widened his eyes when he came close

" Dude after all that. You aren't out of Breath at all ! Dude how are you so amazing ? " Asked Shibata eyes beaming in admiration.

" I know Right ? You guys were so fast. Like the Flash " Honami chuckled, There was a light blush on her face

Shibata turned around to face her " That's my King for ya " Honami Flushed and Quickly turned around. Amikura was grinning at her, Same as Shibata. *Strange*

" Shibata did you tell her what King means ? " That is the only conclusion i came to. Shibata turned around

" It was Surprisingly Mako-chan who told her. I swear i didn't tell her King " Shibata whispered Back, Troubled. I patted his Shoulder and sat Beside Honami

The Competition of the Hurdle Race for the first years has ended. And now, The second-years went. However, I was approached by one person i haven't talked to in a while

" Kukuku That was a fine Showing Eh Monster ? " Ryueen boldly entered our Tent and grabbed a chair and sat beside me. Like he owns the Place. All of my Classmates stared at him, But he didn't mind

" Good morning Ryueen, It's been a while " I faced him. He gazed back at me with a smirk, As if he found something that fascinated him " For what do i owe the Pleasure of your visit ? "

" Kuku i came on a whim and wanted to chat with ya " Responded Ryueen.

" What do you mean by that Ryueen ? " It was Kanzaki who spoke

" Kuku can't i visit my friend to Congratulate him on his win ? "

" That's not it Ryueen-kun. It's that when you come, You always

have an ulterior motive " said Honami.

" Ulterior motive ? Nah, I just came to have what i call a little chat " Ryueen leaned on his Chair " Anyway, I wanted to ask you something. Do you know what i'm trying to do Miss Fairy tale ? "

" Yes. You are targeting Class D Am i Correct ? " Honami answered.

" Kuku You are Correct " Ryueen added " So don't you try and save those Idiots. Unless you want to get fucked with them " Ryueen Threatened

" Don't worry, We aren't planning on saving them. As long as we won't lose the Red vs White Team Competition " Said Kanzaki.

" Good to hear " Ryueen stood up and walked away. However before he disappears he Turned around " Just a friendly little warning. When i'm done with Class D, I'm gonna Destroy Class B and Sakayanagi. As my Final meal, I will enjoy Tormenting your Class Apart. This School only needs one Ruler after all " Those were his Final words before he disappeared.

This School only needs one Ruler huh ? Interesting.....

Notes

I was gonna make this Chapter longer but decided against it so i can explain more

I'm gonna implement my own Sports festival, It is not much of a difference from Canon so just don't pay this any mind.

I buffed Kouenji and made him the same level as Kiyogod. But No one can beat Kiyogod so he is better, But Kouenji is like very close but not enough to defeat him.

Sayonara, Next time.

Arc 5 Chap 4 : Kushida's Game

The Hurdle Race for the Third year girls has Concluded with The Red Team taking the Lead with 10222 Points. However, Things aren't safe, The White Team is quite Close with 10196. Relaxing isn't an option

Now, It was time for our First Team event : Capture the Flag for the boys, Although the School named it that way, It's actually Pole toppling. The Girls were also having their own Event : Ball toss

Team events are the events where the members of both the red and white both cooperate to take down each other. So our supposed teammates are the boys of Class D

All 40 of us Gathered inside the red team tent, With All representatives forward, That is me, Kanzaki and Shibata from our Class, Hirata and Sudo from Class D

" Alright ya bunch. Let's win this thing ! " Sudo Cheered after our strategy meeting Concluded

We've worked out different Plans and Tactics for coordination between our Classes. In this event, Both teams switch from Defense to attack on each turn they lose, Since it's a best of 3 we don't have a lot of Chances to try out stuff, So this meeting is very valuable

I've worked out different tactics with Shibata and Kanzaki to neutralize our opponents, Although Attacking them isn't an option, There is other ways around it.

Thankfully, Class D's main Powerhouse Kouenji kept his word and decided to cooperate. They were all skeptical at first but i reassured them that he would, At my words everyone felt more confident
Good

We are against Class C and B who has a lot of Physically Tough people like Albert. However, It's not said that him alone can defeat 20 Students, So that's where his Class Chimes in. And if our Defense is Frail, Then we'd be a lost cause

That's why we decided to take on the Defense for the First round. I believe that Sudo and Kouenji would work out better during the Attack, And Sudo's Confidence is too big to fit in defense.

After our Meeting i decided to test out a theory, So i Approached Hirata

" Hey Hirata " I Called. Hirata did a 180 and looked at me, Seeing me He Turned around with a warm smile

" Hello Ayanokouji-kun. Do you want something ? " Asked Hirata

" Yes, I want to talk with you about something " I took a glance around me, Giving him heads up " But i can't risk being heard "

" I see " Hirata nodded and we moved towards the back of the tent. Making sure no one is eavesdropping Hirata faced me " So what did you want to talk about Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" Hirata. What do you think of the situation of your class so far ? " My Question made Hirata tense up. His Cheery mood cracked a bit

" We aren't in a great position, If things keep up like this we'll end up in last place " Admitted Hirata. He opened up faster than i anticipated, Probably due to his Trust on me " But you don't have to concern yourself about us Ayanokouji-kun "

" That's not the case Hirata " I Shook my head " Why do you think your class is in a bad position ? "

" I-I don't know " Hirata forcefully threw those words at me before looking slightly down. *You know it Hirata*

" Hirata. Why do you think all of your best runners went against Classes C and B all the time ? " *He needs to face it, He knows exactly what's going on but he is convincing himself that isn't true.*

Hirata is genuinely a nice guy. Unlike Kushida, He doesn't harbor any hate towards his Classmates nor hides behind a facade. He cares for everyone as his friends even Strangers, But as they say : If everyone is your Friend then everyone is a stranger. A Friend is someone close to you and dear to you, If everyone has the same place then they are all technically Strangers. That's what Hirata Doesn't understand

If i drop the bomb right now and tell him that Kushida is the Traitor and somehow somehow he believes me. He would just go and talk to her because he doesn't want to cut her off. Even if i tell him another person, He won't cut him off.

That's why Hirata can't be a Leader, He can't make a decision during a dilemma and prefers to stay Neutral. He wants to protect all his Classmates at all costs. And now if you may ask, Why am i doing this ? Well, Because something interesting is gonna happen in the future. And i am interested on how Hirata would deal with it

" I-I don't know..... C-Coincidence ? " Stuttered Hirata

" I don't think so. It's too much to be a coincidence. I think someone from your Class Leaked the Table " I couldn't see Hirata's face but he was tugging on his pants. That's where i decided to pull out " I may be wrong tho. I just thought of informing you "

" I see. Thank you Ayanokouji-kun " He faced me with a forced smile. I nodded and walked back inside the Tent

Soon Hirata Calmed down and came inside the tent, He was back as new again. Moments later a teacher called us and all 40 of us

parted towards the field

" Man I'm so excited. Let's kick some ass " Sudo Punched his palm lightly. A Gesture of fighting

" I know right ? But don't go overboard Sudo-kun. You may get Penalized " Warned Shibata who was as excited

" I know i know " Sudo growled. But he was still fired up. He turned towards me " Hey Ayanokouji. Thank you fo- "

Sudo froze on his place, Mouth open with wide eyes staring at me. I waved my hand in front of him and he is still Frozen

" Uh. Sudo-ku- "

" HOLY SHIT " Shibata called out to Sudo who snapped in an Outrage, Garnering all of the boys's attention " AYANOKOUJI..... IS THAT A HICKEY ? " Sudo pointed out towards my neck... Ah

" ?!!!!!! " All the boys blurted in shock. As they were staring intensely at my neck. I saw that Yamauch, Ike, Hondo, Miyamoto and Okitani dejected and furious

" What's the meaning of this Ayanokouji ?! " Yamauchi questioned. With the support of the previous mentioned people. *Hmmmm let's destroy some hearts*

" Oh this ? " I pointed towards the hickey on my neck. Sudo nodded with some anticipation in his eyes " Honami gave me this. This is what she called 'claiming me as her territory " I said innocently. This infuriated them even more

" So you didn't do it ? " Insisted Sudo.

" Do what ? You mean sex ? " He nodded " No, I'm not gonna break the Rules "

Sudo looked disappointed, Same as Shibata who muttered something about T-Rex not having a prey. Kanzaki facepalmed and Yamauchi and the idiots sighed in relief

Little do they know

" Such a waste. If i was you i'll do it everyday ! With such a babe like Ichinose-chan i would do it day in and day out and never stop !

" Fantasized Yamauchi. He was indirectly boasting about his non-existent Stamina. *Sure bud*

" Sorry, But i'm not an idiot like you " I muttered. This made everyone who was cringing at Yamauchi laugh. Yamauchi glared at me and i brushed it off

We reached the field and separated to each of our Positions. Class D was in front while most of our Classmates stacked around the Pole. I along Kanzaki stood out

" If we hold for more than 3 Minutes then Job done. It won't be easy but Together we can do it ! " Cheered Shibata who is set as our Monkey. All of my Classmates Rallied around him, He is such an important figure.

The announcement came and Class D departed toward the offense, Sudo bolted towards the other side alongside his Classmates. Meanwhile Kouenji was taking his time in walking admiring the scene in front of him.

Kanzaki and i Kept watch and got Ready as soon as we noticed Students of Class B Approaching

" Here They come " Shouted Kanzaki. This made all of my classmates put their guards up and cling into the Pole. Class B Started Running towards us as soon as they got spotted

Class B had a lot of physically strong students like Kito and maybe Katsuragi. However, Their Firepower isn't enough to stop the likes of Me, So what are they planning to do ?

Kito who is probably the strongest on Class B Rushed towards me and Grabbed my arm and put me on a dead lock. *I see*

2 students Rushed towards Kanzaki and Contained him as well, The Rest went towards the Pole and fought against my classmates.

" Hah ! Sorry King ! " Apologized Hashimoto as he walked towards the Pole. Kito tightened his grip around me.

He was putting every single strength he had in Containing me, This action itself isn't foul play and it is allowed, The only foul play is if you hurt someone deliberately. However, If i was a normal person this force could've destroyed my muscles, So this is borderline assault, It is good that Kito isn't underestimating me

" Huh ? "

Kito started Struggling against my Resistance and soon i broke free. He Tried to catch me again but grabbed the air as i made my way towards Kanzaki

" What the hell ? " Shouted one of the Students as i forced their arm away from Kanzaki with ease. Kanzaki took the Chance to break free from the other guy and ran towards the Pole.

Class B were relentlessly Pushing, Jumping, Trying to Knock Shibata out, Tackling and trying their Hardest. If the pole tilts to a 30 degree then it would be a loss and There is more than half of the time left. Shibata is beautifully holding into himself and issuing Commands

I Ran at the pole and Grabbed Katsuragi alongside Hashimoto in an unbreakable dead lock

" Huh ? " Urgh ! " They Choked in Confusing

I isolated them away from their Group and Walked away, They were Resisting very hard but i stood my Ground. Kito Pushed my hands away to release them but no avail. He Crouched and Grabbed both of my legs stopping me from moving.

" Now ! " Shouted Kito 3 Students jumped at me..... More like clinging at me trying to release them. But i brushed it off

Soon more and more students went and tried to take me down. until i started losing balance when 8 Students were on me...9....10...11

I fell to the Ground from the amount of Weight and instinctively Released them, They all stood up and ran towards the pole in a hurry while Someone stayed pinning me to the Ground with great force. It was Kito and i was too exhausted to resist, I wasted enough time anyway

" Honestly, What are you ? " Questioned Kito. There was some fear in his eyes

" Who knows " I Shrugged and completely relaxed on the Ground. There is almost no time left, But if it keeps up like this. It would be overtime

There was a barrier preventing us from checking the other side, So what's happening on the other side is a mystery.

" OVERTIME " Announced the Announcer.

It seems that Class D has been stopped, I Don't know what Kouenji and Sudo are doing but they seem to need more time.

Albert is capable of suppressing Sudo alone while i believe they need more than 8 students to Stop Kouenji. That makes it 11 against 18, Class D should have an easy fight.

Overtime is an extra 1 minute, If passed then It would signal a draw. This made Class B's attack more and more intense, As a last ditch effort to win.

Brushing off Kito's pin i ran towards the Pole and supported it, All of my Classmates and even Class B are exhausted, But they were forcing themselves during this last minute.

We fought for our last breath. Finally, The announcement came

" EVERY TEAM'S ATTACKS HAS BEEN NEUTRALIZED. RESULTS : A DRAW " Came from the announcement

All of us fell to the ground like logs, Breathing heavily.

On a draw, Both classes switch, So now Class D would be on defense, Same goes for Class B. Ryueen is on the attack which is a nightmare for us. However, It all depends on Class D's condition which i'm predicting that they are dead

Class B departed, And Soon Class D arrived. And as i predicted, They were all dejected, Exhausted, Frustrated, Some even Injured. Except Kouenji who was like usual

Sudo was so pissed off that he could go on a Rampage. Apparently, Ryueen Deliberately punched him to the guts and mocked him without the referees noticing the foul. This is a strong hit to Sudo's pride and most likely gonna shatter in the next round.

This means that... We lost this event.

The next round came and we Class A decided to try and have a

fast win. However, Just as we Started The Defense of Class D Fell and we are down 1-0

If we want to win this event, We must Win the next round, We had one draw and a loss in a best of 3 match, One win would lead to a decider match. In order for that to happen Class D must win in their offence. However

Class D's spirit is gone, Sudo was yelling at his Classmates shattering their already broken morale. Just by watching them reassures me of our defeat

Kanzaki and Shibata both knew that this event is done and dusted so we decided to forfeit and focus on the next event. However

" Fuck no ! I won't fucking give up against that Bastard ! " Exclaimed Sudo furiously

" But Sudo-kun. We already lost this event, We should Conserve our energy for the ne- "

" No means No ! " Sudo Shouted at Shibata cutting him off before he walked towards the offense

" What should we do ? " Shibata turned towards us and asked

" We can always throw this round and lose " Kanzaki Suggested.

Even someone like me can't salvage this situation, Ryueen's attack is gonna be ground breaking and He won't be holding back since i am present. I can pin him down alongside Albert but it would be another draw which means our Loss

" Let's go with that " I said. Kanzaki and Shibata both agreed and informed our Classmates. They were displeased but understood nevertheless.

The announcement Came and Only Sudo ran towards the Other side, Every Class D Boy were walking dejectedly, Some even Gave up. Kouenji was combing his hair, Indifferent to his surroundings.

I turned my line of sight towards the Field, And There emerged Ryueen, Laying on the shoulders of Albert as his Classmates Rallied around him, Like a King going to war with his subordinates. *Just what you'd expect from a tyrant*

" Kukuku We meet again Monster " Ryueen turned his attention to me and smirked. I went and stood in front of Albert stopping him from advancing " You really have some balls Ayanokouji. Do you want to get crushed ? "

" Nope " I shook my head and faced him again " I have no intention of getting crushed. In fact, You're the one who's gonna be "

" Kukuku You're approaching me ? Instead of running away, You're coming right to me ? "*That line sounds familiar*

" Ryueen did you watch JOJO ? "

" Yes. Did you watch it too Monster ? " Asked Ryueen interested.

" Unfortunately no, I was gonna watch it but my friends kept pressuring me i decided to not. But that line is quite famous " I responded

(If you're wondering then yes. I was gonna watch JOJO but my friends forced me to and it backfired)

" That sucks " Muttered Ryueen. Ishizaki who was spectating all of this Chimed in

" Ayanokouji-san. Do you watch anime ? " Asked Ishizaki looking somewhat excited.... But i couldn't help but feel suspicious

" Yes " I decided to lie and see Ishizaki's True motives

" Great ! Do you mind if i give you some recommendations ? " I nodded, Ishizaki flashed a mischievous grin " There is this anime Called 'Boku no Pico' I personally watched it and i loved it ! You shou- "

" Ishizaki what the fuck ? " Shouted Ryueen irritated. Ishizaki flinched and stared at him " Are you seriously gonna pull that again ? You stupid shit last time Shiina almost watched it because she overheard you carelessly talk about it. You almost deluded her you fucking dick "

Ryueen is quite angry with this predicament. I guess this 'boku no pico' is some sort of inappropriate anime. Considering Ryueen's outburst it's safe to assume that it is not just any inappropriate anime and it is something extreme.

" I-I'm sorry... Ryueen-san " Ishizaki was trembling in fear. Ryueen calmed down a bit

" You better be " Ryueen looked towards me " Don't you fucking watch that Ayanokouji. I don't want to explain it but you gotta believe me " Ryueen was quite serious. Some of his classmates nodded too indicating their support.

" I see... I'll do just that. Thank you Ryueen " I said. Ryueen's grin crept back

" With Pleasure " Ryueen grinned " It is unlike you to have a chit-chat mid game Monster. Did you accept your defeat ? "

" Yes " My answer was firm and straight " I don't mind wasting the rest of the time in chit-chat Ryueen. You could join me or just go straight towards the Pole and claim your victory "

" Kuku I guess crushing you can wait. It's a shame that the defects dragged you down " Ryueen shook his head in disappointment. He looked back at me with a grin " Let's have a chat Ayanokouji "

At first, I thought Ryueen would ignore the two options i gave him and creates a third which is trying to steamroll me using Albert. However, He is in a good mood so he agreed

" OVERTIME " Announced the announcer. But no one reacted to it. However, Ryueen widened his eyes when looked at me

" Ayanokouji. Is that a hickey on your neck ? " A mischievous wide grin crept in his face. I simply nodded " Kukukuku So T-Rex devoured his first prey eh ? "

" That's where you're wrong Ryueen "

" What do you mean ? " I explained to him what happened. He laughed " Kukuku Miss Fairytale already claimed T-Rex as her property. Too bad that not many got to see it on it's full glory "

" I don't think there is anything glorious about it " I shrugged. Sensing the situation dying down, I decided to ask him about something " Ryueen. You still remember The deal between our Classes Right ? "

" Oh. That deal where i won't attack you and shit and you owe me a favor ? "

" Exactly. I may or may not ask for that favor, So be prepared " I said. I am not sure if i would need his help, But it could come in handy. Ryueen simply grinned. Soon the announcement came

" EVERY TEAM'S ATTACKS HAS BEEN NEUTRALIZED. RESULTS : A DRAW " The announcer added " AND THUS : THE WHITE TEAM WINS WITH THE SCORE OF 1-0 "

" It's been fun chattin' with ya Monster. I'll see you in the next event " Ryueen Grinned as Albert started to walk away " Kukuku Too bad that i couldn't crush you this time. But Remember, I won't be holding back next time "

" Give it your worst Ryueen. I'm looking for it " Ryueen laughed before disappearing with his Lackeys

All of us headed back towards our Tent where the girls were waiting for us. It seems that The Red team won the ball toss which is a great recovery to our defeat.

Our Next event is another team event : Tug-of-war also for boys only. I can say that we have better Chances at this than the previous one.

I am unsure if Kouenji actually tried during the last event, But it doesn't matter since the results would've been the same either way. However, If both of us give it our all during this event, I am pretty confident that we would win.

The next event is in 20 min so i decided to Lay down and Relax for the time being

I have to think of some ideas over how can i work out the plan i settled with Kouenji. if we happen to execute it too late it would prove fatal, So i have to choose a diligent approach to this dilemma

My thought were snapped by an approaching figure, If she wasn't too fat i wouldn't have noticed her this early, Her presence could prove troublesome. Either way, This could be productive too

" Yahalo~ Ayanokouji-kun~ " Greeted The Fat figure, Kushida

Kikyou with a beautiful 'smile' That charms almost anybody

" Hello Kushida " My position right now isn't completely isolated, So people passing by are glancing at us " Do you need something ? "

" Ah um... I just came to ask how are you ?..... Hehe~ " Kushida laughed nervously while being at a loss of words.

She looks so genuine in her act that it could fool anyone. However, If i didn't know better i would think that it's weird that Kushida is at a loss of words since she is a conversational elite. Even if she is implying that she has a crush on me, That is overacting.

" I'm fine. What about you ? " Let's play along for now. She perked up

" I'm doing fine thank you very much ! How is your Class doing ?

" She asked. *What is she after ?*

" We are preparing for the next event to compensate for our Loss " I said. I Narrowed my eyes at Kushida before adding " Class D is doing the same correct ? " Kushida got somewhat nervous

" W-Well. Our Class's morale is down, Sudo-kun is mad at our Classmates for losing, Hirata-kun calmed him down for most part " Kushida sighed " But if we lose the next event, Our Morale would completely shatter "

Class D's morale is linked to Sudo since he is supposedly their leader during this festival. Him losing his temper and barking at them would multiply the damage even more.

Someone like Hirata is more suited to lead this festival, Or rather the best choice for Class D. Putting Sudo because he is a prowess is incomprehensible and short-sighted, And Class D is paying the consequences of their choice now

Even tho i said Hirata isn't leader material, He is the best option right now for Class D

" I see " I muttered " I have a question. What is Horikita doing during all of this ? "

" Oh. She..... Regrettably not doing anything " Responded Kushida, Looking down. I sighed in annoyance

" Honestly, What the hell does she think she's doing ? She is the leader right ? Isn't she supposed to do her Duties ? " I spoke in annoyance. Kushida hung her head low, Reluctant about answering " Sorry. I got carried away "

" Oh no Don't be Ayanokouji-kun " Kushida shook her hands. Denying my Fault.

" By the way. Is Kouenji participating ? " Sensing the situation dying down. I tried to keep the conversation alive

" Hmmm Kouenji-kun ? " I nodded " He told us that he will. Many of my classmates seem to believe him too "

" I see " I continued " Then no need to worry. The next event

should be a piece of cake " I Cheered. Kushida perked up again

" Thank you Ayanokouji-kun~ " Kushida Clapped her hands together and took a deep breath " You just told me exactly what i needed to hear. Thank you again~ "

" I didn't say anything " *I meant it*

" No need to be modest Ayanokouji-kun~ " *I wasn't modest* " Thank you Again~ I'll make sure to thank you properly sometime~ "
For what ?

She grinned at me with a wide grin. My eyebrows twitched a little, But it was enough for Kushida to notice. Satisfied she walked away " I'll see ya later Ayanokouji-kun~ "

" B-Bye... " I stuttered a little, But it was enough for Kushida to notice. She smirked and walked away

I sat there contemplating about what just Happened. I don't know what's going through Kushida's head but i am pretty sure that Ryueen warned her about me, Yet she is clinging too close and trying to use me

Did Kushida ignore Ryueen's warnings ?

If so then she must either be very confident in herself and acting skills or she possesses immense stupidity. Most likely Both

" I'll play your little game then. Kushida " I muttered entertained by this whole predicament. However, It was heard by someone....

Arc 5 Chap 5 : Movement

....Someone Heard

" Honami ? " I called out to the person eavesdropping behind the wall.

" Eh ? " Honami blurted in shock. Realizing that she got busted, She came out scratching her cheeks " Umm~ Hey Kiyotaka~ Do you need something ? " She tried to play it cool. While her tone succeeded, Her anxious eyes told me everything

" Yes " I moved a bit and patted the space beside me" Come here "

Honami complied and sat, She hung her head low shaking lightly, She Rose her head a bit and threw a side glance at me

" Sorry if i'm disturbing something " I apologized.

" Oh no you aren't. I was just passing by anyway Haha " *Lie*. We sat there in silence staring at the path Kushida came from. Until she decided to face me with her anxieties " Kiyotaka.... What business do you have with Kushida-san ? "

I looked deep in Honami's eyes, She was uneasy, But there was disbelief too. She started eavesdropping at the worst possible moment, When Kushida dropped the '*Thank you properly*' line. It is a response used to cloud men's judgement by dirty thoughts. So this set some alarms for Honami. I deemed lying would be futile, So i decided to explain

" I think Kushida is trying to use me "

" Use you ? Explain "

" Kushida has been trying to seduce me lately to rifle me against Horikita " I explained keeping eye contact with her " So i'm playing along to try and find something to take her down "

" I see... " Honami broke eye contact and glanced at the side, Deep in thought

" Were you worried that i was cheating on you ? " Honami looked back at my eyes

" Of course i was. How can't i be ? " She responded.

" Do you not trust me ? "

" It's not like that. I trust you..... A lot. But i couldn't help but feel anxiousn Because i love you so much ! " She expressed. I Gave her head pats while smiling warmly at her words

It is natural for her to feel that way especially after hearing what Kushida said, She knows that it's not true but she can't help but be

paranoid, So i don't blame her. Rather i blame myself for not preventing this from happening when i sensed her presence.

" I love you more Honami " I said Giving her a Kiss on the lips, She reciprocated. I deepened it sucking away all her uneasiness. When we broke free her aura came back, Along with her charming smile

" Hehe~ That's where you're wrong Kiyotaka~ " Honami blushing claimed. I rose an eyebrow " My~ Love~ for~ you~ is~ un~li~mi~ted~ " She tapped my lips with her finger on each syllable. Before she dove in another Kiss causing me to fall on my back, She took advantage laid on top of me deepening it.

" Ki- " When we broke free, She was about to say something but a voice cut through her

" I hate to be that guy but... " Instinct, I turned around to the direction of the sound. The person was standing there with a wholesome smile " At least don't make out on public "

" H-Horikita-senpai ! " Honami panicked and quickly adjusted herself away. Blushing madly. Manabu let out a chuckle before looking at me

" Good Morning Manabu " I adjusted myself aswell. Manabu nodded and moved towards me. Tachibana was hiding behind him flustered " Since when were you here ? "

" Oh ? It was since she tapped your lips " Manabu said as he sat beside me. Honami buried her face and started screaming from embarrassment, Manabu chuckled while i smiled " You don't have to be embarrassed Ichinose. It is a good thing that you love each other so much that you can't hold back, Even in public. I find it precious " Teased Manabu. Honami couldn't respond nor raise her face

" Did you come here to make sly comments Manabu ? " I Noted. Manabu smirked at me

" Not at all " He denied shaking his head " I just came to check how have you been doing. Fate has it that i stumbled upon you on a moment "

" Well you're not to blame for that " I Responded " As for the former, We are doing great so far. The last event was just not meant to be, Sorry for the inconvenience "

" Don't be, I've seen your match, It was impossible for you to win " Manabu added " Although i got excited since You were there. But i got carried away "

I can understand where he's coming from. Anyone who knows about how capable i am would be excited to observe what i'll do in an impossible situation. However, Even i can't do the impossible.
For the most part

Our Chat was cut short by the announcement of the tug-of-war event. I stood up. Manabu followed by

" I have to go too. I'll see you later Kiyotaka, Ichinose " Manabu bowed, So did we. Before parting with Tachibana

" Go get em Kiyotaka~ I'm cheering for you~ " Cheered Honami punching the air with both of her hands. However, I wanted to tease her, *Because i said so*

" You know. Everyone is cheering for me. I want you to offer me something different " I grumbled

" Hmmm~ What do you want me to offer you ? " She put her finger on her lips thinking... Or pretending to. She flashed me with a mischievous grin " I know what i can do~ I can take care of T-Rex for you~ " She offered. Extending her hand to my crotch and gently stroked it with her slender fingers

" Stop it... " I moaned a little before moving away. She grinned wider

" You asked me for something different~ So i offered~ " She Pouted " Don't you think i didn't notice the boner~ You Pervert~ " *Yikes*

Before anything could happen, I moved away towards the event site. Here i met the students of Class D alongside my Classmates

" Oh, You're here Ayanokouji-boy " Kouenji with his usual smirk approached me

" Hey Kouenji. What's up ? "

" Nothing much. There is nothing that could bother a perfect existence such as myself. Well anything except *that* " Said Kouenji. Before i could respond with the 'i see' response. A Commotion broke on the other side

" For the love of god Ryueen " Grumbled Katsuragi with a scowl towards Ryueen.

" Kukuku beg me more and i might help ya " Ryueen Laughed. Katsuragi's eyes twitched in annoyance at that and kept Barking

Class B and C were having a commotion. Apparently, Ryueen refused to Cooperate during this event, Which is Class B is not very happy about. Everyone is having death glare at Ryueen who brushed it off

" Truly pathetic " Muttered Kouenji while combing his hair

" Their miserable state would work in our favor " I looked at Kouenji " But that doesn't mean we would take it easy "

" I know Ayanokouji-boy. I will bless you alongside those maggots with my perfectness, Just to honor our Deal " Stated Kouenji. I nodded and The Teacher has arrived

We went with the height formation, Shortest students at the front and the Tallest at the back. Meanwhile....

The White Team's members were scattered around randomly, Formations to be damned

" Hah ! How dare they go with such foolishness against a perfect existence such as my self. That is disrespectful Hmph " Expressed Kouenji, This made Sudo behind me irritated. " But i should thank you for making my task much easier Dragon-boy. Not that it would matter "

On the Signal I grope the rope, Same for the others. I increased the Strength of my grip and lowered my Stance getting ready to pull. Honami was cheering for me on the audience, Alongside with the other girls. On countdown, The hold has been lifted

The match has started, Both teams started pulling. I put every single strength i have on my hands and started pulling, Sudo put all of his irritation and Kouenji put his perfectness and the three of us pulled with all of our might. This Caused Kanzaki in front of me to fall, Miscalculating the amount of strength the three of us would put, He Stood up quickly and joined on.

With the strong fire power of The Red Team, The White Team didn't stand a chance with their bad formation. Soon, The Flag crossed the line towards our side indicating our Victory for the First Round

" Yeaaaaaaaaaah " Screamed Sudo with Joy " Take that you Bastard ! "

Both of our Classes were Rejoiced, The Cheer increased and it seems to affect our Mentality, For the Better. Same thing couldn't be said for The White Team

" Please Ryueen-kun. I beg of you " Someone from Class B Begged Ryueen for his Cooperation. The latter was unfazed, Looking Quite proud of himself

" Kuku I guess i wouldn't mind giving you bunch a hand. I am quite Generous don't you think ? " Ryueen Smirked. Earning him a scowl from Class B

Soon Ryueen's Classmates formed the bow formation, It is a formation that increases the Pulling Strength, But it needs some level of Chemistry between the Students.

" Alright everyone. The game isn't done yet, Let's give it our all ! " Encouraged Hirata. Soon everyone got Ready again " This is not gonna be as easy as the last time, So Don't hold back ! "

" Yeah ! " Cheered Sudo who is fired up at this point, Affecting the people around him with his Competitive energy.

On Countdown, Both Teams started Pulling, This time, We were met with Greater Resistance. Despite the warnings, This took some students off guard and started pulling out of panic.

At first, Things seemed even. However, With our Firepower The

Flag started leaning towards our side. All of us Pulled with every little strength we had, While The White Team struggled with all of theirs. Slowly but surely, The Flag moved towards our side. Things are looking Grea-

" NOW ! "

" Ah !!!!! " "

Suddenly, The rope was let lose. All of the Members of the Red team fell backwards from the sudden change of force. Class B Students flew ahead and fell on the net

The Whistle blew signalling our win. However, All of our Classmates were too much in pain to react. I stood up alongside Kouenji, To be met with Ryueen who was overjoyed

" Kukuku I got you Monster " He Smirked " How does it feel ? Are you in pain ? Frustration ? Or something else ? "

" Not sure what you mean. Because i feel like a victor " I Shrugged. Ryueen's smirk wasn't affected

" You won.... But at what Cost ? " Said Ryueen before walking away with his Lackeys in a legendary exit

" Hmph. I guess i'll let it slide this time. Ha ! I'm so merciful " Kouenji pulling his hand mirror boasted. Ryueen Glanced at him before continuing his dramatic leave.

" Argh That Bastard ! " Yelled Sudo after standing up

" Calm down Sudo-kun. Remember that we won " Shibata calmed Sudo down. He turned around to the rest " Great work everyone ! "

Shibata effectively shifted the mood back where it's supposed to be. All my classmates were happy about this victory and cheered.

Kouenji gave me a smirk before he took his leave. Our next event is the Obstacle Race where we would face off for the second time.

Mid way towards the Camp, Honami Walked Towards me with her dazzling smile

" Great work Kiyotaka~ " She gave me a high five " Your next event is the obstacle race, Right ? "

" Yeah. Where I'm gonna face Kouenji again " I said

" I have full faith in you~ Kick his ass~ *Just like how you kicked mine...* " She encouraged while muttering that last part with a huge blush " *Or never mind. Don't kick it like mine...* "

'If he kicked his ass like he did to mine, I would be extremely jealous~ I'm glad i didn't say it out loud ! Kiyotaka is mine and mine alone and i won't share' Honami's thoughts

" I'm sorry i didn't hear what you said " I went closer to her Tomato-like face.

" Ah ummm.. Nothing Haha " Honami got startled by my movements. I decided to brush it off and keep walking

At the entrance, Kushida was standing there, When she noticed

me she waved. Honami stiffened up and threw me a glance. I looked at her and smiled, She smiled back and strengthened herself. We walked Closer towards Kushida and Honami leaped forward

" Hello Kushida-san " Greeted Honami.

" Hello Ichinose-san ! And Kiyota- Ayanokouji-kun~ " Kushida deliberately said my first name and corrected herself in front of Honami who tensed up. Kushida put her hands on her mouth and hung her head low, Honami looked at her then me.

" Hello Kushida " I said with my monotone voice. Kushida brightened up and looked up again " Do you need something from us ? "

" Oh noo~ I just came to hang out with Amikura-san and the others while watching your Match~ Congratulations on your win Ayanokouji-kun~ You were so cool back there~ Hehe~" Kushida Giggled cutely. However, I Remained expressionless

" I see " However, Something Caught my eye. Kushida noticed my gaze, Elaborated

" Ah~ I forgot to tell you that my friends from Class C also joined me. They wanted to hang out with me so~ I hope it's no big deal~ "

Amikura and her friends seem to be having fun chatting with both Class C and D. Not only her, But other groups were also of the same mix, Chatting, Blabbering, Consuming water, Laughing.... It didn't look bad

" No at all " I shrugged. Soon Kanzaki and the others came, Suspiciously he scanned the area.

Kushida explained to Kanzaki who appeared understanding on the surface. He knows it well that Kushida cannot be trusted, So he pretended to be convinced on the outside

While Kushida was explaining i pulled Honami towards the side

" When did Kushida come ? " I asked. Honami thought before responding

" I don't know exactly. But it was after i left to greet you "

" I see " I gazed back at Kushida's enthusiastic face, Talking to both our Classmates and her Class. I came to a conclusion " Ignore Kushida and keep watch on Class C "

" Okay~ " Honami agreed and went to talk with Kanzaki.

However, It might be too late now....

The Obstacle race has started now, I was making my way towards the track alongside Hamaguchi again, My teammate on the group

Shibata and our Athletes got first places as planned, Same as Class D. However, Second and Third places were mostly claimed by The White Team

It is said that we have the strongest athletes. But low in number compared to the white team. But that didn't hinder our Results and we are still on top

Ryueen and Sakayanagi didn't hold back on abusing the Participation table of Class D, Which led to them going down the drain

I arrived at the Track where i found Kouenji again. Alongside Kito and Yajima

Both of the latter were Scared at the sight of both of us, Knowing that they would get obliterated. Not only them, But everyone on the Track. Kouenji instead of approaching me, He was warming up. *Not that it would help him*

Manabu Joined Honami and the Rest on the Cheering, They waved at me and i responded with the same. The Countdown started and I took my Stance, Focusing on the Ground again, The Cheers faded on the background. Only one man had my awareness

I have to win against Kouenji Rokusuke

On countdown, The Gun was shot. Both of us Bolted at the Terrain at similar pace, Slow but enough to put both of us on a massive lead. We have to go at balancing beams first, So running at High speed would make it extremely difficult for us

That changed when we went through the first obstacle. Due to Kouenji's high muscle mass, It is more difficult for him to keep balance, Which allowed me to create a gap between us.

Without slowing down i arrived at the Second Obstacle, Without much faltering i Crawled under the net pushing all my muscles to the limit. Kouenji was hot on my tails pushing himself too. Finished first i Widened the gap again and headed towards the Third Obstacle

It was Sack Jump. I hopped inside a sack and Bounced towards the finish line. Kouenji took second place again, He Hopped off and cleaned himself.

" It seems that it's my loss again Ayano-boy. Hah ! " Kouenji

pulled out a mirror and examined himself.

" Aren't you disappointed ? " Yet again, Not a shred of Discomfort nor Disappointment were on his face. It was his usual enigmatic smirk

" Hah ! Why would i be ? " Kouenji laughed.

" Since you always boast over how perfect you are. I thought you'd feel down since you lo- "

" Since i lost ? Why would i be ? To match someone like you proves how perfect i am " Kouenji flipped his bangs, Looking proud of himself. I Shrugged it off

With this the Obstacle race for the boys is complete. Kouenji departed towards his Camp while i marched towards The audience where my friends are. However, upon arriving i only found Manabu and Tachibana

Manabu noticed me and gestured for me to approach him, I did just that

" Hey Manabu. Where is Honami ? " I asked while Checking my surroundings. None of my classmates were present

" About that, All your friends are in the bathrooms Right now " Answered Manabu. He added " We were watching you when suddenly All of the girls except Ichinose Got a stomach ache. The Healthy ones departed to aid them "

" I see " I muttered and took a seat next to him " Would they be able to participate ? "

" Depends. Probably not " Said Manabu. So it was already too late. Manabu spoke his concerns. Snapping me from my thoughts " However, I am afraid that this is someone's doing "

" You mean someone poisoned their food ? " Manabu nodded.

" I am going to induct an investigation for this. So rest assured, The Culprit would be punished "

" Thank you for your efforts. But I think that would be pointless " Manabu looked towards me confused. I elaborated " Ryueen wouldn't leave a shred of evidence behind. I am pretty sure he erased every possible lead "

" But there would still be the history of purchase. He can't escape tha- " Manabu Stopped, Realized something. A loophole in his argument. I spoke

" The history of purchase doesn't lie, That's why he asked someone else to buy them for him " I glanced at Manabu " In other words, Sakayanagi "

Manabu sat silent, Realizing that nothing could be done and helplessly stared at the Track.

" You seem rather calm Kiyotaka. Did you already predict this happening ? "Manabu snapped back and asked.

" Yes. But it was too late " I nodded while keeping eye contact " Thank you for your help tho "

As i said that. The first group of girls came. Honami was between them. However, Amikura was missing. Not only her but the girls of Class D too. They waited for them, But eventually started without them

" Seems like Class D got affected too " Noted Manabu " The school can't ignore this case anymore. An investigation must be inducted " An fruitless investigation would start since the school can't ignore this. There is a lot of circumstantial evidence, But not enough to issue punishments

I observed Honami while she was fighting for first place, She was head to head with Kumoro. Seems like my exercises are bearing fruits

Honami got first place by a small margin. Kumoro got frustrated and walked back. Honami however, Instead of being happy she was stern and walked towards the bathrooms

The second group came and Only Horikita emerged from Class D. 'Coincidentally' She was put against Kinoshita and Yamashita from the Track club, Again.

" Things are pretty hectic in your year huh ? " Expressed Manabu.

" Yeah. A lot of stuff is happening. Class D is Probably gonna end Last " At my words. Manabu Sighed

" Is it because of that traitor again ? " He asked looking at me. I nodded " Do you perhaps know who it is ? " I sat silent, Contemplating if i should tell him or not.

" I do " Deeming it harmless i nodded

" Let me guess. It's Kushida Kikyou Right ? " Manabu predicted. I was surprised

" Yes. How did you know ? " I asked him. He showed me a small smile before watching the race again

" Suzune and her have some history together " Said Manabu.

" I deduced that much. Kushida despises Horikita very deeply but she didn't allow her mask to slip " I laid on my chair. Manabu looked at me with interest

" How did you deduce that ? "

" Just simple observation Really " I shrugged. Manabu Chuckled " Do you perhaps know what happened between them ? "

" I do " Manabu claimed " I am the President after all. However, I am not allowed to disclose it " *Interesting... An idea formulated on my Head*

" Can i try to offer some speculations ? " Manabu smiled at me interestingly.

" Go on " He nudged. While keeping a close eye on him, I started

" I think that the problem between her and your sister is related to an incident happened during their middle school and not familial "

" I said

" Why do you think that ? "

" Simple. I can't imagine needing to be the student council president to know a familial problem, Even if it happened during the time you were at this school. You wouldn't know about it since it isn't something for Horikita to disclose it with you in your limited time together " I added " So by telling me that you grasped it with the power of student council. Meaning, It happened in their middle school while you were in this school. Am i Right ? "

Manabu sat silence for a moment " Correct "

" Good. Then i think that the problem is that either Horikita did something terribly bad to Kushida for her to hate her this much. Or Horikita is holding Kushida's darkest secret " I elaborated. Keeping close eye at Manabu's facial movements " Considering the nature of Horikita. I am willing to say that she wasn't personally involved in that incident, Most likely a big problem Kushida faced. So big that it caused her Reports to be stained "

" You are correct again " Manabu smirked " Now tell me you smart cookie. What is the problem exactly "

" That is something that i can't grasp. However.... " Manabu urged me to continue " Considering Kushida's Nature. She is a two-face that is hungry for attention, She hates Horikita because she holds information about that incident. So that incident probably goes like this : Someone exposed that she's a two-face and it caused chaos.... No that doesn't sound right "

Assuming that Kushida was as popular at her middle school as she is now, For a simple exposure to cause so much chaos it needs to be big, The person should've had decisive evidence. However, Recording her getting angry or Grumble isn't enough to cause that much of damage. It must be something bigger, Bigger and more Destructive. The only conclusion i came to is....

" Did Kushida insult them in secret ? " It is the most probable answer for me, I was unsure. But Manabu started clapping

" Call me impressed... No, I am astonished. Just from telling you that i am the president, You deduced it almost completely " Manabu stopped Clapping and Decided to answer" For your Question. Yes, I Guess i'll tell you for your efforts. It happened like this..... " Manabu proceeded to tell me about the incident and What happened to Kushida

In summary, Kushida had a blog where she posted her friends's secrets anonymously and made fun of them. It happened that one of her Friends recognized the blog as Kushida's and exposed her.

However, Kushida turned the class's hatred from her towards each other by revealing more of their secrets. This caused the Class to turn into Chaos during their last day before Graduation

" And That's everything i know " Explained Manabu. I took notes of everything

" Thank you for trusting me with this Manabu " I bowed. Now that i understand the existence named Kushida Kikyou more. I can proceed with my plans

" You're welcome... " I could tell from Manabu's tone that he wanted me to do something about this situation, But he didn't want me to help enemy Classes.

We Silently watched the Third group where Only students from Class B and C participated. It was Truly a disaster for us.

However, During those races i was pondering over a sudden idea crossed my mind. And Decided to

" Manabu, I need a favor..... "

Arc 5 Chap 6 : The start of a new Era

The Obstacle Race has concluded With a disastrous results for both us and Class D

Class C has drastically closed the gap between us and they are Currently at the Top with us slightly lacking behind. Class B is also Hot on our Tail, The situation has turned for the worse. We shouldn't talk about Class D because..... Yeah

Next was the Cavalry Battle, And we watched just how the girls got wiped out, They had stood no chance. It was so easy that Sakayanagi decided to join as one of the Jockeys for fun, Although she stayed at the back lanes, It was a huge disrespect towards us

In this event, If you catch a headband You'll earn 50 Points. The reverse is also true, If your headband get snatched you'll lose 50 points alongside unit disband. However, If your unit gets destroyed without losing your headband, It would amount to nothing.

Honami took the lead during this event and pushed all the units into destruction, And it worked wonderfully. This made it easier for us to carry the next event

" Alright, Does anyone have ideas ? " After meeting with our teammates in Class D. Hirata took the lead and asked for opinions. Before anyone could say anything i rose my hand " Go ahead Ayanokouji-kun "

" Right. I assume that everyone here knows the gravity of the situation we're currently in Correct ? " I said Facing all of them, I received dejected nods " Good. Then the best course of action for us would be to try and catch as many headbands as we possibly can "

" I was thinking of the same thing Ayanokouji-kun. Do you have any ideas how to implement it ? " Asked Hirata. I nodded

" I suggest we create 2 elite units with the best students in it and send them to collect the headbands " I suggested. Everyone looked at each other

" Ayanokouji-kun. If i understand it correctly, You mean you want to send 2 units for the offense while the other 6 would protect themselves ? " Miyake voiced out. I nodded " But it would be 2vs8, Isn't it impossible to win like that ? "

" It is. However, That is in normal circumstances "

" Normal circumstances ? " Repeated Hirata

" Allow me to explain..... " I Proceeded with explaining what my

plan would be. Everyone listened intensely

" I have to say..... That is pretty bold Ayanokouji-kun " Voiced Hirata " But i understand that we need to take risks in order for us to win at this point. So i support it "

Soon, Everyone appeared convinced with my plan. I can tell that it came from their Trust in me that i built out of no where, Well it is good that i didn't receive any serious opposition

" Good "

Shortly after, The selected students headed towards the Stage for the Battle. 4 units each class, 32 boys in total. My unit is the elite one consists of Shibata, Kanzaki, Ryouta and me as the Jockey, The other elite unit is Sudo, Hirata, Miyake and Kouenji as the Jockey

Both of our units walked in front, Allowing the other 6 to Formulate a Group protecting each other's blind spots while allowing us to to garner the headbands. We could see Ryueen's army on the other side, The person in question was on top of Albert with a wide smirk on his face, Katsuragi on the other hand was stern. Wind suddenly blown on my face

" The Fresh mesmerizing cold air that blows on my face calling for my divine beauty towards the battlefield. I Shall crush all of you like the little insects you are " Boasted Kouenji nonchalantly flipping his bangs

" Divine beauty my ass " Mocked Ryueen from the other side.

" Hmph " Kouenji Smirked.

Soon The Battle has started. My unit alongside Kouenji charged at them, Ryueen decided to spectate the Fight in the back so it was 2v7

At first, It seemed like we were about to Clash. However, The units bent towards the left where Kouenji is. Realizing this i chased After them, I Caught one of Class B's units and easily Snatched away their Headband. But it was a trap

" What are you doing ? " Yelled Katsuragi in frustration.

The 2 units from Class C slipped though the opening i created and Charged at the 6-unit Group behind. It seems that Ryueen has seen though my plan and decided to move on his own. Well i shall congratulate..... Myself

" STOP ! " Ryueen Yelled. However it was too late

The Group formed a half-circle and welcomed the suicidal attack. Due to Ryueen's shout they slowed down and panicked, But they were within striking distance. The wings Charged at them and snatched away their headbands. It was better than i anticipated

During all of this confusion, Kouenji acted as a Decoy to the Other 4 and I easily Snatched away all their Headbands. Soon to our Realization, Only Ryueen Remained

" Nice Try Ryueen " I Said. Ryueen looked at me

" Kukuku You are such a fucking Monster. Now i feel like i'm Retarded " Ryueen Smirked " You predicted everything didn't you ? " I nodded

From the Start, My goal was to push Ryueen into seeing through my plan and moving accordingly. He knows that he is at an advantage so he doesn't need to aim for Headbands, Instead he could Implement Honami's plan by pushing all his units into destruction at the cost of our units and he alone would remain and win.

Of course there was no way for him to realize that during meeting time, So i ordered our Teammates to form the Formation during Freezing time, Ryueen being the observant he is fell into my Trap.

" it was a valiant plan Ryueen. Did Katsuragi refuse Cooperating ? " Katsuragi's yell in frustration indicates that He didn't agree and proposed another plan to which Ryueen didn't follow

" Kuku Yes. Johnny sins refused to cooperate because of the Tug-of-Way shit and proposed his own shitty plan instead " Ryueen narrowed his eyes " You also predicted this didn't you ? "

" Who knows " In order for this plan to work, I can't have all units rush into my trap, So i also predicted Katsuragi's opposition due to the Tug-of-War event. But Katsuragi didn't realize that he was doing exactly what i wanted him to do

" Everything went exactly as you said Ayanokouji-kun " Said Shibata, But not loud enough for Ryueen to hear " To be honest i was Reluctant when you explained it. But i can see it now why Kanzaki-kun and Ichinose-san trusts you very much "

" It's no big deal Shibata. We still haven't won yet, I need your help once more " Shibata Nodded and i faced Ryueen

" Give up you Bastard. You lost " Barked Sudo looking proud

" Kukuku Who said that i lost ? " Ryueen's expression didn't even Change, He smirked at Sudo " How does it feel to be carried Sudo ? I thought you were Strong "

" Yeah ? Says the sore loser who always brags about being The Ruler of the School " Sudo Fought Back. I can tell that he tried to provoke Sudo, To be met with some Development. Ryueen smirked at him and faced me

" Are you going to sit there all day Ryueen ? " Asked Kanzaki. Ryueen focused back at him

" Why are you so pushy Kanzaki ? You know that if we keep like this i'm going to be the one who loses Right ? "

" Yeah. But i'd be a waste if we won't catch your headband "

" Kukuku as if you can " Ryueen mocked " Albert ! "

Albert now faced us alongside his companions. Ryueen with an unwavering Smirk looked towards me " Crush them ! "

Ryueen Charged at us at an incredible speed. I gestured for my unit to move Towards the left and evaded his Attack

" I shall leave the Dragon to you Ayano-boy. However, Please don't waste my time, I have some dates to attend " Kouenji flipped his bangs. There was Conflict in his unit but soon resolved and allowed me to Fight Him

" Kuku " Ryueen Kukued and Charged at us again, Which i evaded again " Even during this You keep dodging. You're getting on my nerves Ayanokouji "

" Don't mind me " It went for 15 sec of constant Charging and evading, There was some close calls but i kept studying the movements of Ryueen.

Soon Albert seemed to get sweaty and Charged at us again. This time i charged back, Ryueen's smirk widened as he approached me closer and Closer

He extended his arm to catch my headband, But i slapped it away and extended mine to Catch his, Due to the slap, Ryueen's movements faltered allowing me to grab a hold of his headband. However, My hand started to slip away due to some weird liquid

Due to Reflex, I tightened my Grip on his headband and Snatched it away. Ryueen's unit got eliminated, So does his Team

" The Red Team Wins ! " Announced the speakers. The Cheers Erupted

" We did it ! " Celebrated Ike with his units, Everyone sighed in Relief. However...

I wasn't done yet

" Ryueen you know what happens if i show this to the Teachers Right ? " I Said with a small smug while grabbing his Headband

" Then Class C would be disqualified " Ryueen smirked. I stared at him for a while with my smug. Ryueen felt something weird in my expression, Turned serious

" Good. You know the consequences " I said while walking away. Ryueen silently stared at my back as i walked towards the Corner

Class C's points for this event got forfeited after i gave the referees the headband for examination, Although i can tell that it shouldn't have happened.....

The School was already suspicious of Ryueen, Small evidence and some talking is all it took to convince them. The Red Team have recovered Half of their points, Our Class reclaimed the Lead by a huge margin, Even if all of the boys do badly next event, We'll still be at the top

This would serve as a lesson for Ryueen to learn from, He has a

lot of room to grow and become more formidable on the future. The last event before lunch break is the 200-M dash, So i gotta prepare for that....

After winning against Kouenji again, Lunch break came. We decided to meet at the Classroom to discuss the Recommended events

Currently, All of my Classmates are at the Cafeteria to buy some food. So only i and Honami are inside the Class

" Here you go~ " Honami pulled two bento boxes and gave me one

" Thanks " I gracefully accepted and opened it, And saw a sight i missed for a while

" Aww~ Did Kiyotaka perhaps miss my cooking~? " Teased Honami cutely

" How did you know ? " I looked at her " I am sure it didn't show on my face, So Ho- "

" It is your eyes Kiyotaka~ Your eyes told me everything~ " Honami Cut right Through me

" My eyes ? "

" Yes~ With the time we spent together~ I came to understand you more~ And i became able to decipher your eyes~ " Honami Giggled " At first it was like completely unfathomable~ But now i can tell how you're feeling~ "

" I see " I Trailed off before facing her with a smile " That's good then "

Honami Clapped her hands together with a cute blush, Feeling satisfied she opened her Bento box

" Enjoy your Food Kiyotaka~ You deserve it after all the hard work~ " Honami Said. Before licking her lips seductively " I'll make sure to reward you properly~ " However, Before i could speak :

" What kind of Reward Honami-chan~? " A Voice of a certain girl came from the door after sliding it open. Honami's lustful smile immediately disappeared, Into a horrified expression. I Simply watched her go though this change of mental states with a stuffed mouth

" Ummm... Nothing ! Haha " Honami turned towards the door, To

be met with a wide grinning Amikura.

" It sure doesn't sound like nothing Honami-chan *gasp* No way, Are you talking about- "

" Can you move Please ? You're blocking the way " Kanzaki's voice came behind the door cutting Right through Amikura. Soon he appeared and nudged her to move which she did.

He nonchalantly walked towards the seat in front of me and sat with his food, Soon more of our Classmates flooded the Room until all of us were present.

Some girls were still pale from earlier, But they seem in a better shape right now.

Honami after finishing eating, Stood up and walked towards the Podium, Everyone paid her attention while eating.

The Rest of the Break was spent on discussing the Substitutes for the Recommended events and The Relay Race....

Time for the Recommended events has come. The first event that is the Scavenger Hunt

It is an event that depends heavily on your speed and Luck too, So my teammate was Shibata

" Man I'm so excited " Shibata exclaimed. He then looked at me " Come to think of it. This is the first time we spend time alone Ayanokouji-kun "

What Shibata said wasn't wrong. Whenever we are together, There is always someone else like Kanzaki and Amikura. So this is technically our first one-on-one conversation

" That's true " I added " It's probably due to our personalities being hard-to-bond with each other. No offense Tho "

" Haha That's probably True " Shibata laughed. He didn't seem offended " Let's spend more time together Ayanokouji-kun " I nodded

We both went reached the Starting line and got Ready. Sudo, Yajima and Hashimoto were all the people who catch the eye. However, It's not a guarantee that anyone of us would win

(Sudo didn't run away since he didn't lose the cavalry battle / He isn't in love with Horikita since he didn't fail)

" Right Get Ready ! " The Referee came and Started the

Countdown. We all took our stances " Get set " We took our second set **Bang**

I ran towards Booth to Collect my First paper. I Didn't run at full speed but it was enough to out-run Sudo and Shibata who were neck to neck behind me

I arrived First and Claimed my First Paper, I Opened it and
' 10 Friends '

" I'd like to request a change " The Teacher nodded and Informed me to wait for 30 sec

I do have more than 10 friends. However, It would be a pain moving them from the audience during the confusion. Besides, Running alongside 10 people on the Track seems quite the scene, I am astonished that the School would give such a paper, Again, This could be the school daring me to do it, But i am not bold enough.

Many seems to get things that they don't like, So i don't have to rush it for the most part.

The Teacher handed me the second paper, I opened it and
' Someone you love '

I have that

I Ran towards the Audience leaving dust hanging in the air. Soon, I spotted my Target

" Honami " She was sitting peacefully on a chair spectating the Match. When i called her She Turned towards me

" Yes Kiyotaka~? " Without wasting anytime i ran towards her and handed her the Paper " What is thi- ?!!!! "

Just before she opens the Paper, I swept her Legs in my arms and Carried her outside bridal-style. She let a cute yelp

" K-Kiyotaka ! What's happening ? " She was Blushing furiously while confusingly stuttering. This is so cute that i could watch it the entire day. However i have something to do

" Read the Paper " She Calmed down and opened the paper, When she Read it i bolted towards the Field

" Ah~ Ngh~ Kiyo That's too fast ! " She Complained, But i hugged her Tighter and Increased my Pace even Further

" Sorry, Hashimoto seems to have caught what he needed " I Apologized to the Blushing mess. She was looking at me with mouth open, While Cutely moaning, I brushed that off.

But i cannot let Hashimoto win

Soon enough, I outpaced him and handed the Teacher my paper, He examined both of us and soon i Achieved First place

I Released Honami and she instantly averted her gaze, Her legs were Shaking and face Completely Red

" Kiyo... You baka~ You should've at least warned me " Honami cutely punched my chest

" Ouch Sorry " She Punched it again, And again. She kept sending punches left and right, While i only watched her cute face while receiving them. *Now i can watch this for the entire day*

" That's our King " Hashimoto Snickered. Shibata was watching with a wholesome smile and soon the announcements came

Honami got satisfied after punching me some more and Went ahead of me towards the Audience, I Caught up to her and walked in silence, But it wasn't fully uncomfortable.

We reached the Audience, And almost everyone glared at me, I shrugged and Took my seat. Amikura Teased us Relentlessly while i waited for the second event

The Tug-of-War event went smoothly for us, With our Line-up consists of the Strongest on our Class, We were unrivaled.

On the mixed 3-legged-race. I Partnered up with Honami and Achieved First Place with ease, Our Classmates Struggled but it's not like we are losing anyway

Due to our Performance in the Cavalry match, The Results are already set in stone, For both The Teams competition and Classes Competition

The worst case scenario is Class C getting first place in this next event which is also the Last : The Joint Relay Race

If that happened we'll drop to second place and receive nothing. It may sound bad but considering the results, Every Class is losing Class points, So this Festival is already won by us Class A

However, It doesn't mean that we'll throw this last event, So that's why we're Discussing our line-up currently. The only problem we're facing is Minamikata and Ando

" Right, Both Kozue-chan and Sayo-chan can't run so we need to substitute for them. I can participate, But We're missing one more person " Honami said in front of our Classmates " So is there anyone who want to volunteer ? "

Most of our Classmates aren't athletic enough, Or running through Stomach aches. So i doubt anyone would volunte-

" I can run " That voice came from an unexpected someone.

" Mako-chan~ Are you sure ? You're still injured " Amikura Mako, Was the volunteer.

" If no one would do it then i will. I am pretty confident that i can run more than 100-M at my top speed " Amikura Claimed. She isn't a bad Runner by any means, So it's not a bad Option

After some more discussion, It was decided that she and Honami would Replace Minamikata and Ando. There was no pressure, Nothing is on the line here.

So our Line-up is set, With Shibata at the Start Followed up by Honami, Kanzaki, Ryouta, Amikura and Finally Me as the anchor.

It is a pretty solid lineup, It could've been better, But that's the best we could salvage right now.

Soon all of us went towards our respective spots. I arrived at the Anchoring Spot where everyone was horrified when they noticed me, I Brushed it off and Walked towards my lane, Everyone was glaring daggers at me.

" Hello Kiyotaka " That voice belonged to Manabu who approached me with a small smile. Beside him was Kiriya who smiled at me too

" Hello Manabu-senpai, Kiriya-senpai " I greeted with a small bow

" Good afternoon Ayanokouji-kun " Kiriya bowed

" Seem like you've built quite the reputation " Manabu checked his surroundings before looking back at me with a smirk " Even I am terrified of going against you, So go ea- "

" Eh ? " Someone blurted in shock after hearing Manabu. It belongs to a female student that is " Nii-san. You can't be serious " Horikita Suzune

(No, She didn't do that stupid move where she looks back and falls. Because it would help me later with something :D)

" What do you mean ? " Manabu asked, Looking somewhat hostile

" Y-You can't be scared of g-going against him R-Right ? " Horikita was stuttering, Disbelief written all over her face. Manabu took a huge sigh

" I am serious Suzune, Kiyotaka is way better than what i hope to be, Didn't you observe him as well ? " Manabu faced her. She flinched

" Y-Yes i did... He- "

" Then this conversation is pointless " Manabu added, With a soft tone " Suzune, How many times did i tell you that there is always a bigger fish ? "

" ... " Horikita stood silent at Manabu's words. I looked at Kiriya who was gazing at me. We both understood and moved away

" I think we should give them some space alone " I said

" You're right " Kiriya nodded. I looked towards Manabu who desperately tried to convey his words to his sister, I am Pretty sure he is repeating himself at this point.

" Kiriya-senpai, Did you want to talk about *that* ? " Kiriya

focused on me and nodded

*** Flashback ***

" Manabu, I need a Favor "

" What is it Kiyotaka ? " Manabu turned towards me. A sign of interest

" If it's possible, I'd like you to connect me with KiriYama-senpai " Manabu's eyes widened, slightly

" Aren't you already acquainted with him ? " I shook my head

" I've only talked briefly with him "

" I see. Then i can do that " Manabu nodded, Before narrowing his eyes " But may i know the reason why ? I can't imagine you wanting to be friends with him " I averted my gaze towards the track

" After i expelled Nagumo, Asahina-senpai is harboring a deep hatred towards me. When she becomes the Vice President, She would be more painful to deal with "

After Manabu retires, KiriYama would become the President, Due to an allotment Asahina would become Vice President and i can tell what she'll do

My Goal here isn't to convince Manabu to protect me from her. If my calculations is right, Then *That man* would stage an accident to replace The Chairman with one of his men to try and expel me

When that time comes having the student council president on my side would benefit me against both Asahina and *that man*

" I see " Manabu continued " I'll talk with him about it. It's my fault for involving you in my mess, I apologize "

" You don't have to Manabu. Nagumo would've been expelled either way since he was harrasing Honami " I said. Manabu smirked and we continued watching

*** Flashback END ***

" Yes. Horikita-senpai explained it to me, I'll help you "

" Good. Thank you KiriYama-senpai " I bowed

" No need to thank me Ayanokouji-kun. Really, It should be me who thank you instead " KiriYama bowed

" Why is that ? " I am abit confused. KiriYama cleared his throat

" Without you, My class would've still been under Nagumo's control and we would've stayed in Class B for the rest of our School days " KiriYama explained " Also, I am sure that he was guilty of one of my classmates's expulsion, I don't have evidence but my intuition tells me that "

" I see " This explains KiriYama's overly friendly attitude with me, For him i was the one who took vengeance and carried him to Class A.

" I cannot prevent her from taking the Vice President role, But i'll help you with the best of my capabilities "

" Thank you KiriYama-senpai "

" You can call me Ikuto if you want " KiriYama smiled warmly. I nodded

" Then you can call me Kiyotaka " I raised my hand " Pleasure knowing you Ikuto "

" Likewise Kiyotaka " He shook my hand with a smile. Hence, My first line of defense is complete " Seems like they finished talking to each other. Let's head back " I nodded

As soon as we joined Manabu, The Race has started. Both Shibata and Sudo bolted at the Track putting everyone behind. At first it seems that they are even, But Shibata's experience in the soccer club came to play and he pulled ahead of Sudo

" Seems like you guys are in the lead " Ikuto said.

" Yeah. But it would be short lived "

Shortly after, Shibata passed the Baton to Honami who didn't waste a second and Ran as fast as she could, She was pretty fast compared to a girl. But not enough to beat her opponent

Sudo passed the baton to Hirata who was superior and now is on the lead with Honami behind. It didn't take long for the upperclassmen to catch up to them

" This year's Freshmen are very interesting. Don't you think Horikita-senpai ? " Ikuto expressed, Manabu nodded

" Yeah. It usually takes long for people to get used to this school, But They seem to be a natural. People like Kiyotaka, Sakayanagi, Ryueen and even Kouenji are like one in a decade prowess "

After observing the upperclassmen for a while now, I can agree with what Manabu said. The only ones that are special are Manabu and Kiryuin, Nagumo didn't even make it to the list because he is clearly a clown

Honami who was at 4th place handed the Baton to Kanzaki who outpaced a Class D student named Maezono and he's slowly closing in for second place

" By the way Kiyotaka, I am curious about how you've managed to get on your current physical shape. I can imagine how much Training you've been through " Manabu asked with Curiosity

" That is a memory i wish to not reminisce Manabu "

" I see.... I understand Kiyotaka. Sorry for asking " Manabu apologized

Kanzaki passed the baton towards Ryouta who kept running at similar pace. But he was overtaken and now he's at fourth place

" However... " I glanced at Manabu. Who focused back at me " If this could be much of help, I play Piano and Calligraphy "

" Pffft... " Ikuto tried to hold his laughter, While Manabu pouted.
Wait what ?

" Manabu i'd like to have a recording of you pouting "

" Why is that Kiyotaka ? "

" Tachibana-senpai would kill to get a GIF of you pouting, Not only her but the whole school. So i can make some stonks " Ikuto couldn't contain his laughter anymore. However, Manabu was confused

" Kiyotaka what's a GIF ? " I felt like facepalming. *Who am i to do that anyway ? I only learned it from Amikura after she teased Honami today, It's not like i'm better*

" Who knows " Manabu pouted again. Likely Ikuto explained it, Manabu opened his mouth and stared at me after the realization hit him

" I never thought you'll be such a Dank Memer Kiyotaka " Said Ikuto.

" I'm not. Someone just told me what it is " I shrugged. He giggled

Ryouta passed on the baton to Amikura who ran with all of her might. She started to considerably slow down half way which allowed two Runners to catch up, Soon enough, Runners started arriving

" I Wish to continue our Chat but.... " Manabu received the baton from the runner who arrived first " I gotta go "

" Cya " Ikuto also received his baton and departed after Manabu, He was pretty fast.

Amikura exhaustively pushed herself towards me " Here.... Ayanokouji-kun " I snatched away her baton and bolted towards the finish line with a full throttle

I passed through multiple runners completely deserting them, As i slowly started catching up

Soon i caught 3rd place where i saw Manabu's back cross the Finish line, Ikuto was right in front of me but i decided to let him get second place.

We already won this anyway

I finished in third, After Manabu and Ikuto. And that concludes the sports festival

" You did it Kiyotaka~! " Honami jumped at my embrace hugging me tightly. Behind her were the rest of my friend with smiles

" Good work Ayanokouji " Complimented Kanzaki

" What do you mean i did it ? You guy- "

" Take some credit will you Ayanokouji-kun ? We wouldn't have won without you " Said Shibata which was supported by all of my classmates. I sighed while caressing Honami's hair

" Fair enough " Shibata happily started celebrating alongside Amikura and the rest.

Honami while hugging me, Put her chin my my chest looking

straight at my face, I lowered my head and looked at her. This angel beautifully shows her facial features and how beautiful truly she is. She showered me with a warm smile which i automatically responded with the same

Those are one of those moments where i cannot believe that she is mine, Those moments where i truly feel how blessed i am to have her

Those moments where..... I cannot imagine my life without her.....

After the Festival conducted, We all moved towards the gymnasium for the announcements of our results

Everyone from my Class Already know it, So they were anything but gloomy. The same couldn't be said to the other classes, The gloomiest were Class D in our Grade

After all the Classes gathered inside the gymnasium, Alongside our Homeroom teachers. Chairman Sakayanagi with a paper in hand walked towards the podium, Everyone focused on him as the Gym erupted into silence

" The Annual sports festival for this year has concluded, Allow me to congratulate everyone of you and thank you for your hard work " Papayanagi Continued " Firstly, We will announce the results of the Team competitions "

The screen behind the Chairman lit up showing two counters for White and Red. The numbers started increasing for both counters until The White Team stopped at 21345 and displayed :

Winner : The Red Team (24667)

This was to be expected after The cavalry match. The gap was already wide enough

" Second, We'll announce the MVP of the sports festival. Alongside The MVPs of each Grade, Remember that you cannot be the MVP of your grade and MVP of the Festival. That is for giving more opportunities " Papayanagi opened a draft he received and Pulled out a paper :

" The MVP of the whole Festival is.... " During the suspense, A lot of eyes fell on me including a quick glance from the Chairman and

my Homeroom teacher

" Ayanokouji Kiyotaka From Class 1-A "

My class cheered and congratulated me, Everyone was happy for me. The Chairman was looking at me with a warm smile while my classmates cheered, He didn't bother to stop them

Since I'm a First-Year, I'll be receiving double the Award akin to 200,000 P.P It is gonna be pretty helpful....

The announcements Continued and The MVPs were Manabu, Mikitani and Shibata

It was a close call between Sudo and Shibata. I bet the difference is not that Huge

" Way to go~ Sou-kun~ " Cheered Amikura while smacking Shibata's back

" Hehe~ Thank you Mako-chan " Shibata blushed nervously.

" But you know~ Ayanokouji-kun was the real MVP. You're not good enough " Amikura smirked. However, Shibata had a counter

" Since Ayanokouji-kun is our King, I let him win as proof of my Loyalty " Shibata gave me a salute.

" Yeah Yeah~ Whatever " Amikura Waved off uninterested.

The Chairman went with the announcements of the Class Competition. Manabu and Ikuto's classes managed first place, While Asahina's Class managed third causing them to fall even more

" For the Freshmen :

Class A got First Place

Class C got second

Class B third

Class D last

That's all "

Soon Class D erupted into Chaos. Everyone started blaming each other, Mostly boys blaming girls, They desperately fought to push the blame off themselves

But if no one is gonna take the blame, Then they are gonna keep fighting.

Chie-sensei arrived at our Spot with a clipboard in hand, Looking more Cheerful than usual. She ignored Class D's loud commotion and walked to us

" Ri- "

Slap

A Slap sound effect came, Silencing the whole commotion. This caused all the Gym to unconsciously turn towards it

No body could believe what they saw

" **SHUT UP** " A Cold Threatening voice Came from.....

" H-Hirata-kun.... " Muttered one of the girls

Yamauchi was laying on the ground before Hirata who's cheery

aura was no where to be found, Instead a dark aura was behind him. It is a sight you can never imagine

So this is the other side of Hirata Yousuke

Honami was frightened, Not only her but Almost everyone, And understandably so. I pulled her into a hug which she reciprocated alongside head pats, *Cheery on top*

" **YOU'RE ALL PATHETIC** "

" W-What did you say ? You bastard how dare you Slap me ? " Yamauchi stood up and charged at Hirata

Smack

Yamauchi ate the ground as a result of Hirata's side kick. The teachers rushed towards it and pulled Hirata away

" **YOU'RE ALL PATHETIC. REFUSING TO TAKE RESPONSIBILITY AND BLAMING EACH OTHER. EVERYONE IS GUILTY** "

" ... "

" **YOU, YOU, YOU AND ALL OF US. EVEN ME. EVERYONE IS GUILTY OF THIS CURRENT PREDICAMENT. INSTEAD OF TAKING IT AS A CLASS, EVERYONE BLAMES EACH OTHER, YOU'RE ALL PATHETIC** " Hirata brushed off the Teacher's Hand and stormed out of the Gymnasium

Many released sighs, They didn't realize that they were holding their breaths. Honami hugged me even tighter

Shibata was comforting Amikura, Same with the Other girls. Class D was devastated, A lot of girls were shocked, Disbelief, Sadness were in their faces

However, I caught onto something interesting....

Chie-sensei, Was Smiling Sadistically at Class D, Or to be more precise, The conflicted isolated Chabashira-sensei. She was looking indifferent on the outside, But her eye pupil were shacking.

Chabashira-sensei noticed Chie-sensei's gaze and averted her eyes, Chie-sensei grinned even wider, Before coming back to normal and facing all of us with her usual smile

" Right~ Continuing where we left off~ I'm gonna announce The Class points Change you've went through this exam. They would be updated next month so Here~

Class points update Reports for the S.F

(x) : Resembles the Change

[x] resembles original Class Points

Class A : 1456 C.P (+50) [1406]

Class B : 972 C.P (-150) [1122]

Class C : 548 C.P (-100) [648]

Class D : 0 C.P (- 100) [87]

Note : The Changes would apply starting from next Month

Class A has widened the gap even more, And Currently we are 500 Points apart from Sakayanagi's Class, 1000 Points from Ryueen's and..... *Ignore that*

Class D is in Shambles right now, Everyone is dejected or depressed. There is no one that is cheering them up, Kushida and Hirata are nowhere to be found

Vrrrrt

" Huh ? " Suddenly. My phone vibrated alongside everyone's. All of us looked at each other, They were horrified, Flashbacks from the Cruise exam played in their head.

I checked my phone and noticed a promotional message. It is a message sent by one student to a specific Group with the use of Private Points. In this case, It's sent to the entire student body

Many students sighed in huge relief after realizing it's not a surprise Special exam. So the confidently checked it, I opened the Message and saw the sender.... Alongside his message

The Reactions varied from one student to another. However, This message that is currently on my phone marks the beginning of a new era

One that is much more intense and Thrilling. One that is..... *More fun*

Promotional Message :

Submission.png

(Imports a Picture of Horikita Kneeling on the Ground with her hands up surrendering)

Horikita Suzune has submitted to Ryueen Kakeru's Strong will and Supremacy

One down.... 2 to go

Horikita Manabu SS : A Friend

I am an Extraordinary Child, i was born extraordinary and achieved extraordinary things

With a lot of hard work, I became the best in the eyes of everyone

I was a blessing to my parents, They all got showered with respect and praised just because i am their child

People's expectations were all over me. However, I didn't allow it to pressure me

I always did what people expected me to do, I lived to fulfill people's expectations

Those expectations was what formed the current successful me, Many people look up to me cause i meet those expectations. However, Those expectations also removed any free choice i have

Since i live to meet the expectations, I cannot pursue other paths other than what is expected from me to follow

I was expected to enroll at The ANHS and become the best there, And i did just that.

Due to me being extraordinary, I didn't find any real friends. All the people i am acquainted with speak formally since they look up to me. The Closest one to being my Friend was Akane, But not close

I couldn't find a real friend that understands me, Or doesn't befriend me just because of my abilities.

I didn't want someone extraordinary just like me, I just wanted Genuine feelings.

My success influences people around me, They can't help but feel that way. So i don't Blame them, It is all my fault after all.

It is in Human nature to seek someone extraordinary, So they would be of use to you. I didn't understand this until i met one person

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

He was the only person i couldn't appraise. I still remember it on that day during the Club affairs, He was the only one different between all the Fresh-men

It happened some while ago, But i still remember it like Yesterday

He was shrewd in Mystery, Even my so-called amazing skills didn't work on him. That's when i understood something

He is extraordinary

I checked his history but i didn't find anything, Even his school

documents are a mystery. I Couldn't help but feel intrigued

After some interactions with him, I came to the conclusion that he is extraordinary. However...

He isn't bound by any expectations, He does whatever he feels like doing. He doesn't get influenced by the people around him, Yet he influences them

He is someone that is way better than me, Way better than what i hope to be. Yet, He wasn't bound by anything, Unlike me

After our interaction during the Relay race, I came to understand that he wasn't meeting people's expectations like i did

He was forced to

Unlike others, I felt like he is someone i can call a friend, A True Friend. And i can confidently say that

He is my first true Friend

Arc 6 Chap 1 : Paper Shuffle

16th of October

The Sports festival has ended a few days ago, And We are back to our Daily lives

All the student body gathered inside the Gymnasium alongside their Homeroom teachers in a ceremony honoring the Departing members of The Student Council

Today is the day where Manabu and Tachibana would retire. Hence, A new Generation would take over them, Due to an election Ikuto is gonna take the President Role while Asahina would be Vice-President

All first-years except Our Class and Class B are trying their hardest to not let their snoring to be heard by their teachers. It is said that they couldn't care less about what's happening, For them it is like the entrance ceremony

However, For the upperclassmen and the Freshmen who grew attached to the council and it's members are paying attention, One of which is me.

The moderator stepped aside, Allowing Manabu to take over the podium. Flashbacks from the Club-Affair played in my head, He has his same Superior-calm-serious Aura or even stronger now.

" My journey as a Student Council President has been rocky to say the least, But it was fun interacting with different types of students and staff member, While working with them. I have led the Council for almost 2 years, And i am pretty proud of what I've accomplished. Everyone, I'd like to offer my sincerest gratitude to everyone who supported me on this Journey, Alongside the Kind staff members. I would also like to offer a special thanks to a certain someone for all the time we interacted and worked together, This individual is aware that i am addressing them so allow me to say it again, Thank you " Manabu Bowed. I felt a smile creep into my face. *I should be the one who thanks you, Manabu*

Manabu descended from the Podium and walked towards The Council members including Honami. She alongside Ikuto were Quite emotional, Manabu Gave Ikuto a hug that lasted for quite sometime, Probably exchanging some words of encouragement and advice. Soon they Broke free and Ikuto nodded, Before walking towards the Podium

" It is both an honor and pleasure to be in your acquaintance. My name is Kiriyaama Ikuto, The newly elected Student Council President. I thank each one of you for your Trust in me and my Capabilities, And i promise that i would serve The Council with the best of it and Try to accomplish what Horikita-senpai and the others couldn't. All i request is your support during my journey " Ikuto Bowed. However, He Turned towards Manabu and the others " As my first act as President, I would like to promote Student Council Secretary Ichinose Honami to the Second Vice-President role by a recommendation from Horikita-senpai "

This took the Whole Gym off-guard, It was multiplied for Honami. Wide wide eyes and open mouth she Stared at Ikuto, She looked at Manabu who told her something with a small smile. She averted her gaze to the floor contemplating about it

" Ichinose-san. Do you accept your role ? "

As a last resort, Honami looked at me for my decision, I nodded.

Honami would be pretty happy with this promotion, But in her mind she would have less time to spend with me. *That is in her mind*

Honami steeled her resolve and stood up facing Ikuto. With graceful movements and tone she

" Yes. I accept my new role, Thank you for your Faith in me Kiriyaama-senpai, Horikita-senpai " Honami ended it with a bow. And Hence, Another Vice-President Got elected

Knowing our limits we didn't celebrate loudly, But our Classmates were leaping from joy. However, Many Second-years glared threatening daggers at us, Especially 2-B.

I knew that they have some dirt with the Third-years. It looks like they don't like us either, I brushed it off and focused back at the ceremony

Both Asahina and Honami offered small speeches, While the Latter was flustered in the inside. The former didn't try to hide her annoyance, Although many people wouldn't know the reason. I alongside some others know it well

Not that it matters anyway, She can get expelled for all i care. If she couldn't lead her class against scrubs in her year, She can never hope to defeat me. I bet she would get delusional with her powers and act like Nagumo

The ceremony conducted and we all returned to our Classes. We held a huge celebration party for Honami's Promotion

A Few days has passed since that day. Today is the day we receive the results of our midterms

The Sports Festival left a major impact not only in Class D, But all Classes

Speaking of Class D, They are completely dysfunctional right now. They all grew distant from each other with no one to lead them.

There is some rumors about Horikita getting bullied by the likes of Karuizawa and becoming cloistered, After Classes she runs off to her dorm and locks herself in. I couldn't care less about her However....

Manabu is dejected and annoyed, He doesn't show it on the surface but he cares deeply for her. That message was a strong hit to his Psyche and he became somewhat depressed

Hirata cut off any contact with his classmates and isolated himself. His usual friendly aura is nowhere to be found.

Kushida is the only one standing in Class D and she's the cause for this predicament, And she is liking it. She must be feeling rejoiced after causing this mayhem. However, She now must keep up a good front while working hard, By understanding her past she is hating this role she's in, But it was worth it in her eyes

Ryueen has gathered more confidence after his successful handy-work. In the eyes of everyone he is a dangerous opponent since he just destroyed a whole Class and now he is after both Class A and B. However....

Class C isn't very happy about the results of the Sports Festival, Ryueen is the reason they lost in their heads. A Student named Tokito is currently leading a rebellion against Ryueen, It has been surprisingly successful so far. However, I suspect that there is a hidden mastermind....

The Bell rang signalling the Start of the Homeroom period, Shortly after Chie-sensei Waltzed inside the room with her usual cheery expression

" Goooooooood Morning Class~ " Chie-sensei Greeted with her usual cheerful expression " You know what today is Riiiiight~? That's Correct~ It's The day where the results of your Midterms would be announced ! "

She Spread her legs- I mean a Poster on the Black board containing the results, She Drew a red line above nothing and everyone sighed in relief.

" Nobody got below a 70~ That is some exceptional Work everyone ! I am so proud~ " Complimented Chie. Before staring at me " I am especially proud at a certain Kiyotaka-kun~ " *You didn't*

have to drop names

All my classmates stared at me with some surprise. It is said that it's not impossible to get a perfect score on one subject, As proven by Honami, Kanzaki and Hamaguchi. However, A Perfect score across the Board is quite difficult to pull out, So their surprises isn't unjustifiable

" Sensei. Does this mean that Ayanokouji-kun scored the Highest in our Grade ? " Asked Shibata.

The student who scored the Highest during midterms or Finals would be awarded 100.000 P.P I believe that's an Idea Nagumo managed to bring before getting expelled *He was serious about turning this school into a meritocracy*

All of my Classmates thought that it was obvious. However, I wasn't too sure about that...

" Not quite Shibata-kun~ Someone also managed to get a perfect score across the Board " At her words, Many got disappointed. *So it's a draw huh ?*

" Sensei. May we know who is this person ? " Honami asked.

" It's... "

*** Flashbacks ***

I am currently waiting for someone inside the special building after i requested their presence for a meeting after classes was over. I was chilling inside until i head loud bumps approaching. Soon my Target appeared

" Fufu Good afternoon Ayanokouji-kun. It's been a while " Sakayanagi with her infamous smug smile approached me. I stood up when we were few inches away

" Hello Sakayanagi. It has been a while indeed " I greeted back

" Fufu For what do i owe the pleasure of meeting you here Ayanokouji-kun ? " Following the flow, I Cut straight to the Chase

" Sakayanagi, I need a little favor from you "

" Fufu I'm all ears.... "

I proceeded in explaining my demand, With Sakayanagi listening intensely with a wide smug. After i finished, She took a moment to organize her thoughts before facing me again

" You want me to do that Ayanokouji-kun ? " She asked as if she was surprised. I nodded " Fufu i can do that. However, You're not the type of person who plays like this Ayanokouji-kun. I can't help but feel there is another plan around this "

" You are correct. But i won't be explaining it Right now cause it will ruin the Fun " Sakayanagi fufu'ed " But i am not expecting you to do it for free, So if you have any demand i'll honor "

Sakayanagi Trailed off, Deep in her thoughts. Or so she pretended, Her smug widened

" So i'll be owing you a favor Ayanokouji-kun ? " I nodded. She Straightened herself " Then i want you to break up with Ichinose-san "

" Not happening " I instantly Rejected.

" Fufu Instant flat rejection i see. You're quite protective when it comes to her Ayanokouji-kun, It's quite adorable " Teased Sakayanagi.

" So you'll be owing me a favor correct ? " Sakayanagi nodded

" Also i'd like to add another condition. It's only fair right ? "

" Go ahead " Since My request would be a burden for her. I am willing to accept another condition as long as it's reasonable

" I'd like to Compete with you Ayanokouji-kun, Compete with you on every single opportunity we can, Without holding back. " She spoke with passion

" Didn't you already request this from me ? You're just repeating yourself " I marked.

" Fufu I just wanted you to take our competition more seriously. You've been fighting mostly against Dragoboy-chan, So starting from today, You'll be my prey. So we'll be competing starting from the upcoming midterms " She said all of those with confidence and a huge smug on her face.

" You know that i learnt the curriculum by the age of 6 Right ? " I rose an eyebrow

" Fufu Do i look like i care ? I recommend you to not underestimate me Ayanokouji-kun " She spoke with massive confidence, It wasn't ego, But pure confidence.

" Alright. I won't be holding back against you Sakayanagi, I hope you're prepared to take on The Monster i will unleash on you " I showed her the eyes of the Monster, Devoid from any emotion, Only darkness resides in it, Immense darkness that would shake you to the spine. But She bravely took my gaze head on with a wide smug, She was unfazed. I Grinned at her " Sakayanagi, Show me something interesting.... "

" Fufufu as you wish "

*** Flashback END ***

Sakayanagi also got Perfect Score across the board. I Haven't expected anything less from her. She is a Natural Born Genius after all.

Many of my classmates got disappointed. Due to 2 people getting top spot, The reward would be split between them so i'll receive 50.000 P.P Only

" Don't you fret guys~ There is still the finals you know~ Since we'll be holding Paper shuffle, Kiyotaka-kun~ Can get the Top spot~ " *Paper Shuffle ?*

" Paper Shuffle ? " Blurted Kanzaki alongside all of our Classmates.

" Oops~ Forgot to explain~ My bad teehee~ " Chie-sensei bonked her head cutely tongue out with a wink. Before turning serious " Alright. Listen to me because what i'm gonna say is very important "

All of my classmates focused on her, Gulping at the change of mood. A Silence erupted in the Room, Soon Sensei broke it

" In Paper Shuffle, We'll be holding 2 events. First which is a mock exam and Last Your Finals. The mock would be held during next week and it will determine the pairs for your finals next month "

" Pairs ? "

" Yes. You'll be taking the Finals in pairs. The Finals would be held in a period of 2 days, 4 Subjects each day with 50 questions and total score of 100 " Chie-sensei Cleared her Throat " Each pair attending the exam must score a combined score of 60 on each subject, Failing in doing so would result in the expulsion of both Pairs "

Everyone shivered at that word. But unlike last time, They didn't question it.

" That is one way of getting expelled, The other one is if the Pair's total score failed on reaching a threshold set by the school which is around 700 Points. As you've guessed, It would result in the expulsion of both pairs too "

In other words, A Pair has to meet two thresholds set by the school, The first one is 60 on each subject and Second is 700 on all subjects. By doing some math, A Student must score an average of 43.75 across all subjects as a bare minimum. There is room for less if your partner carries you

So far, I fail to notice anything difficult. Each student on our midterms scored above a 70, They can easily solo carry themselves. I am pretty sure that Class B is in a similar case to our Class since they have a lot of academically gifted students, More than us. So obviously, There is more to this 'paper shuffle' exam

Sensei answered some questions, Clarifying more about what explained before. She cleared her Throat again and explained the difficult part

" You may be wondering what's difficult about this exam, Since all of you scored very well then you don't have to worry right ? Well~ Yes and no. The question that you would solve during the finals wouldn't be supplied by the school. Instead they would come from the other Classes " Explained Chie-sensei. Confusion erupted

" Sensei, You mean that the other classes would be the ones who

creates the questions ? "

" Yes Honami-chan. You guys would be tasked to write your own questions too and use them to *attack* other classes, Other classes would also attack you so you have to *defend*. By defending i mean cramming for the exam. If your Class Managed to score a total score higher than the Class attacking you or defending against you, You'll be stealing 50 Class points from them. The reverse is also true. In case of a tie, Everything stays the same "

This means that in this Exam, You can only win or lose 100 Class points, Or gain nothing. On rare occasions you could won or lose 50 Class points.

" You would be asked to choose a class to attack, Starting from today and lasts for 2 weeks. In case two classes or more choose one single class to attack, The representatives would have to draw lots " Chie-sensei turned back into her cheery self " And that concludes the Paper Shuffle event~ Any questions~? "

Not only we should score high enough to avoid expulsion, We have to score higher than the other classes in order for us to win this exam. So my previous calculations about the bare minimum were almost useless, Every student has to put their heart and soul into answering those questions, Not for his sake only but for the Class.

There is still unclear things like how does the mock test affects the pairings. However, That is trivial to our Class which all of us are academically strong. It is a concern for Classes C and D, But i assume that they paired up for the lowest chance of failure, That is if the school is kind enough

" Oh~ I almost forgot~ " Chie-Sensei added " The top 5 highest scoring pairs would get awarded with Private Points~ On first place~ 500.000 P.P , Second 300.000, 250,000, 100,000 and 50,000 respectively. The rewards would be split off between the pair. It got added this year so sorry~ Teehee~ "

" Sensei i have a question " That was it. That's when i rose my hand and asked my question. It isn't trivial anymore, At least for me....

" Yes Kiyotaka-kun~? "

" How exactly are we paired with one another ? " Chie-sensei smirked

" Sorry~ That is for you to figure it out~ However..... " Chie-sensei lowered her head gazing at me, As if challenging me " I am allowed to offer a hint~ "

" What is it Sensei ? " Kanzaki probed. Chie-sensei brushed her hair and faced the both of us

" Taking our Class or Class B as an example. If everyone is

evaluated correctly and there would be no abnormalities. It is anyone's game to achieve the top 5 rewards " Chie-Sensei hinted. My gaze lowered towards the table diving deep in thought

Taking our Class or Class B as an example. If everyone is evaluated correctly and there would be no abnormalities. It is anyone's game to achieve the top 5 rewards

Taking our class as an example. If everything goes the normal way and everyone is evaluated correctly, It's anyone's game to achieve top 5 rewards

This indicates that if everything goes as normal, Any pair in our class can get top 5 spots.

The evaluation part is a half-farce, Evaluation means taking tests. The tests during this is the mock and the finals. If everyone is evaluated based on their merit during those two exams, Anyone can achieve Top spots

The Top spots is indirectly linked with this mock test. And directly with the Finals

If everyone is evaluated correctly then everyone goes as normal, Anyone can achieve top spots

" Sensei. I Couldn't figure it out "

" Don't worry Kanzaki-kun~ I gave this hint especially to Kiyotaka-kun~ I'll tell you the real hint later. Don't tell him teehee~ " There was muffling in the background, But i couldn't focus on that

That sentence indicates that An element of chance is present

If things doesn't go normally, The element of chance wouldn't be present

The normal Process : Takes mock test, Attack Class, Study, Takes Finals

The only abnormalities could be is ' Taking mock test ' and ' Taking finals '

If both of those would be normal. Then everyone has identical chances of getting top places

Does that mean our scores would be identical ?

" Sensei. Don't you think that's too vague ? "

" Shh~ Let him be "

Sensei said 'our class' I am part of this class. She knows that i'm gonna ace this exam, Yet She didn't make special cases, So i'm gonna put my pair into perspective

Even tho i'm gonna ace the tests, My pair score is gonna be average. Wait...

" Okay that was too hard~ The Pairing i- "

" Does that mean that.... The pairs are balanced ? " I blurted out Chie-sensei's eyes went wide, Silence erupted in the room. Soon,

Her wide eyes dramatically turned into a wide grin. She started Clapping

" Exceptional~ No.... Outstanding~ I have no words " She kept clapping looking very impressed

" Sensei. Does this mean.... " My whole Class was confused.

" Yes Honami-chan. Kiyotaka-kun Cracked it~ " Everyone turned towards me with a surprise

" That's amazing Ayanokouji-kun ! " Comments like these were thrown at me, Praises, Admiration. A lot of attention, But it didn't feel bad

" Hehe~ Honami-chan Your boyfriend is so amazing don't you think~? " Amikura said with a wide Grin.

" Yeah.... " Honami answered with a big cute blush. Chie-sensei alongside my classmates gave me a thumbs up. I sighed internally

Chie-sensei gave us the rest of the homeroom to discuss about the exam, Honami alongside Kanzaki as expected took the lead and started discussing without asking for my opinion.

Although it feels bad to be deserted, It also feels good to see them work independently, I already carried them enough during the Sports Festival. Now i can focus more on the Ground work of my Plan

During that, I received a message during this discussion. It was completely unrelated to this plan of mine. Yet it was connected

S : [Fufu]

Yahal- Okay sorry

Hello.... IDK how to start so i'll get straight to the point

I realized that there is a plot hole with Horikita's incident (The Message) Because my dumbass didn't realize that the kinoshita incident and that were related. Thanks to the people

who mentioned it

I hate to fill plot holes like this but pretend that something happened led to that. I Can't think of any ideas to fill this hole, If i do then i'll implement it and fill the hole more conveniently

Also, I didn't forget Kiyo's birthday. Due to the lack of my ideas i'm gonna make it the special Chapter

" I didn't forget it.... *Not like how i forgot to do Honami's birthday in Arc 2/3* " Mutters that last part on his breath. Likely no one head

I hate this again. But pretend that Kiyo gave her a necklace (Same as Kei in Canon) And she wore it everyday because she loves it

One last thing, I Said that i'll create a new Fanfic that isn't KiyoHonami so i could focus on this. But my hands were itching to do it, I am gonna focus on this fic and that fic i'm gonna write on it whenever i am on a block on this. So don't worry

Thank you for you continuous support, Again i'll see you later~

Arc 6 Chap 2 : Preparations

HONAMI POV

The bell rang signalling the start of lunch break, I was walking with Kiyotaka down the hallway carrying with me the two hot bento boxes

Normally, We would stay at the Class and eat. But we are heading towards the library because Shiina-san invited Kiyotaka

Shiina Hiyori is a very kind-hearted girl with a pure soul, She is so beautiful that you might mistake her with an angel. That's why she is a threat....

She is a threat to me and Kiyotaka, She is from Class C so she cannot be trusted. Yes, That's why i'm accompanying Kiyotaka, To keep an eye on her

Who knows what Ryueen-kun would do ? That's why i cannot leave him alone with that Woman

Long ago She revealed that she has a bond with him and the same hobby as him. She revealed now that she has his contact info. I can't help but question

What else is she Hiding ?

" Hehe~ " That sounds like something Kanzaki-kun would say. I Couldn't help but giggle

Kiyotaka noticed me giggling and gave me a weird look. My cheeks started to heat up. *So embarrassing*

" Cute " Said Kiyotaka. This made me more flushed. He extended his hand and patted my head, Excitement rushed through my whole body and instantly perked up. *His head pats are powerful against me.... Noted*

Before we knew it, We were in front of the library. Kiyotaka guided me towards a free table and we both sat. *Seems like Shiina-san didn't arrive yet*

" By the way Honami. I meant to ask you " Kiyotaka faced me. His handsome face always gets me, As now i started Blushing lightly.

" I am ready Kiyotaka~ We can have another Night~ " I said the last part lustfully while Licking my lips. I am teasing him~ *And giving him a hint~ hehe~*

" Good to know. But i'm not talking about that " At his response i pouted. " I meant to ask about what you'll do regarding Class D "

" What i'll do about Class D ? " Kiyotaka nodded

" Since they are our allies, I thought maybe you'll do something to help them " Explained Kiyotaka. I Drifted to my thoughts

I haven't thought much about their situation. However, Thinking about it now, I realize that it is completely helpless. The only one we could talk to is Kushida-san and we all know that she is the one responsible for this mayhem

" I don't think i'll do anything. Their situation is completely out of my hand " I responded

Class D is now Class C's puppet, And they aren't aware of that. Kushida-san is following Ryueen-kun's every order

I am convinced that Class C and D would target each other during this exam. However, Ryueen-kun is gonna use Kushida-san to acquire The questions, If that happens then Class C would clean sweep this exam alongside the Top Rewards. That's why me and Kanzaki-kun found that attacking Class C is our best bet

If we successfully manage to match against them then It's a win for us, If not then Ryueen-kun would clean sweep this exam alongside the top rewards. *There is no other option*

" If so, Then why don't we serve our ties with them ? " Kiyotaka suggested. Normally, I would be surprised. But...

" I already considered it. But i decided to watch the situation some more " I Said. Kiyotaka smirked lightly " What's with that smile ? Hmmm~ "

" Oh. It's just that i didn't expect you to develop this quickly " Said Kiyotaka. " If this was you at the start of the year, You'll instantly start objecting. I am impressed by your Growth "

" Hmph~ What did you think ? " I pouted. " This alliance is just dragging our Class down. Besides, Ryueen-kun might use this alliance to send a powerful blow towards us "

Class D's puppet state makes it an enemy. Kushida-san is waiting for the correct moment to strike. I Cannot distinguish what her real motives are, Her objective of taking Horikita-san is done. Then why is she following Ryueen-kun's orders ?

" Kiyotaka~ Why is Kushida-san still following Ryueen-kun's orders ? Even after taking Horikita-san down " I thought of some possibilities, But i wanted to hear Kiyotaka's opinion

" I want to hear what you think first " Kiyotaka flipped the question on me. I Pouted

" I think he could have offered her a class transfer ? That's the only logical conclusion i can think of " I Said.

" With the current information you have, That's the only conclusion. However, That's not the case " Kiyotaka stated.

" Information ? " I Blurted out in confusion. Kiyotaka nodded and opened his mouth

" Kush- "

" Sorry I'm late ! " A Voice cut through Kiyotaka. Shiina-san was panting for air, She came running. She walked towards Kiyotaka's Left seat and sat " Sorry again ! "

" No worries Hiyori " Kiyotaka nodded. Shiina-san smiled angelically. *She is so cuuuute* " Should we continue where we left off ? "

" Yes ! " Shiina-san grabbed her backpack and laid down several books. I didn't realize it before but her backpack is always pretty heavy " Oh~ I made sure to bring the book i told you about the other day Kiyotaka-kun. Here "

" Thanks " Shiina-san handed Kiyotaka a red covered book " You didn't have to carry it with you. Your backpack is already heavy enough "

" Don't worry Kiyotaka-kun. I need to get physically Stronger ! " Shiina-san giggled.

" Hmph~ " During all this time, I was pouting. Shiina-san noticed this

" Oh. Sorry for sidelining you Ichinose-san ! " Shiina-san apologized.

" Don't worry. It's not your fault~ Hmph~ " I pouted again. Kiyotaka looked towards me and muttered '*cute*' I let my tongue out as a response.

Shiina-san giggled and recommended me a book for beginners. It had some dolls as a cover and it is a psychological mystery, I nodded and grabbed it. She smiled and we engaged in silent reading

This book is pretty interesting, But i cannot let anything get in the way of my mission

I kept reading while stealing glances at Kiyotaka, He seems to be focused on his book, Same as Shiina-san. *Nothing suspicious so far*

But hot damn~ Kiyotaka looks so handsome right now~ He is so cute~ Damn I'm getting wet.... Wait no no no no What is happening to me !

" Is everything okay Honami ? " Kiyotaka noticed something weird, Turned and faced my Tomato face. I instinctively hid it behind the book

" No..... " I Said meekly. *Control your emotions Honami ! I Can't get lewd thoughts by just looking at his face ! Pull it together !*

Likely, Incidents like those didn't happen during our time together, We were mostly reading while eating. Soon, Lunch break came to a close

" Right ! Thank you for coming today Kiyotaka-kun, Ichinose-san ! Let's hang out more ! " Shiina-san after gathering her books bid farewell. Both of us started making our way towards the class

I sighed internally, *Nothing suspicious happened*

" So how did you find it ? " Asked Kiyotaka. I think he is talking about reading books

" It is pretty interesting~ I think i'm gonna start reading sometimes whenever i'm free " *It isn't something i expect myself doing very often, But if he's gonna read i'm gonna join him.*

" That's nice " Kiyotaka Said. He faced me " Honami. How is your new role at the Student council treating you ? "

" Hmm~? Oh it's been great so far ! " I added. " I am gonna start receiving 300.000 P.P starting from next month~! KiriYama-senpai told me that i'm free to choose anyone to be my secretary~ I'm gonna put one so i can spend more time with you and leave all the work to them hehe~ "

" I feel bad for whoever. Do you have a candidate in mind ? "

" Yep~ I choose Katsuragi-kun since he has good experience~ " I Said. Kiyotaka nodded with a small smile. I Blushed lightly, Before Reaching our Class

" Ara~ Welcome back Honami-chan ! " Mako-chan was the first one to greet us. She walked up to us before flashing Kiyotaka with a mischievous grin " I hope you went gentle on her~ "

" What do you mean by gentle ? " Kiyotaka confusingly asked.

" You don't have to act innocent Ayanokouji-kun~ We all know that you left to do the *deed*~ " *The deed ? Does she mean..... Ah*

" UwU Honami-chan~ I was just teasing you know ? I didn't know that it was true~ Heheee~" Mako-chan teased me after noticing my tomato face. *Calm down Honami*

" We didn't do anything of that sort Mako-chan ! " I refuted. Likely, The bell came to my rescue and everyone went towards their seat. And our lessons for the afternoon continued

" Alright~ Is everyone ready for your mock test ? " It was a week since that day. At the end of afternoon Classes Chie-sensei announced from the podium

All of my classmates nodded. Chie-sensei Clapped her hands together before handing out the papers

" Remember that this mock test would determine the pairs for the finals, It won't affect your Class points or report cards. Same rules as always, Cheating isn't allowed~ Good luck everyone~ "

I received my paper and flipped it Sensei's signal. I scanned through each question and they were.... Pretty easy

They were questions from 2nd or 3rd grade of Middle school, Some from even elementary school. Everyone here should at least manage a 90 if they solve it seriously. My classmates were surprised too

I looked towards Kiyotaka beside me who looked back at me and nodded. I nodded back and went through with our plan

I picked up my pen and answered only 1 question and stood up. Kiyotaka beside me was scribbling on his paper at a demonic speed, Even if i answer it seriously i wouldn't be as fast as he was.

I didn't keep staring too long and gave Sensei my paper

" Are you sure Honami-chan~? You only answered one question. I know it doesn't affect you bu~ "

" I am sure Sensei. It's part of a plan " I Cut through Sensei's words. She smirked at me before nodding, I nodded back and Turned around...

" Ah ! " I blurted out. Gathering the attention of everyone in the Class

Kiyotaka was right behind me with his paper in hand, He looked at me before handing his paper to the teacher. We didn't say much and went to gather our luggage and left the Classroom

" Jeez you startled me you know~ " I complained.

" Sorry " Kiyotaka scratched the back of his head apologetically.

" I forgive you~ If you treat me~ " I Crossed my arms while looking away.

" Okay okay ! How about palet ? " Kiyotaka panicked... Or he pretended to and offered me.

" Okay~ " I looked back at him and smiled. Before jumping at his arm hugging it tightly. I intentionally pressed my breasts against it and looked at him, He was intensely staring at them " What a Pervert~ "

" I could say the same thing to you " Noted Kiyotaka. However, *I'm gonna use the power of society !*

" But who's gonna called a pervert~ at the end ? It's you because you're a man and i am a woman " I Grinned mischievously. Kiyotaka gazed at my eyes for a while, Before sighing in defeat

" Fair point " We then started slowly walking towards Palet cafe

That logic was illogical, Kiyotaka taught me that i should use my advantages efficiently to achieve victory. So i just used the public view on women against him, Although it's absurd and i know that very well, I am just practicing the lessons he gave me hehe~

I hugged his arm more tightly, The overflowing affection and warmth in my body caused me to close my eyes and rest my head

on his arm. *I wish i could stay like this forever*

" Honami " Kiyotaka called out to me, Snapping me from my thoughts. I opened my eyes and rose my head up to look at him " How much points do you have ? "

" You mean my bank~ Or Personal Points ? " I asked him unsure

" Both " Kiyotaka responded

" I have around 22 Million~ It was only yesterday when i hit the 20 Million Mark~! " I said. Kiyotaka nodded

Yesterday the First of November when our points would get deposited. Where i also received another pile of 4 Million Private Points from all my classmates

I have been Receiving 100.000 P.P from each member of my Class since September especially after the Island exam. Also, from May-August i have been receiving 50.000 P.P

For the rewards we decided that it'd be up to the person whenever if they share it or not. Except for The Zodiac Exam where we agreed to store the points we got.

" That's good " Kiyotaka said. We can now nullify expulsions, Only one at the moment, But it is Huge ! " I may or may not ask to borrow some points from you in the future. I'm not sure exactly when but i'll ask you when the time comes "

" Hmmm~ Okay " I agreed. " But for what Kiyotaka~? If i may ask~ "

Kiyotaka was silent. After some steps he opened his mouth

" I'm currently working on a secret project that would require a lot of Private Points. " Kiyotaka vaguely said. I decided to prob for more

" What Project~? " I said. I know it's futile, But no harm in asking ! I may even be able to get a read on him if i was lucky enough

" Sorry I can't say. But i can guarantee that it will be very beneficial "

" Are you keeping secrets from me Kiyotaka~? I Thought we trust each other~ " I Teased him before Pouting.

" I don't plan on keeping anything from you Honami, When the time comes i'll disclose it with you. But for now, Let's enjoy our time together " With his free hand he Scratched my bangs. I instantly felt 100 times better

" Yippie~! " I Decided to push it on the back of my mind and enjoy my time with my Kiyotaka.

I trust Kiyotaka very much, So i decided to let the magician do his work and watch from the sidelines. Although i am very curious about what Kiyotaka is doing, As long as he tells me, I am fine with waiting

Weeks have passed and now i am walking behind Chie-sensei to join the lottery for Class C

Class B surprisingly decided to attack us. They were the original Class A and they have a lot of academically talented students, They are probably the best in our Year. However, We aren't inferior to them !

After the pairs got announced we held a lot of study groups to shape everyone for this exam and for our fight. Surprisingly, Kiyotaka also took a group to tutor, And not gonna lie i was a bit *jealous....* Not a bit, I was very *jealous that we weren't on the same group... Sigh*

As Planned, The whole Class held back so me and Kiyotaka would be paired together and aim for the top reward.

Both of us are the best in our Class, And together we can achieve it !

Kiyotaka also took the time to tutor me one-on-one, But it felt more like a date than tutoring.

As for the questions, All of my Classmates decided to contribute. We took all of their questions, Sorted them out and improved them and submitted them. And I can say that i am proud

Soon, We arrived at a room few steps away from the faculty office.

Knock Knock

" Who's there "

" It's me Mario- I mean Hoshinomiya "

" Come in "

Chie-sensei opened the door and we both walked inside, We spotted Chabashira-sensei, Mashima-sensei and Kushida...san

" Hello Ichinose-san ! " Kushida waved at me enthusiastically with a bright smile.

Despite all what she did, She is still as enthusiastic as ever. If i didn't know better i would have thought that she is putting a good front, Which is what she's doing However, It is for a completely different reason. I gotta keep a good facade too so she won't find me suspicious.

" Hello Kushida-san ! Nice meeting you here~ " I greeted back with my usual expression

" It's nice to meet you too Ichinose-san ! Sorry i'm not able to hang out with you guys lately " Kushida apologized, Voice drifting

into sadness.

It's good that you aren't around so you won't carry out your antics with my Kiyotaka !

" Don't worry about it Kushida-san ! We understand " I shook my hands in refusal, And took the seat next to her. Soon Mashima-sensei brought a box

" There is two papers inside. One of which has the letter C inside, While the other is empty. If you get the C letter, Your Class is gonna get pit against Class C. Any questions ? " We shook our head. " Good. You can start now "

Kushida slid her hand inside and snatched a paper, I did the same. This paper that is folded right now in my right hand could determine whether we win or lose. It's not a guarantee, But it would increase or decrease our Chances

I took a deep sigh and started unfolding the paper nervously, Kushida wasn't better. Slowly but surely, The process that takes 5 seconds took 5 minutes. Soon the paper unveiled it's content

" Yes ! "

" ... "

I stared at the paper, And there was nothing. On the other hand, Kushida blurted in celebration, She was overjoyed.

" Haha Nice Try Ichinose-san ! " Kushida said, Mockingly. I looked at her and she seems to realize that she slipped out.

" Yeah. I lost unfortunately, Good game " I bitterly smiled at her. I played along to make her think that i didn't notice. Kushida bit into my act and looked relieved for half a sec

" It's unlucky we chose the same Class. I am sorry for this Ichinose-san " Kushida bowed.

" You don't have to apologize Kushida-san. It is unlucky " I said. Before turning towards Chie-sensei " This means that Class B would be our opponent Right ? " Chie-sensei nodded.

I was feeling multiple emotions. However, As i realized what should i be doing as the Class's leader, Determination replaced all of them. I stood up and walked out with Chie-sensei

We got matched against the worst possible opponent. However, That doesn't mean we lost. In fact, I believe that we can win

It's your win Today Ryueen-kun.

Yippie~~~~~ We are almost at 50K !!!!!

Anyway some notes about this Chapter.

Honami is now not refering to Kushida with ' san ' in her monologue because she doesn't respect her anymore. Unconsciously that is

Btw, I just realized how empty this arc is. There is no traitors, Honami isn't overly relying on Kiyo like a certain compass wielding tsundere. And Kiyo is popular with all of his Classmates.

So i'm gonna try and think of additions to make it longer, Or i'm just gonna cut it short. If you have ideas i'll appreciate if you share

I have a nasty plan to pull out next Arc, Although it's not the best thing that i'm gonna pull out.. But look forward for it

Cya~~

Arc 6 Chap 3 : Playing with the Dragon

3RD PERSON POV

At a certain Room of a certain institution at a certain mountains at a certain Borders of a certain Tokyo. A Man believed to be in the middle of his Forties was sitting on his office organizing some pile of papers. They believe it's some reports about the tests he conducted on his test subjects.

He surfed across them, Checking each one of their results, They were pretty impressive considering they are only children, That is in the eyes of everyone, But not that man.

" Pathetic, Pathetic, Pathetic, Pathetic... " He muttered on each paper he comes across. Infuriated with the results, He was visibly pissed off. " Take this pile of shit and get the fuck out of here "

The person standing inside his room was shacking to the spine from that man, At his orders he swiftly took the papers and left. That man relaxed on his Chair.

Since a certain day, His emotions were taking over him, Those emotions that he regarded as unnecessary were taking over him. To be more precise, A Certain emotion called Anger, Irritation, Frustration you name them.

His gaze and presence became more Intimidating to his peers, Nobody dared to try and press the issue and left him alone. All of them know the reason, All because of a certain brown haired boy

That man clutched a sole report that was laying on his desk and examined it..... That paper was already damaged to the many times he clutched it, Not only that, But of how many times he tugged it in frustration, At the scene of his son. He felt regret....

Regret about not being more vigilant when it comes to The White Room, So that Security breach would've not happened and he wouldn't send him towards his butler. Who would be cussed at for the rest of his remaining years.

That man Tugged the paper in frustration again, But he held himself from tormenting it and placed it back in his desk.

Knock Knock

" Come in " That man said, He looked at the door and waited eagerly for who's gonna appear. Soon the door slowly opened, Revealing the people behind it

" Hello there Mr. Ayanokouji, It's been a while " A Man greeted

That man, Beside him was his wife.

" Welcome, Welcome " That man stood up and walked towards the man and his wife " It has been a while indeed Mr..... How have you been ? "

" I have been Great thank you for asking. It has been a long while since i visited The White Room. I was thinking of Visiting just the other day. You're invitation came at a Perfect Timing Mr. Ayanokouji " He said. However, That man sensed some hidden meanings behind his words

" It seems that our intentions line together Mr..... I Suppose you know why i called you here ? " That man said with a very faint grin. The other man Nodded with a wide smirk " Then let's not waste anymore time and get down to Business..... "

*** Back at the School : Honami POV ***

Today is the first day of the second event of Paper Shuffle, The finals. We'll be taking 8 exams in the period of 2 days, Today and Tomorrow. I am very excited and nervous

Our opponents are Class B, They are frightening. However, We can't let that thinking take over our heads. We also are pretty strong, I believe that this fight could go either way

Me being me, I was hugging Kiyotaka's arm tightly while we were walking towards school, *I know that this pervert likes it a lot so why not ?*

Lately, I noticed that a lot of Girls started to have a crush on my Kiyotaka, And i can't blame them. From his performance in the sports festival to his perfect academics. They started to notice how amazing He is

Due to these circumstances, I decided to assert my dominance over him and remind them that he is my territory. *Remind them that he is mine*

Kiyotaka seems to notice this as well. A lot of girls approached him but he brushed all of them off, What's better he used me as an excuse ! *This made all of them Jealous of me hehe*

While we were walking a lot of people were glaring at us, Both boys and girls. Kiyotaka decided to brush them off. But I raised my head and kissed his cheeks while hugged his arm more tightly. The

glares intensified, And i looked back at them with a smirk

" My My Ichinose-girl. Asserting your Dominance i see. However, Doing that in front of a perfect existence isn't something i tolerate " A Familiar voice called behind us. It was Kouenji-kun

" Hey there Kouenji " Kouenji-kun smirked at Kiyotaka's greeting and swiftly moved to Kiyotaka's side, Matching our pace as we walk towards school

" I see you're a man of culture as well Ayano-boy. You clearly understands how great bazoongas are, I guess *that place* didn't completely destroy you. Ha ! " Kouenji-kun said with a laugh. *Did Kouenji-kun imply that Kiyotaka finds my boobs Great ? Hehe~ I know he does, But hearing it makes me more excited and happy~*

" What are you on about Kouenji ? I'm more like a thighs person " Kiyotaka stated. At his words i unconsciously checked my thighs. *Are those good enough ?*

" Ha ! That's fine too ! " Kouenji-kun said. Before calling me out " Don't worry about your thighs Ichinose-girl. They are perfect " Kouenji-kun complimented. However, I became uncomfortable

" Kouenji, Did you ju- "

" Forgive my Perfect existence Ayano-boy. I didn't mean to sound rude or anything " Kouenji-kun cut through Kiyotaka's words and apologized. Kiyotaka nodded at him and patted me on the head

" Kouenji. You came me to inform me about *that* Right ? " Kiyotaka said, Breaking the short enveloping silence.

" Fufu. Which one are you talking about Ayano-boy ? I assume it's the second one ? " Kiyotaka nodded. " Fufu. As planned I took care of that "

" What are you guys talking about ? " Curiosity took over me and asked. Kouenji-kun threw me a glance before smirking

" Don't worry about it Ichinose-girl. But if you insist then.... You can say that we are playing with a dragon "

" Playing with a dragon ?.... " I repeated in confusion. Kouenji-kun laughed

" It's something me and Kouenji are working on. You don't have to worry about it " Kiyotaka said giving me more headpats.

" Kiyotaka~ Are you cheating on me with Kouenji-kun ? " I teased him. Kouenji-kun burst in laughing, Kiyotaka's eyes faced mine, Telling me ' *What's wrong with you ?* ' I replied with a wide grin

" You certainly make quite the hilarious jokes Ichinose-girl. A Perfect existence such as myself finds turning Homo ugly. Besides, T-Rex-boy is your property alone, Ain't that Right ? " Kouenji-kun Smirked.

" Damn Right Kouenji-kun. T-Rex is mine and only i get to..... " *Wait... How did he know about T-Rex ?*

" Fufu. How did i know you may ask ? " I looked at Kouenji-kun, Who had a wide smirk. Seeing my reaction he continued " Well, It's simple Really Ichinose-girl. Every boy knows "

" Eh ? " I blurted out in shock, Kiyotaka sighed and Kouenji-kun smirked. " Are you serious Kouenji-kun ? "

" Fufu I am always serious Ichinose-girl. " Kouenji-kun continued " I find your shock quite Amusing. However, If you want explanation you can ask the man in question himself "

" Kiyotaka. You have a lot of explaining to do " I said, Irritated. Kiyotaka took a deep sigh. Kouenji-kun was amused by all of this

Kiyotaka told me about the competition they held during the cruise ship, And how he won it and got branded as the 'King'

" Ooooooh~ So that's what it meant~ " Kiyotaka nodded. The jealousy inside me faded away... *Almost* " I am sad that i wasn't the first one to discover T-Rex, You owe me Kiyotaka~ You owe me a big one~ " I Pouted. Kiyotaka patted my head, And the remaining Jealousy faded away.

As it stands now, T-Rex is the biggest in our year, Or even the whole school. Kiyotaka proved his superiority yet again, I'm proud that i had secured for myself the biggest meal~ Speaking of meals, *I'm quite hungry~ Hehe~*

" Fufu. If i were you, I wouldn't trust that smile Ayano-boy. That's a smile of a wild predator " Kouenji-kun said, Snapping me out of my lewd thoughts " Anyway. I'm gonna take my leave now "

" Catch ya around Kouenji " Kouenji-kun smirked and slowed down to reach a group of Third-year girls who Blushed at the receiving end.

" It seems that you and Kouenji-kun trust each other. At least to some extent " I marked.

" Out of everyone outside our Class, He is the person i have the most trust in " Kiyotaka said.

Kouenji-kun and Kiyotaka seem to be plotting a lot of stuff behind our backs, Not that i mind them. Kouenji-kun also knows about Kiyotaka and The White Room, So i can tell why he trusts him the most.

No, Sakayanagi-san also knows about The White Room, But i have this feeling that Kiyotaka doesn't trust her to some extent. So Kiyotaka's Trust in Kouenji-kun is for a reason i am unaware off

I brushed those thoughts on the back of my mind, I may go crazy if i think about everything Kiyotaka does, So i won't worry about him too much. For now, *Let's focus on entertaining him~*

I kept entertaining the pervert~ on our whole way towards school, Ignoring all the intense glares thrown at us. Once we reached our Class i let go of his arm, I can still feel it lingering but i

Slid the door open, Everyone greeted us and went back to revising, The atmosphere was tense and serious, Completely different from usual

I walked up to my seat and went through all the study materials Kiyotaka gave me, Soon the bell rang and Chie-sensei strolled inside the Room carrying with her Piles of paper in 4 different labors

" Good morning students~ I guess you're all ready~? " Chie-sensei asked, All of us nodded. " Great~ Then you know the drill~ "

*** Kiyo POV Same Day***

The Bell rang, Signalling the end of a rather hellish morning.

A Huge mental burden has been lift off from my Classmates. Clearly, This series of hard tests has strained their brains. Likely, It was lunch break now, And they can do whatever they want

The exams were as difficult as i had imagined, As expected from Sakayanagi. The presence of a couple of easy questions among the difficult ones indicates that she went overboard, She didn't intend to hold back against us.

Needless to say, No matter how hard she questions she throws at me i would solve them without batting an eyelash. After all, I promised to not hold back when it comes to her. *And i wasn't intending on doing so anyway*

" Yo Ayanokouji-kun, Kanzaki-kun " Shibata approached us looking as enthusiastic as ever. Hamaguchi was lacking slightly behind him, He raised his hand and greeted us.

" Hello Shibata " I greeted back. Kanzaki faced Shibata and nodded " So what's up ? "

" You see..... It's been a while since we hung out in the cafeteria, Just the four of us. So i thought of inviting all of us again ! " Shibata invited with Hamaguchi nodding behind him. It has been a while indeed since we last hung out, Everyone was too busy with special exams and discussions that we ended up eating lunch in Class. So i wouldn't mind a change of air

However, Before i accept i looked towards Honami. She was about to call me when Shibata intervened, She was looking at

Shibata before turning to meet my gaze, We gazed at each other for 5 seconds before she smiled sadly and nodded.

" Ummm... Sorry if i interrupted you guys, Maybe i shou- "

" No you're not interrupting anything Shibata-kun, I just wanted to spend more time with him~ " Said Honami dejectedly. But she quickly regained her cheerfulness " But i can't take all of his time for myself "

" Are you sure Ichinose-sa- "

" I am sure Shibata-kun. It's fine Really " Honami reassured. She bent down and grabbed a bento box and handed it to me, With a bright smile " Enjoy your time together~ "

Shibata seemed reluctant, Same as Hamaguchi. I Gracefully accepted her box with a smile, She smiled warmly and nodded.

With that, The four of us walked towards the cafeteria. Shibata usually the one who initiates the conversation is uncomfortably silent down.

" Don't fret about it Shibata. I can assure you that everything is fine " I reassured, Shibata looked at me and protested, But i shut him down. Soon he understood and the tense mood shifted back to the usual cheery one

Soon we reached the crowded Cafeteria, Since i already have my food i went quickly and secured a table for all of us while they went to claim their Food. I gently laid the Bento on top of the table and waited for them

Moments later, The three of them approached me with Food trays in hand. Kanzaki Sat beside me and Shibata sat in front of me.

" **Itadakimasu** " We all said in unison before digging in our food. It was as delicious as ever

" By the way Ayanokouji-kun... " Shibata gulped a rice ball and cleared his throat " I am curious about how many marks you'll get this exam. You are currently in a flawless streak you know ? Those exams are way difficult than our previous exams " Said Shibata.

" Yeah. I am also Curious about that, I am confident than you'll score above an 80, But i am not sure whether you'll get above that " Said Hamaguchi. Kanzaki also focused on me, Interested.

I gulped the piece of heaven in my mouth and Shrugged " I'm gonna ace them again " At my statement everyone's eyes went wide.

" You seem to be very confident about it. If you do that then.... I wouldn't know what to think " Hamaguchi is a person who takes pride in his studies, He is below average in physical abilities. So it would be a strong hit to his pride if i am better at him in both fields, The same could be said to Shibata too.

" Yeah. If he did that then.... I'm not sure..... " Shibata trailed off. My statement also made them realize their flaws, Each one of them

lacks where the other excel. This would work as sort of motivation for them to do better. However, That is after their pride gets fixed

" Shibata, Hamaguchi. You both are fine " I said in a soft tone. This caused them to look at me " Don't think lowly of yourselves because of your misgivings. You both worked very hard to achieve the level you're currently at, It is something to be proud of "

" B-But... "

" No buts. You both are great. But i'd advise you to not compare yourselves to me, I may be good at academics and sports, But i still have areas where I'm flawed at, Where the both of you clearly excel " I added " I don't have great Social skills like Shibata, Nor do i have the dedication of Hamaguchi. You have to accept that everyone has their own strong points, If we take for example a special exam where communication skills come in handy, Shibata would clearly be better than me while i would be next to useless. So don't look down on yourselves "

Shibata and Hamaguchi sat silently staring at their foods, Contemplating about what I've said. It wasn't the best motivational speech. However, Motivational speech it is, And i hope that i reached to them. Kanzaki was silently observing the situation unfold, I don't think he could say anything to them either

" I see your point Ayanokouji-kun. And i understand it to some extent but... " Shibata was the first one to speak and said " I've always been proud about my Physical abilities, While my academics and intelligence are average. I thought that i can carry the class and prove that i can be useful, But it appeared to me that i wasn't needed in the first place " Shibata said sadly. He looked up and glanced at me, His eyes didn't contain Hatred not Anger, Instead, There was determination " But i know that my Class needs me and my abilities, So i would offer them wholeheartedly. I may not hold a candle to you Ayanokouji-kun, But i am indispensable to our Class " Hamaguchi also nodded alongside him with determination. I smiled at them, Proud about their developments

" That's what I'd like to hear " I patted both of their shoulders. They smiled in determination and nodded

" Although I'm quite curious about how many training you've been through to be this capable Ayanokouji-kun " Asked Shibata. Hamaguchi nodded again, I Looked deep into their eyes. They both stared back at me with anticipation. I had a feeling that i should open up, If ever so slightly

" I was home schooled during my whole childhood, My Father didn't believe that Compulsory education was enough so he hired Tutors and coaches for me. " I said.

" He hired Tutors and Coaches ? Are you from a rich family

Ayanokouji-kun ? " Asked Hamaguchi. I thought about it a little before answering

" I wouldn't call it Rich, But we have some wealth " I said. All three of them nodded in understanding, Before Shibata smirked

" Seems like Ichinose-san caught quite the perfect man. Don't you think guys ? " Said Shibata mischievously. " He is strong, Smart, Handsome, Wealthy and has a Huge T-Rex too. If that's not a perfect man then what is it ? " He pulled one finger each time he states a quality i have.

" Wha- "

" But he also caught the best girl " He stated facts. " Now that you think about it, They do seem like a powerful couple. The Perfect man with the perfect woman, It is only a story you find in manga. Right ? "

" Manga ? It i- "

" Cmon take some credit Ayanokouji-kun. " Shibata cut through me again with a growl. Kanzaki and Hamaguchi were chuckling. I took a deep sigh before responding. However...

" Kuku Take some credit will you Monster ? " Ryueen's voice echoed behind me. He grabbed a chair and sat beside me, Looking at me like he found an interesting play thingy. There was Ibuki, Ishizaki and surprisingly, Kaneda

Shibata and Hamaguchi stiffened up, While Kanzaki glared at Ryueen. However, The man in question only stared at me with a smirk, Completely oblivious to his surroundings

" Hello Ryueen. How may i help you ? " I said. Ryueen smirk went wider

" Kuku You must think you're pretty slick Ayanokouji huh ? " Ryueen mused.

" I don't know what you're talking about "

" What do you take me for ? A fool ? It is obvious that this was all you're doing " Ryueen clutched his pockets and showed me his phone. It displayed a message

Anonymous :

' 13 1 20 8 20 5 19 20 : 17 21 5 19 20 9 15 14 19 14 21 13 2 5 18 1,5,7,8,9 '

The message was encoded using numbers. By deciphering it using the numbers of the alphabets we receive

' M A T H T E S T : Q U E S T I O N S N U M B E R 1,5,7,8,9 '

" That is some creepy message you got. Are you sure you aren't getting stalked Ryueen ? " I feigned ignorance. However, He wasn't buying it

" Kuku drop the act already Ayanokouji. It was you who sent this message alongside the message during our questions " Ryueen

smirked " You had access to Class D's questions and altered the numbers in them so i can receive you're message. Quite the Clever plan Ayanokouji " Ryueen started clapping.

" What are you on about ? I didn't do anything " I technically didn't do anything. It was *that person* who did

" You didn't do anything. That's because someone else did, On your orders that is " Ryueen stood up and started walking away " You understand me quite well Ayanokouji. I like fun stuff, So i'm gonna go along with it for now "

With that last remark, Ryueen and his lackeys took their leaves. The tense atmosphere lingered during our whole lunch break, We quickly finished our food and walked back to Class.

" So How was it~? " Honami asked after she received the empty Bento box with a warm smile.

" Do i really need to rate it again ? " Honami nodded strongly " I'm just repeating myself at this point. It was very tasty, Thank you Honami "

" That's great to hear~ " Honami clapped her hands in satisfaction with a warm smile and blush. I couldn't resist the urge and extended my hand and poked her red cheeks, She was taken by surprise but quickly reciprocated, Closing her eyes and beaming like a cute kitty, My heart skipped a beat from the cuteness.

However, Knowing fully that i was in the open i didn't let my burning desires to take over me. I simply went and sat on my seat, Honami stared at me warmly before the bell rang.

A Few days has passed and now it was time for our results for The Paper Shuffle. We all gathered inside our Class waiting nervously for the teacher

Soon, Chie-sensei waltzed inside the room with her cheery expression alongside an unopened envelope, She placed it on top of the podium and faced all of us, She appraised each one of her students before nodding to herself with a smile.

" No need to be nervous everyone~ You all did your hardest right ? " She spoke softly. Her tone of voice eased the atmosphere more

" Everyone here worked pretty hard Sensei~ I am confident that we put up a good fight " Exclaimed Honami. Chie-sensei nodded at her and started opening the envelope

She took a small piece of paper and Started unfolding it, It was a nerve-wracking moment. When Sensei gazed inside she sighed in

relief and a warm enthusiastic smile came to her face

" Everyone~ I'll proudly announce that You guys won against Class B with no pairs expelled ! " Exclaimed Chie-sensei. Sighs of huge relief and celebrations filled the Class, Honami stared at them with a warm smile. " However, It was a very close call~ You guys won with a difference of 12 Points~ That is 6 Questions~ "

It was a pretty close call, This fight could've easily went both ways. Sakayanagi didn't hold back in attacking us, Nor did we.

However, This doesn't mean i won against her. Class's effort was secondary to our fight, It is a small win but not something to brag about

" Right~ Next on the list is the Top 5 Pairs reward~ " Announced Chie

1st : Shiina Hiyori - Ibuki Mio (Class C)

2nd : Ryueen Kakeru - Nanami Yabu /

3rd : Kaneda Satoru - Kinoshita (C)

4th : Yamashita Saki - Yamada Albert /

5th : Tokito - Ishizaki Daichi (Class C)

As i had expected, Ryueen didn't hold back on the top places rewards. However, It's not like i wanted to prevent it from happening. I had every option on changing the results but i didn't, Because this would come in handy later on

As for the individual scores. It was a tie again, However, This time Kouenji was also tied in first-place with us. I can tell from this that he didn't trust his partner, Not even a bit. So he decided to go all out as well

" If you guys are interested in the results of the other classes~ You can check the bulletin board~ " Chie said.

Using this as an excuse, I clutched my phone and Checked the message i received. It was from Sakayanagi, Wishing me luck on our future battles

I went to one of the contacts and sent one last message to Kouenji, He was the person who altered the questions Kushida received from Ryueen. He pulled everything beautifully as expected from him

Gasps could be heard across the room, Soon murmurs started erupting. I decided to swing by the bulletin board

Class C as expected dominated over Class D. They stood no chance. However....

Expulsions :

Pair-D No°19 Miyamoto Soshi - Minami Setsuya (Failing in reaching the threshold)

Pair-D No°7 Miyake Akito - Hasebe Haruka (Failing in reaching a total combined score of a subject)

4 Students has been expelled due to this exam. A Gloomy atmosphere filled the room

Even though they weren't our classmates, The word '*expulsion*' is Traumatic. However, This word is bringing me some bad memories

Flashbacks of children getting beaten up, Flashbacks about *that incident* played. They only got expelled, They didn't lose their lives.

However, It isn't the word that brought me those traumatic experiences, It was the Class's atmosphere, It was exactly the same as The White Room Classes. They were in Despair, They were terrified, They were scared. However, I felt nothing

But it brought me to a cold sweat, Those Traumatic scenes kept playing on and on. There was even some scenes i didn't even Remember.

However, Unlike always, I felt uneasy, Even for a little bit. Not because of my Classmates, But because of those scenes. *I felt it... I truly did*

I looked towards the pair of the oceanic blue Anxious eyes, They were staring at me, Deeply in my eyes.

Her eyes, Expressed Worry, And Care. They weren't anxious because of the expulsion

She was worried about me...

It seems that my discomfort was visible to her, I doubted that anyone could see it but she did, She noticed it.

However, Seeing her reminded me of something. Something, That erased every feeling inside of me. Instead, There was a feeling, I am unsure off

I wonder.... If i wasn't born in that place.... Would have i met you ?

Yoooooooooooooooooooo

First off, I want to ynthank you for 100 Followers ! As well as the 50K views, I am very proud

Anyway, The main dish is

#1 Honami

#1 Ichinose

#11 Cote

#7 cote fanfic

... and more amazing rankings

I kept this story on mature by mistake and i couldn't see the rankings, I removed it to be met with a surprise

I honestly did not expect my fic to be this popular. Not in a million years... So thank you from the bottom of my heart

I know it's a cheesy line but i mean it. Truly.....

That's the end of Arc 6. For the chapters ofc, There is still S.C and SS

Anyway, I thought of involving Asahina here but i didn't get any ideas except for locking a door or poisoning idk

Anyway, Sakayanagi is op in academics. Same as Kouenji, It would only increase the competition

Btw, In canon. Class B lost by a difference of 2 points. It was so close, I thought first of letting them lose but it would be unreasonable. I'm not planning on making them just take the lead forever, But everything automatically moves to that.

Again, Thank you guys for reading. I'll see you later Bae Bae~

Arc 6 Special Chapter : What have you done to me ?

It was the 20th of October.

This day has been nothing out of the ordinary, Just a normal school day. However, It was my birthday

To be completely honest, If it wasn't for me to hear that Ryueen's Birthday is also today. I wouldn't have noticed

My birthday was just another day of existence, That's how i thought before.

However, It is common to celebrate your birthday with the people close to you, It is also common to gift them something due to this special day.

That's why i gave Honami the necklace during her birthday, Since that day she wore it almost everyday, I can tell that she loved it from the bottom of her heart. *Seems like Internet-sensei was Right*

The bell rang, Signalling the end of the week and the start of the weekends. All of my friends including me gathered around to head for our destination

We planned to go to an Amusement park, It was an Idea Honami proposed, Shibata and Amikura instantly agreed. Meanwhile, I was googling it. As the name states, It is a place where you have fun, There are multiple games and other fun activities.

It was mentioned that it is recommended to go with a group of friends, From 6 people or more. I guess we fit the bill as there is 10 of us.

They were very excited, So excited that all of them ignored me. I felt kinda sad watching them from behind engaging in a very enthusiastic chatter, However, Kanzaki was on the same boat

" They look very happy don't you think ? " Kanzaki issued a conversation. I nodded while staring at them

" I am surprised that you got sidelined too " I marked. Kanzaki chuckled

" I didn't. I just saw that you were alone with your lonesome and decided to keep you accompany " *I see*

" Well, You didn't have to but Thanks i guess ? "

However, During all the enthusiasm i noticed some hidden communication between the 8 of them, Most noticeably Honami,

Shibata and Amikura. Soon, Honami turned towards me with a mischievous smirk

" Why are you guys hanging in the back~? Come join us~ " Honami happily invited. Both of us increased our pace and joined them. Honami moved closer to me and walked beside my arm.

" Man, It's been a while since the last time i visited an Amusement Park. It was about... 4 Years ? " Shibata contemplated. " Yeah that sounds right. What about you guys ? "

" Just last year, I went with my family there " Exclaimed Shiranami. " Although i didn't get to play a lot, But it was pretty fun regardless ! "

" I feel you Chihiro-chan. I also visited it last year and didn't get to play a lot " Said Ando, With a bit of sadness.

" Hehe~ What a bunch of fools " That statement came from Amikura. " Imagine not playing a lot when you go to an Amusement park. Truly pitiful "

" Mako-chan. That's not nice " Scolded Shibata. Amikura just looked at him, Before facing us again

" I guess i'm just that lucky huh ? Last time i went there i played to my heart's content~ It's too bad that for you guys~ " Smirked Amikura, Everyone glared at her but her smirk didn't waver. Suddenly, She turned and faced me " What about you Ayanokouji-kun~? "

When she suddenly called out to me, All of them turned towards me with interest. Except Honami who looked at me in Sadness, I guess she already knows my answer

" Actually. This would be my first time going to an amusement park " At my statement, Most of them widened their eyes.

" You never visited it Ayanokouji-kun ? " Kobashi probed, I shook my head. " Not even once ? " I shook my head again. She realized that i wasn't lying, Everyone felt the same.

" That is pretty sad Ayanokouji-kun. " Voiced Minamikata. " You know, Every child has at least visited it once or twice " At her Statement. Everyone nodded

" I guess. My parents were very strict with me, So i didn't get to visit such places. So this is my First time " I clarified.

" If that's the case then " Honami spoke beside me. " We are gonna make it the best possible first time ! Right everyone~? "

" Yeah ! " Cheered Shibata. " Not only him. But let's make it the best possible time everyone here too ! "

Everyone cheered at Shibata's statement, It made me happy that everyone is trying their hardest to make my High school days better. I felt a warm touch on my Right hand, I turned around to find Honami holding my hand with a warm smile

I reciprocated her touch alongside a gentle smile, Her Cheeks Reddened before carressing my hand. Soon, We reached our Destination

We all went towards a fat dude who was wearing a magician uniform. To me it looked like a clown. Moreover, We all paid for some tickets and Entered what he called ' The Wonderland '

And what a wonder it was. Greeting us was the noise of the people inside screaming, As the first sight was a Roller Coaster running at a very high speed while containing a batch of students yelling their lungs out, it varied from Horrified to enjoyment.

A Path made of Brown brick laid in front of us, Different multi-purpose stalls were set up on grass on both sides of it. The Path spread to multiple sections, Where multiple facilities laid

" Woaah It's pretty amazing ! " Exclaimed Shibata. Soon, He walked forward leaping from excitement " I can't hold back anymore ! Let's go Guys ! "

" Let's get moving Kiyotaka~ " Honami walked in front dragging my hand like a child, I allowed myself to be dragged and all of us followed Shibata

We walked past different stalls, Mostly ranging from Mini-games and food. A lot of students were passing by, Making use of those facilities with their friends. The Atmosphere was very lively and cheery

" Where should we go first~? " Honami asked

" Hmmmm~ Rolle- "

" Not happening " Amikura's suggestion was instantly cut off by Kanzaki. " I think we should start slow, How about a carousel ? "

" That's a great suggestion Kanzaki-kun~ Since this is Kiyotaka's first time. I think we should start slow " Agreed Honami. Soon, All of my friends nodded in agreement

However, Kanzaki's body language was weird. He was leaping from excitement but he tried to not show it, There was a bright aura around him with is very unusual. *Something is fishy here*

We all walked towards a carousel and stood in line. There was horses flying around while bouncing circling a post. If i have to be honest, It looks very boring. But i shouldn't judge a book by it's cover

Soon, We all paid using a ticket and went to ride the horses, Soon places were all took and the ride started.

It was as i expected, Nothing special. I much prefer going into that place where Seats are circulating around a post while dropping down. It looks more exciting and frightening

However, My attention got drawn by a certain purple-haired boy who tried to stand up on top of the horse, He succeeded in

balancing himself and checked his surrounding.

When his eyes landed into mine he almost slipped, He decided to sit back and finish our ride without moving an inch. Soon the Ride ended

" Kanzaki-kun. Are you crazy ? " When we all gathered around, Kobashi scolded Kanzaki. Who looked somewhat embarrassed

" Yeah. Sorry, I got carried away " Kanzaki scratched the back of his head in embarrassment.

" Woah ? Kanzaki-kun ? Are you embarrassed ? " Shibata voiced his surprise, Much like everyone else.

Seeing Kanzaki getting embarrassed is more rare than winning a lottery. He is much like me, Calm and mature. Seeing a childish display from him shocked even me

" You see. I have quite a sense of horsemanship. So i got excited to ride a horse after those years, I kinda got carried away " Clarified Kanzaki. This made more sense

" Kanzaki-kun~ Is your horsemanship standing on top of horses while riding them ? " Amikura teasingly grinned. Everyone chuckled while Kanzaki took a deep sigh

" Anyway~ " Honami said Gathering everyone's attention. Before facing me " You can choose where we go next Kiyotaka~ You're the guest of honor here~ "

" But i don't know the games here " I said. Honami provided me with multiple names of Games here, Most of them didn't make a lot of sense. " Err, Can we go there ? " I pointed towards the Flying-dropping-chairs game.

Shibata's jaw dropped while Shiranami and Minamikata showed a horrified expression. *It seems that they have bad memories with this*

" Maybe No- "

" That's a great choice Ayanokouji-kun ! Let's go ! " I was about to retract when Amikura pushed me even deeper with her usual grin.

" P-Please Mako-san. I don- " Shibata pleaded while stuttering

" No Sou-kun. Ayanokouji-kun wants to try it " Amikura Cut through him

" B-But... "

" Sou-kun~ It's Ayanokouji-kun's first time here, Are you gonna prevent him from what he wants ? "

" N-No Bu- "

" Does anyone have a problem with this ? " Amikura turned towards all of us and received silence. " Great~ Let's move~ "

Amikura mischievously led the way, Honami didn't appear to have a particular problem with it, Same as Kanzaki.

The rest meekly followed from behind and we arrived to our destination. We all paid for our tickets with the exception of The

previously horrified people

" Aren't you coming~? " Amikura called out

" I-I think i'll pas- " Amikura walked back and dragged Shibata with her. She paid for his ticket using her own and placed him on a chair. " P-Please Mako-san. I beg of you " He pleaded while she locked his belts

" Don't worry Sou-kun~ Nothing would happen to you. You'll just gonna fly around at a very high speed, It's not a big deal~ " Amikura smirked sadistically. Clearly enjoying Shibata's pain

Shibata's pleads were futile, He could've easily stopped her from dragging him into the first place but he was too weak to do so. Shiranami and Minamikata were praying for Shibata, It seems that Amikura's target was only him all along.

I took my seat and locked my belts. Soon everyone took place and the Lift started to take off.

" Now this is gonna be more fun " I muttered.

The lift started to elevate towards the peak length, Midway it started to slowly circulate making the ropes lean towards The side, The speed started increasing, So our distance.

When it reached peak length, The speed drastically increased.

" AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH " Multiple people were screaming, The most audible one for me was Shibata.

Strong wind blew on my face, As the world started to circulate around me. A Sense of excitement and amusement filled my stomach. *Now this is what i'm talking about*

This kept for a good 30 sec, Before the speed slowed down and the lift descended. Shibata's yelling followed up, And soon we reached the Ground.

Shibata was shacking while leaning side-ways, Thankfully, Amikura was kind enough to support him.

" So How was it Kiyotaka~? " Honami cheerfully asked me, Curious about my opinion.

" I enjoyed it " Honami smiled warmly before jumping at my arm and moving me again.

When we arrived at the entrance, Minamikata and Shiranami were sadistically smiling at Shibata.

" You two won't be so lucky to pass on this time. I'll make sure of that " That's all what Shibata could muster, Amikura went and placed him on a bench. He looked so pale you could mistake him with someone who is about to puke.

After taking a food break, We decided to move on towards something less insane, Bumper cars

It is a pretty simple game, You just drive a car around in what it

seems a race and try to sabotage the people around you, The cars are made that they cannot get broken easily.

I hopped inside one of the cars and examined the Racing wheel, Ignoring a random gaze I'm getting from one of the the cars. A Button close to your Right foot is responsible for moving the Car. I quickly adjusted to my driving stance and waited for the signal

During the age of 12 in the White Room, They teach you basic Driving skills. Although It is enough to get you a driving permit in real life, It isn't a big deal

Whistle

The whistle blew and all of our cars got powered up and everyone started moving. Everything was peaceful at first, Getting used to the control first. However, That is until someone unexpected Rushed at me

" Fufu Hello Ayanokouji-kun. Fancy seeing you here " A Short silver haired smug loli greeted me from behind, After bumping into my car

" Hello Sakayanagi " I Greeted back " What are you doing here ? "

" I could ask the same thing Ayanokouji-kun. I never expected to meet you here out of all places " She expressed, Before teasing me " Fufu, You're surprisingly Childish "

" I just wanted to try out these stuff, They are surprisingly very fun " I marked

" Fufu. I Gue- "

" Argh. Move from the way Loli " After taking one lap, Kumoro looking annoyed Clashed with Sakayanagi's Car. Sakayanagi Started Fufu'ing as she was dragged along. Soon, Someone clashed with me too

" Kiyotaka~ What are you doing with Sakayanagi-san ? " Honami Dragging me away using her car asked.

" Fufu, We are just having a competition Ichinose-san "Sakayanagi came and bumped into me again. " Fufu "

" Competition ? " Honami confusingly asked. " Even during this ? "

" Yes. This is another chance to compete with Ayanokouji-kun, And I'll gladly take it " Mused Sakayanagi.

Sakayanagi backed away and aimed for my front, I simply dodged to the side. However, Kumoro who took another lap was closing in and clashed with Sakayanagi again

" You stupid sack of shit ! " Kumoro cursed.

" Fufu. Not nice "

Honami took advantage of this and bumped into me, Dragging me away. I complied and took the lead a head of her. Ahead of me, I saw Amikura Cornering Shibata's Car who was ramming it at full

speed.

I bumped in Shibata's car from behind Forcing Amikura's car to move away. However, Her car moved in the way of Kumoro's car and clashed with her

" Urgh ! " Kumoro grumbled in Frustration and slammed the button forcefully removing Amikura's car away. Sakayanagi stared at her suffering with amusement.

" Pssst. Ayanokouji-kun " Someone whispered to me, I turned around to find Shibata. " Thank you for earlier, But i need your cooperation "

" Cooperation ? " He nodded

" I want get back at Mako-san for earlier, Can you help me with that ? " He asked. " I've got Ando-san and Shiranami-san's too, We will corner her against a wall and block her for the rest of the game "

As he said that i glanced towards Amikura who was bullying someone again, She is a natural troublemaker, But not in a bad way. I nodded and Me and Shibata set for out mission

We stalked Amikura from behind for 15 seconds, Until she reached a Corner Shibata rushed In front of her and blocked her

" Sou-kun, Wha- ???!!!! " Before she finished her sentence, I clashed with her slamming her against the wall, She let out a surprised yelped and looked at me " Ayanokouji-kun too ? Hehe~ I see how it is~ "

Amikura Started moving backwards. However, Shiranami bumped into her. And now we are in a 3-way-deadlock

" Mako-san " Shibata called, Causing Amikura to focus on him " You have to heed our demands if you want to be set free "

" Kukuku " We all heard a weird laugh, The 3 of us Checked our surroundings but we didn't find Ryueen. *Wait* " Kukuku Watch out Sou-kun ! "

Amikura Accelerated, Taking Shibata off-guard and breaking away from the Deadlock.

" Ryueen-kun's weird laughter sure comes in handy don't you think ? Kukuku " Amikura said, Laughing weirdly after baiting all of us. *Well played*

The hustle and bustle continued for the rest of the time, Bumping, Dodging, Cornering, Getting cornered. It was pretty fun to say the least

" Fufu It was a pretty enjoyable spend of time, Don't you think Masumo-san ? " Sakayanagi approached us while aiming the last part towards Kumoro

" Fun you say ? It was shit ! " Kumoro expressed her irritation. " Don't you fucking invite me to the party later Okay ? I'm done "

At her statement, Most of my friends flinched in my peripheral. They all glanced at me before averting their gazes and calming themselves down. *Hmm ?*

" Fufu. If you don't come, I'll use *that* Masumi-san to bring you " Sakayanagi said with a smug

" Argh You stupid loli ! " Kumoro Grumbled at 'that' " Fine I'll come. But don't you fucking expect me to stay "

" Fufu That's better " Sakayanagi turned towards me and smiled " I'll see you later Ayanokouji-kun, Have fun "

With that Sakayanagi took her leave with a disgusted Kumoro behind her.

The rest of the afternoon was spent on different games, From Haunted house to Roller coasters, To Some mini-games. All of us seems to have a lot of fun, Including me

The sun was about to set, And we decided to finish off with a Feris Wheel.

Only 2 people were allowed inside a chamber, So firstly Shibata and Amikura went, Kanzaki and Kobashi, Hamaguchi and Ando, Shiranami and Minaminkata

At last, Me and Honami mounted inside, There was two seats facing each other. However, We decided to share and sat very close with each other gently holding hands as the Chamber started ascending towards the Red Sky

We both admired the view of, The shades of Red beautifully complimenting the Green Grass spread across the campus grounds.

The usually Blue-colored Water started adapting to the Beauty of the twilight, Creating a Romantic atmosphere between the two of us

" Kiyotaka " My heart, My soul, My other half, called me.

She, Who brought status back to life. She, Who painted my white canvas. She, Who pulled what i thought was impossible, She Called me

" Did you enjoy your birthday ? "

" I-I... " I stuttered. My breathing wasn't alright.

What am i getting all worked up for ? This isn't like me

" I loved it... " That's what i could've mustered. She was satisfied with my answer

" This is only the beginning Kiyotaka~ There is still your birthday next year, And the years after. After Graduation, And Many more birthdays that would follow that~ You're gonna love every single one of them. I'm gonna make sure that happens "

Only the beginning... Huh ?

Her speech, Eyes, Tone, Were sincere. Her eyes conveyed genuine feelings that reached my heart, I was fluttered. And before i knew it, Our lips met

There wasn't any lust in them, Only Warmth, And genuine love.
In this day, In this hour and minute. Those precious seconds that
are spent, This Time frame. Is gonna be burned in my memory
I'm gonna cherish our time forever
Honami.... Just
What did you do to me ?

After that, We moved towards a stall they rented. It was dark, But
at our Arrival the lights illuminated Revealing everyone

" Happy Birthday Ayanokouji-kun/Kiyotaka " All of them yelled
in unison

There was Manabu and Tachibana who was smiling warmly at
me, The same could be said to Ikuto.

Kiryuin, Sakayanagi were smirking at me. Meanwhile, Kumoro
was disgusted as usual

Hiyori and even Hashimoto were also there.

They all gathered around a cake, With my name on it. Honami
pushed my back, Urging me to move forward

I walked up to the cake, Ikuto handed me a knife which a
Gracefully accepted. And stared at the cake

Before inserting my knife on it, With only one thought on my
head

I am happy here

Ichinose Honami SS : Tears of Joy

I was walking in Keyaki Mall bouncing from one store to another,
Checking everything inside

" No. This is not it too~ "

I was in a little shopping trip for tomorrow, Friday 20th of October.

Nothing out of the ordinary would happen, It is an ordinary school day. That is in the eyes of everyone, Not me

Tomorrow is Kiyotaka's Birthday ! How in the world can that be an ordinary day for me ?

I was leaping from excitement, I clutched the heart-shaped necklace i was wearing with my hand, It filled me with a very warm feeling, It works exactly like a luck charm

Why ? *Because Kiyotaka gave it to me !*

I am sure that he checked the internet for ideas, That is because he was clueless when it comes to romance. Even if it wasn't his idea, I loved it, Simply because it was from him

I can choose anything to gift him tomorrow, And i am sure he'll like anything i give him. Yet here i am checking every store, *Because Kiyotaka only deserves the best of the best !*

Kiyotaka has become the most important person in my life, He is an irreplaceable existence to me.

It is an understatement if you say i only love him. I love him with every fiber of my body and soul, My love for him cannot be measured, And it is getting stronger and stronger with each and every day.

I couldn't imagine before that I can fall in love with someone, Let alone this deeply, It was unthinkable for me.

Because of my body, I became somewhat traumatized from all the lustful gazes. A lot of perverts would try to smooth talk their way to my skirt or directly try and assault me. Thankfully, I didn't encounter something serious

However, This Trauma was slowly building up inside of me. Because of this, I never believed that it was possible to fall in love

But here i am, Loving Kiyotaka to the point where i can give up anything for him. I cannot imagine a life without him

Thinking about it made me realize how lucky i am. The chances of us getting admitted to the same school, Same Class and being

seated next to each other. The chances of being at the same age,
Same era, Same country. The chances of Kiyotaka escaping that
dreadful hell, And Chairman Sakayanagi being kind enough to
accept him, And many more coincidences that led to this current
situation

It makes me scared to think that one small change could've
altered everything. This made me thankful, Thankful that nothing
of that sort happened, Thankful to those chain of coincidences for
uniting the both of us.

A Tear fell from my eye and ran across my cheek, Soon, More
tears started coming out

However, They weren't tears of sadness. They were...

Tears of Joy

There is no use in thinking about something that didn't happen

All that i can do now is

protect the life

i have with....

him

Ryueen Kakeru SS : Enigma

' 13 1 20 8 20 5 19 20 : 17 21 5 19 20 9 15 14 19 14 21 13 2 5 18
1,5,7,8,9 '

" Huh ? " I woke up on the day of the finals, To be met with this creepy ass message from an anonymous user

Normally, I would just ignore this. However, I have a feeling that this is gonna be fun

Dunno, Call it my gut

I grabbed a paper and a pen and started deciphering this message, Minutes Later i came up with

" Math test : questions number 1,5,7,8,9 " I read it out loud. I stared at it for a while, Contemplating the meaning behind this " What the Fuck is this ? "

Did whoever send this wanted to fuck with me ?

It is a possibility. But you can't be so sure, It could be a bait.

But what's up with those questions ? This is too weird. However,

I have a feeling, Telling me that this is his doing. I cannot explain it, But I smell him. I don't know why

" Kuku Let's just wait and see "

I walked up to Class and Passed my exams normally, It's good that Bitch didn't betray me, The questions are exactly the same. Kuku

It is truly pitiful, That someone like her carries so much hatred. But hey, It works for me.

When that Goblin was about to distribute the math questions, I remembered that message. I eagerly waited for my paper and snatched it scanning the questions

One thing was different, Unlike the other tests. Questions number 1,5,7,8,9 were different

The questions weren't different, But the numbers were. It could still be solved if you use the correct formula

I instantly went and solved them with a wide grin, I could see some retards glancing at me. But who the fuck cares about them when there is something bigger in front of you ?

" Hey. You old hag sack of shit, Bring me a piece of paper " I ordered that Suckagami or whatever the fuck his name is. He glared at me with his pathetic brown eyes

" Watch your Language Ryueen. You're in the middle of an exa- "

" Shut the fuck up, You're so full of shit that your eyes are even brown. Do as i say you fucking goblin and pull a paper from your green fucking ass "

He pulled a paper and handed it to me, I snatched it away and started deciphering those questions. Suddenly, My hand stopped, I stared at the message. Soon, I felt my lips curl up. As i relaxed on my chair

" Kuku "

So it is him, Honestly, What is going on in his brain ? That fucking monster

He could've easily fucked me over. But he didn't. Could it be....

" Kukukukuku "

" Keep it low Ryueen "

Did he do it for fun ? It seems likely

He could've done everything without doing this. This message, Is completely useless

Does he want me to move accordingly ? Well that's what i would do, But..

It's him, I can't afford any mistakes.

Why am i hesitating this much ? He can get fucked for all i care

I'll play along, For now Ayanokouji

I stared at the message again and kuku'ed

' Do not get in my way against Class D '

Arc 7 Chap 1 : The Stonks Club

Caution : Some parts of this chapter are a bit lemonade 🍋

Kiyo POV

It has been a week since the the results of paper shuffle were announced, The day where we, The First-years of the advanced nurturing high school witnessed the first expulsions on our grade level, And they aren't going to be the last.

Naturally, Class D was the most affected by this. Surprisingly, It was into the positive side.

They became scared after witnessing the cruelty of the school from up close, So it motivated them to do better. However, They were broken beyond repair. Factoring in the recent break-up of our Cooperative relationship, I cannot foresee any sort comeback coming from them, Not in this life, And not in another.

As long as Kushida keeps leading them, They cannot get back on their feet, Even if Kushida gets taken down, They would still remain in shambles. The Reverse actually, If Kushida gets taken down, It would be a decisive blow to them, Sending their whole Class to the point of no return.

To my surprise, They still haven't figure out that there is a Traitor among them, While i'm sure that some of them are just ignoring it since they already gave up. But there is still people like Ike and Yamauchi who doesn't suspect a thing.

One common thing between those people is that they are Kushida's supporters. No Their feelings are too little to be a supporter, The more appropriate term to describe them is..... *Simps* ?

Anyway, Much to the realization of a Class D student, Their High school life is ruined, They have to live with low-to-no money for the rest of their school lives while being taunted by the higher Classes, I wouldn't be surprised if some of them decide to drop out. Or... *Offer to be a traitor*

Which is exactly what happened, I gained for myself quite a valuable pawn. A girl from Class D contacted me few days ago and offered herself to become a spy. Normally, I would reject such an offer. However....

I recognize her potential, She is very capable, More so than almost everyone in Class D, And by almost i mean everyone except

Kouenji. That's one of the reasons i accepted her offer

Unsurprisingly enough, Her condition was that i move her into my Class. However, I sensed some ulterior motives other than wanting to be in the best Class. I have my guesses, But decided to not think about it

I woke up from my slumber around 5 AM, After doing some stretches i checked my surroundings including the clock. Before laying my eyes on the divine beauty beside me

Honami was sleeping next to me inside her Pink Pyjamas that beautifully showed her voluptuous body. A Warm smile plastered on her face making her look more appealing and beautiful

After Containing the Horny Monster inside me, I quietly got off from bed and changed into a track suit.

Winter Break is approaching, It's getting somewhat chilly inside my room. That's why i cannot risk sleeping topless anymore, Honami took the initiative and bought me warm pyjamas.

After i was done changing, I tidied my Pyjamas and put them inside the locker. On my way out i pulled out a Ring from the Charger and wore it

It's a smart ring that helps you monitor your condition. With it's built-in sensors, You can check your Body temperature, Heartbeats and other condition. It keeps watch over them and warns you when any abnormalities are detected

It comes with an app that you install manually on your phone, From there you can check all the details and The Ring cannot run without it, So it is essential.

It also comes with a GPS feature to check your location, It is mostly useful whenever you lose it. But it's useless on any other uses.

Although you may argue that i don't need such a thing, And allow me to tell you that you are right. However, It was a gift from Honami on my birthday, Wearing it gives me more motivation.

Speaking of my birthday, It was one of the best days i ever lived so far, And probably what I'm gonna live too. That day is burnt in my memory forever, And i won't forget it.

So this is making memories huh ?

I've also received Gifts from the people I'm close to. Although they were much appreciated, Most of them were nothing short of a troll

The only normal gifts i received were : This Smart Ring from Honami, This Track suit from Manabu and Tachibana, A Book from Hiyori and a gift card from Ikuto. The Rest were 🤡🤡🤡🤡🤡

I Received 3 Packs of Pasta from Shibata and Pizza Sauce from Shiranami. Ando gave me Custom-designed Socks which had a lot

of Faces on them

Minamikata gave me a Grass Sandal while Kobashi gave me a Snail Jelly mask. If you thought that was weird then...

Kanzaki gave me a Fish Training Kit and Hamaguchi gave me a microwave. Don't even ask me where did the Former get that, But the latter at least is a bit useful.

However, Amikura's Gift was the most insane out of all. She gifted me Breast-milk lollipops from god knows where. I was astonished and confused. *How in the world can you acquire such a thing ? Especially in Campus ?*

Honami instantly confiscated it and scolded Amikura who was grinning mischievously. They all apologized after that for the weird gifts, But i wasn't offended in the slightest

In fact, I was happy that I at least received something. I only hoped that people would remember my Birthday. Besides, They don't know what my tastes are, Even i don't know. Nevertheless, I was gonna be happy with anything they gave me

Sakayanagi gave me her Chess Book, It sounded completely natural on the surface. But i understood the hidden meaning behind this. Nevertheless, I gracefully accepted it

Kiryuuin gave me a bunch of unboxed underwear, To my suspicion it had an Aphrodisiac effect. Manabu scolded her and she apologized, With words not matching her motives.

Hashimoto gifted me bunch of XXL sized condoms with multiple flavors, Ranging from Strawberry to mint. It wasn't needed since Honami had a contraceptive, But i accepted them for formality sake.

I reminisced about that day while going through with my morning Jog. It's around the start of December, It was chilly outside making a good climate for my exercising.

Around 6:30 i finished my routine with a walk. Reaching the dorms, I called for the elevator and Grabbed my key card unlocking my dorm room and entering it.

" Welcome home Kiyotaka~ " Honami's voice echoed from the Kitchen, Greeting me. The smell of different spices were floating in the air.

" Good morning Honami " I Greeted back, Removing my shoes and setting them on the shelf. Honami wearing an apron on top of her pyjamas approached me, Smiling warmly

" I have prepared Breakfast alongside a hot bath for you~ The towel is inside so you can hope Right away~ " Honami exclaimed. " Now Praise me~ "

" Thank you Honami " I thanked her giving her head pats, She closed her eyes and smiled warmly, Reciprocating it like a cute kitty

" Praise me more~ " She asked. I laid my hand on top of her bangs and bent, Looking deeply into her Blue eyes

" You're a great wife "

" Eh ? " Honami blurted in shock, Her face flushed into a tomato. Her eyes, Darted everywhere trying to avoid my gaze.

Looking at her from up close, She was even more cute while flustered. I simply let out a chuckle and rose my head, She pouted, Before walking away.

I Smiled at her departing Figure before entering the Hot Bathroom. I took off all my clothes and walked toward the bathtub relaxed inside. The hot water was absorbing all of my fatigue, I Closed my eyes closed, Giving in to the feeling.

Random thoughts started circulating in my almost empty head. One of which was something I'm gonna pull today. But i quickly brushed them away, Completely clearing my head while enjoying the silence, Inside this Hot refreshing Bath.

Click

A Sudden sound Reverberated within the silence, I tilted my head glancing towards the source. Emerging from the Recently opened door, Was a butt-naked Honami

" ?!! "

I was caught off-guard, I was clearly not ready for this. My reaction caused the Water to overflow to the surface.

" Honami, What are you doing here ? " I asked, Trying to appear calm. On her Red face, She flashed me with a mischievous grin before she Started taking steps towards me, My eyes Unconsciously Laid on her Bouncing Breasts while approaching me.

" Pervert~ " Honami teased, It was pretty hard not to look. Honami kept approaching me with a slow and steady steps, When we were a few Centimetres away she stopped and bent forward, Causing her Monstrous Breasts to Float in the air while examining me with a wide lustful grin " You're quite cute when you're Flustered Kiyo~ " She spoke teasingly. She extended her arm and started caressing my Cheeks, While i was intensely staring at the water in front of me

I'm not sure what kind of expression i'm making currently. However, One thing i'm sure of is that she doesn't want to do it, She didn't get to use the contraceptive and there is around one hour left for Class. Although it may not matter to her, But her goal is to gauge some reaction out of me

Something Started rising, And it's not the shield hero. I stood no chance against her

Honami being the perceptive she is Noticed this and Removed her hand from my face, Seemingly getting what she wanted. However,

Her Lustful smile only went bigger

" Ara~ Is Kiyotaka getting excited because of me~? You don't have to hide that you like it~ you Naughty Pervert~ You can surrender to you carnal desires~ and Grab as much as you want you know~ " Honami placed both of her forearms below her chest and hugged herself, Making her Boobs appear more enormous while offering them to me " Cmon~ Kiyoo~ Grab~ Grab~ "

Splurp

Splurp

She bounced twice, Resulting in her boobs to clap her skin releasing a sexy noise that rose the sexual tension in my body.

" Kiyoo~ " She impatiently moaned my name, Calling for my attention.

After some long internal conflict i swallowed whatever and finally decided to face her, Surrendering to her. *She is just too Strong*

Her beautiful voluptuous body Bewitched me. Her boobs, Thighs, Face... They were all perfect, Everything about her was perfect. She was out of this world, I felt like i was in the presence of a goddess. *Truly a divine beauty*

Her lustful smile grew wider at me dozing off while ogling her, But she didn't mind it. In fact, She loved it.

I slowly extended my arm aiming towards her chest area, She embraced herself tighter lustfully anticipating the contact. Slowly but surely, My hand closed the distance and her feelings grew wilder

" Eeeeeep~!! "

Splash

I suddenly adjusted my arm and grabbed her by the waist, She let a cute yelp before i pulled her towards the bath.

" Kiyoo~ " After wiping some water off her face, She faced me and pouted. I Chuckled and She smiled warmly before jumping at my embrace

She embraced me tightly, Holding me in a deadlock while pressing all the skin she could into mine. Our colliding skins generated a warm feeling that took all my strength away, *I was powerless against her.*

I gave up and reciprocated her embrace, Cuddling inside the bath while fully naked. It wasn't very bad, In fact, It felt pretty good.

" Kiyoo~ " Minutes later, Honami called me. Raising her tomato face to look at me " Allow me to wash your back~ "

That was probably one of the original reasons why she came here, She could've come with a towel. However, She knows that she would make me flustered if she came fully naked, So she wanted to get back at me from earlier when i called her 'a great wife' *You're*

such a cheeky little brat

I smiled at her and nodded, After a quick kiss she hopped off allowing me to leave and sit on the floor. She grabbed a piece of cloth and sat behind me, Placing it on my sturdy back before rubbing it, Refining my back.

Honami didn't try and pull any more advances on me while Washing my back, Minutes later she was done and i repaid the favor, Washing hers too. Contrary to mine, It was more smooth and Soft

Needless to say, I was getting perverted thoughts. However, I had to shun them to not pull anything careless. I'm sure Honami is dealing with the same thing too

We finished off with a quick shower cleaning up and hopped inside our school uniforms feeling more fresh and clean. Honami was preparing our Bentos while i was eating my breakfast. There was no need to rush with about half an hour left for Class

After cleaning up we both set our way towards the school. In the lobby, We met with our Classmates and chatted with each other on our way to school.

** Same Day **

Kriiing

The Bell Rang, Signalling the end of the morning classes and the start of Lunch break. That's where i decided to make my move

Rejecting all the invitations, I set my way towards the student council room with a bento box in hand. *There is a possibility that i might spent my whole time there*

Honami offered her company, Since she is the Vice-President and my Girlfriend, But i refused. Not that she isn't needed, But i would rather not waste her time.

Reaching the said room, I knocked on the door. People were giving me weird glances while passing by, But i didn't pay any attention to them

" Come in " At the signal, I opened the Door.

Inside the Room, I spotted Ikuto sitting on his desk looking at me with a smile. I bowed to him and stepped inside, Where i spotted 2 more people. Similarly, They noticed me too

With one eye closed, The first person threw me a side glance and smirked, While combing his hair. He quickly flipped his gangs and let out a laugh

The second person turned towards me with a wide smirk, She tracked me with her gaze while i moved closer and sat beside her on the sofa, Smirking like a mad lad

" So Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class 1-A, Kouenji Rokusuke from Class 1-D and Kiryuin Fuka from Class 2-A " Ikuto faced all of us, I nodded while the two of them didn't do much of a gesture. Ikuto proceeds to grab a paper sitting on his desk and read it " After thoroughly reviewing your application, We came to the conclusion to grant you your wish on Creating a new Club in the Advanced Nurturing High School "

Hearing that, I somewhat felt relieved. The Club I'm creating is a unique one, It doesn't necessarily abide by the General rules of the Clubs. However, It doesn't break them either, In fact, It does more good than harm. But i was still somewhat unsure

The Club is basic, It's a money Grinding Club. Simply, You're free to challenge The members of the Club, Currently Me, Kouenji and Kiryuin in any game as long as it fits the bill for a 1 on 1. Be it Chess, Shogi, Fights, Academic test, Physical tests etc.... For Private Points of course

Of course, We only chose games that we are certain that we could win on, Or to some degree at least. You can now understand why i was somewhat skeptical about this application, But it worked out in the end

This Club is Room-less. You can challenge someone anywhere and anytime, All you have to do is request a duel and you'll get what you want. It works as an Advertisement, And it gains me some authority.

I also invited Sakayanagi and Manabu, Since the latter is not in a club he could join, But i am unsure. The Former would most likely accept after we have a little match, So i don't see any problems with this arrangement

" You three are gonna be the co-founders and all of you have the same level of power over the Club. Do you accept this arrangement ? " All three of us nodded. Ikuto nodded " Lastly, The Club needs a name. You're free to discuss it here and submit it whenever you're ready "

" That wouldn't be necessary " I interrupted. " We already agreed on a name "

Ikuto Rose an eyebrow " And what would it be ? " I glanced at the two enigmas sitting beside me, Both of them Smirked. I turned towards Ikuto

" I'm gonna name it The Stonks Club "

Club you say ? Meen You ripped off the idea from somewhere else

Yes i did rip it off from tose cliché fics where Kiyo goes full money. However, I have my own plan with this Club

But i'm sure that i would've thought the same thing without reading the fics. So yeh

Anyway, Ecchinose Hornynami Hype is real right ? I think i made her too Horny in this Chapter, But *Ecchinose for the Win !*

You'll know why she did that in SS. Cya~

Arc 7 Chap 2 : Scam Operation

I was sitting inside the Class while Chabashira-sensei was going through the courses with 2 minutes left for lunch break

Everyone was seemingly focused on the lesson, Not wanting to slip off during those Final Moments. While i was indulged in what i call Facade-Dozing.

It is a routine i created for myself during those hours of boredom to keep me entertained while pretending to listen to the discussions. It's basically a world where i can play multiple scenarios and do multiple stuff that differs on each and everyday

' Go Kimi ! Don't let Ecsecia win against you ! '

Today, I was spectating a race between a Giraffe and a Monkey in a Sandy Track while eating some squid on the audience, I even gave them some names and started Cheering for them.

On my right, I was playing an intense Chess match against my own Brain. I had to create multiple thought processes and moves for each side. In the end, I lost against my own Brain. *Does that count as a loss ? Technically. However, That's my Brain, But i lost to my own brain.*

It has been two days since the establishment of the Stonks Club, And today is the day we're gonna start operations.

Manabu accepted my invitation on joining my club and agreed to handle any paper work, And I was very grateful for that. This allowed the three of us to focus more on grinding a.k.a Scamming people

Many students, Mostly upperclassmen got baited into my Fishing Net and requested a challenge. More so than i anticipated, I am pretty sure Kouenji and Kiryuin are having the same or more challenges

Since Manabu recognized my abilities, I built quite the Reputation between the upperclassmen. This made them have a sense of Jealousy and hatred, Although there is some admirers, But their number can be counted using fingers. So it is safe to say that everyone is envious

Using that, I preformed a wide-scale provocation attack and mocked every upperclassmen, Manabu joining me also added credibility to my plan and it seems to be working better than i originally thought. Kouenji and Kiryuin also did the same thing

In the perspective of an Upperclassman, We are 3 narcissistic enigmas that are full of themselves because Manabu recognized our abilities, By offering our competition we are begging to be put on our place and earn Manabu's recognition as a bonus.

Kriiiiiiiiiing

The sound of the Bell ringing snapped me out of my thoughts, Indicating the end of the lessons for the day.

(A/N : That's how it is in my Country. In the 3rd day, They give you the afternoon off so you only study in the morning. IDK about Japan or yours but let me know if it's the same)

Most of my classmates grouped up with their friends and happily chatted or went to the cafeteria. Since there is no afternoon Classes, The Class was more empty than usual

There is 20 Minutes left for my first Challenge so i decided to take it easy, I remained alongside Honami, Shibata, Amikura, Kanzaki, Kobashi and Minamikata and ate lunch in the Class. They offered their company in my journey, Seeing no reason to refuse i accepted

We engaged in a trivial banter while eating, It's been a long while since i started eating Honami's food and yet, I didn't get bored of it. Probably because it's filled with love

" Man, You're pretty Crazy aren't you Ayanokouji-kun ? " Asked Shibata in amazement. I simply looked at him in confusion " I mean, Going around and mocking the whole student body. That's insane if i say so myself "

" Yeah, When i heard about it. My Exe Program stopped working, Like Whaaa ?! " Expressed Kobashi, Making everyone giggle. She let the tip of her tongue out while patting the back of her own head slyly

" Knowing you, You must have a plan if you went and pulled a stunt like that. Right Ayanokouji ? " Asked Kanzaki.

Challenging the whole student body isn't something an average sane person would ever think of doing, So their Surprise isn't unreasonable. It needs a lot of courage and confidence to do that alongside the skills. So it would be written off as foolish. However...

" I wouldn't have done it if i wasn't sure of my victory " I shrugged. I know it better than anyone else that no one at this school can defeat me, Even if someone emerges and defeats me fair and square it wouldn't be too bad since i am looking to be defeated. So this arrangement is a win-win for me

All of them speechlessly stared at me, They had a hint of admiration in their eyes while Honami was Blushing.

" That's..... so cool..... " Muttered Shibata. Moments later he added " I wish i was as bold as you Ayanokouji-kun. You have balls harder

than steel " Many of them nodded

" I guess " I Shrugged again. The stunt effect has lightened, As They averted their eyes into their foods and started eating.

" How hard is your balls Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" Pfft- " Eveyone almost spit out their food at that ridiculous question, I wasn't an exception. I turned towards the source and found Amikura grinning like a mad lad

" Oh Sorry Sorry~ I didn't think of your feelings Ayanokouji-kun~ It must be very embarrassing to answer~ " Amikura clapped her hands together and bowed apologetically. However, As soon as she stood up, She Averted her eyes to Honami " Maybe Honami-chan can answer that question for us~ "

" Heh~ Wha-?! " Honami was baffled, Her face started heating up and turned into a Tomato. " M-Mako-chan ! T-That's Embarrassing ! W-What makes you think i know ! " She started stuttering as she spoke, Her face got even more red that she dug it in her hands. I can tell that her memory is going wild Remembering the moments of Bliss

" Hoh ? You don't know Honami-chan ? " Amikura was visibly surprised by this. " I thought you already did it countless times that the characteristics is already at the back of your head. You guys are moving pretty slowly " She crossed her arms and shook her head in disappointment.

I guess Amikura was under the impression that we are rabbits. Although she is Almost wrong, I can clearly tell that if the opportunity arises, Honami would turn me into her Sex-toy.

After Honami calmed down, We finished our foods in a casual chatter and cleaned up.

My first challenge for the day is Darts against someone from Class 3-D, When there was 5 Minutes left we departed towards the gymnasium

Although I'm not fat, I can score bullseye with ease. No offense but it's weird that almost every darts professional is fat, They claim that it helps them aim better but i am not so sure about it myself

Reaching the Gymnasium, I found a fat dude who was shooting arrows at a Target, I approached him and it took him a while to notice me.

He was exhausted and sweaty, The Ground below him was wet from his sweat. I can tell that he was excessively practicing for a while, Most likely since the Start of Lunch Break.

" Hey, You're Shiba Tetsuya Correct ? " I know that he is my target, But decided to ask anyway.

" Hey..... " He Greeted blankly. His eyes darted towards Honami, Instantly, his expression changed into a delighted and confident

one. " Yes I am ! " His blank tone was now filled with enthusiasm, I sighed internally.

" That's good " I nodded. He enthusiastically went and collected the Arrows and Changed the Target paper that was penetrated quite badly, It was barely intact.

I want to penetrate Honami just like that

I quickly Contained the Horny Monster and took control over myself again. During this time, He was done and we moved to a more Clean place and set up before the both of us pulled our phones and walked towards Honami

Honami and Kanzaki both pulled out theirs on my orders and started recording, He started his own recording too.

" We agreed on 10.000 P.P Correct ? " I asked in confirmation.

" Make it 20.000 " He added confidently. I glanced at him before nodding

" Ok. 20000 It is- "

" 30.000 " He added with more confidence. This caused me to stare at him in surprise. He eyed me with wide grin " Or are you scared ? "

" Not at all. 30.000 It is " I shrugged. His confidence is unfounded, Rather, It's foolishness.

From the previous target paper he practiced on, I calculated his accuracy around 60% It is somewhat reliable. However, Building this much confidence based on this is a foolish behavior.

This behavior caused Honami to look at him in bewilderment, She understands this as well. He looked back at her and gave her a wink with a wide lascivious smirk. She unconsciously backed away from him in disgust, I felt the urge to hit him but i didn't.

After Transferring our points, We both grabbed 3 arrows and formed a line facing the Target. He confidently asked to go first and i granted

" Watch This ! " He yelled as he took his first shot and scored a 70 " Yes ! " He punched the air and celebrated loudly, Annoying everyone in the gymnasium.

He stepped a side allowing me to take my shot, I took my stance and put my the arrow close to my eye, Aiming it at the Target.

" Don't forget to Breathe. Focus and Shoot, That's how you play the game " He advized me mockingly while i just ignored him. On my peripheral vision, I noticed Amikura and Shibata grinning sadistically at him.

I cleared my mind and inhaled, After calculating the distance and the weight. I shot the Arrow at the Target. Unfortunately, I miscalculated something

" What ?! " Shiba Tetsuya blurted in Shock as i sighed in

disappointment. I got 90, Seems like i forgot an x. He stared at the paper and shot me a glare " You won't be this lucky next time "

He took his place and shot his second arrow and got a 50. Contrary to last time he didn't celebrate and walked aside to spectate me.

I took the same stance but this time, I made sure to not make any mistakes and got a bullseye. Shiba's Jaw dropped, As he was staring with disbelief at the Target

" You.... You Cheated ! You must be Cheating ! " With killer he walked towards me intimidatingly

" And now how would i do that ? " I stared at him unfazed, He stood 2 inches away from me while glaring at me

" Your Arrows must have aimhack or something " He claimed.
Aimhack ? What the hell is that ?

" Wha- "

" Bwahahahhahaha " Shibata started laughing hysterically. Shiba turned and glared at him, The others were containing their laughter
" Dude. Aimhack ? Seriously ? You must be joking "

" I am not joking. He must've hacked Real life " *Wha ?*

At his statement, Everyone started laughing, Even Kanzaki. Shiba started losing it

" Ah~ Poor guy. There is no hope for you. Just How in the world are you in this school anyway ? " Mocked Amikura, Angering Shiba even more.

" You- "

" Enough of this " I cut through him. He switched targets and glared at me " I have more challenges to attend. So i appreciate it if you don't waste my time "

Shiba Clinched his teeth and shot randomly, It ended up missing. Frustratingly, He grabbed his bag and walked towards the entrance, He stopped and glared at each one of us before leaving.

" Good Job Kiyoooo~ " Honami praised while flying towards my arm hugging it Tightly.

" That was a fine showing Ayanokouji " Praised Kanzaki, Looking delighted with this win.

" That's my King for you " Said Shibata while wiping some tears while giggling " That was a way better show than i thought. AiMhAcKs he says Hahaha " Everyone giggled again

" Right, Shall we go to the next one ? " I asked. They all nodded

" And this is my win " I said as i pulled the last card from the student's hand

" Urgh-! " The student in front of me slammed the Joker card in the table and stood up grabbing me by the collar " You Bastard. What did you DO ! "

" I played and won "

" No ! I was the one who is supposed to win ! " He yelled angrily as he tightened his grip. I gestured for Honami and Kanzaki to stop and i put my hand on his wrist

" Interesting..... " I smirked at him as i started applying pressure to his grip, His face contorted in pain " You were the one supposed to win hmm ? Then what happened ? "

It was around 5 PM when i caught for myself the biggest fish so far. This guy was so confident in his victory that he bet 100.000 P.P in a poker game. It was obvious as day that he was planning something

To my suspicions, I noticed a mark on the right side of the Joker card, And it wasn't that hard to notice. So i basically evaded grabbing it at all costs

I let go of his hand and he instantly pulled it away, Holding his wrist as he walked away dejectedly.

I stood up from my seat and joined Honami and Kanzaki, The others called it a day around 3 PM and only the three of us remained.

Today has been fruitful, I won every single match thrown at me, Even with people cheating. I estimate my gains around 600.000 P.P which is way more than i expected, If it wasn't for the people blatantly raising the Money and cheat i wouldn't have gained half of it

Kouenji and Kiryuuin already went home with a net positive balance, Both of them also have been flawless during their matches.

I received a message and walked towards my next final challenge for the day, Passing through the Classes I reached Class 1-D. Inside, Where my Targets are

" You actually came. Hah ! You dare approach me ?! The Amazing Yamauchi Haruki ?!!!! " As soon as i walked inside, I spotted two male figures. They were looking as disgusting as ever

" I don't have time for your useless blabbering, Let's get this over with " I said bluntly. Yamauchi who was flexing his biceps looked at me with a wide smirk " You said you'd bet 20.000 P.P for a game of Rock-paper-scissors ? "

" Damn Right i did ! " Yamauchi snapped at me

" Do you even have the points ? " I asked. Both of them Glared at me

" Damn Right we do. And hey ! I am your opponent here " It was Ike who spoke and walked in front of me, Like a tall post with unwavering confidence. He showed me his Balance which had 23.452 P.P " See ?! I do have the points "

" Right... " I didn't bother to ask how did they get them. They probably sold their body as i can smell some nasty stuff flying on the air

Ike Transferred The points To Honami, He showed me that he is recording this conversation and i nodded at him.

" Let's go " Ike smirked as he moved towards the podium, I simply stared at his back.

" What are you doing ? Aren't you gonna move ? " Yamauchi urged me as he walked behind me and started pushing me. Suspiciously, I moved towards the podium

I glanced at Kanzaki and He nodded at me, Before Glaring at Yamauchi who was approaching him and Honami. Yamauchi flinched and stopped where he was.

I took my place in front of Ike who's back was against the wall, And mine was against the second door and faced each other

" You know the Rules right ? " Ike placed his hand behind his back for gesture " You put your hand behind your back and do the move, At countdown we both pull at the same time. Is that Clear ? " I nodded and i did just like he gestured for me

" Right. 3....2... 1 ! "

We both pulled our hands at the same time, We both pulled a rock and it was a draw.

" Haha ! A Draw ! " Ike exclaimed " Let's go again ! " I nodded and put my hand on my back

" 3...2...1 ! "

We both pulled out again, This time I won.

" Argh ! " Ike Grumbled loudly, Before hiding his hand

" Don't sweat it Ike ! It's just one round ! There is still more ! " Yamauchi cheered for Ike while holding his phone. Ike glanced at him and nodded

" Don't get cocky because of one win Ayanokouji ! " Ike glared at me as he hid his hand. I shrugged and did the same

" 3...2.....1 ! "

We both pulled at the same time..

" Yes ! " Ike Celebrated as he won this round. " Serves you Right Asshole ! I am clearly better than you "

" You tell him Kanji ! He is just an overrated Bastard who has an

S Tier Girlfriend ! Ichinose-chan should've been with me instead ! " Yamauchi Claimed loudly, To the support of Ike

" You're wrong on one thing Haruki. Ichinose-chan should've been with me instead ! " Ike glared at Yamauchi as they both went back on fourth

During this, Honami couldn't hide her intolerance and backed away in disgust, Kanzaki gestured for her to leave but she refused and insisted in staying with me. Kanzaki agreed and he walked in front of her, Covering her from Their gazes. *Kanzaki.... I won't forget what you've done*

" **Shut up** " I commanded in a cold threatening voice. Both of them flinched " I am barely holding myself from Hitting the both of you, Let's finish this Real quick " I averted back to my monotone voice, Ike Nodded and hid his hand

" 3.....2.....1 ! "

" WHAT ?! " Ike Yelled in shock as i countered his scissors with a Rock, The same thing could be said about Yamauchi. " Y-You ! "

" Me ? " I stared at him questionably, He swallowed the words and looked at Yamauchi. Before Hiding his hand again

" 3....2.....1 ! "

I quickly switched from Rock to a scissor and pulled, Ike pulled a paper and i won 3-1.

" WHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAT ?!!!!!! " Ike yelled loudly as he fell to his knees. Yamauchi dropped his phone and held his head in dejection

" Good Game " I said as i started walking away. However, *I felt disturbance in the air*

" YOU SHIT ! " Ike quickly stood up and threw a punch at my abdominal with full strength. I glanced at him and simply let it hit me " AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH ! "

Ike fell in the ground, Clutching his hand that recently hit my stomach. I simply sighed and walked away

" AYANOKOUJI ! WHAT DID YOU DO TO MY FRIEND ?! " Yamauchi yelled at me.

" I didn't do anything. You saw Right ? He was the one who hit me "

" BUT HOW IS HE INJURED ?!!! "

" Because he punched something hard with his frail hand, As a result, It broke " I shrugged and arrived at Honami and gave her head pats. I offered her my arm which she instantly hugged and the Three of us started to walk away

" Wait ! " Ike Yelled, I simply stopped and Glanced at him " You Cheated ! I want my points back ! "

" How in the world did i cheat ? " I rose an eyebrow, Feeling somewhat funny since he was the one who set a camera behind the

door to observe my movements through Yamauchi.

I noticed that the moment he wanted me to go to the podium, He was also glancing at Yamauchi between countdown. Kanzaki also noticed this, But he stood and spectated with amusement

" You Knew there was a camera behind the Door and moved accordingly ! You deceived me ! You Cheater ! " I felt my eyes black out for a moment. *What the Fuck ?*

" Let's go " My body moved on it's own and i walked away with Kanzaki and Honami. Ike Started Yelling from the Class but i ignored him

We walked in silence towards the entrance and swapped our shoes before making our way back towards the Dorms

" Don't worry Honami. They won't disturb you like that again " I reassured in a warm tone while giving her head pats. Her mood instantly perked up, But she was still feeling down from earlier. I turned toward Kanzaki " Thank you for Protecting her earlier, I owe you "

" No need to mention it Ayanokouji. It was my job as your friend " Kanzaki smiled at me, Before looking back " I never thought i would be this disgusted by another human in my entire life "

" Just don't think about it. It's all over now " I said, Reassuring both of them. As we made our way towards the dorms

Honami is feeling down, Her Trauma activated during that time where they hurdled their perverted thoughts at her. Seeing her made me feel an Urge

An Urge to Break something, An urge to hit someone. I felt frustrated

I glanced back at the school entrance, Where we left moments ago. With one thought running through my head

You're going to pay....

Arc 7 Chap 3 : The Born of Yamadead and Ikedead

Coming in this Chapter

Two lone male students are walking towards a inconspicuous part of Campus, It's a place faraway from the population and it has no cameras. They were summoned by one of the cutest girls in their Class. They were both visibly excited, Lasciviously that is

" Man, I'm so nervous " Expressed the first guy before turning to face his companion " You don't seem nervous at all Haruki "

" Why should i be ? This would've happened sooner or later, The girls finally started to realize my Beauty " Boasted the Second Person smugly, Overflowing with confidence

" You're Right. I wonder why Matsushita-san called us here "

" Isn't it obvious Kanji ? She wants to have a threesome with us ! " Said the second person, Getting more excited at the thought.

" You're Right ! If this was a confession, Then she don't need to ask the both of us to come Right ? " Asked the First Guy

" Damn Right Kanji. The only Reason left is a threesome, Man I'm so pumped up "

" I know right ?! I can't believe that we are gonna do it with one of the cutest girls in the school ! "

" Man Those Thighs, Boobs, Ass. Everything about her is perfect, She is very cute too " They both started drooling while loudly fantasizing about Matsushita, Disgusting the person waiting for them around the corner.

My blurry vision slowly started dissipating as i woke up from my slumber, I was greeted by the dark interior of my Room.

I lift my head off the wall slowly recovering my senses, My vision is completely recovered so as my other sensed.

However, I sensed a heavy presence below me, I looked towards it to find a strawberry haired beauty sleeping on my lap with her school uniform, It was Honami.

" Oh... Right " I was confused but i remembered what happened

I fell asleep while comforting Honami after her Traumatic experience with the two fucking retards.

(A/N : You know that Kiyo is pissed when he starts cursing in his monologues.)

I gotta give it to them, Only *that man* managed to make me this angry so far, When he killed Futaro.

I looked at Honami and started Caressing her hair.

I promise you, They will pay

I thought as i planted a kiss on her forehead

Honami's eyes opened and she turned slightly to look at me, She isn't conscious but this is a phenomenon where someone move on his own

" It's still early, Sleep well " I whispered to her as i caressed her hair with a smile. Her lips slightly opened but she quickly fell asleep again.

I gently laid her head on the pillow and covered her in a blanket, She quietly muttered something as she made herself more comfortable. Honami sleeping is probably the cutest thing in the world, But today i couldn't admire her

I instantly went and clutched my phone, There was 4 notifications popped up. Two of them are Points Transactions from Kiryuiin and Kouenji, The other one was Amikura who was worried about Honami, I reassured her before going to Ikuto's message that contained some interesting information

After checking it i scrolled through the contacts and sent a message to a unnamed Contact and turned my phone off.

" Today is gonna be a long day "

" Winner : Ayanokouji Kiyotaka with 100 Points ! " Mashima-sensei announced with amazement

" WHAT ? " The upperclassman beside me yelled in shock, As he was handed his defeat. He instinctively turned to look at me, A lot of questions running through his head. However, Since the Teacher is here he couldn't do anything but to leave.

It was around halfway through Lunch Break when an upperclassman challenged me in a college level English Test. He was very confident in his English and scored a 95, Which gives him every right to be. However, The only mistake he made is going against me

I received my 35.000 P.P and took my leave, Since he is a Third-year and went through more materials than a First-year, I bet 15.000 while he bet 20.000. I could've refused but it was easy money

I went and joined Kanzaki and headed towards the Library for my next Challenge, And it was a Chess game against none other than..... Sakayanagi

" You don't seem nervous at all " Marked Kanzaki, I turned and glanced at him " Sakayanagi is the best Chess Player in this whole school, Yet you don't seem fazed "

" Actually, I am nervous, But i just don't show it " I half-lied. Feeling pressure before facing a strong opponent is normal, If you are confident enough then Nervousness wouldn't exist, At least to some degree.

Kanzaki nodded and we continued walking. Today, Only him accompanied me.

Honami was summoned to a meeting in the Student Council Room. Apparently, There is a case of a phone theft reported recently, And the Council was tasked for investigation.

My other friends decided to stay with her and only Kanzaki was kind enough to accompany me.

Reaching the Library, We opened the Door and walked inside. Just by the entrance, Hiyori who was chatting with the receptionist noticed my presence and greeted me

" Ah, Good afternoon Kiyotaka-kun ! "

" Hello Hiyori " I greeted back. She bowed to Kanzaki and he responded with the same

" So, Did you come here to read some books ? " Her face beamed with excitement.

" No " Hiyori got disappointed, But not to the extent i expected it would. I quickly took a scan on my surroundings " Did you happen to see Sakayanagi ? "

" Sakayanagi-san ? You mean the white haired little girl ? " Hiyori asked innocently.

" Ye- "

" Kukuku Hiyori, That's not a nice thing to say " A Figure emerged from the Corner, And it was none other than dragonboy-chan looking as enigmatic as ever

" Ah sorry Kakeru-kun. I didn't mean to offend anyone " Hiyori bowed multiple time apologetically. But Ryueen stopped her, Before facing me

" You're here Ayanokouji. It's been a while " Ryueen greeted me with a smirk

" It's been a while indeed Ryueen. I was wondering where you disappeared, But i guess.... " I said looking at Hiyori, She tilted her head cutely in confusion.

" What's that supposed to mean ? " Ryueen glared intimidatingly at me

" Nothing " I shook my head. Ryueen smirk crept back to his face

" I heard that you've been running around scamming the whole upper years Ayanokouji, I have to say, That is some serious moves you're making. You and that narcissist "

" What do you mean scam ? My operation is as legit as it gets " I shrugged.

" Kukuku Legit my ass " Ryueen laughed " Just when i think you can't get better, You become more and more interesting, And my desire to crush you becomes bigger and bigger " Ryueen said, With unwavering confidence.

" Ryueen i have a quick question "

" Kuku Go ahead "

" Don't you think of me as someone to be feared ? "

When you're against an opponent who is better than you in every way, It is very natural to fear him, Especially if you've been crushed by him multiple times. But not Ryueen, I don't sense any fear coming from him. The reverse, He feels excited to go against me, Even though he knows that he'll lose.

Ryueen thought about it for a moment, Before he smirked widely.

" Yes, You are someone to be feared Monster " Ryueen's answer made me even more confused.

" But why don't you fear me ? " Ryueen found my question ridiculous as he started laughing.

" I said you are someone to be feared, But i never said that i am fear you. You are someone i find joy in competing with "

" But you lost not only once, But multiple times. Why are you not afraid of going against me ? " *Where does the individual named Ryueen Kakeru get his confidence from ?*

Sakayanagi gets her confidence from her superior genes, Honami gets her confidence from her friends, Kushida gets hers from the secrets she's trusted with everyday. Everyone has a source of confidence they feed on. Something they take pride on

The source of our Confidence greatly influences our Character and goals. Without it, Your life would be meaningless. That's why i changed

I was roaming around life, With no particular goal in mind, All i wanted was to live an ordinary life. But that goal was granted long time ago, To be more exact, The moment i set foot on this school.

However, Instead of looking for a new goal, I kept roaming around chasing this life that i already have, I lived for it but i was already living it. I kept lying to myself this whole time, But..... *I was foolish*

I was living for the sake of living, With no goal in mind, While i convinced myself that i have a goal.

However, It's all different now. My life has a meaning, I have my own goals to live and fight for, I have my own source of confidence and character, I have my own identity.

Everyone has their own identity, And i became part of everyone. Instead of being a special case, I started to feel more like a human with superior abilities rather than a 'Perfect Human' or 'Demon' or whatever nicknames they threw at me.

My old self died..... And a new self replaced it.

I am changed

" I'm not afraid of losing to you. Because i never felt fear before " *No fear huh ? Interesting*

Ryueen's source of confidence is that he doesn't feel fear, This what fuels him to keep going and fight. It is certainly unique

Ryueen isn't afraid of losing because it makes him learn and do better. He focuses on winning the war instead of battles

He is gonna keep attacking me over and over until one day, He'll emerge victorious. He is using me to learn and improve himself so he could surpass me, And i am rooting for him, I sincerely hope that would happen.

" I'd like to thoroughly catch up. But the loli would get angry if i held you anymore " Ryueen pointed towards where he came from moments ago " She is right there along with Beer-chan. Good luck Monster, I'm looking forward to crushing you "

" Right, Thank you Ryueen. " I said as i walked towards the corner, Where i spotted Sakayanagi sitting in front of a Chess board with Kumoro standing beside her.

She instantly noticed me and her excited expression turned into a smug. Kumoro glared at me in disgust

" Sorry for keeping you waiting " I started our conversation with an apology

" Fufu I don't mind waiting for you Ayanokouji-kun, As long as you arrive " Sakayanagi accepted my apology. I nodded and took the seat in front of her. She.... pouted ? " Anyway, Shall we start ? " I nodded

I started with pawn e4. Sakayanagi countered with pawn e5 and I immediately pushed the f pawn. Experimenting with the King's gambit.

" By the way, Did you read the book i gave you Ayanokouji-kun ? " Sakayanagi issued a conversation after some moves, But i didn't mind it.

" No " I shook my head

" Why ? That's the book i used in the past 8 years to learn how to play, You could've found something useful in it to defeat me. " Said Sakayanagi smugly

" I don't need such a thing. " I responded, She laughed and continued playing

Both Kanzaki and Kumoro were chatting while spectating our match in a low voice as to not disturb us. While we were engaged in a intense midgame

As expected, It was the correct choice to not hold back against her.

Minutes has passed, I broke into a cold sweat while thinking, Sakayanagi wasn't in a better shape

She is definitely one of the toughest opponents i have ever faced. Objectively speaking, There is a decent chance of me losing here

It was now the end game, Both of our positions are almost identical. It is heading towards a stalemate

" Fufu, I never focused this much on a game of Chess in my entire life " Sakayanagi exclaimed and wiped some sweat off her forehead using her handkerchief. " Lunch break is gonna end in 2 minutes. Do you want to signal this as a draw ? "

Sakayanagi rose her hand for a handshake, I nodded and took it. Signalling our duel as a draw

" Thank you for this little match Ayanokouji-kun. But i promise you that i will defeat you next time " Sakayanagi smugly promised before walking off with Kumoro

Kanzaki and i made our way back towards Class talking about the match. At this point, He wouldn't be surprised if i speak more than 10 languages..... *Little do he know*

We reached the Class Shortly after, And Honami was already inside

" Kiyotaka~! " Honami stood and greeted me, A warm smile

plastered on her face. " How was the food~? Did you enjoy it~? "

" I did. Thank you " I said giving her a kiss on the cheek, I felt it get hotter.

" Kanzaki-kun. Kiyotaka didn't cheat on me Right~? " As i took my seat. Honami asked Kanzaki teasingly. Kanzaki glanced at me, Before facing her

" No. But Sakayanagi tried to flirt with him. " Kanzaki reported. *She flirted with me ? When ?*

" Eh ?! " Honami blurted in shock. She instinctively glanced at me before looking at Kanzaki " Ah~ But you said she 'tried' Right ? So nothing happened.... Right ? "

" No. He was too dense to notice " Honami sighed in relief, As her Aura came back. *Honesly, When did that happen ?*

The sound of the bell blocked my thoughts. Chie-sensei waltzed inside the classroom with material in hand for our first session of afternoon classes

" Settle down guys~ " Chie laid her material on top of the desk. Everyone took their places and prepared for the lesson. Chie-sensei smiled before grabbing a paper and scanned it " Today's lesson isssss..... Ah ! It's your favorite lesson Honami-chan~! "

" My favorite lesson ? " Honami muttered confusingly. Chie-sensei nodded and flashed the both of us with a wide mischievous grin

" Yes Honami-chan~ Today~ We're gonna learn about Sex~! "

3rd Person POV (Disgust Warning)

Inside of a Room that could be mistaken for a Garbage disposal room. Two male students laid on the ground, Between all the filth and nasty smells as they shamelessly fantasized about women body parts while..... Yeah

They both cleaned up, Looking exhausted as they impatiently waited for 6 PM. They would meet one certain girl after she summoned them at the excuse of getting prepared for what's gonna happen

Of course, Their perverted minds instantly came to the conclusion of *doing that*. This is why they couldn't contain their horniness and waited impatiently

" Kanji. It's time " The first guy, Yamauchi Haruki said after

checking the clock.

" Let's go Haruki " The second person, Ike Kanji nodded as they both left the Filthy Room a.k.a Ike's Room

They both set their way, Walking proudly and confidently like they own the damn Campus. The students passing by were disgusted by the mere sight of them

They are knows thorough the school for their Perversion. As a result, Both of them are locked for first place in the list of people who better end up dead. People couldn't choose who's better so they lumped both them there

It is said that those two didn't know and thought that every girl is just playing hard to get. So this meeting Right there is the start of their dominance and era.... Or that's what they think

It was around the meeting time when both of them arrived at the third floor, While loudly fantasizing about their perverted thoughts about one of the best girls in the school

(A/N : Yes. I like Matsushita, That's why i involved her in my story. Everyone can agree that she is one of the best no ?)

However, Contrary to their thoughts. What's gonna happen to them is far from what you would call a bliss

To the surprise of the perverts, One male student emerged. And they instantly recognized him

" Ayanokouji ?!! " Both of them yelled in unison, Surprised and shocked by the presence of their number one enemy in getting Ichinose Honami

" Yes. That's my name " With his hands inside his pockets, Kiyo answered nonchalantly.

" Why are you here ? Where is Chiaki-chan ? " Ike asked... Or more like ordered him to speak.

" Chiaki-chan ? Oh you mean Matsushita ? She's not here "

" WHAT ?! " They blurted in shock at Kiyo's words. " D-Don't screw with us ! Where is she ?! "

" How would i know ? Probably at her Room or Keyaki Mall. Or probably at the toilet, Vomiting because she came in contact with you both. Who knows... " Answered the boy, Provoking both of them. " Anyway, I came to talk with you both "

" Talk with us ?! What the fuck would we talk with you about ?! We came here to talk with Chiaki-chan ! " Yelled Yamauchi, Still not realizing that this was a setup. Kiyo sighed

" Listen here you fucking retards. She won't come because i'm the one who called you here. " Kiyo spoke, Crushing their fantasies of doing it with his monotone voice.

" T-There is no..... Threesome ? " Muttered Yamauchi, Dejectedly.

" Technically Yes. However... " Kiyo spoke, Snapping them out of

their fantasies, As anger flashed through their eyes

" However What ?! WHY DID YOU CALL US HERE ?! TO HAVE A THREESOME WITH YOU ?! "

" Mmmm. You could say that " Before they could respond. Kiyo spoke again " But it's not what's in your mind "

" THEN WHAT IS IT ?! " They both yelled angrily. After getting scammed for an affair, A guy offers a different type of threesome unknown to them. Or that's what they thought

" Hmm. How should i put it ? " Kiyo pondered..... Or pretended to, Before facing them again " How about i show you... "

" SHOW US ?! SHOW US WHA- AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH "

Ike's scream got cut by a very fast Jab aimed at his nose. He instantly fell to the ground, Screaming from pain

" KANJIIIII !!!! "

" Seems like i went too hard " Kiyo sighed as he stared at Ike pathetically. His Punch broke Ike's inner bones permanently

" Grr. YOU BASTARD ! " Yamauchi recklessly rushed at Kiyo and aimed a punch at his face. Kiyo glanced at him and threw a double kick. The first aimed at his arm and the second at his Jaw also breaking it. Yamauchi Realized what happened right after he ate the dirt " AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH "

Two teethes came out as a result of his Fast and Strong kick. His hand was paralyzed and he pathetically laid on the ground

Ike stood up and aimed a punch at Kiyo's abdominal. Kiyo noticed this and he let him hit him. Same as last time, Ike Pathetically cried in pain after hitting it hard, And his hand broke.

However, Unlike last time, Kiyo wasn't satisfied with this only.

He Grabbed Ike by his bangs lifted him to look at his face, Ike's face drained from color as he met Kiyo's. Kiyo snapped Ike out of his thoughts by a strong punch at his solar plexus.

" AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH " While being lifted, Ike screamed. Before he could cough, Kiyo threw him away towards the wall. Staining it as a result of his head hitting hard, Before flopping to the ground unconscious

Kiyo stared at him before focusing on the second person. He was groveling in the ground, Too much in pain to move

Kiyo kicked his face up and grabbed him by his temples and started applying pressure

" AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH " Yamauchi screamed pathetically as he felt that his head was gonna get smashed in any time. He started throwing kicks randomly in the air from pain.

Kiyo released him before crouching in front of him.

" Y-You.... YOU BASTARD ! " Kiyo was impressed that he could insult him in his current state, It made him more amused.

" Y-You ! YOU FUCKING WEAKLING " Yamauchi weakly kicked Kiyo's side. Kiyo didn't even bother to react

" Weakling ? Care to elaborate ? " Kiyo asked, Interested. Yamauchi panted heavily, Before responding

" R-Resorting to violence just because you're stronger than us..... Y-You're so weak.... "

" Pfffftt " Kiyo couldn't help but start laughing, Even for someone like him, This statement was just too funny. " You know Yamauchi. You taught me something interesting today "

" Heh ? "

" Yes Yamauchi. You, Taught me, That braindead humans are actually real. Just when i think you can't get more retarded, You shock me "

" AAAAAAAAAAAAAAH " Kiyo grabbed a hold of his temples again and more applied pressure than before, He went closer to his ears and whispered " Try to harass Honami again, And i'll break your hymen "

" B-But.... It's already Broke- AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH "

He put more pressure on his temples as he yelled pathetically

" Is that clear ? " Kiyo yelled through his screaming, Forcing him to hear " Harass Honami again and you won't get away with some bruises. Is that fucking clear ? "

He nodded while screaming, Kiyo let go of him and stood up. Looking at him as he leaps from pain before i started to walk away

However, That's when he realized that..... Someone was present

Arc 7 Chap 4 : Hirata Yousuke's Dilemma

Honami POV

" I am done with my work KiriYama-senpai, Is there anything more ? " I asked after finishing the batch of papers and tidying them aside. It was around 6:15 PM

" Let's see..... " KiriYama-senpai scrolled through the labors beside him. Moments later he faced me " No, You're done for the day Ichinose-san "

" Thank you " I smiled back and bowed before walking towards the door. " Have a nice evening everyone~ "

" Have a nice evening Ichinose-san. Thank you for your work today " KiriYama-senpai said with a smile, While Katsuragi-kun nodded. Asahina and Mikitani-senpai just ignored me and with that i left

Today had unexpectedly a lot of work since there was two cases for the council to handle. The first one is a phone-theft reported this morning. The weird thing about it was the culprit found a way to hide it from the GPS search of the school which made our investigations much harder. But they cannot hide it forever

The second one was much easier to handle since the report had decisive evidence. Although the report was easy and quick, The process was disgusting

Ike and Yamauchi, The two disgusting perverts were reported for trying to peep on the girls. It was directly reported to KiriYama-senpai, But he refused to disclose the identity of the Reporter for his privacy. However, The Reporter gave some decisive evidence

Ike and Yamauchi aren't just expelled from the ANHS, They are sentenced to prison for at least a year.

Even though i forgave them for trying to harass me and smooth talk their way to my skirt. But i cannot bring myself to forgive them for this, I do not feel any shred of sympathy for them. What they did is unforgivable, They are reaping what they sow

My body only belongs to Kiyotaka and Kiyotaka alone, Trespassing on his territory is a crime i cannot forgive. I forgave them for trying to peep on the girls, But i cannot forgive them for trying to look at my body. *I am selfish*

I slapped both of my cheeks again, To get my head straight. *Okay Honami, There is no need to get worked up over bygones. Look forward,*

You have the rest of the afternoon to spent with Kiyotaka, So don't spoil your mood

I clutched the right pocket of my skirt where my phone was and opened it. I found Kiyotaka's contact and checked his location first, He is inside the Dorms, I instantly got excited and sent him a message as i started humming on my way to the entrance of the school

Just for fun, I decided to check Kiyotaka's health on the App of his ring. He doesn't know it but i linked his ring to my phone too to check his health *I'm not a yandere Girlfriend Okay ? I'm just worried about the well-being of my beloved Boyfriend*

" It seems that Kiyotaka isn't using my Ring Currently " The Ring Status is off, And i got a bit disappointed.

The Ring also has a GPS feature that catches it almost anywhere, Not only in Campus but it can be used across kilometres. Which is somewhat surprising, But Japan is developing on each and everyday

I went back to the chatting up, But Kiyotaka still haven't read my message. I decided to give him some more time

I went towards the entrance and swapped my shoes and set my way towards the dorms, Passing through the beautiful rays of the sunset while admiring them. Moments later i checked my phone again, And Kiyotaka still haven't read my message. *Could it be that he is asleep ? No, This isn't the time he goes to bed. He wasn't tired today either*

I couldn't figure out why Kiyotaka isn't responding, He isn't the type to ignore me. So he must be occupied with something, Or he isn't around his phone.

I started feeling somewhat anxious, But i know that Kiyotaka wouldn't cheat on me. So i brushed it off and walked towards the Dorms

However, As soon as i crossed a corner. I spotted a certain brown haired boy sitting in a bench close to the convenience store, It was Kiyotaka, I was surprised. *So he went to buy some stuff and left his phone, That makes sense*

" Kiy- " However, Before i could call him. I Spotted another male student beside him and i instantly froze.

Normally, I would go and approach them. But my instincts were telling me to not. Following my instincts i hid behind the wall and started spying on them

Kiyo POV

After beating the crap out of the two Retards, I made my way towards the exit.

As i left, I glanced towards the northwest where a batch of bushes lay for a good two seconds, Before ignoring them and walking towards the dorms

I let a deep sigh and started thinking for the next course of actions.

The Retards cannot report me, Since they are no longer students of this school. I might run into some trouble with Amikura for using the evidence back on the Pool to expel them, But i can twist the truth to let Kanzaki vouch for me.

If Honami hears about what I've done, She would be pissed off, And i'd like to avoid that. Even after all what they have done to her, She would forgive them, That's just how she is. Although i don't hate it, But sometimes it goes too far and as her Boyfriend, I should protect her.

I managed to not drag any unnecessary people into my affair, My targets were only the two retards. The evidence also points at Sudo but i managed to lower his penalty to verbal warning. Although he was just as guilty, He is different now. Unlike the other two, My warning affected him back then and he strove to change.

The only problem left is Matsushita. I owe her an explanation for why i let her go though talking with the most disgusting people on campus, Although that question was answered, I owe her another one for why i brutalized them.

My image would be hurt in her eyes, That is normal. But she is smart enough to not jump at any conclusions without proof *Why did he do that ? For what possible reasons he could've hurt them ? Does he hold a grudge ? Is he a sadist ? No, I probably shouldn't jump to conclusions and wait for him to explain* That's probably what's going on inside her head. But i wouldn't offer any explanations to her

She is gonna figure it out herself tomorrow, When she comes to the realization that I'm not as bad as she put me to be, She would bring herself to trust me even more. That's just how humans work

My thoughts were interrupted by a certain male silhouette leaving the convenience store. His usual cheerful aura was no where to be found, As a Gloomy one replaced it. He had a dirty green hair with a very good build, It was Hirata Yousuke.

I haven't seen him in a while, Since his outburst during the results of the sports festival. He cut contact with everyone in the school as he isolated himself, Even from his *'girlfriend'*

" Hello Hirata " In any normal cases, I would just ignore him. However, I meant to talk with him for a while, So this is a opportunity presented in a silver platter

Hirata stopped dead on his tracks and turned around to glance at whoever called to him. Seeing me his eyebrows relaxed a bit

" Hello Ayanokouji-kun " Hirata greeted back, Trying to imitate his usual warm tone and smile, But failed miserably. " Do you need something from me ? "

If i was anybody else, Hirata wouldn't even greet back. However, I am someone that he respects and considers a close friend, Unconsciously that is.

Since Hirata considered everyone as his friends, He doesn't favor anyone above the other, And that's what led to his downfall. However, Since i am someone who helped him many times in the past, He unconsciously considers me at a higher position than a usual 'friend' This is why he couldn't bring himself to ignore me

" Actually, Yes. But i need to get something from the store first, Do you mind if you wait here ? " I said, Aiming towards the store. Hirata looked at it before he shook his head " Good, I'll be Right back "

I walked inside the Store and started scanning it, Before i went and grabbed a bunch of random necessities. I don't actually need anything, This is just a delay that would work as a suspense for Hirata.

If i directly went and said something usual like 'Yes, I need to talk with you' Hirata would think that I'm gonna comfort him, Which leads to him rejecting me just like anybody else. This suspense would create an opening for me to reach his heart, *Even though I'm not gonna comfort him*

I quickly grabbed some chocolate alongside milk and walked outside, Hirata was sitting peacefully on a bench, Close to the entrance. Seeing me, He grabbed his bags and was about to stand up but i put my hand on his shoulder stopping him from moving.

" Don't, Just Relax " He opened his mouth but i cut right through him, I gently pushed him back to the chair and sat beside him. Hirata looked at me in confusion, But i just ignored his gaze and opened my bags, Grabbing a chocolate had 'Mr Breast' Logo in it

and opened it

" So, What did you want to talk with me about Ayanokouji-kun ?

" Hirata noticed that i won't speak asked impatiently. I simply ignored him again and took a bite from my chocolate, *It's actually better than i thought it would* " Ayanokouji-kun, Can you answer me ?

" His voice contained a hint of irritation, He started getting worked up

" Why don't you relax a bit and enjoy the view ? " I said while facing the beautiful sunset, Chocolate in hand " You've been holed up inside your Room for a while now, You could use some change of air. Here "

I split chocolate-chan and gave some to Hirata, He reluctantly grabbed it and looked at the sunset, The cold breeze of the Winter blown, Providing us with some nice fresh air.

However, Hirata wasn't enjoying this as much as i did. I can tell that he didn't reject me because he doesn't want to say anything harsh to me, So i decided to break the silence after a good amount of time

" Why is it such a big deal to you Hirata ? " My question made him look at me in confusion, I switched from the sunset to his face.

" What do you mean Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I'm talking about Classmates Hirata. Why do you value them so much ? " Hirata opened his mouth, But i quickly cut through him " Why would you go as far as to shun yourself like this, Just because they had a fight ? I don't get it "

I said the last sentence in some frustration, But i wasn't feeling any. This little show of desperation in my part would push Hirata into giving me a proper answer, Worth my feelings. Hirata Hung his mouth open, Thinking about a response

" That's just how i am..... My Classmates.... No, I value everyone as much, Even you. You guys are all my friends " Answered Hirata.

" But you still didn't answer my question Hirata " Hirata only rephrased my question.

" I answered it Ayanokouji-kun. Everyone should get along together because we are all frien- "

" You're wrong Hirata. " Hirata's eyes widened, As i continued " Not everyone can get along. There is bound to be some conflict, Especially in this school "

" Yes, I understand that. Bu- "

" No you don't understand anything Hirata. " I cut him again. " Hirata, You think you are everyone's friend. However, In reality, You're everyone's pleaser "

" Pleaser ? Care to explain Ayanokouji-kun ?? " Hirata's tone turned hostile. I considered carefully how to go with this

" You can't keep lying to yourself that you can keep everyone safe and happy, You're not strong enough, Nobody is. Whenever someone is happy, There is someone who is sad " I explained

" I understand that. But still, I- "

" Hirata, To get things straight. You're not strong enough to prevent what happened to your friend, Back a while ago " Hirata's jaw dropped, He was shocked to his spine.

It was a big gamble i took, And it was right on the money. Everyone in Class D has some sort of a defect, So is Hirata.

Abilities wise, He doesn't lack in any field, His communication skills are top notch and he doesn't have personality problems like Kushida, He isn't uncooperative like Horikita and has no apparent flaws.

Despite of that, He was placed in Class D, Despite his superiority, He was lumped with the defects. I came to the conclusion that he was involved in an incident and wasn't able to move on. Of course, I only came to this conclusion after consulting Manabu

Hirata's obsession of making everyone happy came handy in determining which type of incident. He is like a male version of Honami. However, They only differ in one aspect

Hirata goes to great length to ensure the happiness of his classmates, Even Greater Than a natural limit. So it became eye catching

" W-What do you mean Ayanokouji-kun ? " Hirata started shacking, His eyes drained from light. As they became like a dead fish.

" It's exactly as i said, You can't prevent what happened to your friend back then. You can't protect your classmates, As proven during paper shuffle. Because you're too weak " My words were triggering, And Hirata couldn't contain it anymore. He angrily grabbed me by the collar trying to intimidate me, His eyes were full of darkness. But i was unfazed " Not everyone is your friend Hirata. As they say : A friend to all is a friend to none. You better think of everyone as strangers if you think that everyone is your friend. It's foolish, And you know it "

" I know ! I Know ! " Hirata exclaimed, As he hung his head low. " B-But.... I can't.... I don't want it to happen again..... Not again "

" You can't Hirata, Even if you prevent it from happening here. Who's to say that it's not happening in another place ? "

" But I'm not Relate- "

" No, You are related. You are everyone's friend Right ? There is someone outside this school, Or probably even here who is facing the same thing Right now. And what are you gonna do about it ? Just shun yourself ? "

Hirata fell silent, I couldn't see his expression but my words were working on him. His grip loosened, So does his hands.

" Hirata " I called to him in a soft tone, He instinctively rose his head and looked at me. The hostility is no where to be found, As sadness replaced it " Do you wanna talk about it ? About what happened ? "

Hirata stared at me, Contemplating whether to trust me with his secret or not. After a while he nodded slightly, Moving his hand away from my collar

He looked ahead of him, Towards the sunset, Admiring it while reminiscing about his past. His aura turned more and more gloomy.

He hung his head low, Resting it on top of his fist. He took a deep sigh before starting his monologue

However, A presence appeared Right towards the west side and it immediately hid itself. I realized who it was, But decided to ignore it for the time being

Hirata went through the incident it affected him, His darkest secret. The Story of his childhood and best friend that was bullied thorough middle school and how did he ignore it.

The suicide attempt and it's consequences, Hirata's history for using violence, Everything, He went through everything.

I understand the existence named Hirata Yousuke even more now, The guilt of the past is what drove him into his current personality, It is truly fascinating, The variety of types of people, And their different patterns of behavior

" Thank you Ayanokouji-kun " Hirata suddenly said, Snapping me out of my thoughts.

" Hm ? Oh i didn't do anything " I shrugged. Hirata giggled

" Always so modest aren't you ? " Hirata turned towards me and smiled warmly, The warmest I've ever seen " You helped me again Ayanokouji-kun. I honestly can't find the words to show my gratitude "

" Seriously Hirata. I didn't do anything, You were the one who moved on. Not me "

" If you say so " Hirata giggled. Before looking at me " Ayanokouji-kun, Do you mind if i call you by your First name ? "

" First name ? No i don't mind. But any particular reason ? "

" Not Really, It just felt Right. " Hirata giggled again " You can call me Yousuke if you want, Kiyotaka-kun "

" It's a deal Yousuke " Yousuke nodded, With a smile.

Both of us relaxed in a comfortable silence, Admiring the view. The person spying on us is still present, I guess She is waiting for me

" Kiyotaka-kun. Do you think that i'm suited for the leader role ? "

Yousuke broke the silence with a million dollar question

" Currently, Yes. However, I don't think you can lead Class D anymore "

" Yeah. Kushida-san really did dirty to our Class "

" You're aware ? " I exclaimed in surprise. I didn't expect him to be

" Yeah. I was aware of it since the zodiac exam, But i kept lying to myself that it was wrong. I'm so foolish " Hirata hung his head low, I simply patted his shoulder

" You couldn't have done anything Regardless. Class D was bound to fail even before the fight has started " I comforted him. " Even if you come back, I don't think you stand a chance against Kushida. She has the support of Ryueen and her Classmates "

" So you're saying that Class D is already doomed ? "

" Yes. Even Kushida gets taken down, You won't be able to lead them since they are too broken and unmotivated. Besides, I don't think they would be able to survive the after effect of The Realization of Kushida being a Traitor. Many Class D students adore her, I think you can imagine what's gonna happen " I explained to him while he was bitterly smiling at the ground " And if i can be brutally honest. Even if you manage to revive Class D somehow somehow, You aren't capable of defeating the likes of Sakayanagi and Ryueen. They are clearly superior to you "

" You're right. " Yousuke could only sigh in defeat against my perfect arguments " I think the only one who could stand to them was Horikita-san. But with her current state, It is just a pipe dream " *Trust me Yousuke, Even she doesn't have a chance*

" What you've said is also true. " I lied " I'm sorry i can't help you in your current dilemma "

" You don't have to apologize Kiyotaka-kun. Instead, I must apologize for not paying you back for all the help you've provided us. Really " Yousuke sighed " And i don't think you could've helped. The Class's situation is just that unrecoverable "

Yousuke has lost faith in his Class, Yet he is still gonna try and fix it with the best of his capabilities, It would be a valiant effort. However, It is foolish

I came to the conclusion to delay the offer i was gonna give him. Until he loses complete faith in his Class, That's when I'm gonna *move him into my own*

" It seems that i held you up more than i intended. I apologize for that " I apologized.

" No, Don't be Kiyotaka-kun " Yousuke smiled, Before we both stood up " Do you want to walk back to the dorms together ? "

" I would. However, I have to do something first. You go ahead "

Yousuke nodded and bid farewell. Before walking away

I turned towards the west corner and walked towards it

" Sorry to keep you out in the cold " When i was close enough, I spoke apologetically. The person spying on us walked out

" Hmph~ " Honami crossed her arms and pouted " You realized that i was here~ Yet~ You kept me waiting~ You're such an insensitive boyfriend~ " Honami pouted and looked away

" I'm sorry okay ? I was caught up with Yousu- "

" Is Hirata-kun more important than me~? " Honami cut right through me and walked past me. She suddenly stopped and looked back " You're gonna pay dearly for this Kiyotaka~ "

I took a deep sigh before facing her, She ignored me and walked towards the dorms. I followed up behind her and she didn't even spare me a glance. I sighed again

Yare Yare

Hellooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo

Idk but i felt some sudden motivation to write 3 chapters in 3 days. Well, No matter. Let's move to why i summoned you guys here

First, I'm no psychology master. I just went with just how it felt right. So correct me if i did a mistake

I'm conflicted on how to go with Matsushita, So here is a pool for you to vote (Please write only one message)

1. Have her as a boring Character that helps Kiyo (Basically Just Like LN but with more screen time and action)

2. Have a Matsushita vs Honami in seducing Kiyo (It's option 1 but with what the option says. Although you know that Honami is gonna win Regardless, It's just for Comedy sake and to increase the Hornymeter in my fic. No confession to not hurt our friends since she won't chase him seriously)

3. Have them share Kiyo

That last one is a joke, But i want to see how many horny dudes are there.

Cya

Ichinose Honami SS : Bad Girl

A bit lemonade warning (Yeah, You read it)

' You're a great wife '

' You're a great wife '

' You're a great wife '

AAAH

Kiyotaka's words kept reverberating through my head making me flustered

He just called me his wife. It's making me go crazy
AAAAAAAAAAAAAH

Unfair..... So unfair

Why do i always have to be in a mess. Why am i always the one who is blushing and flustered

Hmph~ Unfair.... Unfair Kiyo you're so unfair !

I averted my gaze and walked away from the entrance pouting while being in a mess. I can feel Kiyotaka's gentle gaze behind me

Just so you wait, I'm taking revenge

And here i wanted to offer to wash your back. Hmph~ You're gonna pay Kiyo

I waited for Kiyotaka to enter the Bath and make himself comfortable. When i heard him enter the water i started taking my clothes off

You're going to pay dearly Kiyo, I'm gonna break that poker face of yours and make you flustered, Just like how you made me.

Hornynami, I call for you !

After removing everything, I made my way towards the bath door. It is silent inside, But i can feel Kiyotaka laying inside the bath.

I opened the door and walked inside, Containing all the embarrassment inside of me as i faced Kiyotaka without covering anything

Kiyotaka was relaxing peacefully inside the bath, When he saw me he was caught off guard, His eyes widened and he instinctively shifted inside the bath in surprise.

" Honami, What are you doing here ? " He asked. He managed to keep his usual tone, But i can see it in his eyes, He is panicking

Hehe~ It's working~

I slowly started approaching, Taking one step at the time while

not covering anything, I can feel my face getting hotter and hotter but i ignored it. His eyes darted towards my boobs that were giggling

" Pervert~ " I smirked widely, He instantly averted his eyes towards the water in front of him. I slowly approached him, Enjoying every second of it. When i was within distance i stopped and bent forward to get closer to his face " You're quite cute when you're flustered Kiyo~ " I teased, But i meant it. Kiyo is very cute Right now~ It makes me..... Want to touch him~

I extended my arm and poked his cheeks, It was somewhat hot, This made me grin even more. I traced my finger on his face, Enjoying every single bit of it

My favorite toy, T-Rex, Started getting activated during the process, I instantly started getting more wet *But that can wait for another time*

Satisfied with this reaction, I removed my hand away from his face. I saw his eye balls glance towards me for a second, Or to be more precisely my chest. *So you want them huh ?*

" Ara~ Is Kiyotaka getting excited because of me~? You don't have to hide that you like it~ you Naughty Pervert~ You can surrender to you carnal desires~ and Grab as much as you want you know~ " I teased him. I embraced myself tightly under my chest area, Making my Boobs appear bigger, I bent forward showcasing them to him. " Cmon~ Kiyo~ Grab~ Grab~ "

I bounced twice from excitement, I saw that Kiyo tensed up lightly from the sounds i made. Somehow, I Became more excited

" Kiyoooo~ " I started moaning his name, Craving for his attention. *How can he just ignore a beautiful and hot girl like myself while naked ?* " Mmmmmm~ "

However, While doing this. I couldn't help but be ashamed of myself *Honami, You're such a degenerate. You're a bad girl~*

I blame Kiyotaka for this~ He turned a pure hearted maiden like myself into this bad girl~ It's all your fault Ki~yo~ba~ka~!

Kiyotaka gulped and finally surrendered to me. He examined all of my body with his mesmerizing golden eyes that was filled with light, Almost as if he is looking at a beautiful scenery. *What do you mean ? He is looking at a beautiful scenery*

He extended his arm aimed towards my boobs, I felt excited and hugged myself even tighter. Getting prepared for the Contact

" Eeeeeep~!! "

However, Kiyotaka grabbed me by my waist and pulled me towards him with his strong arms. I fell face flat at the hot water, But his skin protected me from hitting my head.

" Kiyo~ " I instantly rose up and looked at him while and pouted.

Kiyotaka chuckled and looked at me while smiling..... Even by little

Seeing him like this i also smiled back, Before jumping at him and hugging him in a deadlock. He tried to resist but eventually gave up and embraced me back, Cuddling inside the bath while being fully naked

My body was full of warmth, And lust. But i contained the latter and enjoyed every single bit of our moment

However, I don't mind it.....

I don't mind being a bad girl

If it's for him.... Then

I don't mind being a bad girl for you.... Kiyotaka~

Ryueen Kakeru SS : The Promised Day

I Finished my little *chit-chat* with Sakayanagi after bumping into her while scrolling for a book in the library. Hiyori has recommended me a psychological mystery book called....

Found it

I grabbed it and walked back towards the receptionist, Where Hiyori is. However, She was talking with someone, I am awfully familiar with.

" Kukuku Hiyori, That's not something nice to say " I couldn't help but start laughing when i heard Hiyori call the loli a little girl. She started apologizing but i stopped her, Before turning to Monster " You're here Ayanokouji. It's been a while "

" It's been a while indeed Ryueen " That Monster greeted back, With his usual apathetic poker face. I haven't looked at it in a while, And i forgot how much it gives me motivation to destroy it " I was wondering where you disappeared. But i guess.... "

He said that while looking at Hiyori who tilted her head in confusion.

" What's that supposed to mean ? " I instantly felt irritated for what he tried to imply. However, *I cannot deny it*

I started taking a liking to Hiyori for a while now, I'm not sure if this is love but i can at least confirm that i value her highly. I even got influenced by her hobbies of Reading book and tried it for myself, It is unlike me to be influenced by others, But it somewhat felt natural with her

" Nothing " That Monster shook his head, Brushing off his statement. However, I remembered why is he here in the first place. Following this thought i instinctively smirked

" I heard that you've been running around scamming the whole upper years Ayanokouji, I have to say, That is some serious moves you're making. You and that narcissist " *He literally went and made fun of everyone, Provoking them into competing with him*

Many thought that he went Crazy. However, I knew it better than most people that Monster is actually Crazy..... *But not in the same sense*

And just how correct i was, He not only won, But annihilated everyone who stood in his way. He didn't lose, Not even once. *He is truly a fucking monster*

I would be lying if i said i wasn't shocked, But i had a hunch that this would happen.

" What do you mean scam ? My operation is as legit as it gets " He shrugged.

" Kukuku Legit my ass " His operation is actually legit. However, It isn't at the same time. The match was already decided before it even began. " Just when i think you can't get better, You become more and more interesting, And my desire to crush you becomes bigger and bigger "

This Monster, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. Is my number one enemy, And Crushing him is currently the only goal i have in mind.

I painfully admit it, That currently, He is in a different league than i am. Both mentally and physically. However, I do not feel any fear towards him.

What i feel is thrill, Motivation and Anticipation for the day I'm gonna knock some fear into him. He is just like me, Fear doesn't exist within him

We have the next three years to battle, And i am gonna fall countless times. However.....

I'll win eventually, It doesn't matter how many times i fall. I wouldn't allow myself to leave this school before defeating him

I will remove any obstacle that comes in the way of my goal. And in that promised day, I am gonna win

Prepare yourself for that day Ayanokouji, Because in that day, *I took my first victory from you....*

Matsushita Chiaki SS : Interesting Foe

I was sitting inside the Class, Contemplating about the recent chain of news we've received

Chabashira-sensei has announced that Ike and Yamauchi, One of the most disgusting people i came in contact with, Have been expelled for placing cameras inside the girls's changing room.

Obviously, They both desperately tried to deny it and broke into tears. If my memory serves me correctly, I think they are going to jail for at least a year.

Their cries of plea fell in deaf ears, And they both resisted leaving. Soon enough, Some guards came and carried them away. They were yelling their lungs out, Pleading for forgiveness.

All the girls, Me included felt relieved that we don't have to deal with them again. However, They said something that left a bitter taste on my mouth

They talked about somebody betraying the deal they made with him. For most people, It was some nonsense. However, My instinct is leading me towards..... *That person*

No way, Could it be ?

" What's wrong Matsushita-san ? " I let a gasp that was heard by Karuizawa-san.

" No it's nothing Karuizawa-san. " I shook my head with a smile, Karuizawa-san eyed me suspiciously before averting her gaze.

Could it be..... That he beat them up because of this ?

It was yesterday when Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Someone i highly respect, Asked me to call the two sleazebags of the Class for him to the special building. When i asked for a reason he said that he wanted to talk with them

I was curious about it, So i was hiding inside the bushes at that time, Spying on him. But i didn't expect him to literally demolish them like that. I thought that i would go unnoticed but when he was about to leave, He glanced at me. He knew i was there from the beginning

However, I was conflicted. *Why did he do that ? There must be a reason why he mercilessly demolished them, Yeah he must have. I can't jump into conclusions right away, I have to listen to him first*

I sent him a lot of messages that was left on read, He was ignoring me. That's when i started getting frustrated

*But, If it was for this..... Then it would make sense
Could it be that he ignored me just to figure it out myself ? It seems
very likely*

*The fact that he glanced at me at that time, And leaving my messages
on read. Indicates that he is aware of my questions, Yet he didn't cut
contact*

My head perked up, As it felt lighter.

He didn't explain because it would sound like he is making
excuses. He didn't do it out of malicious intents..... Or rather, He
was just angry for what they have done

He indirectly said to me that he was aware of me watching him,
Yet he still did it anyway, Even if i would think badly of him, He
trusted me to figure out the real reason why he did.

I am glad that he isn't the person i thought he was. I somehow
admire him even more now

Ayanokouji-kun is someone that piqued my curiosity, He is way
more capable than what i hope to be, His abilities were even
recognized by Ex-President Horikita who has a very high standards.
And if you hear this then you know that he is someone special

In an ideal world, He would be an ideal husband for me, Since he
far exceeds my standards. But, It is a shame that he has Ichinose-
san, Any outsider can see that their love for each other is pretty
strong to the point it's almost unbreakable. However, If that ever
happens then, *I'm gonna try my shot with him.*

Anyway, After observing him for a few days, I came to the
realization that he isn't someone to make an enemy out of. Much
like his father, He better be at your side or at the bare minimum,
Neutral.

His father is one of the business partners of my parents, I heard
about him from the discussions they have and it seems that my
father is invested in his project

However, I find his father's business Shady at best. I am a curious
child that strives to surpass my parents, And carry their business in
the future. So i was curious about the working environment of my
family

I did my research on the business partners of my family, And as
you've guessed, Only Professor Ayanokouji's information was shady.
In fact, There was little-to-no info at the internet

I tried to ask my parents about it but they always dodge the
question. One time when i confronted them about it they refused to
answer for my safety. That's when i realized that his business is not
legit

I was disappointed in my parents for investing in Shady business.
However, I ignored it nevertheless and focused into getting into this

school instead

I instantly recognized Ayanokouji-kun's name from his father and became curious about him since our early days in this school, When we used to have a cooperative relationship with Class A and hang out from time to time

But a real opportunity presented itself in *that time*. Where i offered to be his spy in exchange of Class Transfer, And he surprisingly accepted

I was ready to lower the price as much as i can, Just to get closer to him. But i came out with the best case scenario

At that time, I succeeded in containing my overflowing excitement, At least in front of him. I am excited on getting to know the existence named Ayanokouji Kiyotaka more, And maybe try and learn from him

' It is nice doing business with you..... Ayanokouji-kun '

Arc 7.5 Chap 1 : What a way to start Winter Break

Finally at long last, Winter Break arrived.

The second semester of our first year in the advanced nurturing high school has come to a close, And today, Is the First day of winter break.

I woke up from my deep slumber at 5 AM, I did my usual morning stretches before hopping in my gym suit and heading for my morning exercises

When i left the lobby, I was met with the gloomy outside. The sky was covered in the bright-grey clouds alongside white particles in the air, Falling towards the ground covering the whole campus in a layer of snow

I jogged my way towards the Gym in the snowy road with my Membership card. I don't have any problems with exercising in the cold, But it would be ideal if i did it in a more suitable environment, It is a luxury i can afford, Since I'm basically swimming in a pool of points

Things at the Stonks Club has died down recently, And understandably so. The only loss the three of us sustained is an arm wrestling match between Kiryuuin and Albert, Other than that, We were flawless

It was within my expectations for people to give up after seeing our performance. However, If you ask me then i'm certainly happy with how things played out. We've gained a lot more private points than i originally thought, *You can't be sad about that can you ?*

I reached the Gym and got the pass from the guard. The inside was almost empty, I only spotted few upperclassmen, But their number didn't surpass 4.

I ignored them and walked towards a treadmill, I set my bottle of water on the holder and started fiddling with the panel. I set it around the usual settings the White Room would set and started my exercise.....

It has been a week since my talk with Yousuke, He is definitely in a better shape now. However, He didn't fully recover, Especially after the two idiots's expulsion

Matsushita informed me that he apologized to the people who

persuaded him, He cemented himself as the leader of the class yet again. However, She told me that she sensed some awkward air between him and Kushida, Which is very impressive coming from her

Yousuke would try to keep his usual attitude towards Kushida to avoid awkwardness in the Class, And i can tell that he is very successful with it. So Matsushita being able to notice the smallest slip-ups or abnormalities is a feat and a half of itself

As things stand now, Both of Kushida and Yousuke are leading Class D. The expulsion of the two idiots did help them bring up their motivation. However, As i stated before, Class D is out of the game for good

The Strong individuals in Class D like Yukimura are fending for themselves, They wouldn't care about Class Competition and try to survive at this school until graduation on their own. *Why should i help when we're bound to lose anyway ? Everyone here is useless, Just.... Why am i placed Here ? I am clearly superior to these defective trash, Just.... Urgh* That's probably what they are thinking. And they aren't completely wrong.

The point being proven is, Class D is useless. *Case closed*

I Decided to brush those thoughts off, And instead, Focus on enjoying the vacation ahead of me.

Thinking about it, Christmas is coming in two days. It is a day where people celebrate and offer gifts to each other, It is also a typical day where Couples tend to spend together, Which means that the whole day is reserved for Honami

(A/N : Yeah, I am clueless when it comes to Christmas since it isn't a thing in my Country. So don't shame me if i say weird stuff)

However, We didn't have any discussions about it. In fact, Honami didn't even try to mention it to me. So it is safe to assume that she already have everything planned, *So I'll leave it to her*

' A Wise choice Boss. I also agree to leave everything to Hornynami '

I quickly shunned the horny monster inside of me, I don't know why but he is appearing more frequently these past few months. I started investigating the source of his awakening, *What could've possibly made him more active ?*

" Kuku, What's the million dollar question Ayanokouji ? " A Voice echoed behind me, Snapping me out of my thoughts. It was the Tyrant leader of Class C, Ryueen Kakeru

" Oh, Hey Ryueen " I Greeted him, He responded with a smirk. Ryueen was topless with a half-wet towel hanging on his neck while carrying a water bottle. I shook my head " It's nothing to be concerned about "

" Nothing to be concerned about ? Monster, Your face changed,

It's obvious that something is bugging you " Ryueen marked.

" Even if there is. You don't expect me to tell you do you ? " As i said this, The Treadmill beeped before stopping. I hopped off and grabbed the bottle of water " It seems that you've worked up quite the sweat "

" Excellent work Sherlock. Good job figuring it out " Ryueen sarcastically said. " Anyway, I meant to talk with you about something "

" Hmm ? "

" You heard about the news right ? "

" News ? Are you talking about what happened to Ike and Yamauchi ? " Ryueen nodded, Still smirking

" Yes, I'm talking about those barbarian oafs. Do you know what they did ? " Asked Ryueen, Rising an eyebrow. However, Something seems off. *He knows that i know, Why is he asking ?*

" If my memory serves me correctly, They were caught placing cameras inside of a changing room Correct ? " I rose an eyebrow. Ryueen smirked " Yeah, What about them ? "

" Don't you know what happened to them other than being caught ? " Asked Ryueen, Emphasizing the last word.

" Something happened to them ? " I Mirrored, Ryueen nodded

" Yes. Their faces were swollen in bruises, Someone had beaten them up quite badly. " Ryueen answered. However, His smirk didn't change " Do you happen to know something about that Monster ? "

" No i don't " I shook my head, Denying it. Ryueen smirked in satisfaction

" Anyway, Sorry for holding you up Monster. I gotta go now " Ryueen said as he took his leave. However, He stopped and faced me behind his back with a serious expression. It wasn't analytical or wary, It conveyed a warning. I simply nodded and he nodded back, Before taking his leave

I went towards the next device and started exercising, While deep in thought

Ryueen wanted to convey a friendly warning with our encounter today, The fact that he didn't openly talk about it means that he couldn't, Which leads me to think that our conversation earlier was recorded.

I would have thought that it was just an attempt from Ryueen to gain an edge on our battle. However, The fact that he made it quite obvious alongside that Warning leads me to another conclusion

The fact that Ryueen didn't do this out of his will means that either he was forced or it was too great to refuse. I completely excluded the Former since the chances of Ryueen doing something forcefully is lower than the IQ of Horikita (*Yeah, 4th wall sorry*)

I completely excluded Asahina, Since the person who Ryueen is 'obeying' Is a big deal, At least for him, Which makes me exclude every single student at this School

So they have arrived huh ?

It is certainly early, However, It was within my expectations. Since *that person* is included in this too.

I couldn't help but let a deep audible sigh.....

What a way to start Winter Vacation

It was around 2 PM when i decided to leave my Room and head towards Keyaki Mall

The Mall was even more crowded than usual, Groups of people were passing by chatting loudly, Enjoying the company of others. However, That's not the Reason I'm here

Since Christmas is closing in, It is typical to gift your friends. So, I decided to go shopping for different gifts for all of my friends

I don't have anything in particular to afford them, There is multiple ranges of stuff to choose from. However, For Honami, I already have something in mind

I walked inside the mall, Passing through multiple store sections Ranging from Perfumes, Clothes, Restaurants.... All of them were crowded.

" Found it " I muttered as i reached my destinations. Not long after, I Came out of the Shop with a green wrapped box. *I'm not sure if it's a good Gift, But it was expensive, And i hope she likes it*

I thought to myself before surfing through the Mall again,

Checking the different types of stores.

I located and took note of some eye catching stuff that would make a good present. While doing that, I felt a tap on my shoulder, I turned around to find....

" Oh, Hello Manabu " It was Horikita Manabu

" Good Afternoon Kiyotaka. How are you doing ? " Manabu Greeted back with a smile.

" I'm doing great. What about you ? " I asked back, I noticed him carrying a white bag that contained some gifts too.

" Doing same as usual. Getting dragged around by Akane and stuff " Manabu said. Before raising an Eyebrow " I'm surprised you're alone. I was getting my strength during this while thinking you were dealing with the same thing "

" Well, Come back in two days and say that again " I marked. Manabu Chuckled. However, *That's when i noticed something weird* " Dealing with the same thing ? Are you talking about Girlfri-

" Sorry to keep you Waiting Manabu-kun~ " A Cheerful voice cut right through my sentence. As Tachibana Akane emerged from the Store, She immediately handed Manabu the bag and clang at his arm " Let's go next~ Manabu-ku- "

She immediately froze when she noticed me, Her red face got even more red as she let go of Manabu's arm

" Ah.. Um.... Ayanokouji-kun ! Good Evening " She greeted me while flustered.

" Good evening Tachibana-senpai. Sorry if i'm interrupting anything " I greeted back and apologized with a bow.

" N-No ! You're not interrupting anything Ayanokouji-kun ! " Tachibana shook her hands in denial. " Anyway, It's been a while since we last met ! Do you want to catch up with Manabu-kun ? " Tachibana exclaimed instinctively, I saw that she didn't actually mean it. So i decided to reject her offer

" No, I hate to interrupt you gu- "

" You're not interrupting anything Kiyotaka. I don't mind if you tag along " Manabu cut right through me, I saw that Tachibana looked at him in surprise. I was about to open my mouth but he added " Or rather, I insist that you come along. I actually have something to tell you "

Seeing Manabu's serious words, Tachibana swallowed hers, She looked at me for my response. But i accepted, Manabu looked satisfied while i gave Tachibana a sorry look, She quickly accepted it and i joined them

" So what did you want to talk with me about ? " I decided to try and keep it short. Or i'd be killed by loli-senpai

" It's about the Club " Manabu's straight answer was firm, Just like

a professional's tone.

" The Club ? What about it ? "

" I've ran into some trouble with the Teachers while leading it, They are requesting to disband us " Manabu answered

" Disband ? Can you elaborate ? " Manabu nodded

" Apparently, Our Club doesn't align with the general rules. They also questioned the legitimacy of the duels and accused us of Fraud and extortion " Manabu let a sigh

" I see. But there was no evidence to their Claims, So it should be fine Right ? " I asked, Unsure. Manabu turned to look at me

" It was fine until a man who claimed to be the Temporary Acting Director appeared " *Hmm... Interesting* " ' If i don't close the Club, It would mean trouble for us ' That's what he said, But in nicer terms "

" I see " I muttered. Before adding " If that's the case then, You can go ahead and close it " Manabu turned towards me

" Are you sure ? You don't have to take his words seriously, There is no evidence to his claims " Manabu asked. I nodded

" I'm sure. Besides, The stuff at the Club had died down. If it avoids us the wrath of the Acting Director then you can do it " Manabu gazed at me for a while, He sighed before nodding. And we continued walking towards the mall

There is no doubt about it, This Acting Director is the person sent by *that man* to get me expelled, He is most likely the same person who tasked Ryueen in finding out some evidence this morning.

This is his first steps in taking me down. However, The Fact that he is using people to make his moves proves that he can't move publicly just yet. And when he does, That's where the real trouble begins

The Stonks Club would've been taken down sooner or later, It's better if i don't leave it as an excuse for him to confront me openly. He would be forced to create excuses or move in the shadows to get rid of me, Which means that.....

Everything is going just like how i predicted.

" Manabu, I have a question "

" Go ahead " Manabu turned towards me and nodded

" How do you feel now that there is a couple of months left for your graduation ? " I asked, My question would come off as rude, But Manabu wouldn't think maliciously about it. He gazed into my eyes before looking at the path ahead of him

" What do i feel huh ? That's certainly a tough question " Manabu exclaimed, Before continuing " If i have to answer, Then I'm having mixed feeling about it. I am happy and proud of what I've accomplished during my stay here, But i am sad that it would come to an end. I am also nervous about what's coming after this "

" Are you aiming for anything in particular ? " At my question, Manabu shook his head

" My Future is uncertain. I just do what is expected from me to do, My parents would choose a path for me to follow " Manabu said. Before adding " However, If i do get to choose. Then i want to be a Lawyer "

" A Lawyer ? Now that's interesting. Any reason for that ? "

" Nothing in particular " Manabu Shrugged. Before turning to face me " Enough about me. What about you Kiyotaka ? How do you feel about the future ? "

How do i feel about the future ?

Only one thing....

" I am feeling..... Horny " I responded

" I am horny too " Manabu Responded

" Hey, Don't leave me out. I am horny as well ! " Responded Tachibana. However, Manabu turned towards her

" Are you feeling Horny about the Future ? "

" Yea~ Because I'm waiting to take on your cock president "

" I see "

(Just ignore this)

How do i feel about the future ?

Am i excited or nervous ?

Would i end up happy ? Or in Despair ?

Would i win against that man ? Or lose ?

It is uncertain. However, I only have one response

" I am..... Waiting in anticipation for it " I said, With a tone full of anticipation and thrill.

Would i win ? Or lose ?

The answer is obvious..... No matter what happens

No matter what comes in front of me

No matter what obstacles they throw at me

I will win.....

Arc 7.5 Chap 2 : First Line of Defense

** Same Day **

After my talk with Manabu, I continued my little shopping trip around Keyaki Mall and afforded gifts for everyone. It was gonna be an enjoyable trip if not for the news he spilled on me

When i returned to my dorms, I clutched my phone and messaged a certain someone. Before dialing a Number, The person took a while to pick-up, After 6 missed Calls

[Hello ?]

" Hello Chairman " I greeted the person on the other side, It was Chairman Sakayanagi.

[Oh, Ayanokouji-kun ! Good evening] The Chairman's tone switched back to his usual warm and professional one and greeted back

" Good evening to you too Chairman. I'm sorry if my call came at a bad time "

[Don't worry about it Ayanokouji-kun, I am busy Right now but it must be very important if you called me repeatedly like that, So what's wrong ?] The Chairman reassured. His voice somewhat made me relieved

" Then i wouldn't take more of your time and cut straight to the chase. Did *that man* do anything ? "

[That man ? You mean Ayanokouji-sensei ?] The Chairman asked, Unsure.

" Yes "

[No he didn't do anything Ayanokouji-kun. Why are you asking that now ?] Seems that the Chairman is clueless. I got kinda disappointed

" I'm asking because you got temporarily excused from your role at this school. Ain't that Right Chairman ? "

[Eh ?] The Chairman blurted in shock, And there was silence after that. *Right on the money* [Wha-.... How did you know Ayanokouji-kun ?] Papayanagi's tone turned normal again

" It's because of the new acting director "

[Tsukishiro-kun ?] I assume that's the new acting director's name [What did he do ?]

I Sighed and filled the Chairman in the current situation, He was listening silently to my explanation.

[I see...] The Chairman muttered [But i think he is just religiously following the Rules. It doesn't mean that he is targeting you Ayanokouji-kun]

" No, I am certain of it Chairman. " I said firmly, Forcing my thoughts into the Chairman. There was a long silence

[Are you certain that it is the case Ayanokouji-kun ?] The Chairman asked, Reluctant.

" I am one hundred percent sure that it is the case " This was the final nail at the coffin. There was more silence

[If you believe that's the case then.... I have no choice but to believe you] He said. Before adding [No, I do believe what you said Ayanokouji-kun. But i just didn't want to believe it]

" Can you tell me what happened ? "

[I cannot disclose any information regarding the school. However, Since It's related to you i think i'm excused]

The Chairman explained his situation, That man used one of his business partners to set a trap for the Chairman and put him in a household until proven innocent. Since the School remained without a manager, They assigned one of the Government staff to manage stuff in his place. *'It happened to be'* Tsukishiro, One of that man's henchmen.

" I see "

[But you don't have to worry Ayanokouji-kun, At least for the next exam.]

" The next exam ? "

[Yes, I still have my position Right now because i was assigned to monitor your next exam. So until then, Tsukishiro won't be able to do anything major]

" I see " That would explain why there was no announcement for this. Everything became clearer now

[After that, It would be up to you Ayanokouji-kun. However, I'm willing to talk with Hoshinomiya and Mashima about this and they can keep close watch for any suspicious movement] The Chairman offered

" You do that. Thank you Chairman " I genuinely thanked him

[It's no problem Ayanokouji-kun. I am happy as long as i can help] The Chairman said.

If it was me at the start of this school, I wouldn't have understood The Chairman's motives. However, I somewhat understand him more now

Of course, I couldn't disclose the possibility of ulterior motives, But i wouldn't care anyway. As long as he wants to help me have my freedom, I wouldn't care about it.

Chairman Sakayanagi and I has set our first line of defense, He is

probably one of my most valuable allies right now. But in the future, I would probably be alone, Fighting against *That man*

Something snapped inside of me, What am i thinking ? I'm not alone, Not anymore.

I have them..... And i have *her*....

I wouldn't involve her in my fight, At least for now. However....

" Thank you again Chairman. However, I'm not so worried about that " After some silence, I decided to speak up again.

[I know Ayanokouji-kun, You're worried about her aren't you ?]
The Chairman spoke my thoughts out loud.

" Yes Chairman "

[With that, I can't help you much Ayanokouji-kun. I hope you understand] The Chairman said apologetically [However, Knowing you, You probably have a plan to save them. If you do then I'm willing to execute it] The Chairman said, Reading my thoughts again.

" I know you won't be able to do anything with what you have now. That man is pretty powerful " I stated " However, I'm willing to offer you a little something that could help "

[A Little something ?] The Chairman mirrored

" Yes, Check your mailbox " I said as i sent him an e-mail with *little something* in it.

[Ayanokouji-kun..... Are you sure ?] After the Chairman seen what I've sent, He asked [This would endanger you and The Wh-]

" Don't worry about it Chairman, I am well aware " I reassured him

[This wouldn't stop him, But it would lead to interrogations and suspicion on him. He wouldn't be able to make moves publicly]
The Chairman said.

That man's influence would come to a hold if that thing reached the Higher ups, And they would keep a close watch on him. Hurting Honami's family would become suicidal, And that man doesn't take pointless risks

[Okay, I'll make sure that this reaches the Higher ups as soon as possible.] The Chairman said.

" Thank you Chairman. "

[No need to thank me again Ayanokouji-kun. I-]

" No need to be humble about it Chairman. Without you, I wouldn't know what would happen, So i owe you a big one " I said.
I heard the Chairman chuckle in the background

[No, I'm pretty sure you would be fine even without me. And don't worry, I'm not doing this out of malicious intents] I felt some chills on my spine. *He saw through it ?*

" I'm sorry for doubting you Chairman. I didn't mea- "

[I understand Ayanokouji-kun. You've become like this because of that place, So it's not your fault] The Chairman reassured, I felt relieved

" I don't want to waste more of your time, So I'll hang up "

[Alright, Enjoy your Winter Break Ayanokouji-kun.]

" Thank you Chairman " With that, The long phone call has come to an end

I instantly laid down the bed, Feeling mentally exhausted after this long talk.

Chairman Sakayanagi knew that this was that man's doing. However, He didn't want to believe it, Our talk was the final nail on the coffin, And now, My battle with that man has started

I have until the next exam to prepare my defenses and up my guard. I already have some powerful allies on my side, Although their reason differ, That isn't my concerns Right now

I managed to save Honami's family, At least for now. That little something, Which is the Recording of my conversation with that man when he came here, Contains deadly information. At best, It would take him down.

The amount of Damage dealt is unknown. However, I hope it's satisfactory enough to not *pull that plan*

My phone vibrated, Revealing a message from the person i messaged earlier. It seems that i have one last meeting to attend for the day

It was past twilight when i left my dorm room towards the Special building, Which means around 5:40 PM

I spent those past hours wasting time on different stuff in my room, Honami and I had a fun talk after inviting me tomorrow to hang out with our classmates, To which i agreed

The outside was more emptier than usual, The mall slowly but surely depopulated as the dark shadows invaded, And now only certain few were left there. One of which noticed my presence and approached me, With her usual smug smile

" Fufufu What a coincidence Ayanokouji-kun " It was the Chairman's daughter, Sakayanagi Arisu

" Hey Sakayanagi " I greeted back. She responded with a smug, Kumoro was just behind her, Looking very tired. " How are you doing ? "

" Fufu that's certainly a hard question to answer don't you think Ayanokouji-kun ? " Seems that The Chairman had already talked with her.

" Yeah, Sorry " I apologized, But she didn't look mad at all.

" Don't be Ayanokouji-kun. I was just teasing you " She chuckled. Before facing me again " Don't worry, I am gonna help you. I can't let my prey get snatched away now can i ? Especially after waiting so long for it " Spoken like a real Predator, She spoke with unwavering confidence.

" Anyway, Care to fill me in what you're doing late at the evening Ayanokouji-kun ? " Sakayanagi curiously asked.... Or more like suspiciously " You're not going to a secret affair with a girl are you ? "

Kumoro yelped in disgust, Sakayanagi was amused by her reaction. Before facing me again for my response

" No, I'm meeting someone, And it's not a girl. " I shook my head. I was about to open my mouth when she cut through me

" Do you mind if i join your little meeting ? "

" No, But why ? "

" Fufu, Who knows.... " Sakayanagi answered Ayanokoujingly. Her smug smile turned into an apathetic expression and faced Kumoro with a monotone voice " You can go now Masumo "

Kumoro was shocked at Sakayanagi's sudden change of personality, I wasn't better. If that's her impression on me then.....
What a boring impression

Kumoro left and soon, Both of me and Sakayanagi walked

towards the special building

" It's ironic that you were gonna reprimand me if i met a girl, But you're not reprimanding me when i'm meeting you " I marked. Sakayanagi started laughing

" Fufufu Well, If it's me then i don't mind "

" Right.... "

Soon both of us reached the Special Building. Where we found the Person i called waiting just by the Entrance

" You know, It's rude to be late when you call someone for a meetings, Especially if that someone is a perfect existence " Kouenji's boastful expression was no where to be found, Instead, There was a serious one. But when he noticed Sakayanagi, It dissipated " But i guess if you came with The Smug loli then, You are excused "

Sakayanagi's eyebrows twitched at his words. Soon, She closed her eyes and smiled bitterly, Trying to contain her anger

" Good afternoon to you Kouenji-kun. You're looking as Narcissistic as ever " Greeted Sakayanagi

" And you're looking as Smugly as ever.... Loli " Sakayanagi rose her cane instinctively, But i held her back so she won't fall. She realized that i just saved her and lowered her can, Kouenji was very amused by this " Anyway, I believe that she is important if you brought her to this little meeting of ours Ayano-boy, Right ? "

" We met by a coincidence, But she is an ally " I clarified, Kouenji smugly nodded and the three of us walked towards the hallways

" Fufu. I sense some interesting stuff, Care to clarify ? " Sakayanagi exclaimed, With a smug smile. " I knew you both were cooperating with each other. But it seems that..... It goes a little deeper than that "

Sakayanagi's intuition was right on the money, We aren't cooperating for sake of cooperating, Or because we are rivals. Kouenji and I exchanged looks, Before i decided to tell her

" Basically, We are both cooperating to protect our freedom at this school " Sakayanagi rose an eyebrow, And her smug grew wider

" Freedom ? Fufu, I believe I'm not following this " I took a deep sigh before facing her

" Basically, We are both Runaways "

*** Flashback * Back before the Sports Festival**

" I'm all ears " After accepting Kouenji's challenge in the upcoming Sports Festival. He decided to add another Condition

" Before i state my condition. I want to ask you a question first Ayanokouji-boy " I rose an eyebrow. Kouenji asked with his unusually serious expression " Has that man, I mean your Father. Came and contacted you to drop out ? "

I managed to not show it in my face, But i was surprised. *How did he know ?*

" Yes. He came " I answered instinctively, I believe lying here would be detrimental, Because Kouenji seems awfully interested in my answer " How did you know ? "

When i asked That, Kouenji's serious expression faded into his usual smug.

" It was just a hunch. Because my father also came and contacted me and asked me to drop out " My eyes widened at his statement. Kouenji continued " Of course, I refused. But i know that he won't stop there "

" So you're saying that you ran away from your home to this school ? " I said, Eyes still wide. Kouenji smirked and nodded " And your father wants you out ? " Kouenji nodded again.

" So What i am implying here is, My situation is similar to yours Ayanokouji-boy. You ran away from *that place* against your Father, And i ran away from my home against my father too. And both of them want us back " Kouenji explained, I couldn't help but start grinning.

" Interesting..... No, Fascinating " I muttered. Enjoying this recent development, Before facing Kouenji " Why are you telling me this ? "

I know exactly what Kouenji's motives are, And he knows that i know. Yet i asked anyway, And he responded anyway

" I'm afraid that both of them would cooperate to get the both of us expelled, I don't know what kind of scheme they would do together. " Kouenji said, Smirking like a mad lad. " So i offer that the both of us cooperate with each other to survive at this school, What do you say ? "

If that man Cooperated with Kouenji's father for the same goal, They would become a much greater force to deal with. Both of them would do their moves efficiently and more quickly

With the support of each other, They would arrive more quickly than i thought. Which means that, Danger is just around the corner

Two sons against both of their fathers, A Chase for freedom. A Story that would most likely end up in a happy ending, If this was a fiction

However, The Both of us can create fiction. We aren't just any characters that succeed because we used the help of others, Nor we are weak.

" Alright. I accept " Kouenji smiled in satisfaction.

" A Wise Choice Ayano-boy. " I looked at Kouenji, And narrowed my eyes

" Is this related to the condition you're adding ? " Kouenji Smirked

" Yes, What i want from you is..... "

*Yow. Just wanted to mark, I added 2 chapters without Honami.
Crazy right ?*

Arc 7.5 Chap 3 : Christmas Date Pt. 1

Honami POV

It was the 25th of December when i woke up from my sleep around 9 AM with a weird pleasant feeling, I got up from my bed and cleaned my room. Before heading outside for my usual morning routine

It's a routine Kiyotaka prepared for me to improve my physical abilities, It is not as tense as his but it is more than enough

Whenever the opportunity arises i exercise with him on the very morning. However, It became more and more rare as the time passes, Which is sad, But can't be helped.

I greeted multiple people i'm acquainted with on my way. And wished me a merry Christmas which i countered with the same

Today is Christmas, Which is the day i'm gonna execute my plans !

Before joining this school, I used to celebrate it with my family and friends. However, I freed all the day for Kiyotaka

This is the source of the pleasant feeling i felt when i woke up. I made a lot of plans for today to spend quality time with him and get to have him for myself for the entire day

It was Yesterday when i informed him about this, But he predicted my move and made sure to free all the day beforehand. I kinda got disappointed since i wanted it to be a surprise, But i was happy nevertheless.

Yesterday, I decided to give my friends the gifts i bought and kept Kiyotaka's, Since today is reserved for the both of us. On a side note, Mako-chan and Shibata-kun are also gonna hang out today, Just the two-of-them. I took this chance to get some vengeance on Mako-chan but it was futile

However, Kiyotaka also gave his gifts yesterday and kept mine. *It seems that we both were thinking of the same thing*

But, I was getting excited at the thought of his gift. *I don't think it would be another necklace, So maybe he's gonna give me a bracelet ? No, I don't think that either. Maybe a hair clip or a beautiful dress. Or perhaps a ring ? Wait a ring ? Is he gonna propose to me ?!!!!*

My face started heating up like crazy out in the cold. *No Honami calm down, We are still at high school. He doesn't need to rush it*

On those thoughts, I finished with my routine and walked back

towards my Room. When i arrived inside, I turned on the shower and prepared for it.

I took off my sweaty suit and dropped it inside the basket, Before taking off my Bra and undies standing completely naked while setting them in the basket. However, As i was done, Something caught my attention in the mirror.

" Did..... My chest just get bigger ? " I muttered while examining it, Confirming it's the case i let a deep sigh.

I am not too dense to realize that my chest is way bigger than what a high school girl's supposed to have. I have been getting a lot of dissatisfied remarks about it from the girls to the point it became annoying

However, I'm not complaining nor i'm thankful. Whether i hate it or love it depends on Kiyotaka's feelings, I don't know why but i couldn't help but wait for his opinion. *I hope he doesn't find them too weird*

When the shower was ready, I pushed those thoughts at the back of my head and turned off the water before going in.

Meanwhile, At another dorm Room :

Did my Member just get bigger ? Sigh, What a pain.

Back at Honami's Room :

I decided to take my time in the bath and thoroughly clean myself for my date later, From head to toes not leaving any single area unchecked.

I was done after an hour or so and put a towel on top of my red clean skin before heading outside. After completely drying myself, I clutched a perfume jar and sprinkled some on top of my bare skin. *Citrus-chan, I need your powers once again !*

I opened the locker and grabbed a set of clothes i prepared yesterday and made myself comfortable, I sprinkled some more on top of them before tidying myself in front of the mirror

Shower : Check

Clothes : Check

Plans : Check

Cuteness : Check

Smile : Check

looks : Check

Condom : Chec- Eh ?

I made sure to look on my best today. Well, I always try and look the best but today i made myself more besty ! *You know what i mean right ?*

Yosh !

Satisfied with my current looks, I left towards the meeting place with 10 minutes left for the scheduled time.

I walked on top of the snowy roads under the Bright-Grey sky as i made my way towards the scheduled meeting place. However, I noticed that the people passing by, Both boys and girls were looking towards me

' Oh my god. She is so beautiful '

' She is so cuuuuute~ '

' Dude, Can you see that ? '

' Yeah, Is she a goddess ? '

Murmurs along these lines could be heard, Boys blushed and girls admired. Being the center of attention is normal for me but I felt strangely uncomfortable.

On the contrary, I was getting excited on meeting Kiyotaka to find out his reaction. His face probably won't change much but when i'm closer to him, I can figure out how he is feeling *with my amazing skills ! Hehe~*

The gazes continued until the sight of the big decorated Tree greeted me when i reached the meeting spot, A lot of people mostly pairs were passing by it, Making the Area somewhat crowded. *Right, Now i need to find him*

However, I noticed something strange. Most of the people passing by were looking towards one direction of the crowd, The girls had hearts in their eyes while the boys were death glaring. *Weird*

I decided to investigate the source of this abnormal behavior, So i moved towards the side, Getting closer and closer to the view. When the view became clearer, I was met with a surprise

A Very handsome looking boy was sitting on a bench, Phone in hand while dozing off at the Bright-grey sky. His silky brown hair was fluttering in cause of the wind, It was none other than Kiyotaka

My heartbeats accelerated as i felt my face heating up, He was wearing an opened blue blazer on top of a white shirt made of cotton that beautifully shaped to fit his muscular front, The pants complimented the color of the blazer with the same color and was covered with his nice black shoes. I instantly recognized this set because i was the one who bought it for him, *Oh my god, I feel like fainting at any moment*

However, I was snapped out of my thoughts when i realized that a lot of girls were setting their sights on Kiyotaka, Staring at him like he was some sort of a prey. Feeling distraught i moved forward on my own and approached Kiyotaka, He noticed my presence and looked at me

" Hello Kiyotaka~ Sorry to keep you waiting~ " I greeted him. However, Kiyotaka didn't respond

With a slightly open mouth, He stared at me while approaching him, His eyes started filling with light and a very faint blush

plastered itself on his cheeks. *Wait... A Blush ?*

I narrowed my eyes examining his expression, And a faint blush was indeed plastered on his face. *Wait..... Kiyotaka is.... Blushing ? Oh my go- ?!!*

My heart skipped a beat at the realization, Before my face heated up blushing furiously. *KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA KİYOTAKA IS BLUSHING !!!!!!!!!*

AA

My head was a complete mess, I buried my tomato face in my hands and it instantly became warm. The Sights of Kiyotaka blushing kept playing in a infinite loop, Burning itself in my memory forever. *KİYOTAKA BLUSHING..... SO CUTE AHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA*

" Err... Honami ? " A Voice called out to me, I moved my finger to look at Kiyotaka with one eye. He wore a confused expression, His blush was sadly no where to be found.

" Ehm~ " Kiyotaka waited for me to calm down, I took a deep sigh and slowly got back to normal. " Sorry for earlier~ I just.... Hehe~ " I laughed awkwardly. Kiyotaka shook his head

" Don't be, It was cute " *Eh ?* " Anyway, Shall we move on ? It's getting rather uncomfortable with the stares "

" Y-Yeah..... " We managed to move on from the gazes and started strolling randomly, During this i managed to calm down and go back to my normal state. I latched into Kiyotaka's arm and started leading him " Right~ This way~! "

It was 11:30 AM, It's still somewhat early for lunch so i dragged Kiyotaka towards the clothes section of Keyaki Mall

" Hmm~ Where should i go first~ " I muttered while scanning through the stores " Right~ Let's go there ! "

(A/N : Listen, I'm no girl. I don't know what goes inside their head while shopping, So just suck it up Okay ?)

I dragged Kiyotaka into one of the big stores, There was multiple students inside who stared at us in our arrival, Same as the shop workers. I ignored them and moved to discover the variety of the clothes inside

" This one looks good " I muttered while looking at one of the shirts in my right hand. " But this one looks good too " I shifted my gaze to my left hand where another shirt laid. I felt like my head was gonna crash down at any second. *Aargh Why can't i just choose one ? Oh, I know what do to*

I turned towards Kiyotaka who was staring at the clothes on my hands, He shifted his gaze to me when i turned around.

" Kiyo~ Who do you think would look better on me~? " I asked him. Before covering my clothes with the first one then the another

in front of him, He narrowed his eyes a bit, Shifting from both of the clothes. *He seems to have a hard time too, I'm glad that he is focusing and not trying to rush me.*

" Hmm~ I don't know " Kiyotaka muttered, Before shifting his gaze to me " Why not buy them both ? "

" Really~? " I perked up. Kiyotaka nodded

" They both look great on you. In fact, Anything would. So it is pretty hard to choose " Kiyotaka explained, Complimenting me. I blushed lightly

" Okay~ If you say so~ " I said as i hung them up on my arm. Before flashing him with a mischievous grin " But you're going to pay you know that Right~? "

" Why ? " Kiyotaka asked in a furrowed brow, A Hint of surprise in his voice.

" Why not~? Didn't you win a lot of money from your Club~? Don't i deserve to be treated~? " I asked raising my eyebrow. Kiyotaka gazed at me before sighing in defeat

" Fine. But don't go overboard "

" Yippie~ " I exclaimed before continuing our shopping. I didn't leave Kiyotaka on the dust and managed to get for him some nice new clothes as well, I have to say, Anything looks good on him too.

" Thank you for your business, Please come again ! " Our total came around 5000 Points that was paid by Kiyotaka, The Store clerk handed us our bags and bid farewell.

" Right~ I need some new underwear~ " I exclaimed while scanning the stores again.

" Underwear ? Don't you alr- "

" Spotted~ This way~ " I said as i dragged Kiyotaka regardless of his protests towards a female clothing section. *This is gonna be fun hehe~*

Kiyo POV

" What is this strange pressure ? "

" I don't know " I responded to Shibata's sweaty mutters as we both stared at the two changing rooms.

We were both sitting in the middle of a female underwear store

sweating buckets while waiting for both of our dates to get out of the changing Rooms. We were constantly under the pressure of what's gonna happen next and all the gazes of the females inside the store

We felt like we were intruders, And Rightfully so. This is definitely not our place to be. However, Here we are, Suffering under the discomfort and the pressure of all the lustful female gazes

They were staring at us like we were a delicious meal, Shibata's innocent looks makes him attractive towards the other sex, But that doesn't mean he's bad looking. I am not sure about myself but the both of us were subject to this situation

Long story short, When Honami dragged me inside, We met Shibata and Amikura. And you can pretty much guess what happened after that

" Tada~ " Both of the curtains moved, Revealing two beautiful girls on their underwear. A small wall of underwear stands were blocking each side, as Honami's blue was facing off right in front of me.

" What do you think Kiyotaka~ " Honami walked closer to me while keeping a close watch on my face, She stopped when her chest was few millimetres away with a wide lustful grin. However, I noticed something, But i brushed it off

Shibata was dealing with the same situation. However, contrary to him, I was closely fixated on Honami.

" It looks wonderful on you, It fits your beautiful figure pretty well " I managed to muster those word out of my mouth without being creepy. Honami blushed

" Is that so~? Then I'll take this~ " Honami said before examining my face once more and pouted, Before turning around to the changing room.

" Cmon Sou-kun~ Don't be shy. Why don't you learn from Ayanokouji-kun and tell me a proper compliment ? " Grumbled Amikura while Shibata was averting his gaze. " He is the King of the boys Right~? Why don't you learn from him ? "

" Learn from..... King ? "

" Yes Sou-kun. Learn from your King, The King of the boys, The manliest, The Ultimate Sigma Male. " Amikura threw different nicknames at me, encouraging him. Shibata finally mustered up the courage and looked at her, His previous nervousness was no where to be found, Even Amikura got surprised by this change.

" Ah~ Kiyotaka~! " However, Honami called out to me from inside the changing room " Kiyotaka~? Are you here~? "

" Yes i am " I responded when i was closer to the curtains. Missing what Shibata said, However, I heard Amikura's flustered noises on

the background. *Way to go Shibata !*

" Umm~ Can you help me with something~? " Honami asked from behind the curtains with a troubled tone. *Sigh, Why do i have a bad feeling about this ?*

" Is there something wrong ? "

" Yes~ Umm~ My Bra is stuck~ " Honami said. Before continuing " Do you mind if you help me with it~? "

" You can't take it off on your own ? " I know it's obvious, But i wanted to avoid this as much as i can.

" No i can't~ " I sighed. Seems like there is no way out of this one.

" I'm coming in " Making sure that nobody noticed, I swiftly moved inside the Changing Room.

Honami's half-naked figure was standing right in front of me inside the small changing room. The distance between us was too short that i felt her bra barely touch my chest, Honami got nervous and froze on her place, Staring at me with her Red Face

" Can you turn around ? " Honami nodded and turned her back to me. Her bra was surprisingly.... Stuck. *I honestly thought she did it on purpose*

" Mmmgh~ " Honami moaned as i forcefully released her Bra, Her Chest fluttered as the Bra fell to the ground. " Thank you Kiyotaka~ "

" You're welco- " Before i could finish my sentence, Honami swiftly turned around and caught my lips in a kiss. Just as i was about to reciprocate, She broke it off and pushed me out of the changing room

" What a Pervert~ " Honami teased me from the other side of the curtains.

I took a glance around me to notice that almost everyone was looking at me. I took a deep good old sigh

Good Job Honami

Yow~ I hope you enjoyed this Chapter. I am somewhat

motivated to move forward in this story, So i am producing quite a lot

Anyway, Would you look at this ?

F##K I'm C#M.

Idk how to show my gratitude without sounding cringe but i am extremely happy with this that when i wake up i check it for a good day

Thank you for reading this story of mine up until now, And for commenting because comments warms my heart somehow and i always look for them

Anyway, Do you guys want another Lemon ? This time i'll pour all of the horniness I've been bottling in Ramadan in it.

And yeah. We don't talk about Chabashira's tapeJ here. For two reasons :

First, I wouldn't give a single F for canon

Second, It's garbage. I mean, How can a teacher help in a student event ?

That's just one question i have, Anyway i held you for very long

Cya~

Arc 7.5 Chap 4 : Christmas Date Pt. 2

Honami POV

After the events of the clothing store, We parted ways with Makochan and Shibata-kun to continue each of our dates

I was feeling ashamed of myself for what i did, After i kissed Kiyotaka and pushed him outside the changing room, The workers scolded him harshly. He was gonna get reported if i didn't intervene

Honestly, It's my fault for not being able to hold back. You can't get horny outside where a lot of people are present !

Amidst all of this, I felt a gentle and warm touch on my bangs, I instinctively perked up and looked towards the source

" Don't worry about it Honami. It's over now " I was about to protest but Kiyotaka's head pats were too strong to resist, So i gave up on the spot.

Luckily, Nothing happened ! I can't allow my mood spoil our date, Let bygones to be bygones they say ! Right~

I strengthened myself with the help of Kiyotaka's head pats, Seeing this he gave me a satisfied expression before removing his hand. I felt a bit down so i latched into his strong arm. *Right~ Commence phase 2 !*

" Right~ Where do you want to go Kiyo~ ? " I asked enthusiastically. Kiyotaka looked at me, somewhat confused

" I thought you already planned everything ? "

" I did. But i wanted to ask for your opinion first~ " I responded to his statement with a smile.

" You don't have to " Kiyotaka shook his head. Before continuing " Wherever you want to go i'll gladly follow "

" Are you sure ? " I asked. I wanted to see if Kiyotaka wanted to go somewhere first before continuing my plan. However, He nodded

" You spent days planning for this day Right ? This is the least i could do " Kiyotaka expressed. Before patting my head " Lead the way, Boss "

" Hehe~ " I chuckled a bit, Before breaking eye contact and faced forward " Alright Soldier~ We have to eat lunch to prepare for the battle up ahead~ This way~ "

" Yes sir " Kiyotaka complied and we both moved towards the restaurants, Engaging in some fun role-play. Kiyotaka's childish side

is very fun, Since he is always calm and stuff. *It makes it cute~*

We reached a 4-star Restaurant and secured a table for two with the help of the waiter. However, I grabbed one of the chairs that were opposing each other and placed it beside Kiyotaka and sat, He didn't mind it and grabbed the menu setting it on top of the table for both of us to see

The menu was large with different types of categories, Drinks, Deserts. Each one of those lists were various dishes from different cuisines, As expected from a fancy Restaurant. However, Despite being a lot of choices to choose from, Both of us set our sights on one single dish

" Should we order it ? " Kiyotaka asked. I simply nodded

" It's somewhat expensive. But don't worry, I'll pay this time~ " I exclaimed. Kiyotaka glanced at me

" Are you sure ? i can stil- "

" Don't worry Kiyo~ Just think of this as a compensation for what i did earlier " I cut through him. He took a good look on me before nodding

" Alright if you say so " Kiyotaka said before calling the waiter. " Can we have one Couple's Pizza alongside one large blueberry soft-drink please ? "

" Right away sir " The Waiter scribbled in his paper before voicing out. " Anything else ? "

" No thank you " Kiyotaka denied and the waiter nodded and provided us a bottle of water with two cups before telling us to wait for 20 minutes and departing

" By the way Kiyotaka~ Why did you get a large drink instead of two medium ones~? " I asked the million dollar question, A mischievous grin started taking shape on my face

" Because it's cheaper " Kiyotaka shrugged. However, *I wasn't ready to let go*

" But the difference is only 199 Points~ And since we have a lot of points, It isn't a big deal~ " I marked, Before grinning even more at him and spoke in a teasing tone " Did Kiyotaka~ Perhaps wanted to taste me so badly~? There was no need to go this far~ You could've only asked you know~ "

" No... Well, Not really. But you can say it's one of the reasons " Kiyotaka shifted his gaze to me with a thin smile. I grinned even wider

" You're such a naughty little boy Kiyo~ " I teased in a lewd tone.

" You mean i'm being naughty for you ? " Kiyotaka asked, Raising his eyebrows.

" And cheeky~ " I said. Putting my index finger on the side of my lips and lowering my head, Looking at him with a wide lustful grin

" But who's to say..... I'm not naughty for you as well~? " I said the last part in a lewd tone

" I already know that " I pouted. Kiyotaka chuckled a little, Before gently scratching my bangs.

Our antics kept going on while we chatted about trivial stuff between now and then. After around 15 minutes, The Waiter arrived and set a large plate on the table alongside a large sized blue smoothie

" There you go sir and madame. Enjoy your meal " The Waiter said before departing

What can i say ? The Pizza looks very appetizing. A Big heart made of pepperoni took shape inside the circulated pizza amidst the sea of cheese, The rest of the space was filled with a mixture of chicken and sea fruits. Bordering this up, Is a puffed golden crust with some leaked cheese from the inside, Making the pizza look more mouth-watering

Kiyotaka grabbed a pizza cutter wheel and swiftly cut it in half, Sliding it across the borders running through the toppings and the heart cutting it in half. He repeated the same process 3 times cutting the pizza into 8 pieces

I simply stared at him with a watering mouth, When he was done he grabbed a slice and pulled it up, Stretching the cheese before it got cut after 30 centimetres. He set it on a plate and gave it to me

" Thank you~ " I thanked him, He nodded and pulled one for him as well. " Right~ Let's dig in~ "

I waited for him to finish and we both took our first bite, The pizza was still hot since it came from the oven a few minutes ago. The cheese beautifully complimented the mixture of the meats, There were marinated in black pepper, Salt and Paprika which improved the taste even more.

" This is pretty good " Kiyotaka expressed, Looking impressed. *It seems that he didn't have high expectations for this one*

" Yep~ Definitely worth the money " I voice in approval. We finished the first slice and took the second. However, I pulled it closer to Kiyotaka's face " Say Aaah~ "

" Aah " Kiyotaka opened his mouth as i fed him. However, I pushed it a little too much out of excitement and he choked " *Cough Cough Cough* "

" Kiyo~ I'm so sorry are you okay ? " Kiyotaka after he swallowed the slice coughed to clear his throat, He took a sip from the Blueberry smoothie and calmed down.

" Don't worry i'm okay " Kiyotaka reassured. I sighed in relief " That was dangerous Honami. The Slice was still hot "

" I'm sorry~! " I bowed to him apologetically. He patted my head

" It's fine " Kiyotaka grabbed his slice and moved it towards my mouth " Your turn now "

" Aaah~ " I munched into the slice Kiyotaka fed me. Somehow, It was more delicious " Yummy~ "

Kiyotaka watched me enjoying my food with a thin gentle smile. After that, I grabbed another slice and fed Kiyotaka, And he did the same Regardless of the stares we're getting. And before we knew it, The Pizza disappeared.

" Aww~ I wanted more~ " I pouted. Kiyotaka furrowed his brows at me in confusion

" Aren't you already full ? " He questioned me with a hint of surprise

" Not that Dummy~ " I lightly chopped his head. " I wanted to feed you more~ Since you were so cute~ "

" I see " Kiyotaka muttered in understanding, Before he glanced towards the Blueberry drink, But he immediately dismissed the thought. Aww~

We shared the large drink before the waiter came and collected our dishes, Right by the door the Cashier presented us the ID Scanner, I was about to clutch my ID However, Kiyotaka presented his and the Cashier confirmed the transaction.

" I thought we agreed that I'd pay~ " I issued the conversation right after we left the restaurant.

" Who told you to trust me ? " Kiyotaka faced me with a smug, I pouted. " Anyway, What's next ? " He spoke with a tone full of anticipation. I smiled at him and nodded in approval

" Right~ Since we just ate we need to wait for our body to stomach the food Right~? " I asked Kiyotaka waiting for his response. He nodded, Giving me the signal to continue " Then Let's go and watch a movie~! "

With that, The both of us made our way towards the theater, Engaging in some small talk. We arrived at our destination around 5 minutes later and walked towards a Touchable TV where all the lists of the genres were present

" So Kiyotaka~ What do you think we should watch~? " I asked him without taking my eyes off the TV. *I don't exactly know his tastes, But there is no harm in asking~*

" Hmm " Kiyotaka was deep in thought looking at the TV. Moments later his eyebrows relaxed a bit " Do you mind if we watch Anime ? "

" Anime~? " I reflected in surprise. Kiyotaka nodded

" I've never got the chance to watch it before " *Oh right...* Kiyotaka said while pointing out towards a movie " And there is this one called ' Death Note ' That looks pretty interesting. It's coming

right up next, So i think this is a good opportunity "

Death Note, A Psychological Mystery themed anime that spread like a wildfire on it's release, Even now after a decade it's popularity still haven't died down because of it's positive reviews.

" Of course, If that is okay with yo- "

" I-It's okay~! I don't mind~ " I cut through him, Feeling a bit uncomfortable. However, I steeled my resolve. *It's his first time, So don't deprive him from it Honami ! Even if...*

" Is there something wrong Honami ? " Kiyotaka noticed my discomfort asked. He glanced at the Screen " If this anime is not to your liking then we can work to find another "

" No that's not it.... " I muttered. Kiyotaka turned his attention to me and i continued " I just heard that.... The MC in this Anime is very cold and ruthless. He wouldn't hesitate to kill anyone that stands on his way, Or sacrifices anyone if it means achieving his goal "

" I see.. " Kiyotaka muttered, Before walking closer to me before caressing my cheeks, Easing my anxieties. " If so then we can look for another "

" No... " I refused. Kiyotaka was surprised, I looked up to him " You said it was appealing right ? I don't want to deprive you from your satisfaction because of myself "

" But- "

" No Buts Kiyotaka~ " I cut through him, Cheering myself on. " I don't mind watching it with you~ However, You gotta protect me if something bad happens~ " Kiyotaka let go of my cheeks and smiled at me, As if he was proud of my development.

" Okay, But no promises ! "

" Hey~ " I punched him in his arm, He let a chuckle. I chuckled as well. However, Before i could open my mouth

" Oh ? Kiyotaka-kun ! " A Pair walked inside the Theater and instantly spotted us. It was Hirata-kun, Alongside Karuizawa-san " Oh and Ichinose-san too. Good Afternoon "

Hirata-kun arrived in front of us and bowed a little, Karuizawa-san hugged his arm more tightly while looking at me, As if claiming her territory. *Don't worry Karuizawa-san, I'm not interested in small fries. I already have everything~*

" Good afternoon Hirata-kun, And Karuizawa-san " I greeted them back with a smile. " So how are you guys doing ? Are you guys on a date as well~? "

" We are doing fine thank you so much for asking ! " Hirata-kun was about to answer but Karuizawa-san spoke instead, In a somewhat irritated tone. " And yes, We are on a date "

" I see.... " I responded, However, My answer seems to make

Karuizawa-san more angry

" If you see it then why did you ask us ?! What are you Trying to pull her- "

" Karuizawa-san, There is no need to be hostile " Hirata-kun's Remark sharply cut through Karuizawa-san's words

" B-But Hirata-kun ! They are our e-enem- "

" Kiyotaka-kun isn't our enemy ! " Karuizawa-san was taken aback from Hirata-kun strong words " Remember, They helped us many times in the past and we failed to repay them. We are to blame, Not them "

Hirata-kun spoke strongly, Making Karuizawa-san baffled, She had no option but to stay silent. Hirata-kun turned towards us with a serious expression

" I'm sorry for what she said earlier Kiyotaka-kun, Ichinose-san. She didn't mean anything of it " Hirata-kun bowed in front of us apologetically. I Felt Karuizawa-san's blood boiling, But she sucked it up

" There is no need to apologize Yousuke, We weren't offended in the slightest " Kiyotaka spoke in reassurance, Hirata-kun rose his head and showered us with a warm smile " Let's forget about that and focus on not spoiling our dates. After all, This is a Vacation, Am i Right ? "

" Yeah, You're Right. Do you think so too Karuizawa-san ? " Hirata-kun voiced his agreement and turned towards Karuizawa-san who meekly nodded. " Great ! "

After this, Students came out from the theater looking very upset, It seems that the ending wasn't to their liking.

The four of us bought the same tickets for the next film and entered inside the dark theater, There was some workers close to the screen doing some tidying. Kiyotaka and I took our seats and waited, Hirata-kun was standing beside Kiyotaka and Karuizawa-san on our Right.

From their interactions, I can tell that Hirata-kun thinks very highly of Kiyotaka, Even more than before. It probably has to do with something from their talk near the convenience store

Since the Sports Festival, Hirata-kun was feeling down, Many of his Classmates tried to reach out to him but he rejected every one of them and shunned himself. It continued on and on and slowly but surely, They started giving up on him

However, On one day, He miraculously was back and reclaimed his usual cheerfulness and brightness and re-cemented himself as a central figure on his Class again. Many people were surprised, But they were thankful regardless.

Speculations flew around about the reason of his revival, And

many thought that it was Karuizawa-san's doing. But i knew that it wasn't hers, *It was Kiyotaka's*

However, One thing stroke me as odd was that Karuizawa-san didn't do anything during those difficult times. I know that Hirata-kun kept pushing people away but it shouldn't be the same with her, Even if he did, She should've persisted on saving him even if it endangered their relationship, Because that's her job as his other half. Yet, *She wasn't even affected by it*

I happened to come across her multiple times during that time, And she looked completely normal, She was loudly chatting with her friends while having the same gyaru aura. You may argue that it was a facade but..... *It was too good to be*

Her facade was too good for someone who's lover is suffering, Someone who is broken and depressed. Seeing her made me feel like.... *She abandoned him*

It made me shudder at the thought of that. *How can someone abandon their lover so easily ? No, How can they abandon them in the first place ? I would never abandon Kiyotaka, Not in a million years.*

They may not share the same bond as we do, But she should've at least cared about him. Luckily, They seem to be back now. *But my respect for her plummeted, It was good that Kiyotaka was there to help*

I hate to say that word, But Kiyotaka isn't the same *Monster* he paints himself to be, Or what he used to be. It was the The White Room's fault for making him like that. In reality, He is very kind and thoughtful, And cares for his friends deeply.

I am very happy to see him change, He started expressing more emotions and smiling more often, His real personality started taking shape, He is slowly but surely turning more human. *I am so proud of him*

It warms my heart when i think that I'm getting closer and closer to grating my wish. That is fixing him with my own hands, It makes me extremely happy. *I'm Glad~*

I instinctively exhaled in happiness and squeezed my hands, A Counter squeeze came from Kiyotaka's as he looked at me with a warm smile, I responded with my own as i started feeling dizzy from those warm feelings.

Soon, The Lights turned dim and the projector lit the wide screen announcing the Start of the show.

Important note : This version of the movie contains scenes from Episodes 1-12 of the Original Anime.

We were firstly greeted by a note, Before the scene switched to a high school.

*** Timeskip * End of ep 12 (After 2.5 Hours)**

To be Continued

At that note, The Projector turned off signalling the end of an intense movie. All of us stood up and moved outside, We parted ways with Hirata-kun and Karuizawa-san, And soon we were outside.

" Man that was intense~ " I said while Stretching after the long sit. " It wasn't as bad as i thought. What do you think Kiyotaka~ "

" The anime is old but the graphics aren't too bad, The plot is pretty solid, As well as the ideas around it, The Characters are good. Pretty good so far " Kiyotaka voiced his satisfaction. " The most interesting guy is that L person "

" Yeah~ He is pretty smart isn't he ? " I said. Before we started strolling randomly talking about the film " I mean the way he located Yagami-kun and outplayed him, He was moving at the palms of his hand~ "

" I liked the way he approached stuff and moved, He even considered supernatural powers in his investigations even though it's incomprehensible. It is commendable " Kiyotaka complimented. " However, What he did isn't something special. Light was very careless and naive, He could've avoided this situation in the first place if he didn't fall into the obvious trap in the beginning "

" I agree~ If he handled it wisely, He could've avoided all the trouble " I Agreed. " But it's still a close game, I Think i'm gonna keep watching the rest of the episodes "

" No, It's not a close game " I looked at Kiyotaka in surprise. " L already knows that Light is Kira "

" How ? "

" Remember when he was talking to himself and he said that he'll be luring Kira into joining the investigations around episode 6 ? " I tried to recall then, Then it clicked to me. " And Light did just that "

" I see..... " I turned towards Kiyotaka " I'm surprised you noticed it. It was for a small moment "

" Well it just happened to cross my mind. " Kiyotaka shrugged. I Giggled, Before asking him the million dollar question

" Now tell me you smart cookie~ Do you think you're smarter than L~? " Kiyo looked at me, Peering deep into my eyes.

" Obviously. He doesn't stand a chance against me " Kiyotaka's words echoed though my head, The fact that he said it like he was stating facts, Without a hint of arrogance. *Is pretty cool* " Or are you doubting my abilities Honami ? "

" N-No ! I never did ! " I Denied, Shaking my head while flustered. " I knew you were smarter~ But i just decided to ask to tease you~ "

" Don't worry, I believe you. " Kiyotaka said before patting my head with a smile. I instantly perked up " Now that my body has

stomached the meal, Where are we gonna head next ? "

Kiyotaka awaited for my response, I cleared my throat, Building the suspense. Before opening my mouth

" Let's go Snow skating~ "

Arc 7.5 Chap 5 : Christmas Date Pt. 3

Honami POV

After the events of the Theater room, We parted ways with Hirata-kun and Karuizawa-san to go and continue each one of our dates.

Currently, Me and Kiyotaka are walking towards the Seasonal Arena engaging in a fun banter. As the name suggests, It is an Arena where they host different types of games on each season, One of which was skating

I've seen some TV scenes about it, And it looked very fun. But i never got to try it, So this would be a new experience to me. I didn't want to ask but i'm sure that it is for Kiyotaka too.

Since Kiyotaka was raised in The White Room, It is safe to say that his childhood is ruined. He never got the chance to enjoy it and experience what normal children do, He was deprived from his freedom and was forced to live in that dreadful hell

I shook my head, Brushing those thoughts off my mind. *It is my job as his beloved one to make him experience all what he missed and make him happy, He can forget the past and live in the present where he can enjoy himself. I am super happy that he is having fun with me on this date~ So i shouldn't spoil it*

We kept conversing our way towards the Arena, And soon enough, The building structure came to light. We walked past the guards towards the reception desk where the receptionist greeted us

We paid two tickets for skating and we headed towards the changing rooms, Where our uniforms lay. I had to part ways temporarily with Kiyotaka before i went inside, I grabbed one of the suits as well as the boots and started wearing them

" Oh~? Ichinose-san ! " Midway through the process, A Very unsettling voice called out to me from the entrance " What a coincidence ! "

" Hello Kushida-san " I nodded at her while keeping my usual smile. She was smiling brightly inside her suit, Soon her companions emerged " Oh, Onodera-san, Inogashira-san, Sato-san and Matsushita-san too~ Good evening ! "

" Good evening to you too Ichinose-san " Matsushita-san greeted me back with a smile.

" Did you come here to skate as well Ichinose-san~? " Kushida

curiously asked me. I simply nodded with a smile " I am surprised that you came alone Ichinose-san, Normally you would be around one of your female friends. Or did you perhaps come with Ayanokouji-kun~? " Kushida's smile widened as she spoke the last part with a hint of excitement. *You can't let her get to you Honami, She is a venomous snake, It would come to bite you if you retaliate on her statement*

" Yes~ I came here on a date with Kiyotaka~ " I responded happily. However, I noticed Sato-san flinch when Kushida mentioned Kiyotaka's name, I instinctively looked at her and she averted her gaze with a taint of red on her cheeks. Kushida and Matsushita-san noticed my gaze and looked towards Sato-san

" I see~ " Muttered Kushida after turning to face me. She was about to open her mouth when Matsushita-san spoke

" Girls, She is in the middle of changing, I don't think we should keep her like this for long "

" You're right Matsushita-san~ Sorry for keeping you hanging Ichinose-san, We'll wait for you outside~ "

" But Kushida-san. She is on a dat- "

" Cya Ichinose-san ! " Kushida cut through Matsushita-san's words and swiftly left the changing room. The girls looked at her back and glanced at me, Before following her outside. I unconsciously quickened my pace, While deep in thought

I don't know what Kushida is plotting, But one thing for sure is that it is nothing but trouble.

Kiyotaka told me that she is trying to seduce him so he could fight Horikita-san. However, Since Horikita-san now is already broken, Why is she still after him ? Is she deliberately trying to destroy our relationship just for fun ? Or is she trying to acquire him as her pawn ?

Well, In either case, She should know that her efforts are futile. Kiyotaka isn't stupid, Like the perverts in her Class, She cannot control him the same way she controls them. Only i can control him that way Hehe~

After managing my suit i grabbed the pair of boots and walked outside. To my surprise, Kushida wasn't there. I walked towards the entrance where i was greeted with the loud noises and cheers of the students having fun inside the spacious Rectangle ice-floored arena.

Multiple students engaged in different types of activities inside, Ranging from normal skating to playing hockey. There was enough space for these and even more

I spotted Kiyotaka inside his black suit approaching me on my right with his boots in hand. As always, I stared at his muscular body admiring it from head to toe, He was looking as handsome as ever.

" Heyo Kiyo~ " I greeted him with a wave while approaching him, He waved back. " Sorry if i kept you waiting for long "

" You didn't, I just got out myself " Kiyo Responded in reassurance. Before his eyes darted towards my suit " Are you okay inside that ? It looks pretty tight "

" I'm okay~! Don't worry~ " I shook my hands in reassurance. " More importantly, Do yo- "

" Ichinose-san ! Ayanokouji-kun ! " A Sweet voice called out to us from the field, Cutting through my sentence, It was Kushida. She approached the both of us with a hockey baton in hand " How are you guys doing~? " *Didn't she just speak with me earlier ? Why is she going through greetings ?*

" We're fine, What about you Kushida ? "

" I'm doing great thank you so much for asking~! " Kushida exclaimed enthusiastically after Kiyotaka's greeting. She opened her eyes and looked at both of us " Do you guys want to join us ? We are gonna hold a hockey match~! " Kushida invited us with puppy eyes, Making it hard for us to refuse.

" We are sorry Kushida-san. But this is our first time skating " I refused, Politely. Kiyotaka nodded " So we should get a better grasp of it first~ Maybe later~ "

" Oh~ Really~? " When we nodded, Kushida's shoulders slumped in disappointment. Before her eyebrows went wide, As if a sudden idea crossed her head. " If that's the case~ How about i help you guys Practice~? "

" Help us practice ? " Kushida nodded enthusiastically

" Since it's your first time, It would be better if you have someone who knows what they are doing to help you Practice Right~? " Kushida continued " I am not the best at skating, But i used to do it with my friends during middle school. If you want i can instruct you guy- "

" Thank you for your offer Kushida, But we would have to decline "

" Kiyo declined, Sharply cutting through Kushida's offer and refusing it.

" Huh ? Why ? " Kushida asked in surprise.

" Since everyone's bodies are built differently, The postures would differ from one another, So i think it would be better if we get a hold of it ourselves " Kiyotaka explained. Kushida was about to open her mouth but Kiyotaka spoke again " We appreciate your offer tho. But i think this is something we should discover "

Kiyotaka formulated his sentence in a way that would deem any persuasion futile. The more desperate the person is, The stronger those words hit them, And the more likelihood of them backing away.

" Okay~ If you say so~ " Kushida backed away, Looking as enthusiastic as ever. " But if you need help feel free to call me Kay~? "

" We'll keep that in mind. Thank you Kushida-san~! " I thanked her, Feeling relieved that she backed away. " She is really something huh? "

" Yeah. Even after accomplishing her objective, She still lusts for more " Kiyotaka marked. Before we both started wearing our skating boots.

" But that would be her downfall " I completed Kiyo's sentence. Before i turned towards him " What do you think her objective is? "

" I'm not sure, But i think i know the answer " Kiyotaka responded, We both finished wearing and stood up. After getting a hold of ourselves Kiyotaka rose his hand, Offering it to me with a smile " Let's forget about that and focus on something more important "

Kiyotaka, Looked more like a prince than a high school boy. No, A Prince Charming, Since he is charming me Right now.

" Hehe~ " I Giggled before taking his hand with red cheeks. " I agree to marry you my Prince~ "

" Good, Let's go Hona-..... " Kiyotaka was about to go but suddenly turned around, Confusion written all over his face.

" What~? Aren't you happy that i became your wife~? " I said, Lowering my head faking a sad expression. Kiyotaka was silent, Contemplating over how to respond. This caused me to want to giggle but i contained it, *Hehe~ It's funny how someone as smart as Kiyotaka doesn't know how to respond in these types of situations~ Very amusing Hehe~*

" No that's not it. It's just tha- "

" Don't worry Kiyo~ I understand " I decided to free him from his misery. I rose his hand moved forward, Dragging him towards the Field " Let's go~! "

Kiyotaka complied and we both started our baby steps on top of the icy floor, At first i was struggling, But Since we were holding hands it kept me floating. Moreover....

" You're pretty good at this Kiyotaka~ " I complimented, He's grasping it faster than i anticipated.

" No, That's just because i'm holding into you " Kiyotaka brushed off my compliment, I giggled knowing fully that it was a lie.

" Hehe~ If you say so~! "

We kept practicing for over 5 minutes, Moving in a pair together while learning as much as we can. We were getting a lot of stares but i brushed them off and enjoyed every single second of this

When i felt confident enough, I let go of Kiyotaka's hand and

moved freely. Slowly but surely testing my limits as the cold air started blowing at my face harder each time i go faster.

It was exactly as i thought it would, It was a pretty fun activity. I cleared my mind and started moving freely across the Arena

" Eh ? "

" Woah ?! "

" Eeeh ? "

Suddenly, Multiple confusion mixed surprised yells resounded thorough the Arena, Snapping me from my illusions. I looked towards the-

" Oh my god " I exclaimed in shock. At the scene i saw

Kiyo POV

Left Left Right Left Right Middle Jump !

I jumped dodging the falling student on my way, While keeping my footing i landed on the ice keeping my high speed.

A lot of stares are getting drilled at me, They were baffled and understandably so.

Honami POV

Kiyotaka is running at a mad speed across the entire Field, Evading, Passing through everything that comes in his way with the same apathetic expression as ever.

All the students stared at him, Baffled about his actions. Soon he started slowing down and parked right beside me

I was too surprised to move, He stared at me in with his usual poker face. He tilted his head to look at me from a different angle and waved his hands in front of me

" Honami ? Are you okay ? "

" Y-Yeah..... " That's all what i could've mustered. He nodded before glancing at the people staring at him and sighed

" This is troublesome "

We spent 3 hours inside the Skating Arena having fun while engaging in different types of activities. I met with Kiyotaka after switching back to our clothes and walked towards the dorms

" Man today was fun~ " I exclaimed while stretching. Before turning towards Kiyotaka " Did you have fun Kiyo~? "

" I certainly did. Thank you for today Honami " Kiyotaka said before smiling, I smiled back before poking his nose

" Who said that it's over ? "

" You ? " Kiyo accused, Confused. " You said ' Today was fun ' So i thought it was ove- "

" You just fell into my trap hehe~ " I exclaimed, Before smiling mischievously at him. " Our date isn't over Kiyo~ "

" I see " Kiyotaka nodded with understanding. Before entering the dorm lobby

We both entered the elevator and pressed for my floor, Before turning on the lights of my room and entering.

I Instantly scanned the Roof and found the little thing i hid. *Good it's still here*

I opened the locker and handed Kiyo some of his spare clothes and grabbed my pyjamas before entering the bathroom and changing. I was done a few minutes later and left, Kiyotaka was sitting on my bed with the TV on waiting for me

" Right~ What would you like for dinner Kiyo~? " I asked him as as i stood outside the bathroom door.

" I don't know " Kiyo said, Before raising an eyebrow " I thought you already planned everything ? "

" Hmph~ I did~ " I pouted before walking towards the kitchen. At the entrance i gazed at Kiyo, Who looked back " Aren't you coming~? "

" Coming ? " I nodded.

" We are gonna cook dinner together~! " I smirked before grabbing an apron and throwing it at him. " Let's get moving Chef~! "

Kiyotaka sighed before following me towards the Kitchen, After some persuasion he wore the apron. I wore one as well and we both started making Mushroom gratin on my lead

Kiyotaka wasn't a bad cook at all, In fact, He is quite skillful. He chopped the mushrooms effortlessly into perfect slices. *Hehe~*

While he was cutting, I snuck out my phone i hid inside the apron and took a picture of him. He immediately noticed and stopped what he was doing

" Really ? " Kiyotaka expressed, Looking at me with an annoyed expression. I simply grinned and showed him the phone

" You're a cute housewife Kiyo~ I am blessed to have you as my wife~ " I spoke teasingly. Kiyotaka deeply sighed, Before ignoring me and continuing shopping.

I saved the image to my gallery and made it as my Home screen, Before turning my phone off and continue cooking.

" Kiyo~ you doughnut, That's the wrong filling ! "

During our cooking date, I kept scolding Kiyotaka harshly while throwing random nicknames i saw in a cooking show. Of course i didn't mean any one of them, But it was very fun

Tink.

After an hour or so, The oven beeped, Indicating the end of the process. I grabbed the oven gloves and pulled out the plate towards the table. Kiyo grabbed the knife and sliced it into 4 pieces

" The final results areeeee~..... " I said as i took a bite from it. I looked at Kiyotaka and smiled " Marvelous Job Chef~ " I gave him a thumbs up

After the food cooled down a bit, We both dug into our plates while chatting. I ate only quarter of it since i wasn't hungry, And Kiyo ate half. We both cleaned the table and moved the plates towards the sink

When i was done washing the plates, I grabbed a certain box and took a certain medicine. Before joining Kiyotaka on the bed, I checked the roof again and it's still there. He was watching the TV as i sat beside him

" Today was a long day don't you think~? " I started the conversation after i turned off the lights, With the TV being the only source.

" Yeah, But i had fun. " Kiyo said, Before turning towards me. His golden eyes were shining in the dark, My heart was already racing, But it went faster. " More importantly, Did you enjoy yourself ? "

" I did~ " I nodded. " I'm glad that you found today fun Kiyo~ "

" Me too " He nodded with a smile. We watched the TV a little, Before i decided to initiate my plan.

" Hey~ Is that a- "

" Mistletoe " Kiyo completed my sentence, Before turning towards me. I stared at him with wide eyes, *He noticed !* " It was pretty hard to not notice, Especially since you keep looking at it "

" Ahaha~ " I laughed nervously. *It's no use trying to hide something from him is it ?* " Can i assume that you already know what this means ? "

" Yeah. " Kiyo nodded. " If a couple stand below a mistletoe, They are forced to show their love to each other in one way or another correct ? "

" Yes~ "

" But since you were the one who placed it. It doesn't count "

" Hey~ " I pouted. Kiyotaka chuckled, I smiled at him before moving closer to him and jumping on top of his lap. He stabilized himself before catching me from my waist. Our faces were very close with each other " You said that it doesn't count~ Are you lying to me~? "

" Knowing you i doubt you'd care. You'll do it regardless "

" You know me too well Kiyo~ Are you perhaps stalking me~? "

" I'm not the one who bought a smart ring to sp- Mgh " I pushed my face against his, Pressing my lips against his, Silencing him. After he calmed down i moved away

" That is called worrying~ Not spying "

" But what's so diffe- Mmm " I pressed my lips against his, Silencing him again.

" There is a difference. Baka "

" I fail to notic-Mmm " I silenced him again.

" Stop persisting " I grumbled.

" But you're the one wrong here "

" I'm Not th- Mgh~! " Kiyo pushed his lips against mine, Putting a gag on me.

" Stop being persistent Honami. You know that you're the bad girl here "

" I'm the bad one huh~? " I said. Before staring deeply into his golden eyes, There was eager, Excitement and love, It warms my heart. " Let's see about that one..... Kiyotaka..... "

Yow~ As usual, I'm gonna dive right in

I'm sorry if this chapter feels rushed or not up to par, I fell sick during these past days and my brain couldn't work properly. Now that i'm somewhat fine, I continued writing

I'm gonna repay you guys with the next chapter..... Hehe~

Arc 7.5 R-18 Chapter : Christmas Night

**** Lemon Warning : Explicit Sex ****

Honami POV

At the dark interior of my room, Where the only light source is the one coming from the TV. I sat on Kiyotaka's lap, Facing him with few centimetres to spare

I'm gonna show you how bad i am~ Get ready..... Kiyotaka~

I put both of my arms around his neck, He responded by holding my waist so i wouldn't fall. I smiled before hugging him, Pulling his face towards mine, Clashing in a passionate lustful kiss

Using my whole body, I leaned on top of him, laying him flat on top of the bed, But i kept him busy with my mouth, Colliding against my tongue as we both make out for each other

" Mmmm~ "

He held my waist more tightly, Pushing my crotch against his, Deepening our Kiss. I put both of my hands on top of his cheeks and massaged them out of warmth

I wished that we'd stay like that forever. Unfortunately, We had to separate to catch our breaths. However, Each time i catch some air i kiss him more and more aggressively without stopping, Completely abusing his soft lips. *I cannot get enough of this*

I felt his member twitch against my wet crotch and started rising. I grinned internally while sucking his tongue aggressively. *Hehe~ My favorite toy is slowly deploying~*

I lost count on how many times we had to catch our breath after breaking from a kiss, His face was a complete mess

" You're pretty delicious Kiyo~ " I said. Before diving at his neck, Licking it all over while biting it. He started to mean softly, I gave him around 7 hickies.

I licked my lips before pulling his shirt up. However, He grabbed my wrist

" Not so fast "

" Eh-?! "

Kiyo with gracious movement flipped me around and went on top, It was so fast i had no chance to react. He immediately attacked my neck, Taking some revenge on me

" Nghhhhh~ "

My moans of pleasure reverberated through the room, I rose my head and exposed my neck even further, He took advantage of this and extended his reach. Biting me every where

" Ngh~ "

Kiyotaka moved away from my neck and kissed me, I reciprocated as another lustful battle commenced.

Kiyotaka released my wrists and moved his hands towards my crotch, I jolted up from his touch on top of the fabrics, But soon i started adapting

Kiyotaka slid my pants down which i responded with the same, His underwear was barely holding against his erect member, There was already some pre-cum on top which made me sad but i freed T-Rex from his misery

O-Oh my god....

I couldn't help but stutter even on my thoughts. Even if i saw it once before, My reaction was almost the same. *I-It's.... Even bigger than before !*

" I'm sorry Honami " Kiyotaka's sudden apology snapped me out of my thoughts

" Why are you apologizing Kiyotaka~? "

" I'm sorry if it scared you or anything. I don't know how to explain it bu- "

" No ! It didn't scare me Kiyotaka~ " I said as i placed my hand on it. Running it all over " It's the reverse~ I don't hate it~ I love it~ It's yours~ That's all that i care about~ "

At my words, His expression relaxed and his eyes was filled with happiness.

" Thank you Honami " He expressed, I smiled at him which he responded with the same.

" Ah~ "

He grabbed my shoulders and tossed me on the bed, When i caught his gaze he already caught my lips, Keeping me busy while removing my shirt and unhooking my bra, He broke away before completely snatching them away, Leaving me naked below him

" Honami... " He suddenly called out to me while staring at my body " Did your chest get bigger ? " *He noticed !*

" Ummm~.... Y-Yes... " I said, Feeling embarrassed. " K-Kiyo~..... Do you not like them ? "

I was scared, Afraid that Kiyotaka wouldn't like them. However, He removed my hands that were unconsciously covering them

" No, They are beautiful. " Kiyo's words caused me to sigh in massive relief. He started caressing my face " Don't think badly of yourself because of them. They are parts of you, Parts of your

charms. And i love them very much "

" You speak like someone who is smitten "

" Am i not ? " Kiyo smiled warmly. I reciprocated it, *I am very glad~*

" Hehe~ I'm the one to talk~ " I marked. Before standing on my knees and removing his shirt, He helped me remove and and now we both stood fully naked facing each other

Kiyotaka decided to take the initiative and lifted me from my armpits, When i was standing he pushed me gently against the wall and moved his hands towards my thighs and lifted me against the wall

So Strong !

" Nghh~ "

He instantly attacked the upper area of my chest and ran his tongue all across it, Poking me every where causing me to moan in immense pleasure.

" Mmmm~ "

He lowered his head and poked my nipple using his lips, Feeling satisfied with the first one he moved towards the second, Eating me up while lifting me in the air.

" Mmmmgh~ "

All i could do is enjoy the experience against his enormous strength.

3rd POV

The strawberry haired girl kept moaning in pleasure against the brown haired boy's vicious attacks.

" Kiyooo~ I want it~!... " Honami pleaded, Not being able to hold back anymore. If water was wet then her entrance was wetter

Kiyotaka moved up from her breasts and looked at her, She looked back at him with a smile. Kiyotaka nodded and he placed his T-Rex against her entrance

" Honami, I'm gonna go inside " Honami nodded and soon....

" Nghh~! " Kiyotaka inserted his full length inside, Slowly that it. The girl moaned loudly, Her inside shaped to perfectly fit Kiyotaka's T-Rex. " What happened Kiyotaka~ Got tired already~? "

Honami mocked Kiyotaka teasingly, He stared back at her moist eyes. Before smirking

He didn't respond with words. Instead..... He responded with actions

" Nghh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

He started moving his hips in a slow matter, Warming the Girl up. With her moist eyes, She started moaning in a slow pace. However...

" Nghhhh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Kiyo~ Ngh~ Ngh~

Ngh~ So~ Ngh~ Rough~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

At a unexpected moment, Kiyotaka drastically picked up the pace, Using his full length while penetrating Honami roughening her up. Her mind went blank, As she felt nothing but pleasure

" Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ Ghz~ "

She let her tongue out, As she gave up on holding herself up. She leaned on the wall while relying on Kiyotaka to lift her, She let herself slumber against his repetitive thrusts, Dedicating all her concentration into the pleasure she's feeling, Getting lost in her own world

" Mgh~ Mgh~ Mgh~ Mgh~ "

The Girl was making all sorts of erotic faces and sexy moans that enticed the boy, Making him unconsciously increase his pace, Pounding her stronger than ever.

" Honami.... " His Call made Honami get back to her senses. She immediately understood what was gonna happen

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Give it all~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ to me~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Kiyotaka~ Ngh~ "

The boy understood as he picked up the pace even further, He is only complying with the girl's demands of roughening her up.

" NNGHHGHGGHGGH~ "

Reaching Cloud Nine, He pushed it all inside

Honami's stomach started twitching as she got filled up, Her eyes were blank, Same as her mind. When he pulled out, Multiple liquids dripped out from her entrance.

Kiyotaka pulled Honami towards the Bed and gently laid her down, She was panting heavily from the intensity of the intercourse.

" Kiyotaka~..... You were pretty rough~ " After the Girl's breaths stabilized, She forwarded her remarks to Kiyotaka who was laying on the bed beside her. " I could've died you know~ "

The Boy turned to look at Honami's face, Who was Red, But it had a wide mischievous smile.

" I'm sorry if i went overboard. I- "

" Why are you apologizing~? " The Girl cut through his statement and sat up. She took a deep sigh before facing the boy with a wide lustful grin " I was the one who asked for this~ I may get temporarily tired~ But that doesn't mean i'm out of the game yet- "

" That's good " Kiyotaka nodded and sat up as well. Before facing her " Let's see who can last longer then~ "

" As you wish~ "

Hornykouji/Hornynami Has been summoned towards the field

Honami Took the initiative and pushed Kiyotaka on the bed, To

restrain him from moving she grabbed his T-Rex with both of her hands before she started making herself more comfortable on top of the bed

She moved her face towards the tip and started slurping it, Causing Kiyotaka to moan softly, Before she slid it all inside her mouth

Cough Cough Cough

She Started Coughing before she pulled it out, Her eyes turned even more moist as she stared at Kiyotaka and grinned. Before she started doing her work

Using her mouth, She moved her head up and down, Sucking his Member violently. If it was a Banana it would've already been destroyed, The boy contained his moans for the most part feeling immense pleasure

The Girl's muffled moans were heard as she kept violating his member, Sucking the life out of it. Soon enough, It twitched inside her mouth and a grin formed in her face as she kept teasing it faster than before

" Mmmmghhh~ "

Honami Grumbled as Kiyotaka lifted his crotch up before pouring his waves of kids inside her mouth. Honami swallowed every single bit of it and cleaned her hands

" Yummy~ " She exclaimed. Before crawling towards Kiyotaka with her 4 pointers (Elbow/knees) While smiling lustfully at him. " Kiyo~ You're such a naughty pervert you know that Righ-Ngh~! "

Kiyotaka responded to her provocation by grabbed her armpits and slamming her on the bed, Honami yelped as Kiyotaka emerged on top of her from her point of view. She Grinned lustfully at him

" See~? You can't hold back~ What a perv- Ngh~ "

A Strong thrust cut through Honami's words as Kiyotaka inserted his Rod inside of her to silence her. He was still tired from the blowjob earlier, But his years of training came in handy.....

" Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Kiyo~ Ngh~ Ngh~ Ngh~ "

He started shacking his hips against his lover's, Violating her entrance with the full glory of Excalibur.

He didn't care about her loud moans, Nor did he care about them being heard. He kept pushing it, Inside and out, At a rapid speed.

He grabbed the area below her breasts to stabilize himself for deeper reach, Pounding her mercilessly with his repetitive strong thrusts.

The Girl However, Was still conscious. In fact, She was keeping up with him. The boy was very impressed by her strength.

The couple engaged in pure bliss for the rest of the night, Trying

out multiple stuff, Different poses and techniques you name them. They were inter-coursing like Rabbits and both of them refused to stop.... Until.....

Knock

Knock

Both of them fell on the bed, Completely exhausted. They fell so hard that it was almost like a door knock, Baiting out all the people from the shadow realm who are spectating at them into thinking they got caught.

Both of them were panting heavily, They engaged in pure bliss for hours without stopping until both of their energies ran out.

The Results of Today's Battle : Hornykouji vs Hornynami

A DRAW

Both of them are identical in almost everything. So the fight could go either way

Kiyotaka and Honami cuddled inside the bed, Embracing each other. The warmth they felt enticed both of them, As their eyelashes closed. Falling in a deep Slumber

Meanwhile, At the next Door :

' Seems like Kiyotaka-kun and Ichinose-san are done with their massages. Although i don't hate it, The reverse, It makes me extremely happy to see my book buddy receiving some genuine love, And from a beautiful and nice girl like Ichinose-san too ! However, I gotta talk with him tomorrow about this so they would keep it low next time and not wake me up at 3 AM on the morning. ' The Angel thought as she hugged a pillow smiling happily before driving into a deep slumber as well

Sakayanagi Arisu SS : Promised Day

I was sitting inside of a cafe inside of Keyaki Mall, Enjoying my drink while tormenting Masumi-san's life.

It is pretty convenient don't you think ? Having a fateful slave accompanying you whenever you ask. If she would put a smile instead of her disgusted expression then she would be promoted to a beautiful Queen, But still a slave fufufu

" Ugh " We were sitting on a table when she suddenly blurted, I glanced at her and she was looking outside the cafe where the dark laid.

" What's wrong Masumi-san ? " I followed her gaze and my eyes instantly widened in surprise. Amidst the darkness, Was a familiar lone male student

His brown hair fluttered against the wind as his dazzling golden eyes were glued at the dark sky while gracefully moving towards the north east side of campus. It was none other than Ayanokouji-kun

" Fufu " I chuckled a bit, Before grabbing my cane and standing up. Masumi-san looked at me in confusion " Let's go greet him Masumi-san "

" Ugh. You do it, Why should i come ? "

" Because i may let you go if you come with m- "

" Lead the way Hime " Masumi-san instantly rose up from her seat, Her disgusted expression vanished as a apathetic one replaced it, But i can see it just a little..... Some happiness.

" Fufu. Let's go then " I chuckled before making my way towards Ayanokouji-kun. As i left the Mall he immediately noticed me and stopped dead on his tracks " Fufufu what a coincidence Ayanokouji-kun "

" Hey Sakayanagi " Ayanokouji-kun greeted back with his trademark monotone voice. " How are you doing ? "

" Fufu that's certainly a hard question to answer don't you think Ayanokouji-kun ? " I said vaguely, But Ayanokouji-kun understood what i meant.

It has been hours since my father called me and filled me in with Ayanokouji-kun's situation and the new acting director. Needless to say i was shocked to hear about my father's situation, But i had to focus on the bigger problem. He asked me to help Ayanokouji-kun

against the new acting director which i accepted

" Yeah, Sorry " Ayanokouji-kun apologized. But i reassured him

" Don't be Ayanokouji-kun. I was just teasing you " I chuckled.
Facing him " Don't worry, I am gonna help you. I can't let my prey
get snatched away now can i ? Especially after waiting so long for it
"

I felt some excitement rushing through me as i finished the sentence, Excited to face him again, Motivating me to work hard and crush him, The Masterpiece of The White Room, The fake Genius.

I have full faith in my abilities to do that, And i am gonna improve them even more so my victory would be nothing but ensured. I wouldn't accept anything but a win against him....

And i will prove.... That no matter how hard you try, As long as you have bad genes, You will fail.

This is the only goal i have in my mind, The reason why i strove so hard to the day i'm gonna face you and prove it. So i recommend you wait until that day to witness it Ayanokouji-kun, Because in that day.....

You were one of the witnesses

Arc 8 Chap 1 : Leading in the Dark

Kiyo POV

Winter break has come to a close. Signalling the Start of the third semester of our First-year in the Advanced Nurturing High school.

I was walking my way towards school inside my school uniform, Fighting against the cold breezes of January under the dark grey sky

Muffled noises could be heard among the breeze, As students were in groups chatting with their friends. However, An air of caution is flying around them.

Classes are back in session, Which means that the start of Class Conflict has rose again. Special exams are the ultimate battleground where the scores would be settled. However, That doesn't mean it's the only way to fight.

Our Class points for January have been updated and received. As expected, Every Class saw a change. However, There is only one Class that didn't.....

Class A : 1652 C.P

Class B : 870 C.P

Class C : 641 C.P

Class D : 0 C.P

(I forgot to type the change of Class points in paper shuffle, This above is for January and Classes lost some points from that time)

Class D was the only Class that didn't experience a change in Class Points, It stood exactly the same. Technically, They were the only class that didn't lose points, Because they didn't have any in the first place.

Class D would most definitely stay the same in the future exams, Being the one who always ends up last, Providing a scapegoat for the three higher classes.

So, I am willing to predict that..... By the start of our Second-year..... Class D would have less than 30 Students. They have 34 Currently, So at the very least, 4 Would disappear from the Class. I am just predicting for fun, *The future is uncertain...*

" Hehe~ "

While reminiscing in my thoughts, My vision suddenly blacked out as two pairs of gloves gently covered my eyes.

" **WHO~?** " The person blindfolding me with her hands spoke in a masked tone, Trying to imitate Albert's tone of speaking. However, His tone was too much for her

" Honami " I called out to her. She unconsciously pulled my face down and pressed her chest even more on my back.

" **NO~** " Honami kept the same tone. " **I am your secret Girlfriend~** "

" Oooooooooooooh " I pretended as if a realization hit me. A light smirk presented itself on my face " You must be Honami's Thighs then "

" Hehe~ What a cheater~ " Honami took off her hands from my eyes and put some space between us, I turned around to find her looking at me with a grin and a cute blush, She crossed her arms and exclaimed " Now that you've been caught red handed~ Do you have any last words~? "

" Errrrrr... I- "

" Good, Then **Shine~** " Honami said before chopping my head cutely, She moved her hand and smiled brightly at me " Do you want to go to school together~? "

" No " I Responded with a smirk of my own. Honami's eyebrows widened, Before it turned to a smirk as well

" Yippie~ Thank you for accepting Kiyotaka~ " She exclaimed before latching at my arm.

" I never agreed tho "

" Did you not~? " Honami looked at me contemplating something, Before flashing me a mischievous grin " Well no matter, Your opinion isn't important anyway~ "

" Why is that ? " I rose an eyebrow. Honami's mischievous smirk never left her face

" Did you forget that you're my property Kiyotaka~? " She said that. Before correcting herself " Oh Sorry Sorry~ That's the wrong word~ The most accurate word is~..... a slave~ "

" What ? "

" What ? " Honami mirrored my question. Before i opened my mouth, She spoke instead " Have you forgot already~? "

" Forgot~? " Honami flashed me a mischievous grin " I don't remember agreeing to such a thi- "

" The moment you agreed to be in a relationship with me~ You agreed to the hidden terms and conditions~ " Honami cut through me with her statement, Her grin never leaving her face.

" Hidden Terms and conditions ? There was no such things "

" It's your fault for not reading the full contract~ "

" Contract ? "

" Yes~ That you will be my slave in return of my services~ " She

smiled mischievously.

Our banter kept going on for the rest of our route towards school, Even though her words were ridiculous, I certainly had a fun time, That's the most important thing right ?

" Eh~? What is happening~? " When the school building came to view, A Large crowd of students was present by the entrance, While mostly chatting among themselves.

" I don't know. Let's go check " Honami nodded and soon we approached the entrance.

It was certainly noisy, A lot of muffled sounds could be heard. However, When we drew closer, The sight of a locked door presented itself. Amidst the sea of students, I spotted two Menu boards on the corners of the entrance facing us. We approached them and read their contents...

Notice :

All students of the First-year are prohibited from entering the school for the time being

If you are a member of this category please stay outside the entrance and feel free to move or do anything you please (As long as it's within the rules) However, Make sure you're present here at the entrance by 8:00 AM today for the announcement.

If you are a student of the second or third year, Please head straight towards the back of the school where you would be escorted towards your Classes through the Back door.

" Strange.... " Honami muttered, Seemingly perplexed at this announcement.

" Wasn't this thing present when you went for the student council today ? " I asked. Honami shook her head while staring at the poster

" No, It wasn't there, And the door wasn't even locked. "

" Are you sure ? " Honami nodded in confirmation. Feeling satisfied, We both moved towards a secluded area to wait for the announcement and settled down.

" Kiyotaka~ What do you think of this announcement ? " Honami spoke, Deep in thoughts.

" I don't know, We should probably wait for an explanation. The situation is pretty vague " I voiced out.

" Do you think this is a Special Exam ? " Honami asked me, Before glancing at me with a stern expression. *She is serious....*

" Probably. It's no use thinking about it Right now, We should just wait " I said, Patting her head. Her cheeks flushed in a taint red as she smiled a bit

" Yeah~ You're Right~ " Honami nodded and cheered up.

As it stands now, The situation is pretty vague for the naked eye. However, One thing keeps bugging me

" Oh~ There you guys are ! " A familiar voice snapped me out of my thoughts. It came from Amikura who was walking towards us, Behind her was our Classmates " Good Morning Honami-chan~ Ayanokouji-kun~! "

" Good Morning Mako-chan~! And the rest too~! " Honami greeted back before joining them, I followed her Right after.

We all exchanged some greetings before the topic of the announcement got brought up. It seems that all of my classmates share the same thoughts about it. I let a small disappointed sigh. *Seems like no one noticed it, I kinda hoped that someone would be suspicious but i guess it's a bit too much. Well, Time fo-*

Clark

Silence.....

A loud cracking sound suddenly echoed through the sea of murmurs as a deafening silence erupted, All gazes peered at the opening door, Where 4 familiar adults emerged

" Ara Ara~ Look at you guys being so obedient~ Sensei is very proud~ And cute don't you thi- Ah~ Aww~ "

" Stop blabbering Chie. We are on important business here "

" Always so serious Sae-chan~ If you could be a little more enthusiastic~ You would get a man you kno- "

" Quit it Hoshinomiya, That's enough "

" Sorry Sorry Tomonari-chan~ " Chie-sensei caressed her hair where Chabashiba-sensei smacked her while apologizing to Mashima-sensei, Sakagami was just spectating with a stern look on his face.

" Anyway... " Mashima-sensei turned and faced us " Now then, We shall *commence*. Students, We humbly ask that you line-up in front of your Homeroom Teacher for roll-call, After that, You'll be moved towards your Class "

Confusion erupted through the crowd, But we complied with his orders nevertheless. All of my Classmates gathered up in front of an excited Chie-sensei carrying a clipboard

" Right~ Good morning everyone~ " Chie-sensei greeted enthusiastically, My Classmates greeted back but they were still confused about this whole situation, Chie-sensei wasn't too dense to not realize it " I know you guys are confused~ But bear with me~ First we're gonna start with Roll-call~ "

Chie-sensei commenced with her Roll-call, Same as the other teachers. However, During this time, I noticed a certain person was looking at me from time to time, I simply brushed them off and soon enough, Roll Call ended

" Right~ No abbsies~! " Chie-sensei exclaimed happily. Before clearing her throat and facing all of us " Right~ I'm gonna ask you guys to follow me towards your temporary Classroom~ If you have any questions please keep them to yourselves, Because they would be answered later~ "

Chie-sensei instantly started walking towards the north eastern area of Campus, Regardless of our confusion but we soon complied and followed her. I glanced back at the Three Classes and they were on standby, *Seems like we'll be the ones to go first*

I couldn't help but get a sense of deja vu, The way this exam is escalating is pretty similar to the island exam. However, I couldn't help but feel that this is also a hint towards something, Just like what i discovered earlier.

I directed my gaze towards two individuals and moved towards them, They didn't notice me approaching since they were talking with our Classmates. Within striking distance, I called out to both of them

" Honami, Kanzaki. Do you guys have a minute ? " Both of them turned to look at me, With their usual expressions.

" Sure~ Is something wrong Kiyotaka~? " Honami asked.

" I think i found a little something about this exam " They both looked at each other before facing me again with stern expressions. They stood silent waiting for me to speak, It seems that they already know what i'm trying to do here " First of all, What do you think of this current situation ? "

Both of them went deep in their thoughts and collecting them, I simply let them be. Soon, Honami rose her head

" This situation is currently pretty suspicious. However, There is too little information to work with. " Honami explained. I nodded at her " I believe we should stay calm and observe the situation for anything suspicious "

" I agree with her " Kanzaki nodded. " I am getting a sense of familiarity. The way this situation is proceeding is pretty similar to the way the island exam proceeded, I mean, Calling us out and moving by Class. " Honami nodded at his statement

" Is that all ? " I rose an eyebrow. Both of them looked at each other and reluctantly nodded. Well, *I guess this is good enough*

" What do you mean Ayanokouji, Is there more ? " Kanzaki asked, Honami looked somewhat anxious. I nodded " Do you mind if you tell us ? "

I nodded. Right, *There goes nothing*

" The exam has already started "

" **Eh** ? " Both of them blurted out in shock. Honami spoke first " W-What do you mean Kiyotaka ? "

" It is exactly as i said. We are already on an exam "

" Why do you think that ? " Kanzaki Interrogated in confusion, Honami nodded beside him.

" Let me ask you first Kanzaki. You said that this is similar to the island exam right ? " Kanzaki nodded, Then a realization hit him " Do you remember the '*Magnificat Scenery*' ? "

" Yes. The one the P.A announcer said and caused us all to be suspicious " Honami spoke. " However, The exam didn't start at that time back then. It was when Mashima-sensei announ....ce..... " Honami's voice suddenly dropped, As if she realized something too.

" Mashima-sensei already announced the start of something, He didn't specify it. " By using another form of strange phrasing, Mashima-sensei hinted to the start of the special exam by saying '*Now then, We shall commence.*' "

You may argue that it's preparations. However, Why use ' commence ' for it ? It is a word Mashima-sensei used to announce the start of an exam.

Another example of this is Chie-sensei, Although she doesn't use the same word, It means the same thing.

" I see..... " Kanzaki muttered. " However, What type of exam are we currently in ? "

" That's something i'm not sure off. However... " I added. " I have some theories "

Both of them focused back on me, Listening attentively. However, I wasn't gonna give them an easy answer

" Before i say that. Tell me, What is your ideas of this exam so far ? " Both of them were baffled. However, They understood what i'm trying to do.

" If what you said earlier was true. Then maybe this exam has similar settings to the island exam ? " Kanzaki asked. " I mean like a four-way battle between all classes "

" Yeah, Since we are at the school, It's probably relies more on academics rather than physical ability. Chie-sensei also said that we are moving towards a temporary Classroom~ So i think that the exam is gonna happen there~ " Both of them nodded at each other's theories.

" Okay, That's pretty good. " I said, Impressed. " However, You forgot one thing "

" Hmm~? What is it~? "

" You forgot that we are already on an exam " Their enthusiasm dropped ever so slightly at my reality check. " Let me ask you a question. Why do you think the school is doing all of this for ? "

" It's to-..... " Honami was about to answer, But she instantly cut herself off and dove deep into her thoughts. " It's to surprise us with

a special exam ? "

" Not exactly. " I countered. " Let me reformulate the question. Why did the school use this method specifically to announce the exam ? "

" I don't know.... "

" Think about it. What was the consequences of their action ? Placing the Blackboards after student council hours and locking the entrance, Gathering all the students in one place then moving them towards another. What resulted in all of this ? "

This exam so far has been handled by the school pretty poorly, And it is very unlike them to do so. However, It is delusional to believe that they are lacking the means to do it

Why use this method if you could use a way easier and efficient method like messaging the first-years like how they did in the Zodiac Exam ? Why use that if you could avoid all the chaos and confusion it would create..... Except if..... *They do want that chaos to happen for some reason*

" It resulted in chaos and confusion. " Answered Honami. She rose her head to look at me

" Correct " Both of Kanzaki and Honami's eyes widened. " Their methods only caused chaos among the first-years. They could've avoided it, But they didn't " My words slowly sunk in their heads, As the gears inside started moving.

" If so, Then why do they want it to happen ? " Kanzaki voiced out. " If they deliberately let Chaos happen, Then for what reason ? "

" I don't know. Since Chaos is part of this test, It's probably to test our adaptability and calmness. " I said, Unsure. " These are just my theories, I don't have any proof to back them up. However, I recommend you guys to inform our classmates to stay calm no matter what happens. "

It would work into our best interest to avoid the school's motives, Especially if they are harmful. They are currently leading us with a blindfold towards an unknown territory. So, It's better to be safe rather than being sorry

Arc 8 Chap 2 : The Colossal Exam

Honami POV

After our talk with Kiyotaka, Me and Kanzaki-kun delivered his warning to our Classmates. Understandably, They were confused, But they agreed to comply and stay calm

Kiyotaka is currently talking with Chie-sensei in the front, There is enough space between us to disallow any inconspicuous eavesdroppers However, I could see their expressions.

Kiyotaka was wearing his usual poker face. However, Chie-sensei was having a serious expression. It is rare seeing her like this except for some announcements for special exams, She didn't appear wary of Kiyotaka but instead, It was something else

They kept talking until Chie-sensei nodded and her expression eased.... Into her usual cheerful one. She grinned at Kiyotaka and spoke with him for a bit before she extended her arm towards his neck where it was covered with his High-neck Shirt, He immediately dodged her attempt and she pouted before turning around and grinning at me.

I was also wearing a High-neck Shirt, Same as Kiyotaka, To hide our hickeys, But it seems that Chie-sensei also caught wind of this. Ironically enough, It was Mako-chan who first noticed this and tried to tease me into telling the truth, Me and Kiyotaka worked up an excuse beforehand that this is to show that we are a couple by wearing the same thing, But it seems that both of them didn't buy it.... Or even if they did, *They just tease us because it's fun~*

" Hmph~ " I unconsciously pouted. At that exact moment, Kiyotaka returned and looked at me in confusion, I averted back to my smile before the both of us joined our friends and kept walking towards the unknown....

Kiyo POV

It didn't take long after my talk with Chie-sensei to reach our destination, We walked in the hallways of a familiar building in a complete silence. And soon enough, We reached our destination

It was a big empty amphitheater room, Around 15 rows were facing the Big Blackboard behind the Teacher's desk, The brown color of the wood was dominant

Many of my Classmates were amazed, This was way enormous than your average classroom. However, Everybody heeded my

warning and didn't utter a word. An awkward atmosphere is building up. Chie-sensei glanced at us and grinned before she started talking, Garnering everyone's attention back at her

" Alright everyone~ I'm gonna hand you guys your seating~ " Chie-sensei grabbed her clipboard and flipped the pages " Please listen attentively and calmly walk up to your seats and wait there~ As i said if you have any questions save them for later~ Okay~? "

Chie-sensei Commenced her announcement and started assigning everyone's seats. I walked up towards the 70th seat which was located in the 7th Row and sat, Calmly assessing the situation.

There is an astonishing amount of cameras inside this Class, More than 30. There is on average 11 seats on each row all having their specific number, It isn't uncomfortable sitting here However, It would be if it gets crammed, But it is more than enough to contain 11 students comfortably.

Honami walked up to my row and sat 6 numbers away from my left, She gave me a smile to which i responded with the same. Not long after Kanzaki also came to my row and sat 3 seats from my left, 2 away from Honami. He looked at both of us and nodded, Seemingly happy

Beside Honami sat Himeno on the seat before last, She looked indifferent on the outside. However, I can clearly see her discomfort from this situation increase when she sat with Honami.

Himeno doesn't necessarily hate Honami, But she doesn't like her much either. Her cloistered personality makes it harder for her to be around energetic and enthusiastic figures like Honami, And i can understand her since i used to be like her. Soon all of our Classmates took their seats

" Alright~ That's all of you~ " Chie-sensei exclaimed enthusiastically, She was looking happier than usual. " Right~ I'm gonna ask you guys all to wait here in standby~ It wouldn't be for long so please, Feel free to make yourselves at home~ "

Chie-sensei's orders eased the awkward atmosphere in the Class. However, It was still there.

" Don't worry about anything everyone~ " Sensing the awkward atmosphere, Honami rose from her seat with encouraging words " No matter what they throw at us, We will handle it as a class~ With the support of each other, We can handle pretty much everything ! "

Honami's words were the light at the end of a deep dark tunnel, Shifting everyone's mood from tense to Cheery as she received supporting cheers from everyone. It was impressive, The effect of a central figure

Chie-sensei was smiling like a proud mother at all of us, All of our

Classmates sat down silently on their chairs, Waiting in anticipation for what's gonna come next.

Knock Knock

Two knocks came from the Door before it opened, Revealing Mashima-sensei, Behind him were the entirety of Class B.

" Listen to me everyone. I'm gonna hand you your seating. Please listen attentively and calmly walk up to your seats and wait there. All your questions would be answered later " Mashima-sensei addressed his class the same way Chie-sensei did to us. *Seems like they have scripts... Interesting*

Soon, Mashima-sensei started arranging his Class and one by one they took their seats. Sakayanagi walked towards our row and sat beside Kanzaki on the left, One seat away from Honami. She leaned forward to look at me with a smug, I expected her to call for me but she didn't.

Soon, Katsuragi walked towards the Sixth row and sat in front of Sakayanagi. His bald head looked like a bump on the ground from Sakayanagi's pov since she is abnormally short. If my predictions about this exam is correct, Then it would be pretty annoying especially for her to see Katsuragi's bald head for hours

Yahiko walked towards the 8th row and sat behind Sakayanagi, Looking disgusted by the mere sight of her, *And she caught wind of that.*

She turned around and looked at him, Before smiling sadistically at him. As if pitying him from her wrath, *I don't know why but i'm feeling that this is the born of somebody*

Kumoro, Sakayanagi's servant sat 2 seats away from my right, She looked at me with a disgusted expression while i rose my hand as a greeting, She averted her gaze towards the podium ignoring my whole existence. *Well, Not that it matters anyway*

Soon Mashima-sensei's arrangements concluded and told us to wait and making ourselves at home. It was almost the same words Chie-sensei uttered..... *it was scary*

Knock Knock

Amidst the silence, Another knock came in and there emerged Sakagami with his Class. He went with the same procedures and same words, Like the other Teachers and started with the assignments.

Ryueen walked towards our row and sat one number away from me towards my left, One away from Kanzaki too. He turned towards me and smirked. I also expected him to greet me but he didn't. *It seems he also caught the hints they gave us and he is being cautious, As expected from someone like him and Sakayanagi.*

A Girl named Manabe sat beside Kumoro, 1 seat away from my

Right. Kumoro looked extremely uncomfortable with her and she didn't try to hide it, Manabu glared at her with killer intents before glaring at me too.

Soon Sakagami was done and Chabashira-sensei emerged behind him and went with the exact same procedures. And Class D filled the the remaining seats

Contrary to the three of our Classes, Class D were quite noisy about their seating arrangements and didn't think twice about voicing their displeasure.

Horikita came and filled the seat between me and Ryueen who was smirking like a mad lad. She ignored him and somehow somehow, I was the one who's getting glared at. *What in the world did i do ? Ryueen is right beside you, He was the one, Not me*

Kushida came to our row and filled the seat between Honami and Sakayanagi, Chatting loudly with the both of them. Sakayanagi totally ignored her while Honami only responded with small gestures and no words

" What the fuck ?! " Sudo blurted out as the realization hit him. " Fuck no, I'm not sitting with this Bastard- "

" Language Sudo ! " Chabashira-sensei yelled from the podium. " All of your seats are arranged and you cannot Change them, Sit quietly please "

Sudo clicked his tongue as he sat beside Ryueen, The only man he wished to not meet and he wasn't very happy about it. Ryueen was having the time of his life, It is a shame that he couldn't trash talk him and Horikita.

Now, 10 students occupied the seventh row, The seat on my right was still empty. However, It quickly changed when...

" Karuizawa, Are you gonna move ? " Chabashira-sensei yelled, Snapping the frozen Karuizawa in front of our row out of her thoughts.

" Ugh. Why am i seated here ?! With this Bitch nonetheless ! "

" Language Karuizawa ! Take your seat quietly ! " Ordered Chabashira-sensei. However, Karuizawa didn't budge

" Are you shitting on me ?! Why would i have to sit with those two out of everyone in this fucking School ?! " She didn't look very happy with sitting between the both of us. However..... *Something seems off here*

" Quite down and sit Karuizawa- "

" NO ! I'm not sitting with those idiots ! I order you to change my seat Chabashira-sensei ! Why can't i sit with Hirata-kun instead- "

" Please sit down and refrain from causing a scene Karuizawa-san "

" A Gentle yet forceful voice came from the bottom rows, It belonged to none other than Yousuke.

" B-But Hirata-kun... "

" You are in no position to order a Teacher Karuizawa-san. Everyone here is unhappy with their seating arrangements and we cannot do anything about it, So please, Refrain from causing unnecessary scenes " Yousuke ordered her to suck it up, But in a more gentle way.

" Ugh- " Karuizawa let an annoyed expression before sitting. " Don't you dare fuck with me, Both of you " She glared at both of us, I nodded. However, Manabe smirked and opened her mouth

" ... " Air came out as she instantly closed it again, Refraining from speaking. I turned around to find Ryueen glaring at her

" With this, All the Students of the first-year has been gathered " Mashima-sensei cleared his throat and walked ahead of the Teachers, Representing them and faced all of " Everyone. I welcome you to the Colossal Exam "

" WHAT ? " " Colossal ? " " What do you mean Sensei ? " Outbursts along those lines immediately echoed through the tense atmosphere, From the students of Class D.... *I guess defects always stay defects*

" Stay Calm everyo- "

" What do you mean stay calm ? This is outrageous ! How can we stay calm ?! " A boy named Miyamoto cut through Yousuke's attempts to calm everyone, Adding more fuel to the fire

" Ugh. Not sitting me with Hirata-kun and now you drop at us an exam ?! Are you guys nuts ?!! "

Class D couldn't contain their complains and started to loudly voice them, Some of them even dragged their seatmates into this. However, Everyone except them sat silent no matter what.

You would think that after all of this time, Even Class D would try and Respect the Teacher while explaining, And you aren't wrong. However, After what they all have been through, With the addition of this seating arrangement, It became too much for them

" Guys~ That's enough, Please Calm down and le- "

" Don't worry about a thing~ Keep complaining~ You guys are the one losing here~ " Chie-sensei exclaimed, Making all the noise fade dramatically

" W-What do you mean Hoshinomiya-sensei ? " Kushida spoke after she got cut by Chie-sensei's exclaim. She was uneasy, Making all the Simps in her Class worry too.

" Why the fuck are you scared ?! It's obvious she is bluffing to scar- "

" Yes Kushida-chan~ Your Points for this exam is already decreasing, If you keep going like this it~ would~ hit~.. " Chie-sensei rose her hand to her face and formed a circle with her thumb

and index fingers and winked " Ze~ro~ "

The Theater room instantly fell silent, And a tense atmosphere erupted.

" Sit down everyone. Allow me to explain " The students standing slowly descended towards their seats at Mashima-sensei's words. Soon he continued " Anyway, In the Colossal Exam, You'll be attending normal Classes for this Week. But.....As you've already guessed, All four Classes would be attending in the same hall and the seats won't change "

" WHAT ? " " That's insane... " Tsk. " Murmurs of displeasure suddenly erupted in Class D. But they were quickly shunned down. Mashima-sensei continued

" Yes. All of you would come here and attend Classes for this week and sit on your assigned seats. There is also a quiz by the end of this period " At his words, Many students got horrified. However, Mashima-sensei reassured " Don't worry, Nobody would be expelled..... For this quiz at least "

The newfound relief instantly vanished , As a tense and heavy atmosphere replace it.

" This is just a quiz, You won't get expelled for it. However, It would affect your Exam Points " Mashima-sensei continued. " All 4 Classes would start with the same number of points. It works exactly like Class Points, Each time you talk in Class you would lose points, Use your phone, Sleep and other acts would lead in a decrease of your Points "

Mashima-sensei looked around for any questions, But there was none. Class D were devastated, Since they already lost how many points with their outbursts earlier

" By the end of this test, The results of your Quiz would be added towards the total of your Exam points. And with that.... " Mashima-sensei spread a sheet of paper on the big blackboard for everyone to see. " All four Classes would be ranked based on their Exam points by the end of this week :

The Class that achieves the highest amount of Exam points out of the other three would achieve a reward of 50 Class points. Alongside a special point called protection point. "

All students were amazed by the reward. A Protection point, As the name suggests, It protects you from expulsion, It is extremely rare.

" However, The Class at the top must reach two conditions to achieve this point. The first one is being at the top, And second is getting more points than a threshold set by the school "

The students's enthusiasm Instantly dropped. In order for you to achieve such a thing, You'll need to surpass a certain threshold set

by the school, It is understandable, Considering it's pretty rare.

" Next. The Class in second place would receive a total of 15 Classpoints

The Class in third place would receive nothing

Finally, The Class that gets last place would be a subject to a 50 Class points and... " Mashima-sensei stopped, Building up a suspense

" If they fail on surpassing a threshold set by the school. They would need to choose a student to be **expelled** from their Class "

" C-Chose to be expelled ?! " " W-What ??!!!! " "

Murmurs erupted in Class D yet again, Making them lose more and more points. It is pretty ironic, Since they keep wasting more points while knowing they have the highest chance out of everyone to fail.

" Yes. But don't worry, All you need to do is score decently in this test, Not only in the quiz, But also in behavior " Mashima-sensei continued " The school would assess the chosen student and decide whether to expel him or not based on his results, Not only in this exam but also in the past semesters. If they deem expelling him useless the Class would get spared from choosing. And that concludes the Colossal exam, Do you have any questions ? "

After this, Many students started asking about some points they couldn't understand

In summary, We will be attending Classes in this amphitheater for the duration of this exam (1 Week) With the other Classes. By the end of this week, We'd have to take a written quiz and it would be added to our total points

We'd be assessed during this period with our behavior inside of those Classes, And it would reflect on the amount of Exam points we'd receive.

All Classes start with 1000 Exam points. The threshold for The protection point is a 970 and the threshold to avoid expulsion for the lowest Class is 750

This exam's challenge comes from the way the students are seated, It's no coincidence that all students are with someone they are at odds with. So it would be pretty difficult working with them

Another obstacle is the trap set by the school at the start of this session that everyone avoided with the exception of Class D.

I glanced towards one person and they glanced back, He smirked before facing the podium.

This is a good chance to assess the other Classes and pinpoint their weaknesses, *And i am not gonna pass on that*

This is gonna be fun

Arc 8 Chap 3 : Revolution ?

Kiyo POV

Today is Tuesday, The second day of the week, Which is akin to the second day of the Colossal exam.

It was only Yesterday when the explanation of the exam concluded and all students started with the lessons in this Room. The situation today is looking better than Yesterday since the students are already adapting. However, It is still comparable

The Room was enveloped in a tense atmosphere. All students, Except for a handful few were clearly uncomfortable with the seating arrangements, Making it hard for them to focus during lessons

This learning environment the school created is a very challenging one, I'm pretty sure that many of the students's blood is boiling, But they managed to keep a cool head at the very least. However, This doesn't mean that there was no outbursts, No, Far from it

All three top Classes kept a level head during this period, Except for Class D, Some short-tempered students couldn't take it anymore and went on a rampage midway through the sessions. Yousuke managed to contain most of them, But that doesn't mean that their points didn't decrease

Our Class points for this exam are protected, Talking or using phone here wouldn't damage them. However, It would damage the exam points, If damaged bad enough it would result in a decrease in Class points. However, Class D couldn't care less

As i stated before, Almost everyone in that Class already gave up on winning and they are trying to survive. Either hoping for a miracle to happen and transfer classes or hoping to graduate in peace. However, Little do they know that, *Both of those wishes are just a pipe dream*

During this past days, I kept an eye on every student in front of me and analyzed them, Assessing their weaknesses and strength. I didn't bother with the students behind me since most of the important figures are in the front rows, And turning around would cost us some points.

As expected from both of my Class and Class B, They kept a level head during this whole time and focused on the lessons instead of

allowing their displeasure to cloud their concentration. Both of our Classes seem pretty equal so far

Considering that Class C is next to defective, I was actually impressed by their performance. Most of their students's durability was even comparable to someone from my or Sakayanagi's Class. However, I couldn't help but notice some holes here and there, Especially from students like Ibuki and Ishizaki and some of Manabe's acquaintances.

" Creep " I was snapped out of my thoughts by a small mutter on my right, Horikita was glaring daggers at me. I don't know why but she was glancing at me pretty frequently, And she averts her gaze whenever i catch it. *Does she like me or something ?*

Ryueen turned his face to look at the both of us, When he saw Horikita's expression a wide smirk formed in his face, Seemingly enjoying this little encounter. Horikita awkwardly looked towards the podium and ignored the both of us

I turned to look at the girl on my other side, She was carrying her phone with her Right hand between her thighs while pretending to focus on the discussion.

I doubt that the School would go as far as to set Cameras below the tables to monitor us, So her strategy isn't bad. However, She should be aware that she is breaking the rules between two of her enemies and they might take advantage of this, Which is actually what happened

Manabe also noticed this and silently grabbed her phone and took a photo of Karuizawa playing with her phone. Karuizawa didn't fail to notice this and tried to force Manabe to delete it, But Manabe shrugged with a smirk. She would probably show it to a Teacher later and Class D would get more penalized

Karuizawa meekly backed away and turned her phone off and slid it back in her skirt before looking at the podium. Her expression was a mixture of fear and despair

Contrary to her usual behavior, She hasn't been acting like herself lately. Her usual bully attitude was nowhere to be seen, Instead, A weak pushover replaced it. It was pretty strange

Karuizawa noticed my stare and looked back at me with hostility, The fear and despair earlier almost completely vanished but it was still a lingering sensation. Suddenly, Her Hostility also disappeared as she widened her eyes, As if an idea formed in her head

That's when i decided to avert my gaze and focus back on my usual hobby of sniping people from faraway. However, Karuizawa still kept gazing at me while spaced out. I simply ignored her for the rest of today's session

She came back to earth after a minute or two and nodded to

herself. Suddenly, While looking towards the podium, She shifted in her seat and sat closer to me. When i looked at her she flashed me with a wide smile that i only saw in Kushida's face and some White Room instructors.

A wide bright smile that begs you to trust it. The fake brightness shown on the outside hides the malicious motives on the inside. When you see this, You know trouble is coming...

The rest of the day was pretty much like the first, Uneventful. I've spent the rest of the evening in my room doing some random stuff I've received a call or two from my Classmates but nothing happened other than that

*** Next day ***

Today is the third day of the colossal exam. I was walking down the corridors towards the amphitheater for our morning lessons

Things has been pretty peaceful in these past two days. All students are adapting to their new environment and focusing more on the lessons rather than fret over your seatmates. The outbursts drastically decreased in the second day compared to the first which is a sign for some maturity

My observations during this time has been quite fruitful, Since all classes are grouped up together, Detecting the weaknesses and the problems becomes much easier. However....

It's getting quite boring observing the students for hours without anything to do. I am quite thirsty for some action to happen, Ryueen and Sakayanagi are on passive mode at least on the surface. To be honest i have no clue whether they are plotting something or not, But whatever they throw at me i'll welcome it with open arms.

I have some plans up my sleeve to win this exam and claim that top spot alongside the protection point, Even though i don't necessarily need it, It would be pretty assuring to have it. However, Depending on how Sakayanagi and Ryueen would react, It is pretty likely that they'd reflect the damage to my Class too. Be it as it may, Even i can't protect 39 people at the same time

Besides, It wouldn't be very fun that way would it ?

Loud muffling

I was snapped out of my thoughts by some loud muffling sounds coming from the amphitheater. The closer i get to the door the louder and clearer the voices are, *It appears that a commotion has broke out.*

Walking inside the room, I was met with quite the scene. A Large group of students from Class C with angry looks were looking

towards one certain dragon with a fearsome smirk on his face, It was none other than Ryueen

Between him and the Group, Stood Hiyori with an anxious expression in her face, Looking at both parties while trying to play the mediator.

" I've had enough of this Ryueen ! " One single boy who appeared to be the leader of the group shouted, His name is Tokito. All the students behind him nodded

Tokito is the leader of the rebellion in Class C against Ryueen and his gang. It started back in October, Right after the end of the Sports Festival. His activities were surprisingly successful and now he managed to gather all the Class behind him and isolated Ryueen

However, I noticed Ishizaki alongside Ibuki and Kaneda who looked quite uncomfortable, I couldn't see Albert's expression but he was also facing Ryueen seemingly against him. The glares at Ryueen intensified However, He was unfazed, Smirking like a mad lad enjoying this situation

I also noticed Yabu Nanami and Saki Yamashita getting comforted by Manabe on the back of the group, Yabu had a blue eye, Same color as Saki's nose, Both of their faces was swollen with bruises.

There was some students from other Classes present in the Room. However, They were in their seats either spectating on revising some materials while pretending to not listen

" Kuku What's the big deal ? " Ryueen smirked, As he put his hands on his pockets

" We've had enough of your violent acts Ryueen ! " Tokito yelled, Repeating the same words again.

" Stop yelling the same shit over and over again you fucking pussy " Ryueen aimed at Manabe and her friends. " You want to be the leader and win this exam right ? Then stop using your influence to ram your fat ass against my fucking dick make sure to keep everyone silent during discussions. It shouldn't be too hard for you right ? "

Ryueen's exclamation took Tokito aback, He appeared calm on the outside but he was at a loss in the inside, And Ryueen didn't fail to notice this.

" My my, What do we have here ? " Sakayanagi arrived at the door behind me and exclaimed, Seemingly amused by this current situation. Behind her was her purple haired slave. " Good morning Ayanokouji-kun "

" Morning Sakayanagi " I greeted her back as both of us spectated the spectacle.

The show kept going in a back and fourth between Ryueen and

Tokito in a seemingly endless maze. Hiyori was too intimidated by their words to interfere as she sat on the sidelines looking at both parties with a sad expression

Ryueen noticed this and tried to end the debate multiple times. However, He was forcefully dragged to it yet again. Tokito wasn't going to back down until he gets what he wanted

" You seem to be quite enjoying this " I marked after gazing at Sakayanagi who had a sadistic smug on her face.

" Fufu why wouldn't i be, This is pretty fun " Sakayanagi exclaimed. Before adding " After all, This is the results of my own handy work "

" I see " It seems that Sakayanagi is the real mastermind behind this revolution in Ryueen's Class

Someone like Tokito couldn't possibly lead a huge revolution against Ryueen alone, Let alone be successful with it. However, He gained the favor of everyone in his Class and succeeded in leading a successful revolution.

I had my own doubts about this and it appears that my suspicions were true. Sakayanagi was the one pulling the strings of Tokito leading him to his success

" For the love of God Ryueen-kun. Please stop this " Pleaded Kaneda. Seemingly uncomfortable by all of this

" I won't. Whoever dares to talk mid sessions and damage our points would meet my wrath " Ryueen threatened.

" Tsk. " Tokito started losing it as he started to yell in a high-pitched noise, Annoying everyone in the room " This is it ! I've had enough of this ! If you keep going like that then.... " He suddenly stopped

" Kuku What's wrong Dogito ? Don't tell me your tongue got stolen by a kitty. Considering how much of a dog you are, It would be pretty funny if that happened " Ryueen's words triggered Tokito, Making him drop the words he swallowed moments before

" If you keep going like this then WE WILL DELIBERATELY THROW THIS EXAM " Tokito's voice echoed thorough the Room, Everyone's eyes were on him now. Sakayanagi got even more amused

Ryueen's smirk vanished for the first time, As an intimidating expression replaced it. Ryueen appears carefree on the outside. However, He actually cares about his Class. So this threat hit deep

" You won't dare to do that " Ryueen threatened. And for the first time in a while, Tokito smirked

" I have both the influence and the will to do that. If you keep going on with your antics I'm gonna order everyone to throw the exam and start chatting, Playing and extra.... Losing us more and

more points "

Tokito's argument was sound, He clearly has the influence to do it, Since he has the 'support' of the figures like Albert, Ishizaki and Ibuki he could employ Ryueen's tyrannic methods to fight him. However, There is a major flaw

" Kuku yeah you can go ahead and do that " Ryueen seemed to have noticed it and his smirk crept back to his face. Tokito's confidence shook a bit from the sudden change " I wouldn't be the one losing after all "

" What do you mean ? " Tokito blurted with a serious expression. It was Ryueen's turn to win

" Kuku Why should i tell you ? " Ryueen mockingly said, As he diverted his shoes towards the Rows. " You want to be the leader right ? Then figure it out yourself "

" B-But- "

" Ryueen-kun is right Tokito-kun " It was Hiyori who cut through Tokito, He looked at her with hostility before she started explaining " If you we do as you say then our points would fall below the threshold set by the school and we'll need to choose a student for expulsion "

" Yeah ? What's wrong with that ? We can get rid of him " Tokito voiced, Oblivious to the flaw. Hiyori Shook her head and was about to talk before Kaneda cut through her

" What she's saying is true Tokito-kun. If our points would fall below the threshold and choose Ryueen-kun for expulsion, There is a very high chance that the school won't accept it "

" What ?! Why won't they accept it- "

" You're pretty retarded aren't you ? " Ryueen yelled from his seat, Annoying Horikita beside him. " All i have to do is behave myself for a couple of days and score well on the quiz and voila ! I'm saved ! "

If Tokito implemented his strategy, Then Class C would run the risk of falling behind the threshold for expulsion and they'd have to choose a student to expel. Since Ryueen is an important figure in his Class, I doubt the school would expel him. In fact, He is the safest student in his Class

Since the school expels the student based on their performance in this exam, All Ryueen needs to do is keep floating above the minimum and if his Class falls behind the threshold and chooses him, He wouldn't be expelled since there is much more options to choose from. Everyone who talked and dragged down the Class would be an option better than Ryueen

However, Ryueen doesn't want that to happen, Even though his methods doesn't show it, He actually cares. He is pushing Tokito

into doing it in the hopes that he won't, But even if he did, He could choose him for expulsion and Tokito would kiss the school good bye. So it is a win-win situation for Ryueen, But he'd like to avoid that.

" Ugh " The Realization Hit Tokito as he slammed his hands on the wall in frustration. Before walking up to his seat, Soon everyone dispersed, Same as Sakayanagi's amusement as she walked towards the rows.

" Good morning Kiyotaka~! " A Cheerful voice echoed behind me as i received an embrace from my back, It from none other than my cute girlfriend Honami.

" Morning Honami " Honami responded by embracing me tighter, Pressing her chest against my back before letting go. We both talked for a bit before the Bell rang and Mashima-sensei waltzed inside for our first session

It seems that my prayers has been answered, And the fun is already starting

The commotion with Tokito earlier was just the start, As more and more fun would head towards my way, I can feel it.

It seems that Sakayanagi has some sort of a plan she's working on with her interference in Ryueen's Class and he is playing along

Even though it makes me sad that i cannot play with them Right now. However, Spectating what's happening Right now is more than enough..... *for now.*

I welcome you to Chapter 69 of this story

Arc 8 Chap 4 : Sudden Invitation

Kiyo POV

Kriiiing

" That's it for today's lesson. I recommend you go through the materials again " With those parting words, Sakagami nonchalantly left the Room for our Lunch Break

Horikita beside me instantly dashed out of the room, Followed up by multiple students. The rest either sat quietly in their seats or grouped up with their friends

After those long sessions of doing nothing i started stretching on my seat, Unsealing my strength and recovering my consciousness. However, I sensed some danger and instinctively leaned towards my Right, Dodging the fast kick thrown at my face

" How the fuck did you dodge that ? " Ryueen exclaimed, In amusement. A Wide smirk plastered on his face " Well anyway. How many times did i repeat that same sentence ? "

" This makes it your 36th time " I responded, Ryueen's smirk widened before he threw another Kick. Considering my position, I could easily dodge it again but there is a chance i could hit Karuizawa behind me so instead, I blocked it. " Nice hit " I complimented, Impressed by his strength.

" Nice hit my ass " Ryueen mocked, Before he turned around and took his leave. " Seems like i need more time to land a fucking hit. Honestly Kukukuku "

Ryueen didn't put his all in that kick but it was certainly strong, Way stronger than what he used to throw at me in the beginning of the year. Seems that his regular visits to the Gym is already paying off

Needless to say, He won't be able to beat me no matter how much he trains. But it is good seeing him try regardless, So i wouldn't mind sparing with him from time to time.

" I'm sorry if i disturbed you or anything " I stood up from my seat and tidied my clothes, Before apologizing to the person behind me.

" N-No...! You didn't " A panicking voice came from behind, Karuizawa was looking at me with shining eyes and Red tainted Cheeks.

I simply nodded and moved toward Honami who was waiting for me in the entrance with Shibata and the others

" Yo " I raised my hand and greeted them. At my greeting, Shibata, Amikura and Shiranami started chuckling for some reason.

" Hello Kiyotaka~ " Honami Chimed in and greeted me with a bright smile. " Alright~ Shall we go then~? " All of us nodded before heading towards the cafeteria

We engaged in a casual chatter on our way there, Since this amphitheater doesn't have a cafeteria, We had to march all the way back to school. It took us 10 minutes to reach there

Honami and i went and secured a table for all of us, While the others went to order their meals. Honami pulled two bento boxes from bag and handed me one

" Thank you " I gracefully accepted and placed it on the table.

" You're welcome~! " She exclaimed happily. However, She started checking her surroundings, When she saw no eavesdroppers she faced me with a stern expression " By the way Kiyotaka, I meant to ask you "

" Hmm ? " I rose an eyebrow, Giving her my full attention. Honami saw this and commenced

" I thought about something~ It's related to this exam " Honami said. I nodded, Indicating for her to continue " I think that If things stay the same way, We would have a great chance for winning this exam and getting that top spot~ "

It is not an exaggeration to say that our Class has the greatest chances of winning this exam, Our friendly nature provides us an easier time adapting to those kind of situations compared to the others Classes.

Sakayanagi is our only rival in this exam since her Class contains the most disciplined students, And with her amazing leading abilities, She could very well win this exam too. However, Honami isn't inferior to her in that side either, So it is a very close match-up

" Even if we get second place i don't think it would be pretty bad either " Honami continued. " However, If we manage to get first place and score enough points to get a protection point. Then i don't know whether take it or not "

It seems that Honami's problem lies around the Protection point, By the way she worded her phrase, I can deduce that she at least stumbled upon this topic once or twice.

All of my Classmate put a great deal of trust in her. They would reject the Protection point and give it to her instead, Since she is our Leader. However, She is having an internal conflict whether to accept it or not and she is seeking some guidance from me.

" I think you should take it " I decided to offer my honest opinion. " You are the Leader, So it is only natural if you tak- "

" No, That's not what i meant " I was a bit surprised at her

sentence. With a determinant look, She spoke " I was contemplating whether to give it to you or not "

" Give it to me ? " Honami nodded.

" I thought you might need it more than i do "

" What makes you say that ? " I was a bit intrigued to know her reasoning. She took a glance around her again, Making sure there is no eavesdroppers.

" I thought that your Father might try to do something to expel you " She spoke in a low pitched voice, Respecting my- No, Our privacy, Which was much appreciated " I don't know him as well as you but i don't think he will leave you alone~ I might be overthinking this but i am worried~ "

Her worries were justifiable, Since the impression *that man* gives is someone who gets what he wants no matter what the cost, And it is not wrong in a sense. Honami's intuition is right on the money

However, I sense no reason to involve her, In fact, Involving her would only cause some unnecessary worry for her.

I didn't want to involve anyone in my mess, Not even Ryueen and Sakayanagi who ended up being dragged here, And probably some other people too, So let alone her.

However, If what the Fortune Teller said was true, Then she would get dragged in it Regardless. If that happens then i'll put my all into protecting her, No matter what the cost.

If it comes to that then..... *I would be ready to cut my ties with her if it means that she would be safe*

Of course, I would try to evade that outcome as much as i can. Even though the Fortune Teller said otherwise, There is still a small percentage of that happening and i would like to ensure that it is as close to a 0 as it gets

But for now, I don't mind if you get mad at me, But I'm gonna lie to you. I'm sorry Honami

But that's just how much i love you

" Good morning Ayanokouji-kuuun~ "

It was the Fourth day of the Colossal exam, Akin to the day before last. When i walked up to my seat in the amphitheater, I was greeted by rather an unusual person

" Morning..... Karuizawa ? " Karuizawa Kei, Hirata's Girlfriend was sitting in her seat, Scribbling something on her book. She flashed me with a bright smile

" Why do you look so perplexed ? "

" It's just that you never greeted me before, So i was a bit surprised "

" You don't have to be Ayanokouji-kun~ You are Hirata-kun's friend Right~? So there is no need to be hostile " Karuizawa's bright smile was blinding. However, I wasn't too naive to fall in her trap " Why are you standing ? Just sit " She patted the space beside her, Urging me to sit.

" I'll pass " I rejected before putting my bag on my seat. " I have someone to talk with. Sorry for the inconvenience "

" Awww~ " She pouted in disappointment, Before her 'smile' came back to her face " It's no problem~ I don't want to annoy Ayanokouji-kun~ "

I left my seat towards Honami's and sat beside her, Kushida is currently talking with some of her Classmates at the front so i don't think she would mind. We talked for a bit before i decided to help her with her studies.

The Quiz is right by tomorrow and it would contain every lesson we took in this Hall, It is important since it could determine the winner between us or Sakayanagi since our performance are pretty much equal

" Oh ? Are you guys studying as well ? " Midway through my tutoring session, Karuizawa spoke while looking towards us.

" Mhm~ " Honami nodded. At that, Karuizawa took a quick glance at me before looking towards Honami, With shining eyes.

" Do you mind if i join you guys ? I really can't understand anything written here " Karuizawa said with a bitter smile. Me and Honami looked towards each other, Before she smiled and nodded at her request

Karuizawa instantly moved towards my side and placed her materials there before making herself comfortable, Looking happier than usual. However, I noticed Manabe alongside her injured friends Yabu and Saki were looking towards our direction while gritting their teeth. *I see*

" So what do you not understand Karuizawa-san ? " Honami asked, Taking Karuizawa off-guard.

" Ah ummm..... " She opened her copybook where she keeps her notes and scrolled through the empty pages, When she found something she instantly stopped " This "

She pulled her book up and put it right in front of me to show Honami. Meanwhile, Her face was itching closer and closer to mine while her arms were pressing against mine too, In a seemingly intentional way. I averted my face away from her which caught Honami's, She noticed my discomfort and decided to speak up. However, Before she could, Another person did

" Karuizawa-san. What are you doing ? "

" Eh~? Um..... Nothing ! Haha " Karuizawa panicked and instantly put some space between us. The person narrowed their eyes in suspicion making Karuizawa even more flustered " Umm... Good morning Matsushita-san ! "

The person passing by was none other than Matsushita Chiaki, My spy in Class D and one of my future Classmates.

" Are you guys studying ? " Matsushita asked, Trying to change topics. To Karuizawa's rescue she nodded violently, Matsushita's eyebrows widened slightly, As her expression got even more delighted. *Why do i have a bad feeling about this ?* " Do you mind if i join you as well~? "

" N-No ! There is no problems " Karuizawa instantly blurted out, Apparently forgetting that she is a guest here. Matsushita nodded before flashing me with a mischievous smile, She dashed forward and instantly put herself in the tight space between me and Karuizawa

All what Karuizawa could do was stare at her in disbelief, Matsushita made herself more comfortable beside me and smiled mischievously. I sighed internally

I tutored the three of them while being in the cross-hair of the boys's Glares. Most notable are Hondo and Okitani who were cursing me quite loudly actually, They apparently have replaced the two retards in their Class

Much more to my pain, When Sakayanagi noticed this she also joined in and asked me to tutor her, The glares intensified as i broke in a light sweat. Horikita gave me a weird look while Ryueen was enjoying my pain

Why did it end up like this ? I only tutored Honami.....

Kriiiiiing

The Bell Rang, Signalling the end of the day.

After gathering my stuff, I made my way towards the entrance, Getting ready for my meeting later on.

During lunch break, After Rejecting some girls's invitations for eating lunch, Namely Karuizawa and her group, I was approached by a rather peculiar person. A Person that i never expected to issue contact with me, They requested a secret meeting between us in a inconspicuous place

It sounded pretty serious, At least for them, So i agreed to it. And now i was going to leave the door, However, Someone stopped me

" Kiyotaka~! " Honami called out right before i leave the Room. I turned around to face her

" Yes Honami ? "

" Where are you going~? " Honami posed her question, I was somewhat perplexed.

" Did you already forget ? I have a meeting with someone " Honami narrowed her eyes, Before they expanded.

" Oh Right~! " The Realization hit Honami. However, It was pretty obvious to me that she is faking it " Do you mind if i accompany you ? "

" I don't, But the person Requested my presence alo- "

" Hey, Excuse us " An Impatient voice came behind Honami, And before she knew it, She was pushed at the floor. I instinctively leaped forward and held her before she could fall

The culprit, Manabe and her friends left the Room indifferent to their surroundings, Looking like they are in a hurry. However, An ominous aura was leaking from them, And i instantly knew what's going on

" Umm~ Thank you~ " Honami thanked while tidying herself with a cute blush on her face.

" Honami-chan~! " Amikura yelled with a worried expression after she witnessed what happened. She came running towards Honami " Are you okay ? "

" Yes~ I'm alright~ Thank you for your worry Mako-chan " Honami smiled warmly, Confirming her previous statement. Amikura's uneasy expression slowly vanished into her usual bubbly one.

" That was a close one Ayanokouji-kun " Shibata claimed. " If it wasn't for your reflexes who knows what could've happened "

I would've probably ran after them and slaughtered them. Of course, Those are my thoughts and i didn't voice them out

" Yep~ What's wrong with them Anyway ? " Amikura exclaimed, Looking towards the entrance with a disgusted expression. However....

" Hey Kanzaki " I walked up towards Kanzaki who was spectating from the sidelines. He notices me and gives me his attention " I need your help with a little something.... "

After my conversation with Kanzaki, Alongside Honami, I set my way towards the meeting place

Honami decided to not tag along in the condition that i owe her one. She just used this incident to get another favor from me, Well it's not like it's the first time she does this. She would most likely ask for a date or something along those lines which isn't bad, In fact, It sounds good.

As for my conversation with Kanzaki, This is just a small test for him to see what would he do in that sort of situation. Although there is multiple choices, I'm sure that he would do just fine

" You're late " Arriving at the meeting place, I spotted the

silhouette of the person, With a crossed arms she impatiently tapped her foot while leaning against the wall with an annoyed expression. When she spotted me she instantly scolded me

" Sorry, Something happened " I apologized. It seemed like it was good enough for her. " Well, I'd like to cut straight to the chase. Why did you call me here....

[illegible]

Horikita Suzune ? "

Arc 8 Chap 5 : Prelude

Kiyo POV

" Why did you call me here, Horikita Suzune ? " Horikita was the peculiar person who called me here during lunch. She simply pulled away from the wall and faced me with her usual expression

" I see that you don't want to waste time, Well then, I'll cut straight to the chase " She flipped her hair before glancing at me again, We stared at each other with both of our poker faces before her expression turned somewhat smugly " I want to compete with you, Ayanokouji-kun "

" Compete with me ? " Horikita nodded.

" Yes, I want you to compete against me on Tomorrow's quiz test " Horikita clarified. I pretended to doze off for a moment and Horikita didn't fail to notice it and got even more smugly.

" I see. So, What's the conditions ? " After sufficient time i asked, Facing her.

" I'm glad you asked " Horikita flipped her hair again, Gaining more confidence " If i score higher than you, Then you'd admit that i'm superior than you and apologize for all the rude stuff you said or did to me. In front of the whole school "

" I see.. " I pretended to doze off again before facing her again. " But what if i win ? "

" I highly doubt that. However.... " Horikita continued " If you win then i'll reward you with all of my Private points. You used to accept challenges right ? So this is another one "

" I see... "

I may appear apathetic in the outside, But i'm actually 'LMAOing' on the inside. Honami used this expression once while messaging with me, Apparently it stands for 'Laughing my ass off' Although I believed that it's impossible to laugh your ass off, But Honami explained that it is an expression used to show that you found something hilarious. *Apparently Honami found me as something hilarious, Sigh, What a pitiful existence i am*

Back at the topic in hand, Horikita's move may sound like a joke, But it is actually a nice move.

Considering the fact that Horikita kept a close eye on me since we are seated next to each other. During these past four days, I did almost nothing except for observing the students and assessing them

while ignoring the lessons taught by the Teachers.

Obviously, Horikita took note of this and tried to use it against me in order to try and gain her Brother's recognition. Of course, There is always the option of refusing. However, She also covered it by recording this conversation from the start, So if i ended up refusing which is a pretty likely case in her head, She would use this conversation and convince Manabu that i was scared from her. *It seems that she doesn't know Manabu pretty well, What a sad situation she is in*

However, If i ended up accepting. She would score higher than me since i wasn't paying attention and show it to Manabu that she managed to beat me someone he recognized.

Her plan wasn't bad by any means. However, She heavily underestimated me. It was a valiant attempt from her. *If beating me was as easy as this then i would've been defeated multiple times in the past. Horikita Suzune, You should know your place*

" Well then, I accept " Horikita's eyes widened a little, Before i felt an excited aura coming out from her. " However, I don't want your money "

Horikita's internal celebrations came to a halt, As she unconsciously narrowed her eyebrows, Aura turning serious, Even more than before. Seeing this i stated my request

" Instead, I want you to do something for me "

" Do something for you ? " I nodded before starting slowly approaching her. She stared at me for a bit before backing away, Trying to get away from me with a disgusted expression " Ew, I never took you for a pervert. Get away from me "

" I'm flattered. But don't worry, I don't want anything sexual " Horikita stopped backing away, As a relieved expression showered over her, But instantly went dry.

" Then what do you want ? "

" First, Before i state my condition. I want you to turn off your recorder "

" Wha-?! " Horikita got flabbergasted. However, She instantly tried to calm herself down" W-What do you mean by Recorder ? "

" You know exactly what i mean " When we were close enough, I extended my arm towards her blazer's pocket. She instantly slapped it away

" F-Fine.... Stop it " Horikita pulled out her phone and turned off the recorder. She was still surprised that i managed to see through her " Then what do you want ? If it's anything sexual then I'll report yo- "

" Don't worry. I won't ask for such a thing " I said. Horikita put some space between us and faced me with a stern expression,

Indicating for me to continue " I want you to..... "

" WHAT ? " Horikita blurted in shock, Eyes went Wide as a surprised expression showered her. " I... I can't do that ! "

" Why not ? It's nothing sexual right ? " I rose my eyebrows and looked at her.

" Y-Yeah... B-But- "

" What ? Is there something wrong with this ? " I asked. " This shouldn't be a problem for you right ? In fact, It would help you greatly, I'm basically offering a win-win situation for you "

" Yes there is " Horikita meekly said. " I simply can't do that "

" Why ? "

" Because..... " Horikita's mouth hung open, Her cheeks had a taint red in them. *Wtf ?*

" Too bad then. " I said, Horikita glanced at me. I pulled out my phone which had a recorder on it and started speaking in front of it " You see Manabu ? Your sister rejected a win-win offer just because she is a lesbia- "

" NO ! " Horikita yelled. Her emotions were in a conflict, She meekly extended her hand to try and grab my phone but i simply took one step away. She was too weak to move

" What is it ? " I asked her. Raising my eyebrows " Am i wrong ? You rejected my offer because of your feelings, And towards that specific person too. I can't wait to see the look at your Brother's face when he realizes that " I chuckled a little, Playing the sadist.

Horikita was simply in a mess Right now, Her emotions were flowing everywhere.

" Why.... Why are you doing this ? " Horikita meekly asked.

" I'm glad you asked " I switched my tone to the confident one Horikita used earlier " You simply rejected my offer and i am quite mad about it. So, I'm just gonna show this to Manabu and all the work you've put in receiving his acknowledgment would..... " I bent forward and looked deep into Horikita's eyes, She stared back at me. I pulled my hand towards my face and gestured for something to go away " Perish..... "

Man i'm quite enjoying this

Horikita lowered her head and looked at the ground, Her usual cold aura was no where to be found. It was quite amusing seeing the usual strong headed Horikita conflicted like this, Of course, She was in a strong dilemma according to her. Would she either lose all the hard work she put into receiving Manabu's acknowledgment or lose the trust of that specific person she holds dear for some reason

" I have a question.... " After two minutes of internal conflict. Horikita rose her head and looked at me " What would you do with *that thing* if i brought it to you ? "

" I'll simply use it to "

" I see..... " Horikita said, Before she stood up. " You covered every escape route i have, You used my own deal and pushed me to a corner and forced me to do your work. As i would expect from someone Nii-san acknowledged "

" Then why didn't you take proper precaution if you thought of me that highl- "

" No, I didn't think of you that highly " Horikita cut through me, She lowered her head a little " It seems that i heavily underestimated you, You are someone clearly superior to ordinary people "

" I gue- "

" But I'm not ordinary. You're still not at my level " Horikita rose her head and looked at me, Her superior aura slowly got back. " Now that i know what you're capable of, I'll be careful next time "

Horikita said before nonchalantly walking past me, Before she would walk past the corner, She stopped and took a final glance at me

" I will give you what you want. However, That is IF you won tomorrow. I hope you don't forget that "

" Whatever you say.... " With those words, Horikita left.

Not long after, I followed right in her tracks. I turned my recorder off and slid my phone down my pockets. However, I instantly received a message, I grabbed it again and check the contents

" Seems that everything went well " I muttered looking at the contents of the message. Before sliding it down

Good job..... Kanzaki

Today is Friday, The final day of the Colossal exam.

It has been 4 days since the start of our Third Semester and we almost already passed our first special exam.

This exam has been hectic to say the least, Many students had a tough time. However, Many managed to surprisingly keep themselves in check during this whole time. The most surprising one was actually Sudo

He was seated between Ryueen, The fiercest student on the whole school who almost managed to destroy his carrier. And Kanzaki who is always serious and hard to bond with, So it is an understatement to say that it was uncomfortable. However, Sudo

only had 3 to 4 outbursts which is pretty surprising

Speaking of Kanzaki, It seems that he managed to save Karuizawa from Manabe and her friends. From his message Yesterday, He took a video of them bullying her and used it to blackmail them, Not into stopping, But into becoming his spies. I would be lying if i said i wasn't surprised, But i was impressed.

As of Karuizawa, He managed to at least gain her favor. She is someone with a considerable influence over Class D so making her your ally just like this is a huge win. *Kanzaki has passed my test, Could've been better but it's pretty good overall*

" Good Morning Ayanokouji-kuuuun~ " Speaking of the devil.

" Hello Karuizawa " Karuizawa with a beaming aura smiled, Which was much more genuine than how it used to be. She dropped her bag on top of the table and jumped beside me " You seem to be happier than usual "

" Of course i would " She exclaimed.

" So they stopped ? " She nodded enthusiastically. " That's good then. I'm sorry i didn't come Yesterday, I had a meeting to attend "

" No no no, Don't apologize Ayanokouji-kun. After all, I should be the one because i caused some trouble for you~ " She said while playing with her hair. I simply nodded and sat there in silence

Horikita arrived Shortly after our conversation, She glanced at me before nodding slightly, I nodded back. *Man Horikita moves fast*

" Kukuku if it isn't Mr. HaremKing " Ryueen arrived and threw a random nickname at me. *Harem ? What's that ?*

" Ryueen, What does Harem mean ? "

" Eh ? " Karuizawa behind me blurted it shock. Ryueen was about to sit but stopped midway and dramatically turned to look at me, His expression saying ' *Bitch what ?* ' Horikita was pretty much the same

" Are you fucking serious ? " Ryueen said, I nodded. He scanned my expression once more before his trademark grin crept back into his face. No, It was even wider than usual " Bro, How dense can you get ? "

" Dense ? What does dense have to do with Harem ? " Horikita facepalmed as Ryueen exploded in a violent Laughter, Garnering everyone's attention. Soon, Honami entered the Hall and approached our row, With a confused expression written on her face

" Ummm~ Good morning ? " Honami greeted, In confusion. " What is going on here ? "

" Kukuku Hey Ichinose. You really want to know ? " Ryueen asked, Still chuckling to himself. Honami confusingly looked at him " Then you should ask your Boyfriend Right there " He pointed

towards me before starting to laugh yet again

" Kiyotaka~ What is happening here~? " Honami looked at me for clarification. I sighed

" I don't know myself. I only asked what does 'Harem' means and they started laughing " Ryueen's laughter intensified as it looked like he was about to choke. Honami However, Widened her eyes " Do you know what it means Honami ? "

All the students were watching us, As if we were a comedy show. It is understandable when Ryueen laughs like a maniac, It is an indication of a good show right ?

" Yes, I am aware of what it means " I was about to open my mouth but Honami spoke, Anxiously " But you don't have to know Kiyotaka, It's something.... I don't know how to explain it, But you don't have to learn that "

" Why ? I'm curious about how it feels to have a Harem "

" NO ! " Honami blurted " It's something bad Kiyotaka ! It would make me super angry ! Do you want me to be angry ?! "

" Oh ? No, I don't want to anger you "

" Then forget about it Okay ? " Honami's desperate attempts to prevent me from learning this thing has reached me, As i nodded. Honami sighed in relief Before she realized that she yelled too much and got embarrassed for it

I guess i would never know what does 'Harem' means or gets it. Well, As long as it doesn't make Honami mad then it's all worth it.

" What's wrong Ichinose ? Why did you lie to him ? You know that having a Harem is something good Right ? "

" Shut up Ryueen-kun. Don't corrupt my Boyfriend ! "

" Kuku "

Ryueen was having a good time teasing the both of us, Soon, All the students arrived and our last morning session together..... Commenced

I decided to split this Chapter into two since it took way more words than i originally thought to complete it. Anyway, I wanted to ask you guys for your opinion on something

How do you feel about the chapters's length ? Are they too long

too short ? I usually write around 2.5K words while sometimes i surpass the 3K

Do you want the chapters to be longer ?

Or stay the same size ?

Adieu

Arc 8 Chap 6 : The Attack

Honami POV

The bell Rang, Signalling the start of the Lunchie~ Munchie~!

If you didn't know, It stands for 'Lunch Break' But i named it that way for multiple reasons.

1. It's boring
2. I get to spend time with my Kiyotaka
3. I get to eat with my Kiyotaka
4. I get to chat with my Kiyotaka.... + 99 Others

I also did it for the off-chance that i get to eat Kiyotaka for lunch. However, We can't do that today

Since today is the day of the Quiz, All of my Classmates decided to hold a quick study group during lunch break inside this amphitheater room. Since almost everyone leaves during lunch break, I thought it was the best place to do it

It was optional, But all of my Classmates decided to attend. Currently, Only me and Kiyotaka are sitting on the back rows, Waiting for our Classmates to arrive from the cafeteria

" This week has been tough huh ? " I crossed my arms on top of the desk and rested my head on top of it, Looking towards Kiyotaka. He faced me with his golden mesmerizing eyes, Making my body get hotter.

" It has " Kiyotaka answered. Before extending his hand to poke my cheeks " But it's gonna pass, Just like any other obstacles we faced "

Kiyotaka traced his fingers down to my lips and gently caressed them, Making me excited internally. Sensing my opportunity i opened my mouth and ate his finger, Kiyotaka didn't show much of a surprise and tried to escape, However i didn't let him. His eyes darted towards mine, Ordering me to let go, But instead, I grinned.

" Sho Delicious Mmmmm~ " I expressed, While closing my eyes and enjoying his finger. *You know what, I take back what i said, I can even eat Kiyotaka here*

" Cannibal ? " Kiyotaka asked in his monotone voice, He tilted his head and looked at me. I almost let go from how cute he looked but i stood my ground

Feeling satisfied i pulled away, A string of saliva came out connecting the both of us, I licked my lips savoring their taste in

front of him.

" You really are cannibalistic " Kiyotaka teased.

" Little did you know~ " I teased back, Grinning widely at him. Kiyotaka tried to look horrified, However he failed miserably due to his poker face, He smiled bitterly at me chuckling at him.

" Sorry to keep you waiting Honami-chan ! " That voice belongs to Chihiro-chan who recently arrived towards our row alongside Mako-chan and our other friends, With their food trays in hand. With the exception of Yume-chan who cooks her own food and went for company

" Don't worry about it Chihiro-chan~ We're just gonna wait a bit for the rest of our Classmates. So feel free to take a seat " All 9 of them took their seats and placed their food there. This was our cue to start eating " Itadakimasu "

We all said in unison before digging into our food, Today, I made pasta with meatballs alongside some boiled eggs and a salad. Kiyotaka gave me a positive rating, Even though i expected it since he always does that, Somehow it always makes me happy.

My culinary skills has been improving ever since i started cooking for him, Since i was more motivated to learn new recipes and improve my skills to serve Kiyotaka the best dishes. I wasn't bad at cooking per say, But i wanted to get better and better

" Ne Ne~ Ayanokouji-kun " Mako-chan after drinking some of her juice, Called out to Kiyotaka who looked at her. " Aren't you getting tired of Honami-chan's Cooking ? "

" What do you mean ? " After gulping some of the spaghetti, Kiyotaka asked, Unsure about the meaning.

" I thought that you might get bored from eating Honami-chan's food everyday. " Mako-chan continued. " Since we are eating the school's cafeteria food everyday, I kinda got bored from it. So i thought it might be the same for you~ "

" I see. Well for your answer then no, I'm not bored " Kiyotaka answered in front of Mako-chan's grinning face. " If you're bored then why don't you ask Shibata to cook for you ? I heard he is a pretty good chef "

" Eh ? " Shibata-kun blurted in shock, His eyes snapped towards Kiyotaka. " W-What ? "

" What ? Didn't you tell us that you're pretty good at cooking ? " Kiyotaka asked. " During our time in the cruise ship, You told us, Me, Kanzaki and Hamaguchi that you were decent at cooking. "

" N-No.... I never said that ! " Shibata-kun denied it sharply. It was pretty obvious that Kiyotaka is lying

" So you were lying back then ? He told us, Right ? " Kiyotaka turned towards Kanzaki-kun and Hamaguchi-kun. Both of them

stared back at him before looking at each other, Hamaguchi-kun's lips curled up a bit

" Yes, He told us that much "

" WHAT ? "

" What do you mean by what Shibata ? You forgot already ? " Kanzaki-kun continued on the opening Hamaguchi-kun created and teased a Flustered-looking Shibata-kun who was looking at them in disbelief

" I swear i never said something like tha- "

" Ara~ Sou-kun~ You never told me about it " Mako-chan intervened, Grinning like a mad lad at Shibata-kun

" Why would he tell you about it ? " It was Kiyotaka who spoke, Mako-chan turned her line of sight towards him. " As far as i'm concerned, I see no reason for him to tell you, You're not his girlfriend are you ? "

" Yes~ I'm not his Girlfriend..... *For the time being* " Mako-chan grinned, With a slightly flushed cheeks. She looked towards Shibata-kun to check his reaction and he was paralyzed. Mako-chan instantly snapped back at Kiyotaka " Ara~ Does that mean Ayanokouji-kun is hiding secrets from Honami-chan ? "

" Who knows "

Our banter kept going for a while until all of our Classmates gathered and we started with our study group. The amphitheater contained only little people from the other classes so it wasn't very bad

Since everyone in our Class doesn't lack academically, We didn't need any tutors, Instead, Everyone was tutoring each other, Explaining certain parts the other didn't understand. It turned into a discussion instead of a study group

It was very heartwarming and pleasant seeing all of my Classmates get along together and help each other, it is making me extremely happy and proud, Very proud that i was a leader of such a Class. I felt like crying on the spot, However, I couldn't allow that.

I hope we can all graduate together as Class A, Without losing anyone. This is my wish as their Leader, And my job to make it happen, It is a pretty rocky and hard route, But together we can do it. I am sure of it

" Sayo-chan, Is something wrong ? " I was snapped out of my thoughts by Yume-chan who asked that question with a concerned tone.

" I'm fine, It's just a small stomach ache i think it wou- "

" Mako-chan ? Are you okay ? " Shibata-kun asked Mako-chan who was looking quite pale. She was clutching her stomach, Seemingly in pain. *What is going on here ?*

Not long after, Another one of my classmates started feeling ill.
2....3.....16.... *What ?!*

Almost everyone fell ill, The only ones who were standing were Me, Kiyotaka and Yume-chan. I rushed at my Classmates trying to aid them. However, They all started leaving towards the bathrooms. I followed them right behind

What is happening here ?

Kiyo POV

After the strange Spectacle that just occurred, Honami left towards the Bathrooms. Leaving me alone with a anxiously confused Kobashi

" Ayanokouji-kun, Do you know what's going on ? " She asked me, I simply ignored her for the time being and walked up towards the food trays left by our Classmates

I checked the food first before smelling the drinks, That's where i picked up the toxic sense, I checked the other drinks and they had the same smell, On each one of them.

" Kobashi you cook your own food Correct ? " Kobashi anxiously nodded, Waiting for my verdict. " Go call Chie-sensei, Somebody poisoned the drinks "

Kobashi instantly left the amphitheater with her phone in hand, Calling for Chie-sensei, Leaving me with the curious gazes of the people inside. They seemed to be fine with their own meals, Which confirms my theory even more.

However, I was conflicted on the inside. *Something seems strange here*

This isn't the first time our Class deals with a situation like this. However, The only difference this time is that i can confirm that this isn't Ryueen's doing

Since our Classmates dealt with this before, They would keep an eye out for any suspicious movement whenever they come in contact with any student from outside Class, Trying to prevent the spectacle of the Sports Festival from happening again

Even if this is Ryueen's doing, It should be 3 to 4 students who gets injured at max. Probably from being clumsy or missing the decisive moment, It shouldn't be this big.

Yet, Everyone who ate the food from the Cafeteria got intoxicated. If everyone's food was poisoned under those circumstances then it must be..... From the kitchen itself

It would make sense that way. However, If that's the case then..... Every student who ate from the Cafeteria food would be poisoned.

I sent a message to a certain Kouenji who instantly picked up and

replied, Confirming my theory.

I was sure that Kouenji isn't poisoned since he almost always spends his time in Cafes with the Senpais, And it seems that he also noticed this strange turn of event.

However, Something bugged me. If they poisoned the whole school's food, Then for what purpose ? If it's not a student's doing then what would the Chefs/Staff members get from thi..... I see

A Theory formed in my head, The more i think about it the more convinced i get by it. However, There is only one way to confirm it

I left the Amphitheater Room and walked up towards the Bathroom areas, I'm sure that Kobashi would deal with the Poisoned food stuff, So i'll leave it to her

However, On my way there i felt the presence of somebody tailing me, And it didn't appear like they were trying to hide it either. I changed my plans and walked up towards an inconspicuous part of Campus where no cameras were present and waited there, Not long after the person tailing me revealed themselves

" My. A Healthy Student ! " The person exclaimed in astonishment. He was a tall adult with quite an ugly face " Do you perhaps know what is the source of this whole dilemma ? Surely since you managed to evade it Right ? "

" Yes i do. " I responded, Before pointing at him. " You were the one, Acting Director Tsukishiro "

" My, It seems that you know who i am. I certainly didn't expect that " Tsukishiro played dumb. " I was tasked for investigations for this case, I thought that you might know something but it seems that you're just bluffing "

" I do know something. That a Student could never pull such a feat, It must be a Staff member "

" My, What an interesting theory. Let's hear it " Tsukishiro smiled, Urging me to start.

" Our year, Or at the very least our Class, Wouldn't fall for the same feat twice since we already did and suffered enough from that. So you'd think that at least most of them would be vigilant. However, Vigilant or not, Everyone fell for it. So the food must be put in by a staff member "

" My, That's an interesting response. But for what reason could they do it ? "

" Simple. Since there is a certain somebody who wants to kick me and Kouenji out of the School, They would sabotage our exam so Class D would lose more points than it should be and fall below the threshold. And also, To prevent me from gaining a protection point so their job would be easier in the Future " I said. Tsukishiro was smiling with his closed eyes. " Am i right..... **Tsukishiro ?** "

" My, It seems that you've figured it out. As expected from someone like you, Ayanokouji-kun " Tsukishiro's smile didn't waver as he started applauding for me

" So what did you want to talk with me about ? I'm quite busy Right now " I decided to cut straight to the chase.

" I know that " Tsukishiro's playful and happy tone instantly disappeared, Into your average White Room instructor. His expression got more serious " It seems that you've managed to restrain your Father's movements for the time being "

" Me Restraining that man ? Don't make me laugh " It was my turn to play dumb, Tsukishiro smiled as his aura turned back into his playful one.

" Unfortunately, It seems that you take me for a fool Ayanokouji-kun, It's quite sad " Tsukishiro expressed, Wiping an invisible tear. " It seems that you moved in order to protect a certain someone, It's quite considerate coming from you Ayanokouji-kun "

There was surprisingly a very weird atmosphere between the two of us, It wasn't unpleasant yet it wasn't pleasant either. You could say it's a halfheartedly serious, But playful at the same time. It is quite hard to describe it

" However... " This weird atmosphere instantly vanished, As a tense one replace it. It wasn't Tsukishiro's expression or Aura who changed it, It was the weight of his words " While being considerate is good. But you aren't considerate enough with your moves Ayanokouji-kun, They could prove fatal and destroy the White Room "

" I'm being as considerate as i can get " I shrugged. " It was you guys who got in my way. If you kept barking inside your houses, No one would be here "

" I don't understand your motives Ayanokouji-kun, Is it because of her ? "

" This isn't something i expect from a 47 Years old Virgin to understand "

" My, You're quite hurtful " Tsukishiro's expression turned serious again. " However, I'll have you know Ayanokouji-kun. That your Father never intended to hurt her family in the first place "

" Yeah, Excuses sure come in handy does it ? " I said before picking up my pace and walking past him. " Both of your words are one of a kind. So it's better if i think of both of you as one. I don't hate The White Room nor i like it, But i hate the idea of returning to it. I prefer to live my life the way i want "

" But you know that's not possible for you. Right Ayanokouji-kun ? " I felt something snap inside of me. I stopped dead on my tracks and turned around, Tsukishiro was looking at me in a smile,

Anticipating my next words.

" You may be right. However, I'll make it possible " Tsukishiro thought that those were the last words. However, My next words made him feel despair. My eyes unconsciously darkened thinking about...

" Even if it means getting rid of the roots "

At that evening, All Classes went back to school and gathered inside of their Classes. Waiting for their Homeroom Teachers to announce the Results of the Colossal Exam

Many students were still pale from the poison they ate during Lunch Break, So our Class's atmosphere was unusually somewhat gloomy. I'm pretty sure it's the same case with the other Classes

As a result of Tsukishiro's attack, Almost everyone was absent during the Afternoon period, Resulting in all of our points to drastically drop, Just like the sales of the Second-year of Classroom of the elite Light Novel.

However, Most of them gathered some strength to at least pass the quiz at the end. Even though they wouldn't score that high, It's better than getting 0 by default.

The School would be held accountable for this incident, As some investigations commenced. However, It's pointless to investigate a crime when the investigator himself is the culprit. I'm sure that Tsukishiro would manage to squeeze by anyways, I would expect nothing less from that man's most capable henchmen.

THUD

A loud bang snapped me out of my thoughts, Drawing everyone's attention towards the door, Where a very upset looking Chie-sensei slammed the door open and entered. Carrying an envelope

The atmosphere turned even more tense. We've never seen Chie-sensei look this angry before, She was basically fuming from Rage.

" C-Chie-sensei ? Are you okay ? " One brave voice cut through the tense atmosphere and asked the question, Shiranami with a concerned look on her face looked at the fuming Chie-sensei who was sitting on the podium trying to contain her rage.

" I-I'm fine.... " Chie-sensei muttered loud enough, But nobody was dense enough to know that she isn't. " Ha ! Who am i lying to Anyway ?! "

Chie-sensei stood and looked at everyone of us, It didn't appear that she was particularly upset with us, Or rather, Something happened that made her upset.

" I'm sorry that you have to see me like this... But i can't understand them ! I just can't ! " Chie-sensei grumbled loudly. " It's their problem that the food was poisoned, They should be the ones who take responsibility. Yet, THE STUDENTS ARE THE ONES WHO IS GONNA PAY FOR THAT "

" W-What do you mean Chie-sensei ? " Honami spoke, Trying to act calm. But it was apparent that she was shaking.

" Sit down Honami-chan, You'll see " Chie-sensei opened her envelope... More like tore it apart and grabbed the piece of paper inside. " I'll announce the results of this Fucki.... Sorry. * Cough * * Cough * I'll announce the results of this exam "

" Last place : Class D with 136 Points

Third : Class C with 595 Points

Second : Class A with 699 Points

First : Class B with 702 Points "

Chie-sensei speed-ran through the announcement, Clearly trying to get it out of the way. It was understandable, Since she was very upset

The ones at fault here aren't the Students, It was the Staff Members. What should've happened is that the school would take responsibility for this and not the students. Yet, All of our Points decreased massively.

It is without a doubt Tsukishiro's doing, I was kinda doubtful about his success but it seems that he is way more than what he lets on.

Poisoning the whole school isn't something a normal sane person would think off, So i don't blame Chairman Sakayanagi for not being diligent enough, I'm pretty sure he was as careful as he can be. However, The fact still remains that he was monitoring this exam and failed to protect his students, The responsibility *could* fall on him.

After Chie-sensei calmed down, She dismissed us and all of our Classmates scattered around campus. Honami and i decided to swing by the Bulletin board in front of the School to check the

Results of the quiz alongside who got expelled from Class D

Reaching the crowd there, I started scanning through the list. Until i found the Student Class D expelled

" Seems that a person named Okitani got expelled " I muttered loud enough for Honami to hear. I kept scanning through the lists until i found the scores for the quiz

The Results of the First-years Quiz :

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka - 100

Sakayanagi Arisu - 100

Kouenji Rokusuke -100

Horikita Suzune - 98

Ichinose Honami - 97

Shiina Hiyori - 96

Matsushita Chiaki - 95

Mei-Yu Wang - 95

Hoh ?

I was a bit surprised about the latter part, Seems that she decided to show some of her capabilities.

Did she do it to impress me ? Hoh, So cute

" Kiyotaka. What are you thinking about ? " Honami snapped me out of my thoughts, She looked at me with a somewhat angry look ?

" I'm thinking about how to celebrate with you for getting a high score " I blurted out a random excuse i thought in the spot. " What did you think i was thinking ? "

" Dunno~ I just thought you called another girl beside me cute~ "

" You're imagining things " *What is she ? A psychic ?*

" Anyway, You said that you want to celebrate riiiiight~? " Honami bent forward and looked at me, With a lustful grin. " Have you thought of something~? "

' Yes, Cumming inside of you 97 time- '

' Fuck off ' I instantly put Hornykouji in a cage and took control over myself.

" Hehe~ " Honami chuckled and smiled even more lustfully and hungrily. It seems that she have noticed my slip up *Sigh*.

With that, The both of us moved towards the dorms. However, Midway through that, I received a Message from Horikita with my reward on it. I grinned internally and slid my phone back

With this... Everything is in Place

*Just a quick Remark. Many of u were talking about
KanzakixKaruizawa and made fun of it
I'm gonna say one sentence*

- .
- .
- .

KANZAKI DESERVES BETTER

Adiu

Arc 9 Teaser

Notice : This is just a teaser with some dialogues i'm planning for the next Arc

This is just what i have on my head, Everything here isn't set on stone and it could change. Try and guess who said the dialogues too. Anyway, Enjoy :)))

Teaser

All Students of the First-years are in a dissaray, As a new special exam has been Launched at them just a few days after the Colossal exam

However, Compared to that. This is Hell ☠ ☠ ☠

" S-Sensei ? Are you serious ? "

" Honami-chan ! What would we do ?! "

" Don't worry Guys, We are safe "

This is definitely that man's doing

" Good Morning~ Ayanokouji-kuuuuuuuun~! "

" Kiyotaka-kun.... Please Help ! "

" What would you do about it ? "

" Just watch "

" Why ? Why is this happening ?! "

" She's all yours "

" I accept "

" I-I..... am not invincible "

' Wait *Wha-? Ho- What ? How ?!!!!* '

" SPREAD YOUR LEGS "

" After this. I have an announcement for all of you~ "
" EEEEEEEEEEEEEEEH ?!!!! "

What happened ? Well, Check it out in the next episode of Dragon Ball Z

Arc 9 Chap 0 : OAA

I'm sorry if this Chapter is Short, But i was planning to do this in this Arc. So i decided to add a Chapter 0 To get it out of the way first

Today is Monday, A weekend after the Week of the Colossal Exam somewhere in the concluding days of January

I was sitting inside my Class, Waiting for Homeroom to begin.

The Class Slowly but surely flooded with the students of the First-year Class A, My Classmates.

Soon enough, The last person arrived at exactly 8 o'clock, Just before the Ring of the bell.

Quiz (Difficulty : Baby mode) : Guess who is this person

Soon, Chie-sensei waltzed inside of the Class, Wobbling around just like Honami when she lost her Virginity while being absent-minded. Instantly, The smell of the alcohol invaded my nostrils

" Goosh Morning... Clash~! "

Thud.

She fell unconscious on top of the podium.

Instantly, The Special forces of 'Helping Chie-sensei whenever she is drunk' that consists of Shibata and Kanzaki rushed and did whatever their name say. We named them that way because it's their part-time job

Honami let an exhausted sigh while bitterly smiling at the scene. Soon Chie-sensei woke up and realized that she is in the middle of Class

" Oh~..... Shit " Chie-sensei muttered before clearing her throat. " Anyways. Good morning everyone~ I hope you're all doing well~ "

After that, All students took their notes, Getting ready for the lesson. However, Chie-sensei grabbed her phone instead

" Before we start Today's lesson. I have an announcement for all of you~! " Chie-sensei opened her phone and showed it to all of us " I want you all to grab your phones and open the school Homepage, There is a mandatory app that you must install~ If you didn't bring your Phone with you then please quickly head back to your dorm Room and get it~ This is very important "

Although i doubted that anyone would leave his phone at home especially in this day and age. Shibata seemingly forgot to plug his phone on the Charger at night, Had to run all the way back to his

dorm and retrieve it. Chie-sensei comfortably waited for him to arrive

" Alright~ Now that everyone has their phone~ Open this Menu and search for 'Over All Ability' It shouldn't be too hard to find. OAA is the shortcut term for it, You could also use that to search. When you find it, Click on the Install Button and wait for it to set up " We all did as instructed. An App icon had an 'OAA' Plastered on top of the Green Blueish background appeared on my Screen.

" When it's done, An App with a 'OAA' Name tag should appear. Open it and scan your Student ID with it in order to access to the main page. If you faced any problems, Please reinstall the app and try it again "

I wiped out my ID and scanned the QR code using the App, All my Classmates more or less did the same. Soon the App restarted and pulled me to the Main Page where multiple menus were set

" I welcome you to the OAA app, It is an application where all the students's data and stats are stored, Same as Classes. It would be of a great use to you, For example, If you click Right there and on your Class, 1-A. You will find a list of all the Members of your Class with their Photos alongside the Leaders "

Class 1-A

Leader

Ichinose Honami

Co-Leader

Kanzaki Ryuuji

Members

Amikura Mako

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

Shibata Sou

Shiranami Chihiro

.....

" This app also boasts a feature called OAA Rating. It simply determines the Value of a student, If you Click on your Name or anyone else, A detailed list alongside your overall rating would 1ppear. Go give it a look~ "

I tapped on my name in the App, A Profile appeared Containing all of my details alongside the Ratings

Class 1-A - Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

First Year evaluation

Academical Ability : A+

Physical Abilities : A+

Intelligence : A

Decision Making : A

Cooperativeness : A

Social Contribution : A-
Over All Rating : A

Pretty Average Ratings if i say so myself

I decided to Check other students's Ratings. Starting from none other than Honami

Class 1-A - Ichinose Honami

First Year Evaluation

Academical Ability : A (92)

Physical Abilities : B+ (79)

Intelligence : A (87)

Decision Making : A (86)

Cooperativeness : A (94)

Social Contribution : A+ (97)

Over all Rating : A

I would expect nothing less from her, These are some astounding Ratings.

" Hmph~ " Honami beside me suddenly pouted. She rose her hand to exclaim. However, I caught the screen of her phone looking at my Profile " Chie-sensei~ Can't we Change the Photos they put in our Profiles ? "

" A Good Question Honami-chan~! No you can't "

" Hmph~ " Honami pouted again. Seemingly upset

" Don't worry about it Honami. It's fi- "

" No it's not " Honami cut through me. Still upset " Your Profile was so perfect~ But it got ruined with that picture. Now people would think that My Boyfriend is dull and gloomy "

If i gotta be honest, I'm looking quite dull in that Picture they put in my profile. So i see where Honami is coming from. I am quite happy seeing her like this. However, I gotta stop it

" Isn't it better this way ? " I said. Honzmi turned to me, With a confused look " I mean if Girls check my profile, They would stay away since i'm dull and gloomy "

" Yeah..... You're Right~! " Honami suddenly perked up. " With this~ Girls would stay away from you and you'll be mine only~ Good Job Kiyotaka~ " She gave me a thumbs up

Honami's impression of my Profile instantly Changed when she saw this advantage, And she isn't wrong in that

I mean there is no way a Kouhai next year would jump at me and hug me saying stuff like ' I finally found you~ Kiyo~Senpai~ ' after seeing my OAA Profile for the first time..... *Right ?*

I brushed those thoughts off and decided to check my other Classmates alongside the other Classes, As well as seniors etc...

This also has multiple uses other than spying on Classes, Chie-sensei said that some exams on the future could be held using this app.

Seems like all the work i put last week into observation went to vain. *Haa, What a pain*

Hello, I'm sorry if this Chapter is Rushed. But i did it on purpose so i could deliver a message to you

There is a pretty high chance that i won't be able to upload this and the next week. I have my exams and i am quite limited, Not in time but in space to write

I could've announced this but most of you aren't following me so i thought i'd upload it in a chapter.

Most of you are Familiar with the OAA. If i didn't explain it correctly it's pretty much the same in canon, With the addition of students's categories

Again, I'm sorry for this Chapter's quality

Next are the OAA Ratings of the most important characters in my fic.

Class 1-A - Kanzaki Ryuuji

Academics : A-

Physical : A-

Intelligence : A-

Decission Making : B +

Cooperativeness : C +

Social Contribution : A-

Overall Rating : B

Class 3-A - Horikita Manabu

Academics : A

Physical : A +

Intelligence : A +

Decision Making : A +

Cooperativeness : A

Social contribution : A

Overall Rating : A

Class 1-D - Kouenji Rokusuke

Academics : A-

Physical : A +

Intelligence : B +

Decision Making : B

Cooperativeness : E

Social Contribution : E +

Over all Rating : C-

Class 1-D - Matsushita Chiaki

Academics : A-

Physical : B-

Intelligence : C +

Decission Making : C +

Cooperativeness : B-

Social Contribution : B-

Over all Rating : B-

Class 1-C - Ryueen Kakeru

Academics : C +

Physical : A-

Intelligence : A

Decision Making : A

Cooperativeness : D

Social Contribution : C

Over all Rating : B-

Class 1-B - Sakayanagi Arisu

Academics : A +

Physical : E-

Intelligence : A

Decision Making : A

Cooperativeness : B

Social Contribution : B

Over all Rating : C+

Arc 9 Chap 1 : The Class Poll

A Week has passed since the announcement of the OAA App. And now It's the first Monday of February

I was walking towards School, Reminiscing about the Previous events on my lonesome. Today, I decided to head quite early today so i could collect some of my thoughts

Yesterday, One of the Staff members has been arrested for 'causing' that spectacle during the Colossal exam and he is subjected to Jail. The School offered an Apology for what happened, But the damage is already done

However, A student would have got expelled, Regardless of that incident. So it is futile to try and fight this outcome

That Staff member would most likely get saved by that man and goes to another place to do his dirty work. However, That's what i would believe in normal circumstances

Since Chairman Sakayanagi delivered the audio file to the higher-ups, That man cannot make any public moves since he is restricted. He could leave it to his allies but i highly doubt that he would trust something so sensitive to anyone..... *Except the Kouenji family*

Since both of them are working together to get me and Kouenji expelled, I wouldn't be surprised if the Kouenji family is the one making moves instead, And probably where Tsukishiro is getting his orders for the time being. Of course, They aren't as strong as that man, But they are a threat

Speaking of Threats, It's been a while since the last time Asahina tried to do something, I was wondering what happened to her but it was all explained in the OAA Announcement.

Since she is a big fan-girl of Nagumo, She is trying to carry out his ideology and dreams of turning this school into a meritocracy and spent her whole time working to perfect the OAA App. It was accepted by the higher ups and she succeeded in her first steps towards Nagumo's dream

However, Her success would be short lived. She doesn't have enough influence to carry out her plans, And as long as Ikuto stays at the head of the student council she could only do little. Since he is a big Fan-boy of Manabu he would fight her in order to keep his Senpai's hard work safe, So it would turn into an interesting battle of ideologies...

" Oh~? Good morning~ Ayanokouji-kuuuuuuuuun~ " My train of thoughts was interrupted by a cheerful voice coming from behind. I turned around to find Kushida waving at me with a bright smile, With her was Matsushita, Sato, Inogashira and Onodera

" Good Morning " I greeted back with a bow, They all bowed back before Kushida crept closer and stopped in front of me

" It's quite Rare seeing you here this early Ayanokouji-kun~ Are you heading towards school ? " Kushida curiously asked. I responded with a nod

" Yes, I just wanted to collect my thoughts. Are you heading there too ? " At my response, Kushida started beaming before nodding.

" Yep~ Do you mind if we go together~? " Kushida asked me, Voice full in anticipation. At my nod she started celebrating " Right Lesgo~! "

Kushida immediately led the way, Followed up by the other girls, I simply walked beside her on the far right as we started conversing about random topics

" By the way Ayanokouji-kun " Matsushita suddenly called out to me, With a calculating curious gaze.

" Hmm ? "

" I have checked your Rating on the OAA App, Not only you got A + on both Academics and Physical abilities, Your Stats didn't get below an A- It is very impressive " Matsushita said, Looking impressed. The Girls also nodded with her

" Yep~ That is very impressive Ayanokouji-kun~ If i'm not wrong you're ranked Second on the entire School slightly behind Horikita-senpai, Way to go~! " Kushida exclaimed.

" Yeah. I wonder how you got this good " Matsushita Wondered, Before continuing " I am pretty sure that the Ratings doesn't describe you fairly. I mean, You ace exams that all students finds a hard time on, And within a couple of minutes. You're even more physically fit than most Olympic contenders, Well it's the same as Kouenji-kun, But it's useless thinking about him anywa- "

" It's never useless to think about a perfect being such as i Matsushita-girl. In fact, It's beautiful " A Voice I'm awfully familiar with cut through Matsushita, Jump-scaring everyone. Kouenji nonchalantly ignored that and made his way beside me " Hello there Ayano-boy. It seems that you've neglected Ichinose-girl's warning and got yourself a Harem "

" Hello Kouenji. And What do you mean by Harem ? " Kouenji smirked as he pulled out his hand-mirror and started combing his hair.

" Forget what i said Ayano-boy " Kouenji said, Sarcastically. " Or Ichinose-girl might kill me for deluding her precious little T-Rex-

Boyfriend-kun. "

" T-Rex ? What is that Kouenji-kun~? " Kouenji threw a glance to the curious Kushida before ignoring her and looking at his mirror. However, He was staring at me from my reflection in his mirror, I threw a quick glance at him before looking back, Indicating that i received the message he wanted to convey. " Don't worry about it Kushida-girl, It's a secret. Right Ayano-boy ? "

I received his question with a nod before the seven of us reached the School's building. I separated with them and headed towards my Class

" Good Morning Ayanokouji-kun ! " When i opened the door, The first one to greet me was Shibata who was chatting with Beppu and Shiranami who greeted me as well

" Good Morning " As i put down my bag on the chair, The Three of them approached me. " How are you guys ? "

" We are great ! What about you Ayanokouji-kun ? "

" I'm good. So what's up ? " I asked feeling curious about what Shibata has in store for today.

" Ayanokouji-kun, You're like Pretty smart and stuff Right ? " Shibata asked for confirmation, Despite knowing my response.

" I'd say i'm above average " I shrugged. The three of them smirked in disbelief . *Sigh*

" I'd like to give you a riddle i found on YouTube Yesterday Ayanokouji-kun. They say that only 2% can solve this, Do you think that you can ? " Shibata rose an eyebrow while staring at me teasingly.

" A riddle huh ? I guess i'll give it a shot " Shibata smirked before playing a video in his phone that contained the Riddle.

" So did you solve it ? " Shibata asked after the video was done.

" No i didn't " I shook my head

" So you aren't smart enough " Shibata exclaimed happily. *Why is he happy that i wasn't smart enough ? Moreover...*

" No, There is missing information "

" Excuses ! "

" I'm using an excuse because it is valid. There is no way you can solve it with the amount of information they gave you " I explained.

" I told you Shibata-kun. It is impossible to solve " Beppu jumped to my support and spoke. Shibata put both of his hands on his ears, Refusing to listen to us

" You guys are just bad "

" Yeah, Right "

The Banter kept going with Shibata acting like an idiot, In an amusing way. Soon, Honami and Kanzaki entered the Class and joined too, That's the case with Honami but it was more like getting

dragged in Kanzaki's case. It was pretty fun

Kriiiiing

Soon the Bell rang and we all took our seats waiting for Chie-sensei, The Atmosphere was very lively even with the silence.

.....

Even with the Silence, The Atmosphere was still lively.

.....

The Atmosphere slightly dropped, But it was still lively

.....

Even with the long silence, The Atmosphere is still live-

" Umm~.... Where is Chie-sensei ? " After a few minutes of silence, It was finally broken by a nervous voice coming from Shiranami Chihiro.

" I don't know, She probably has some errands and running late for work " Honami said and everyone responded with a nod.

" Or probably she's drunk and fell asleep somewhere " Amikura sighed with a bitter smile.

" You're probably right. I wouldn't be surprised if that happe- "

" Sorry I'm late ! " A familiar voice came from the Door, Drawing everyone's attention and revealing Chie-sensei. She made her way towards the podium and sighed, Before looking at each one of us. We all received her message and paid attention to her, Anticipating the announcement she's gonna make. " Good Morning everyone~ I hope you know what this means right ? "

All of the students nodded. However, I couldn't help but notice the side glance she threw at me, When i caught it she thinly smiled and strengthened herself. *So it is coming huh ?*

" Good, Then allow me to explain your next special exam " Chie-sensei grabbed a pen and wrote something on the Blackboard, The name of the exam " It's called the Class poll and it would be held in the 4th of February, Which means 3 days from now "

All the students nodded, Prompting Chie-sensei to continue. *But little do they know, That a massacre is about to befall on them*

" As the name suggests, A Poll would be held in the day of the exam and you guys are obliged to vote, And Class Stands for you guys and no one else. Which means that every Class are for their own devices and Class Points won't get affected in anyway by this exam "

At her explanation, Confusion erupted between my Classmates.

" Class Points won't be affected ? Then what are we gonna do in this exam Sensei ? " Honami asked curiously, Looking at her i can notice some anxiety in it. She appears to be aware that if Class Points won't be affected, Then something else will

" I'll explain Honami-chan " Chie-sensei said as she started

drawing in the board " In this exam. There are two types of votes, A Praise votes and a censure votes. A Student must praise vote 3 separate people and censure vote 3 others. You cannot praise vote somebody twice nor censure them. However, There is a catch. You can praise vote any student, In this or outside of this Class, In fact, You must use one praise vote to praise somebody from the other Classes. However, Censure votes are only between Classmates. Which means that you cannot use a censure vote outside of your Class "

In other words, Each student owns 3 Praise Votes and 3 Censure votes and he must spend them on 6 separate Students. Spamming the same person or leaving the vote blank is prohibited. You could praise vote anybody who is taking the exam and be it Classmates or Grade-mates, And you must use at least one praise vote for someone outside of your Class. In censure votes However, They are only limited to your classmates and you cannot throw them at another Class

Chie-sensei answered some questions before continuing with her explanation

" After we collect all the votes and count them, We will announce the results for each Class. The person with the most praise votes on each Class would receive a protection point " At her words, The Atmosphere lightened a bit and some people were physically delighted. " However.... "

At her heavy words everyone froze, The Celebrations were very short lived as a very audible gulps could be heard across the Room. Chie-sensei drew something in the board and turned around, She threw me another glance before continuing

" On each Class, The person with the most Censure votes..... would be **expelled** "

" Eh ? " " What ? " " S-Sensei... Are you serious ? "

" Yes i am. There would be a student getting expelled on each Class " *In other words, We have to kick one of our Classmates out of the School*

That's the thought everyone shared at this current moment, And soon what was expected to happen did happen, Chaos erupted.

There was fear, Anxiety, Frustration and more sorts of negative emotions flying around the air. The lively Atmosphere the Class started on was no where to be found

Amidst all of this, Chie-sensei was looking at us with amazement while blinking multiple times, Seemingly surprised about our reaction. Which is understandable since there is no need to panic here

" Honami-chan, What would we do ?! " Amidst the Chaos,

Shiranami approached Honami and asked with a scared expression. Honami however, Smiled warmly at her before standing up, The Chaos subsided and everyone's eyes were on her now

" Don't worry guys, We are safe " Honami reassured, But my classmates didn't feel any of it, With the exception of Kanzaki and some others who caught on it. Honami noticed this and turned to Chie-sensei " Sensei, You said that a student must be expelled in this exam correct ? "

" Yes~ An expulsion would be issued for the student with the most censure votes " Chie-sensei voiced, Before smirking at Honami. Honami caught on the hint Chie-sensei gave us and pulled out her phone

" Then can we nullify the expulsion using private points ? " At her words, Most of my Classmates widened their eyes, Before remembering the purpose of putting Honami as the Bank and soon, Everyone got delighted.

" Yes Honami-chan~ However, It isn't cheap you know~ Are you sure you want to spend 20 Million points to save one of your Classmates instead of saving them for a more important project ? "

" Yes i am sure Chie-sensei~ " Honami said before showing her phone to Chie-sensei who smirked even widely " Points could be recovered but Classmates won't, And this is the points of everyone here and not only mine so what i do with them is their choice. I have promised myself that i would do my best to graduate as Class A with everyone without a single person missing "

" Ara~ You want to graduate as Class A and without any expulsions ? That is an impossible goal you know~ Not a single Class on the history of this School managed to graduate without any expulsions, Let alone Class A " Chie-sensei said. But Honami's confidence didn't waver

" Then we'll be the first Class to do that Chie-sensei. I know it's a very big and hard goal, But i would work hard to achieve it, I am not alone, I have all of my Classmates's support and together i believe that we can do it " Honami said confidently, Raising the moral of our Class. All of my Classmates looked at her in admiration and respect, Seemingly touched by her speech, Including me.

That goal is certainly pretty tough with almost no room for mistakes. However, If someone can achieve it is her. I certainly do believe in her abilities and commitment, And i do believe in her as a person.

" I see~ Well then, I'll look forward to what you can do Honami-chan~ It would certainly be very interesting " Chie-sensei said looking at Honami with great interest. She also took a glance at me, Also looking forward to what i can do

" Then i will enlighten you Chie-sensei~ Look forward to it "
Honami said. However, That's when i realized that....

I feel the same way

Arc 9 Chap 2 : Saving Grace

M : [Got it, Anything else you want me to do Ayanokouji-kun ?]

K : [Not at the moment, Just remain at standby and stick with Kushida and try to not get any votes against you]

M : [I know that. Thank you for looking after me Ayanokouji-kun
□□□]

K : [I don't see why you should thank me. I'm basically using you Right now]

M : [Well that's true. But your last words just showed that you care about me □□□□□□□□□□]

K : [You're imagining things]

M : [Hehe if you say so !] *Sigh. How annoying*

" Hello Kiyotaka~! " A Cheerful voice abruptly interrupted my little 'chat' with somebody, But it was very welcomed. Honami carrying her bag approached me with a stunning smile, Tagging along with her was Kanzaki, Shibata, Amikura and Shiranami. Honami eyed my phone suspiciously while i slid it back into my pocket but decided to brush it off " Sorry for keeping you waiting~ "

It was Lunch break, The same day as the announcement of the Class Poll. The Classes afterwards were spent like usual, Or at least that was the case with our Class

Looking around the Cafeteria, I can definitely see some abnormalities in the behavior of some First-years. Although it is considered almost unnatural for people to start moving this early, But by the time of tomorrow i can already predict that more and more abnormal students would appear

Lone People would be scouting for as much friends as possible so they could remain in this School, Bigger lunch groups would appear and a lot of tension would rise day by day, As the First-years suffer more and more

Kiyotaka ?

Of course, That is the case with everyone except our Class. We already selected somebody as the Target and prepared 20 Million Points to save them. But that doesn't mean that we were free from any anxieties

The fact still remains that we are undergoing a cruel exam, And

some people would be forced out of the School by the end of it. Even if we were safe, The tension still remains

" Kiyotaka~ Hello ? " The muffled noises became clearer as i snapped out of my thoughts by Honami waving her hands in front of me. After she witnessed my reaction she sighed in relief.

" Yes ? " I asked, A bit confused.

" Nothing~ You were just too immersed in your thoughts i thought you passed out " Honami explained with a small smile.

" I see " It seems that i was too disconnected from the real world, I hope it doesn't happen again. " I'm sorry about that, I was just thinking of something "

" It's no big deal~ " Honami grabbed a piece of bread from her bento box and stuffed it with some meat before getting it closer to my mouth with a warm expression " Just don't forget to eat Kay~? "

I simply nodded and opened my mouth, Allowing her to feed me. With a satisfied expression she nodded to herself and turned towards the group

" Anyway, As i was saying, It is pointless to worry about it~ Let's just relax and not let this exam get to us and prepare for the next one " Everyone nodded at Honami's statement

" You mean the Year end exam ? " Asked Kanzaki. Honami nodded

" Although we don't know what it has in store for us, But it's always a good idea to be vigilant " Honami added " Even with my position at the Student council, I cannot get access to the info about the exams prepared for us. However if i get any information i'll immediately share it with the Class "

It is expected from the School to hide the info about the exams prepared for the individual, Even with a high position such as Student council, *They aren't above world leaders in influence after all..... Maybe*

Depending on the exam's contents, It may very well be an uphill battle between The three upper classes while Class D gets annihilated in the middle of all the cross-hairs.

This is just my imaginations and it could be absolutely anything. But whatever it is i'll welcome it with open arms and get *ready to play with my play thingies*

" Haaah~ " Honami let out an exhausted noise after slumping on top of the bed beside me.

" That was long hmm ? " I said while looking at her, She tilted her head to look at me, Showing me her beautiful facial figures.

" Yep~ It was long and intense indeed " Honami said. Before facing the sealing " I mean even though we predicted that it would end up like this, It was still exhausting "

" Agreed " I nodded before glancing at the hour, It was 7:30 PM of the same day.

Finally, The music of the final credits Rolled of the Last episode of the Death Note anime. Me and Honami decided to watch it together back on Winter Break and finished it today. I got up from my bed and collected the Media Player and set the Channel back to normal

Honami was still laying on top of my bed with her cute pyjamas, She shut her eyes and started to enjoy the resting after exhaustion feeling. I simply went and laid beside her and closed my eyes too

" Today was pretty long huh~? " Honami said, I tilted my head to look at her, Her eyes was still shut before my movement and turned to reciprocate my gaze with a warm expression. " I wonder if i did the correct choice "

" What do you mean ? "

" I mean saving a Classmate with the private points instead of banking them for another project " Honami broke eye contact and gazed at the ceiling " I wonder if what Chie-sensei said was true "

It seems that Honami is having some second doubts about her decision today, And wondering if it was the Correct choice.

" Do you think I'm foolish Kiyotaka ? " Honami tilted her head and gazed at my eyes again " Do you think i'm stupid for wanting to save my Classmates instead of saving the money ? I want you to be fully honest with me "

Her eyes were calm and didn't contain any hint of anxiety or worry. However, It wasn't like her eyes whenever she asks me about her food, It was different.

" And what if i say that you are ? " I rose an eyebrow. Honami gently smiled and looked at the ceiling. She rose her hand and clutched the air

" Then i'll prove you otherwise " Honami's confident voice made me internally grin. *Now that's what i liked to hear*

I put my hand on her Right Cheek, She immediately reciprocated and tilted her head to look at me with her beautiful oceanic eyes that sucks you inside of them and make you lose your sense of direction. I gently caressed her lips as i spoke the next words

" I don't think it's stupid. Rather, I think it's admirable and brave of you to think this way " I spoke in a warm tone and a thin smile, Honami smiled warmly with a cute blush under my fingers, I

switched targets and caressed her warm cheeks instead

Following your ideologies has nothing to do with Right or wrong. However, It is always in your best interest to not attempt something out of reach even if your ideology heavily supports it. So it is the same case with Honami, *Or so that's what they think*

As i stated before, If anyone can do it's her. She has the luxuries to dream of such a feat, Even if it's very hard but it is still achievable. The School also gives the opportunities for such a feat to take place

From what i witnessed before Tsukishiro took control is that every exam the School gave us could be cleared with no expulsions from all Classes, Even if a Class took last place if they were good enough they wouldn't lose a student. This is the ideology the School follows, So having no expulsions for your whole three years is certainly possible

However, The presence of Tsukishiro and the continuous attacks of that man only pumped the difficulty even further, It was difficult enough with the school so...

What would you do Honami ?

I was snapped out of my thoughts by a cute giggle from Honami, She gently held my hand on top of her cheek with hers and smiled warmly.

" Thank you Kiyotaka~ I will work hard to prove them wrong and that i'm not a fool. All i want you to do is be on my side support me on my journey~ " I nodded. Honami closed the distance between our faces and kissed me passionately to which i fully reciprocated and embraced her. It wasn't a lustful kiss, Rather it was full of love.

Our ideologies are different, Rather it is polar opposite. However, I do want to support her to succeed even if it means that she would win against me in the ideologies war.

One small side of me wants to help her just to prove my ideologies wrong. But the vast other does it because it's her and her success would make *me proud*

The next day, 2nd of February. Two days away from the day of the Special exam

Just like usual, I woke up and did my morning routines and ate the leftovers as Breakfast before setting my way towards School

Since the shock already subsided, Today is the day where almost everyone starts to make their moves. So it would most likely be hectic, I can already sense more gazes on me than usual especially from lone students, But no one is daring to approach me.

I gotta prepare my moves as well, This exam isn't done for our Class. At least for me, So-

I instinctively leaped forward dodging a fast kick thrown at my side. I turned around to find none other than Ryueen Kakeru himself, Smirking in the broad daylight

" Kuku i thought i got you this time "

" Well it was close " I said with my monotone voice.

" You know it's very hard to believe you when you dodge so effortlessly and speaking with that monotoshit voice of yours "

" Really ? My bad " I shrugged. Ryueen grinned before throwing a glance to his surroundings after sensing all the gazes around us, He Shrugged and walked past me, I instantly catch up and walk by his side

" What are you ? My child ? " Ryueen grumbled, Seemingly distraught with my company.

" I just wanted to talk with you for a bit "

" Just keep it quick " I nodded at Ryueen's plain response, While keeping a close eye at his facial expression i commenced

" Alright if you say so. So what are you gonna do for this exam ? "

" Kukuku I knew you'd ask that " Ryueen laughed, Before sharply cutting it short and turning to face me with a stern expression " What does it have for you ? "

" Dunno, Just curious about what you'll do "

" I won't do anything and just follow the flow. If that's all then piss off " Ryueen shooed me away. However, I insisted

" You know that you're a target for your Classmates in this exam right ? " I rose an eyebrow and Ryueen smirked, But not as wide as he used to be.

" Kuku is Monster worried about me ? "

" Not particularly "

" Kuku if you like me you don't need to hide it you know. Are you perhaps a Tsundere ? " Ryueen laughed at his own joke. " If they want to kick me out then they can go ahead and do that, That Dogito thinks that he stands a Chance against the likes of you and Sakayanagi without me "

" But you know that he is moving on the orders of *Sakayanagi* right ? " I emphasized on her name. Ryueen turned around to look at my expression before smirking

" Kuku That's more reason to believe that i cannot do anything right ? " Ryueen turned around and smirked. Seemingly catching

on. ' *To believe that you can't huh ? ' Interesting*

" If you want i can ask my Class to praise vote yo- "

" Hard pass " Ryueen Rejected. " I'd rather get expelled than get saved out of pity, Especially from you. " Ryueen pointed his finger at my forehead, Growing more hostile

" If you say so. But the offer is always up "

With that we Reached the School's building completely ignoring all the gazes we were getting. Since the both of us are known as rivals it was pretty understandable that we'd attract attention for acting like close friends. However, It isn't wrong in a sense

I do consider Ryueen as my friend, The rivalry between us allowed us to get closer, Even though he almost always hits me whenever we meet it's just his way of greeting me. However, If he would end up getting expelled, I would be sad at the fact that a great rival such as him would be removed from the equation, So i do care about him in a sense.

However, That's not the reason why i offered him the praise votes and he understood that much. The reason why i revealed such critical information and the offer on the open was because there was a certain someone who would be a crucial piece on my next plans eavesdropping on us

So by revealing it now, It made my job much easier to plant the information on their head and make them move accordingly. I already recorded our conversation earlier but it seems useless now

Arriving in the Class, I greeted almost everybody and slumped my bag on the chair and joined Shibata and the others as the Class slowly started flooding with students.

Vrrt

" If you'll excuse me " I excused myself and clutched my phone at the notification i received and it revealed itself to be a message. I opened it and read it's components

' *Kiyotaka-kun. Can you please meet me at the Library today ? '*

Yow~ It's been a while huh ?

My exams are half way through done, But almost all the tough materials are already done so i have some free space to write. I hope this chapter was up to your liking

Anyways, My exams are done in Wednesday and from there i would be back on the usual upload schedul- Pffft who am i kidding ? I just upload randomly

Anyway, I want to ask you guys something you remember that ANHS used to do CO-ED dormitories in Chie and Sae's school time Right ?

Do you want me to bring it back by the start of the second year ?

(It would be with 2 boys and 2 girls, No mix. I don't think the School used to do mixed sharing as far as i remember, If they did then tell me.)

Or do you want a double dorm room as a prize in a special exam (So it would be Kiyohonami living together)

Or do you want things to stay the same way

Please vote only once, And cya in the next one~

Arc 9 Chap 3 : The Favor

3rd POV

Inside of the local library of the Advanced Nurturing High school, A Lone student revealed to be our Protagonist Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Was making his way towards the unpopular side of the Library

It was currently Lunch Break, And almost everybody is grouping up to hit the cafeteria together and making new friends since they are undergoing a harsh exam where the size of your social circle is the most important factor. As a result, The Library was more emptier than usual, Making it the perfect place for the secret meeting

Upon arriving at the spot, He spotted three figures, The first one was his friend and book buddy Shiina Hiyori which was also the caller for this meeting. The second person was a green haired delinquent looking boy who goes by the name of Ishizaki Daichi, And the third was a tall well-built half-Japanese man with sunglasses which was none other than Yamada Albert

Kiyo was surprised by this sudden company, At least for Albert. Normally he would be extra vigilant especially when two of Ryueen's strongest henchmen were present and they could start a fight with him. However, The expressions on their faces didn't show any hint of that, They looked somewhat depressed as they waited for him in the silence. So he decided to approach them casually

Kiyo POV

" Sorry to keep you waiting " At my voice, All three of them instinctively perked up and looked at my direction, I rose my hand as a greeting.

" Don't be Kiyotaka-kun " Hiyori shook her head before bitterly smiling " It should be us who should apologize for abruptly calling you out of nowhere and taking your time "

" Nah it's cool " I shrugged before taking the free seat in front of the three and facing them all " So, What is it that you wanted to talk with me about ? "

All three of them nervously looked at each other before Hiyori nodded, Deciding to speak herself, She faced me again and opened her mouth

" Kiyotaka-kun, I called you here to make a deal with you "

" A deal ? " Hiyori nodded. I shifted my posture on the seat and

leaned forward " I'm listening, Go ahead "

" I believe that you already know about the situation in our Class Right ? "

" I believe so " I nodded. Before adding " You mean the situation with Ryueen and Tokito Right ? "

" Yes " Hiyori nodded. Before suddenly lowering her head, Seemingly nervous " Before i state my deal. There is something i'd like to confess "

" Hmm ? " I rose an eyebrow. Hiyori sat silently contemplating over how to phrase her confession. She was about to speak when suddenly Ishizaki shot up, I unconsciously raised my guard to a maximum and put a fighting stance, However, He bowed

" I'm sorry Ayanokouji-san " His sudden apology made me somewhat confused. However, I quickly pulled my hands down and stared at him

" Why are you apologizing Ishizaki ? "

" I cannot let Shiina-san do this, It's my guilt after all "

" Guilt ? What did you do ? " Ishizaki rose himself a bit and glanced at me, His expression was a mix of sadness and regret.

" You see.... This morning, I happened to spot you talking with Ryueen-san on my way towards School " Ishizaki continued. " Normally, I would just brush it off. But when i saw Ryueen-san laughing and smirking, And acting the way he usually does before this exam. I got curious and decided to eavesdrop on you. I'm so sorry Ayanokouji-san "

Ishizaki Bowed again as Hiyori did too, Albert just looked at both of them without much of a change.

" When i heard about Ryueen-san rejecting your offer to save him, I thought so hard about what to do but i couldn't come up with anything. So i decided to tell Shiina-san because I- "

" You thought that she could do something about it " I continued his sentence. " And thus, She decided to hold a meeting to struck a deal with me "

" Y-Yes... " Both of them lowered their heads further. *Sigh*

" Just sit both of you and raise your heads " Both of them looked towards me then at each other " I forgive you for eavesdropping on our Conversation Ishizaki, So don't apologize. I believe the situation turned for the better anyway "

It was pretty obvious to me that Ishizaki's way of talking was scripted and way different from the vulgar language he usually uses. It seems that they have been practicing it so they could convey their feelings without offending me and did a pretty good job so far. So i decided to free them from their misery

" Thank you Kiyotaka-kun " Hiyori bowed in gratitude, Her smile

slowly returning to her face. Ishizaki copied her movement before both of them sat on their chairs

" Anyway back at the topic in hand. " I changed topics back to the main one, Hiyori was listening to me with a warm smile and both Ishizaki and Albert were listening attentively " As i said back then. The offer is still up "

" Yes " Hiyori nodded, Before looking at both Albert and Ishizaki and facing me again " We would like to take your offer Kiyotaka-kun and save Kakeru-kun. Of course, We aren't expecting you to do it for free " *It seems that they came prepared. Good*

" Alright, So what do you have ? " I asked.

" I would like you to state what you want Kiyotaka-kun, And i promise you that we would work as hard as we can to get it. You can ask Anything "

" Anything huh ? " I pretended to think for a moment before glancing at them " I am certainly not lacking in anything in particular. However, There is something i would like you to get me.... "

The Three of them listened attentively to my demand. By the end of it, Hiyori perked up, Eyes full of Happiness.

" We can give you that ! " Hiyori exclaimed in celebrations, Ishizaki smiled brightly for the first time in a while and Albert had a thin smile watching his two friends.

" Alright then " I stood up from my seat, The three of them followed up. " Meet me here Tomorrow, Same time. Is that okay for you ? "

" Yes ! " Hiyori nodded vigorously. Before bowing again " Thank you so much Kiyotaka-kun ! "

" Thank you Ayanokouji-san "

" Thank you Bro "

This time, Albert and Ishizaki also bowed, Showing their sincere gratitude. It wasn't forced like Ishizaki's bow earlier, Now he was extremely happy for his Friend

" No need to thank me yet, I still haven't done anything " I said before turning around to leave. " It was pleasure doing business with you Hiyori "

" The pleasure was all mine Kiyotaka-kun ! " Hiyori waved me goodbye with shining eyes, I waved back before disappearing from their sights and walked back towards Class

" Where have you been ? " Honami stood in front of the door while crossing her arms and looking at me with a calculative interrogative gaze

" Sorry, I ran into some trouble on my way back " Honami narrowed her eyes, Looking at me suspiciously before shrugging it

off with a smile.

" Anyway~ I've prepared your food Kiyotaka Let's eat " She exclaimed brightly before dragging me towards my table where two lunch boxes laid with Kanzaki's Chair on the side. I simply obeyed her and passed Lunch break in peace..

Afternoon Classes are done for the day, And soon, Everybody dispersed

People with club activities went for their respective clubs while some of the Students grouped up towards Keyaki Mall

As for myself, I was walking towards the dorms with some countable others. The Breeze was blowing among the silence creating a nice pleasant noises while i was immersed in my thoughts

It wasn't very long ago when i received some crucial Intel from Matsushita informing me about Kushida's moves. She already chose a Target for this exam and it happened to be none other than Kouenji, Using his narcissism as an excuse to kick him out and more than half of the Class agreed on it. Of course, It wasn't her who directly suggested it. But it is undoubtedly her doing

Apparently, Yousuke doesn't have the slightest clue about this. He refused to take any approach for this exam and objected to the idea of kicking a Classmate out, Kushida agreed with him on the surface to keep her act

What did i do ? Well, I simply ordered her to tell Yousuke about it. This would create havoc on Class D and hopefully, It wou-

" Good Afternoon Kiyotaka " My train-of-thought was interrupted by familiar looking boy, He had black hair and violent eyes with some glasses covering them it was none other than Horikita Manabu

" Good evening Manabu " I Greeted him back

" How have you been Kiyotaka, It's been a while " With a warm smile he joined me on my walk while conversing with me

" I have been great. What about you Manabu ? "

" I can't complain " Manabu shrugged, Before glancing at me " Unlike you "

" I guess you already know huh ? " I said with a sigh.

" Of course i would. In fact, The whole school is aware " Manabu added " A Cruel exam like that is bound to attract attention. Especially if it's the first time in the history of the school that an exam like this happened "

" So it never happened huh ? " I muttered, Manabu nodded

" Yes, The ideology of this School is clearly against an exam like this. They always give chances to the deserving while pushing the untalented to get better, Since everyone admitted in this School has some sort of potential " Manabu explained. However, His words drew closer to me, So does his stare " However, I cannot help but think that this exam is related to you "

" Why do you think that ? " I asked while locking eyes with him, Interested and curious. A crossroad came in front of us However Manabu moved towards the first-year's dormitory seemingly wanting to continue this conversation and i happily obliged

" You know that the Student Council has some influence over Special exams Right ? " At my nod, Manabu continued " I don't think Kiriya is responsible for this exam, He would clearly object to it if it was posed to him. Nor do i believe that it is one of the other members since they lack influence. So if it isn't from the Council it must be from the School staffs "

" That is reasonable. But it doesn't explain why i'm involved in this "

" This is just my theory but " Manabu continued sternly, With a sharp gleam in his eyes he scanned his surroundings before speaking " I get the feeling that the newly acting director antagonizes you for some reason, It started back on the shutdown of our Club and now with this exam. The more i think about it the more i get convinced that it is his doing "

Manabu's theory wasn't bad, In fact, It was right on the money. His spot-on deductions just prove how extraordinarily he is, As i would expect from someone who has my respect

" So do i take that as a yes ? " Manabu perceived my silence as a mark of approval, And i solidified it with a nod.

" Your theory is spot on Manabu. This exam was indeed made as an attempt to expel me " It wasn't the whole truth but it wasn't a lie either. This exam was indeed an 'attempt' to kick me out which had 0% chance of success from the start.

Since the moment i shared with Honami my theories about the S-System on the second day of School, I became an important member of the Class and from that day, My position as a star student only strengthened by each and passing day. So the chances of my expulsion by my Classmates is zero, Which works for the other Classes too

The only Class that could expel me is Class D, With some private points thrown at them they could get rid of their Star Player even if he is the one who is carrying them. *They are defects after all, I wouldn't expect less*

Which brings the main reason of this exam's existence, Is to expel Kouenji Rokusuke. And Kushida is already working on that, Matsushita's intel earlier only solidified my theory

Would i ask my Classmates to praise vote him ? Nope, In fact, I won't help him at all. He is left for his own device in this exam, And he understands that. Besides, *My hands are already full with something*

" I see... " Manabu muttered, Before driving deep in his thoughts. There was a hint of worry on his expression " I don't understand, Why does the new Acting Director wants to expel you ? Do you perhaps know Kiyotaka ? "

" Yes i do " Manabu opened his mouth but i cut through him instead " Thank you for your concern Manabu, But it isn't something i would like to talk about " Manabu swallowed his words before nodding in understanding

" I understand Kiyotaka, I'm sorry for trying to pry in your life " Manabu apologized. Before voicing out " But if a time comes where you need help, Feel free to ask me "

" Thank you Manabu " I gave him a thin smile to which Manabu smiled too

" Don't thank me Kiyotaka, I'll always be happy to help my friend " We reached the First-year's dormitories and Manabu bid farewell " I'll see you around Kiyotaka, Good Night "

" Good night to you too Manabu, Thank you for today " Manabu smiled before walking towards his dorm and i did the same

' Help a friend '.... Huh ?

It is a sentence i wouldn't have understood back at *that place*, And probably would've never be able to. However, I can understand now where Manabu is coming from

It seems now that another person is gonna get involved in this mess of mine, It is certainly a pain.

Normally, I would be rejoiced that i found some new people to help me on my way to freedom. However, I couldn't help but think about the consequences of their involvement, They could even lose their lives.

It seems that someone as rotten as i am changed huh ? Well, I guess i should thank the *both of them for that*

It was the next day, 3rd of February, The day before the exam.

During Lunch break, I was walking towards the same meeting place as Yesterday for the arranged meeting with Hiyori. It didn't take me long to spot the three of them. However, As i drew closer i spotted a fourth person

" Kuku you came " Ryueen who was resting his legs on top of the table with a nonchalant expression smirked at my appearance.

" Yes i did. Did you expect otherwise ? "

" Not really. But i considered the chances of you being sadistic enough to bail out of this meeting Kukuku " Ryueen snickered while i sighed. Hiyori saw this and tried to calm us down

" That is rude Kakeru-kun, Kiyotaka-kun would never do something like that ! " Hiyori defended me from Ryueen's teasing and reprimanded him

" Yeah..... Right " Ryueen frowned, Seemingly weak against her angelic power. *Hold on just a minute, Was she the person manipulating him all along ? More importantly, Am i getting manipulated by her too ?*

" Anyway, Did you get what i asked for ? " I asked. Hiyori turned towards me and nodded while beaming. Ryueen clutched his pockets and pulled out his phone and scribbled with it, Meanwhile i opened my phone and checked my balance

Vrrrt

At the vibration of my phone, My balance started changing, Slowly but surely, The numbers increased until it surpassed the amount needed. I looked at Ryueen and he smirked. *Sigh*

" I have received the amount of points needed. Now i shall lend Ryueen Kakeku enough Praise votes to save him from expulsion. It was pleasure doing business with you, Class C " I said, Finishing off our deal. Ryueen showed me his phone that contained a recorded file of this conversation and i nodded. " Now that's settled. There is another problem you guys are gonna face "

All of them looked at each other, Understanding the meaning behind my words.

Since Ryueen isn't gonna get expelled, Another person would. And they cannot run the risk of letting luck decide it

" But don't worry, I already prepared a plan for that " I filled them with my Plan and all four of them listened attentively. By the end of

my explanation Ryueen Started laughing

" Kukuku I see how it is " Ryueen showed a look of understanding. However, It didn't stop at that, It seems that he already figured everything out.

" Are you sure this is gonna work Kiyotaka-kun ? " Hiyori asked, A bit unsure about my plan. I was about to open my mouth but Ryueen spoke instead

" Of course it would work. It is Monster's plan after all Kukukuku " Ryueen started laughing again and i sighed. Before turning towards him again

" Ryueen I'd like to ask you something " Ryueen stopped laughing and faced me with his trademark smirk. " You still Remember our deal ? Back at the start of this School "

" Kuku yes. " Ryueen's eyes shined with anticipation and i cleared my throat

" I'd like to redeem that favor we owe you "

Yow~ How is it hanging

I am done with my exams and i can fairly say that i did pretty well. Sorry for the slow updates in this past two weeks, But now it is summer vacation :D

I would get back to my incoherent Schedule of posting. I don't have a particular time so a chapter could come almost anytime

If you still have your exams i wish you the best of lucks with that, And don't rush it. I know that my chapters are so good but don't waste your future on them (Joke)

Anyway, I'll see you around
Adieu~

Arc 9 Chap 4 : Revealing True Colors

3rd Person POV

In a fine evening of a Wednesday located on the Third day of the lovey-dovey February. A lone female student was walking in the forbidden lands of the special building, It is called forbidden because all sorts of Black market trades happen ther- * Cough * Cough*

It is a taboo rule that you shouldn't set a foot on that building if you are an Ordinary student, Since all sorts of Deals, Secret meetings and sometimes bullying happen there, And you wouldn't want to be caught during one of these

However, It is not said that this Female student is ordinary, In fact, She has been in this place quite a lot. It was none other than the School's 'sweetheart' and Class D's 'Angel' Kushida Kikyou, Attending a secret meeting with one of her 'pawns' after abruptly calling her out of nowhere. However, She wasn't displeased by it, In fact, She was beaming

The reason for that is that she thinks the reason for him to call her there is to beg her for praise votes to save himself from the cruel fate his Class bestowed upon him. The Tyrant Leader of Class C Ryueen Kakeru begging her to save him while groveling on the ground in such desperation, The thought of that made her quite amused

' Ryueen, You were useful to me, But you have already fulfilled your role. I'm gonna enjoy tormenting you while giving you false hope and see your face full of despair after you get expelled. This would be your final use, Is to entertain me ' Kushida Thought, While holding back a sadistic laughter

However, Unbeknownst to her, The man in question is Kuku'ing inside of his dorm room while enjoying a fine cup of tea with his white haired maiden that is a true angel instead of a fallen one. And doesn't know that if an Ambulance is getting called it's going to be for her

Arriving at the meeting spot, She scanned her surroundings, Looking for her target. However, All she saw was a plain sight

" Ugh~ " She slammed her foot on the ground, Getting quite annoyed. " He calls for my help and then be late ?! Honestly, Ho- "

" Actually, He isn't late " Kushida froze on her spot after the voice

of a male student cut through her grumbling, Realizing that she isn't alone there " In fact, He isn't coming at all "

The Girl slowly turned around to look at the source of the voice to widen her eyes. A Male student emerged behind the wall and faced her, It was..

" A-Ayanokouji-kun ?... " Kushida blurted out his name when her eyes met his. However, What she sees isn't really Ayanokouji our protagonist, But his Fourth form : SadisticKouji

It is known that our protagonist possesses a number of forms that he uses for multiple purposes, The first one being NormalKouji that has his real personality and the used one by default. The second one is TeasingKouji that he mostly uses against the beast known as Amikura Mako. The Third which is WhiteRoomKouji which is the least used one since he doesn't need it unless for extreme situations. And currently he is using his fourth one

SadisticKouji is used to prey on his preys and completely destroys them mentally, And also physically if it's called for. One of the famous victims of this form is the most recent ones known as Yamadead and Ikedead

He has multiple other forms like MasochistKouji and CuteKouji. However, His final form which is considered the most powerful one is known as HornyKouji

HornyKouji usually appears in weaker forms since he is too powerful. However, The only person that managed to witness him in his Greatest and most powerful form and actually go ahead against it is none other than Ichinose Honami, His own Girlfriend, Who also possesses a beast of her own

Coming back at the topic in hand. Kushida was scared to death because of Ayanokouji's appearance. However, She managed to compose herself and ask her question

" What are you doing here Ayanokouji-kun ? Do you have business with somebody ? " Kushida asked with a bright smile. Ayanokouji However, Responded with a smug and a little chuckle

" Impressive acting skills as always Kushida Kikyou. No wonder why you managed to survive this long " He took slow steps towards the stunned Kushida who started visibly shaking, But still kept her composure

" W-What do you mean A-Ayanokouji-kun ? " She asked stuttering a bit. To which Ayanokouji responded with a sigh

" So you intend to fight all the way huh ? Well i guess that's good, **Because it would be more fun destroying you that way** " Kushida flinched for the third time

" S-So... *You know ?.....* "

" Hah, Of course i do " Ayanokouji laughed after being asked such

an obvious question " I know your darkest secret Kushida, I know how you betrayed your Class and worked with Ryueen in order to expel Horikita "

" W-Work with Ryueen-kun ? T-To expel H-Horikita-san ? I-I don't know what you mea- "

" You know exactly what i mean Kushida. Because if you didn't, You wouldn't be here " Ayanokouji's words were the last straw in Kushida's pocket as her composure fully cracked this time, And her real personality took place

" Heh, I guess there is no use hiding it huh ? " Kushida's voice turned low, Completely different from her usual cheery voice. It was scary to any ordinary people if they were in this situation. However for our boy Ayanokouji, He provoked her even more

" Yes, Just like that, Kushida Kikyuu's facade has been removed ! Mom Bring the camera " Ayanokouji's voice turned sarcastic, And it went towards it's desired location, Kushida's nerves

(A/N : I'm sorry if it's too OOC, But i'm having fun right now. Just think about it as the wonders of the Fourth form)

" Ugh You're so fucking Annoying, Shut up ! " Kushida yelled. However, Ayanokouji was unfazed.

" You should know your place Kushida, You're not the one who is holding the power Right now. I am " Ayanokouji said, Reminding her of her position to which she couldn't comprehend

" Heh ? What are you saying ? That you're gonna rat me out ? " Kushida confusingly said, Before a sadistic grin grew on her face " I thought you were smarter than this Ayanokouji, You know that no one would believe you if yo- "

" I know. But they would believe this " Ayanokouji pulled a recorder device from his pocket and showed it to Kushida to which she paled at. However, It slipped from his hands and fell to the ground, Shattered into pieced " FUCK ! "

Ayanokouji let a loud noise, Cursing at himself for being so clumsy. Kushida stared at the spectacle with wide eyes, Too much information to process, Until she started chuckling

" Hehe.... hehehe... HAHAAHAHA " Kushida exploded in a violent maniac-like laughter, Seemingly losing her mind " Oh my fucking god. How stupid can you be "

Kushida kept laughing and making fun of Ayanokouji to which he received indifferently and waited for her to calm down. After a good minute, Kushida wiped her moist tears still chuckling for herself

" Hehe~ You almost had me there Ayanokouji-kun. But unfortunately for you, Lady luck isn't in your side. It's on **mine** " She said it with a proud look on her face. Before turning around

and speaking, Without giving him even a glance " It was a nice Try, Trying to manipulate me like that, But you are gonna pay dearly for that. I will expel you with both of my hands Ayanokouji. For now, Enjoy your- "

' My condition for your Challenge is that you tell me the whole truth Kushida-san '

" H-Horikita-san ? " At the voice of a familiar person Kushida knows by heart, She froze on her place and turned around to the source of the voice.

' I see. If it means to get rid of you then i don't mind telling you '

" Now i think they would believe this " Ayanokouji cut the recorder short and stared at Kushida with a smug. Kushida's face dropped as despair filled it again, But it was even stronger than before

" Did..... Horikita-san betray me ? "

" Not really, I kinda forced her to bring me this recording "

Back at the day before last in the Colossal exam, Horikita and Ayanokouji made a bet on who's scoring higher on the quiz to which Horikita lost and was forced to comply with Ayanokouji's request, Which was to force Kushida into spelling the beans with her own mouth about her secret

He couldn't have used Horikita's mouth as leverage since it would be less credible, And it wouldn't be very effective against a social butterfly like Kushida. So it had to come from her own mouth to which he used Horikita to attain

Kushida lost her temper and rushed at Ayanokouji trying to snatch away the recorder, To which he allowed her to take and destroy. Because he already has copies of it, And wanted to satisfy his sadistic urges

" You wouldn't give this recording to anyone " Kushida's voice turned darker as she glared at Ayanokouji with her dark eyes

" And what if i do ? " Ayanokouji rose an eyebrow. To which Kushida grinned

" I'll tell everyone that you raped me "

" But that would be a false accusation "

" Don't worry, It wouldn't be " Kushida gently took Ayanokouji's hand and aimed it to her breasts. However, Ayanokouji let her be. Instead, He used his other hand and pulled a third recorder. *This man was ready to fully torment her*

" Oh yeah ? You can go ahead and do that " Ayanokouji smirked to which Kushida paled and snatched the third recorder from his hand and destroyed it too. To which Ayanokouji amusingly watched

The area they were meeting at was filled with small droplets of Iron and technology panels, All from the destroyed recorders.

However, Kushida this time knew to be careful around Ayanokouji, Since he is clearly crazy

" My my, What do we have here ? " However, Before any one of them could talk a voice came behind Ayanokouji. A Tall well-built man emerged from the entrance with a phone in hand, Seemingly recording this conversation, It was..

" Kouenji-kun !!!! " Kushida exclaimed before running towards him with a horrified expression and hiding behind him

" My my Kushida-girl. Why are you scared ? "

" Kouenji-kun !! Ayanokouji-kun is trying to rape me ! " Her desperation was deceiving to the naked eye, And her act looked too genuine.

It was despicable from Kushida to try and seek help from the man she is planning to expel on the very next day. And that's what the both of them thought

" I see how it is Kushida-girl. So, Do you mind if i join you Ayanokouji-boy ? " At Kouenji's words, Kushida's face dropped for the million time today. She instinctively backed away with a disgusted expression

" Actually, I'm done here " Ayanokouji refused his offer, Reverting back to his First form, Before taking his leave. To be stopped by Kouenji

" I'm afraid that's a no-go Ayanokouji-boy. What do you want me to do with her ? "

" She's all yours. Do whatever you want " Ayanokouji nonchalantly answered before leaving the special building. Kouenji turned around and looked at Kushida with a smirk, To which Kushida got scared

" Don't be scared Kushida-girl. Because you're gonna witness what a perfect existence such as myself can do ! "

Kiyo POV

After Kushida to Kouenji, I made my way towards the convenience store, Getting thirsty after all of that talk.

Maaaaan, What a waste of points

I let a sigh at the memory of the destroyed recorders, I've wasted a few thousand of points attaining them. But it was all worth it in the end

Kouenji's appearance was also planned by me, For the sole reason of making Kushida seek help from the person she is antagonizing and provide me with more amusement.

I brushed those thoughts off when i was nearing the convenience store. However, I spotted someone familiar, That i meant to talk to for a while at the same exact place i talked to a while ago

Coincidences can be freaky huh ?

Without wasting any second i approached the gloomy looking student and called for him

" Hello Yousuke.... "

Honami POV

" Kiyotaka~.... I'm Home~ " After unlocking Kiyotaka's dorm room i slid in and took my shoes off before walking towards the living Room " Kiyotaka ? "

He wasn't present in the living room where i usually find him, So i checked the Kitchen and the bathroom and he wasn't there. I noticed his phone laying on top of the table. *Seems that he left it*

there, He probably went to the convenience store just like the other day

I opened the locker and grabbed some of my clothes stored in there. I got somewhat disappointed since i found them the exact same way i put them last time.

' What's with this sudden hope Honami ? You know that Kiyotaka isn't immature enough to smell your uniforms, Especially since he can directly ask you to do that if he wanted '

' I know~ But the problem is..... He isn't asking me ! '

' Well it's just that exams are in the way. He doesn't want to do it because it would distract you from your duties '

' Yeah~ You're probably right '

After my internal conflict with no one in particular, I checked the time again and 10 Minutes past since i arrived there. *Weird, He isn't back yet*

It doesn't take long for a walk towards the convenience store, But i decided to stay patient and wait a little bit more. Meanwhile, I decided to approach the table and grab his phone while waiting for him

Kiyotaka has been acting suspicious lately, From skipping Lunch Breaks until very late and using his phone more frequently. I wholeheartedly trust that Kiyotaka wouldn't cheat on me, But i couldn't help but be curious about what he's planning

I unlocked his phone with the same pattern he showed me long ago and was greeted by his homepage. *Good, He didn't sneakily change it, I guess this is a good sign*

First, I checked his Call history which was pretty much full of mine, With some existence from Shibata-kun and the others. It wasn't that he doesn't contact them, It's just that we talk a lot through phone that i dominated his call history

Second, I checked the chatting app and same as the calls, It didn't appear suspicious. However, I did extra digging and Checked some of the messages from his female friend

H : [Kiyotaka-kun, Can you please meet me at the library during Lunch break ?] I stopped at this certain message from Shiina-san and blinked multiple times.

I see, So he was meeting with Shiina-san..... Wait.... For what ?!

No, Calm down Honami, There must be a reason for why they are secretly meeting. You shouldn't jump to conclusions too early

If he was cheating on me with Shiina-san then he would have deleted this message, Yeah, That is common sense..... But what if Kiyotaka is using reverse Psychology on me ?!!

*No Honami, You shouldn't *sniff* think like that. He would never do something like this *sniff* Never*

Unbeknownst to myself, I was tearing up while those thoughts

ran on my head. However, My attention was stolen by one of the most recent notification. *A Point Transfer from.... Ryueen-kun ?*

I opened the notification and it immediately took me towards the School's Homepage where the balance is, When the page fully loaded i was flabbergasted

Wha- ? Eh ? Wai- Ah~.... What ?

I blinked thrice before staring at the balance again, And it didn't change.

21.034.456 Millions ?!! How ?!! Wha-

Clark

Amidst my internal Conflict, The door got unlocked, Unconsciously drawing my attention towards it. Where it revealed my Boyfriend Kiyotaka who looked at me in confusion. However, His eyebrows widened a little when he noticed my state and his confusion got replaced with a concerned look

" Honami ? Did something Happen ? " Kiyotaka asked me with a hint of concern on his voice. I immediately wiped my tears off and approached him and showed him his phone screen

" Kiyotaka~ You have a lot of explaining to do "

Arc 9 Chap 5 : The Day of the Special exam Pt. 1 (Class B and C)

3rd POV

Thursday 4th of February. The scheduled day to hold The Special exam, Also known as the Class Poll

It was around 6:30 AM in the morning, All the students were still asleep while some athletic ones are on the workout.

The sun is slowly rising, Beaming the gloomy darkness of the School campus. Whereas the chilly wind of the winter was blowing

Amidst all of this, On a certain part of Campus, Two male students of the same age wearing their school uniforms met up in a top secret meeting. However, There wasn't really a lot discussed there and it was more like waiting to hangout

" Alright. Shall we go ? " After a little chit-chat between the two, One of them spoke up while gazing at the other who gave him a smirk of approval. The Boy nodded and both of them set their way towards their destination

It may appear like a hangout. However, What they were about to do wasn't going to be fun..... *In that way*

Kiyo POV

Today is the awaited day, The day of the Class Poll.

All Students were clearly nervous, And understandably so, Since today could be the last day of their journey in this school. The same could be said to our Class, Even if we are safe we couldn't help but be nervous

However, They were all determined to get rid of this exam as soon as possible, And with the support of Honami we wouldn't lose anybody today

Some people may call us dumb for spending 20 Million points to save our weakest student instead of getting rid of them. However, That thinking isn't flawed in a sense, But it would be flawed if you put our Class as an example

If you ask me, I do believe that it is worth it. Our Class doesn't necessarily have incompetent students, And all of them are worthy on their own way. Even if we go by OAA Rating, The lowest Ranked student would probably be Top 30 if they were placed in a Class like D or perhaps C

Besides, Each Class has their own strong points and so does our Class, With the exception of Class D. The unity of Class A is pretty much unrivaled between all the three other Classes and is currently our Strongest weapon after myself. So preventing a Loss of a Competent Student and the second strongest weapon for 20 Mil is worth it

Of course, Everyone shares the same opinion However, They don't look at it this way, In a utilitarian view, Except for probably Kanzaki who shares my same view.

However, Even if something happens that goes against my ideology i wouldn't interfere, Whether Honami succeeds or not depends only on her and her abilities. However, One thing is certain that i am rooting for her, As a person who wants to be proven wrong and as her Boyfriend too.

" Alright~ Settle down everyone~ " Chie-sensei waltzed inside of the Class, Interrupting my line of thought. However, Many of the students noticed that she was extra happy today but didn't try and ask her. She threw me a glance and her grin widened even more before clearing her throat " Alright, It is time where you guys prepare to submit your votes. In order for you to do that you have to open the OAA App and go to the Students's list, It should be beside the Class list and right there you could type anyone's name and either praise vote them or censure vote them if they were your Classmates "

We all did as instructed and opened the student's list, Two new buttons appeared on the side of everyone's names. Everyone started working on their phones and i did the same

Praise voting : Ryueen Kakeru, Hirata Yousuke, Ichinose Honami

Censure voting : Shibata Sou, Tsube Hitomi, Ninomiya Yui

I put two random names on the censure vote alongside our Sacrifice and pressed the send button. Moments later Chie-sensei clutched her phone after receiving a notification.

" Alright~ Your Results are out~.... "

This is going to be interesting.....

Class B POV (3rd POV)

" The Results are out " Mashima-sensei announced to his unnerved Class, Everyone stood tall in anticipation for the Results. With the exception of a green haired goblin who was twitching in his seat in worry, While glancing at the direction of a certain bald headed student who was calmly sitting on his seat with a crossed arms and closed eyes

Much like the other Classes, Class B also chose a student to expel, With Sakayanagi Arisu, Their leader taking the initiative and chose her ex-rival Katsuragi Kohei in leading the Class. Many Students were displeased by this choice since Katsuragi isn't objecting her anymore and currently is a vital part of their Class, But suddenly, Their dissatisfaction stopped Yesterday for no apparent reason

Katsuragi accepted his fate like a fallen king objected to execution and asked Sakayanagi one last request of taking care of his trusty servant Yahiko to which Sakayanagi fufu'ed and agreed. And now, He is walking towards his death with no regrets

" The Person with the most Praise votes on your Class is Sakayanagi Arisu with 38 Votes. Congratulations Sakayanagi-san "

" Thank you Mashima-sensei, And everyone for your Trust in me " Sakayanagi stood in her seat and bowed to her Class while raising her skirt a little, Like a royal bow. Everyone threw supporting words at her before she sat back

' Damn, I almost saw her thighs ' Thought a certain purple haired woman while stuffing her mouth with beer cans, Savoring their taste.

Mashima-sensei nodded at Sakayanagi before checking the results again, An apparent frown made it's way to his face. But most students were unaffected, Since they already know the results

" The Student with the most censure votes on Class B is..... Yahiko Totsuka with 37 Votes "

" WHAT ?! " A Loud barge echoed through the Room as Katsuragi stood up and kicked his chair in the process. His calm composure completely broke as he was staring at Mashima-sensei with shacking eyes " Are you sure that's not the wrong name Mashima-sensei ? Because i'm pretty sure that i should have been ther- "

" No i didn't spell the wrong name Katsuragi-kun " Mashima-sensei's response made despair rage in Katsuragi's body " The person with the most Censure votes is Yahiko Totsuka. While Katsuragi Kohei comes in second place with 30 Votes "

" What is the meaning of this Sakayanagi ?! " Katsuragi glared towards the seat around 3 meters on his right to be met with a loli smuggling to herself. Seeing that he got ignored he connected his

fierce gaze to Mashima-sensei " Mashima-sensei, I should have been the one who gets expelled. I suggest that you expel me instead- "

" That won't do Katsuragi-kun, The Results are already out " Mashima-sensei destroyed any hope Katsuragi had by those words. " However, Yahiko-kun could be saved if you pay 20 Million points. Do you have that Katsuragi-kun ? "

" I-I don't..... Isn't there any other way Sensei ? I swear i could drop out instead- "

" Fufu are you dumb Katsuragi-kun ? "

" Sakayanagi..... " Katsuragi got more enraged by Sakayanagi's mocking tone, She turned around and looked at him with her trademark smug that would give him a traumatic experience for the rest of his life " Why did you expel Yahiko ? He has nothing to do with this, So why- "

" Yes, He has nothing to do this "

" Then why- "

" Fufu you really are stupid Katsuragi-kun. It seems that i really do need to explain " Sakayanagi cut through him again with insulting words. She clutched her phone in her skirt and opened the OAA App " I am not childish enough to get rid of a competent student like you Katsuragi-kun because we used to be rivals. I simply went with the most optimal method that would help our Class "

" The most optimal method ? What is optimal in this- "

" Fufu you really are more stupid than i thought " Sakayanagi said all of this while scribbling with her phone. Tapping one last time on it, She showed the screen to Katsuragi " As you can see, I only got rid of the most incompetent student according to the OAA App, And it happened to be Yahiko-kun. You should blame him for being useless, Not me Katsuragi-kun "

Katsuragi was at a loss of words against Sakayanagi's perfect logic, Much like Class A, Class B doesn't have incompetent students, That is with the exception of Yahiko who is running in the slumps of the ratings

" Honestly what are those ratings ? Top 143 out of 153 students in overall Rating ? You're basically only better than 10 students, Even a defect from Class D has a higher rating. And what's more funny is that you were originally from Class A ! The Class with the best students. It makes me believe that you were placed here to drag our Class down and make competition more balanced "

Sakayanagi's continuous insults only drove the already broken Yahiko to more despair, And she was enjoying it very much.

' *Damn loli, That's too much, You're driving him to suicide* ' Thought Kumoro while opening a new package of beers and chugging half a

No one could try to find a fault in Sakayanagi's argument and unconsciously agreed to it. However, The real reason why she kicked him out is because of the Colossal exam incident when he sat behind her and let a disgusted expression to which she heard, But of course, Nobody knows that. Sensing the Silence Mashima-sensei decided to break it

Yahiko depressingly started collecting his bags with the hopeless gaze of Katsuragi, He failed to protect his only supporter which put a number of negative emotions free on his body, From rage to Regret and frustration

" It has been an honor *sniff* meeting you and working *sniff* with you Katsuragi-san. I'm sure tha-*sniff*---- "

' What are you doing ? I could get caught this way ' Kumoro cursed at Hashimoto while hiding inside of her bag.

Clark

" Bygones should stay bygones, And Yahiko should stay as a one and forget about him and look to the future. " She said and stared at Katsuragi who was still traumatized from the events earlier, Seeing him like that she let a sadistic smug at him

" We will Target Class A "

" Huh ? " Right after Sakayanagi's said that. All 39 Students inside of the Class's phones vibrated at the same time. They all glanced at

each other before checking it's contents

' *Promotional message ?* ' Thought Sakayanagi before opening it. However, As soon as she saw it's contents she started laughing hysterically.....

Class C (3rd POV)

" Alright, The results are out " Announced Sakagami-sensei to the whole unnerved Class, Same as their fellow upper-classes, They already chose a student to expel. At that announcement most students turned to look at him with smirks on his face, To which he ignored and shut his eyes

" Hah ! Tell me Ryueen, How does it feel to have a few seconds left for your time on this School ? " The person who hurdled this question on him was none other than Tokito who stood up from his seat and confidently walked towards Ryueen with a confident smirk on his face. Ryueen indifferently ignored him, Keeping his composure which pissed Tokito off " Even in the face of expulsion you're not afraid. I must commend that poker face of yours, But you should remember that you are expelled and there is no way you'll be saved, You bastard "

Tokito's insults fell on deaf ears as Ryueen kept his eyes shut, Same as his composure. Tokito's vein popped from annoyance

" Honestly you loser, Who do you think you are ? Are yo- "

" Tokito-kun, Please stop it " Tokito's insults were stopped by the angel of Class C Shiina Hiyori, Ryueen opened one eye and looked at her, She had a serious expression

" Why are you defending this bastard Shiina ? He should know his place since he is nothing but a loser " Tokito said, While pointing at Ryueen.

" Even if that's the case, You shouldn't do this Tokito-kun, It's rude and immoral " Tokito was about to open his mouth but someone spoke instead

" I also agree with Shiina-san Tokito-kun, What you're doing is wrong. You're basically being the same as him " Marked Kaneda, One of the smart students of Class C.

" Tch. What does it have for you ? Huh ? Didn't he also hit you one time Kaneda ? Why are you defending him ? " Tokito clicked his tongue

" I know he attacked me one time, But it was because i was talking in Class. Remember on the first month where he warned us about the School's system ? If it wasn't for his methods, Even if it was tyrannic, We wouldn't have gotten as many Class points as before. What you're doing now is neglecting the efforts he put for the Class. It is undeniable that our Class wouldn't have gone this far without him "

" Tch. " Tokito clicked before glaring at Ryueen and returning back to his seat. " You're gonna pay for that Kaneda "

" What do you mean by that Tokito-kun ? " Hiyori asked the meaning of the obvious threat Tokito gave

" Isn't it obvious ? He objected my orders and he's gonna pay for that "

" So you're gonna use violence ? " Hiyori rose an eyebrow, Waiting for Tokito's next words.

" Yeah, What about it ? " Tokito's tone turned hostile as he recklessly fell into Hiyori's trap. Ryueen broke into an unnoticed smirk

' *What a bozo* ' He thought

" So you're basically gonna use the same methods Kakeru-kun used ? "

" Tha- "

Murmurs erupted through the Classroom as everyone was glaring at Tokito.

" So Shiina-san was right, You really are exactly like him ! " Shouted Ishizaki, Earning his Class's support.

" What do you mean she was Right ? " Tokito asked the million dollar question. To Which Kaneda responded

" Yesterday after you left to bully Ryueen-kun right at the end of Classes. Shiina-san held a meeting and warned us that you are exactly like Ryueen, Or maybe worse "

" What ?! " Tokito shouted at Kaneda. Before Glaring at the Angel to which she received sternly

" Of course nobody believed her at first. However, The more she explained the more apparent it became to us " All of Class C nodded at his statement

From his usual sadistic behavior with Ryueen to the incident he threatened the whole Class in the Colossal exam to throw Class points. After Hiyori explained it in detail while mixing some lies in there, It became apparent that Tokito wasn't as good of a Leader as they thought

" S-So.... What did you do after that ? Why didn't you tell me ?! " Tokito shouted at one of his supporters who averted his gaze awkwardly, Tokito set his sight on the speaking Kaneda

" After everyone was convinced. Shiina-san told us that we should keep you as our Leader since you have the abilities. However, She suggested that we throw our censure votes on you so you would tie for second place after Ryueen-kun as a mean to warn you and everyone agreed to that " Kaneda said, Earning multiple nods across the Room. " This was our warning to you Tokito-kun, We respect you as our Leader but you should also respect us. So we needed to give you a reality check "

" Yo- "

" Ahm " Tokito's words were abruptly cut thought by a cough from Sakagami, Drawing everyone's attention to him. " If you want to continue this debate do it later. I have an announcement to make so please take your seats "

Tokito Clenched his teeth and slumped on his chair angrily, All the students quietly followed up and calmly sat. Listening to Sakagami's announcement

" The person with the most praise votes on Class C is Shiina Hiyori with 31 Votes. Congratulations " Hiyori blinked multiple times in surprise and looked around the Class, Everyone nodded at her happy for her win.

" I-I'm flattered... But thank you everyone " Hiyori stood up and bowed to everyone with an angelic smile. But didn't interrupt her teacher and sat back again.

" And now... " At Sakagami's heavy words everyone drew their attention back to the podium. " The person with the most censure votes is- "

" Ryueen Kakeru " Shouted Tokito, A smirk on his face.

" No, It's actually you Tokito Hiroya "

His smirk vanished, Same as his expression. What replaced it instead was shock and despair

" W-What ?.... "

" Did i stutter ? " Asked Sakagami. " The person with the most censure votes is Tokito Hiroya, And you are expelled from the Advanced Nurturing High school "

" W-What ?..... Wha- "

" Stop repeating that like a moron and get the fuck out of here " Amidst Tokito's disbelief. The man the myth the legend Reached his breaking point and blurted out, A wide smirk plastered on his face

" S-Sensei... Are you serious- "

" Didn't you fucking hear him ? " One of the students asked Sakagami, To be met with Ryueen's response. After his words, Everyone realized what's going on

Tokito was too paralyzed to move, The shock was too great. Both Sakagami and Ryueen walked to his table and started gathering his

stuff while he helplessly stared at them

" No... No... No what are you doing ?!!! "

" Packing your shit " Ryueen grabbed the bag from Sakagami and threw it outside of the door. " Now shoo, Go get it "

" Ugh " Tokito grabbed Ryueen's collar at the cause of his provocations. However, Ryueen was unfazed, He was about to crush his palm but stopped by Sakagami

" I recommend you don't Ryueen. Let me handle it " Sakagami said before grabbing Tokito's palm " I recommend you to quietly leave please, The guards are already coming to get you "

" UghAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH " Tokito lost it as he kicked his table flipping it over in immense rage. " LET GO OFF ME YOU STUPID SHIT. "

Tokito resisted Sakagami's grip but it was no avail. Both of them were average in terms of physical abilities, So Sakagami's old age actually came in handy once. That's what Ryueen Thought

" YOU TRAITORS YOU BETRAYED ME YOU FUCKING ASSHOLES

" He started cursing at his Class, While being dragged by Sakagami.

" YOU'RE GONNA PAY YOU FUCKING SHITS, YOU'RE GONNA PAY. FUCK ALL OF YOU "

He kept cursing them even after he left the Classroom, His voice slowly fading in the background. Ryueen smirking to himself walked towards the podium and looked at each one of his Classmates who all averted their gazes from him

" Welcome back Ryueen-san " Amidst the tense atmosphere, Ishizaki said happily. Welcoming back his master, Soon Hiyori, Albert also supported him. Ibuki clenched her teeth but she was happy on the inside because she is a tsundere

" Even though all of you shitheads betrayed me and sided with that Dogito. I am willing to forgive all of you and start a new page " Ryueen said, Making his Classmates raise their heads a bit in hope. However, He crushed them again " From this day on wards you're gonna work your shit to death in order to raise our lost class points, And i'm gonna make sure that you do that. Is that fucking clear ? "

Most of them nodded while hang their heads low. Ryueen noticed this and smirked to himself

" Ryueen-kun. Even though i'm confused on how did you survive, I'm not gonna ask because i'm sure you won't answer " Ryueen looked towards Kaneda who bravely stood up and exclaimed. " But i have a question, Now that you're back as the leader, What is our next course of action ? "

Ryueen smirked even widely at that question before opening his mouth and blurting

" We'll target Class A "

" Huh ? "

' Promotional message ? ' Ryueen thought before opening the message and reading it's contents. However, He started laughing hysterically too.

'What a fucking Monster'

Arc 9 Chap 6 : The Day of the Special Exam Pt. 2 (Class D)

Class D (3rd POV)

" I'm breaking up with Karuizawa-san "

" Eh ? "

It was the morning day of the Special exam, Where Class D woke up to a rather controversial news, Everyone stopped whatever they were doing and drew their gazes at the person standing in the middle of the Class

" Wait wait wait, Are you serious Hirata-kun ? " A Girl with short black hair and red eyes broke the enveloping silence, Voicing out her uncertainty.

" Did i stutter Shinohara-san ? " Hirata glared at her with a side glance, Making her slightly flinch. " I said that i'm breaking up with Karuizawa-san. Nothing more nothing less "

" I-I see... " The Girl named Shinohara muttered, Before hanging her head low evading Hirata's glare while processing the information. Before her eyes flashed bright, Following the path of every girl in Class D

' If Hirata-kun broke up, It means that i can have my chance with him ! ' Thought Shinohara getting internally excited. However, One thought crossed her mind, Making her feel guilty. She glanced towards the seat beside Hirata's where Karuizawa Kei, His 'ex' Girlfriend was sitting. However, She didn't appear hurt *' Hirata-kun was the one who dumped her, I wonder if Kei-chan is really okay.... '*

Hirata slumped on his Chair with a loud noise, Snapping every girl from their fantasies. However, That's when they realized another fact which caused their enthusiasm to drastically drop

The Class's Hero Hirata Yousuke has returned to his isolation and depression right after the Results of the Colossal exam, Where his Class broke into a fight over who to expel with everyone pointing fingers while defending themselves.

It made him sick to his stomach watching his Class like that, And at that moment it was his breaking point. He retired from leading the Class and completely abandoned hope in his Class, So breaking up with Karuizawa Kei was just another stepping stone towards the deep abyss known as depression

However, Before anyone could move. The backdoor of the Class swiftly opened in an elegant manner, Revealing A Tall well-built blonde man with a wide smirk on his face. All the Class's attention drew towards him with the exception of Hirata, He nonchalantly brushed all of them and walked towards his seat and sat, Not before giving a side glance towards his seatmate Kushida Kikyou causing her to flinch

This small situation went unnoticed by the Class, Even the people around Kushida. They were all focused on their emotions while looking towards him, Small percentage of the population were guilty since they would be voting him out, While the others split between Pity, Amusement, Indifferent and relief. Some people even thought of trying to bully him and was about to approach him if not for the Bell

Chabashira-sensei strolled inside of the Class with her usual indifferent expression, On her way there she glanced at Blonde haired man who only opened one eye and smirked before crossing his legs again. She averted her gaze and walked towards the podium

" Alright you bunch. I believe you have enough brain cells to know what today is right ? " Asked Chabashira mockingly, Everyone reluctantly nodded. " Grab your phones and open the list of student on the OAA App, There you can vote. "

Some people asked questions to which Chabashira answered Coldly. However, When everyone got ready to vote. Chabashira interrupted them

" Before you start voting, There is an announcement i must share with you after the results are out. So make sure to not leave " Everyone was confused but brushed it off regardless. " You may start the vote now "

At that sentence everyone started tapping on their phones, Looking for their planned students. On the praise vote section, Most of them put their friends's names alongside some popular people like Hirata, Kushida and Ichinose

When a certain girl reached the Censure voting section. She looked up from her phone and gazed at her seatmate, Kouenji noticed it and spared her a side glance to which she responded with a sinister smile

' Kouenji Rokusuke, It was fun while it lasted. However, You must follow Ryueen's path and get rid of you now. You are someone dangerous to my existence, Since you know about my other side. And i do not forgive anyone who does, After you, I'll use that acting director to get rid of that bastard Ayanokouji too. While you call yourself the perfect human, I call myself a god and it is clear who is better. It is

unfortunate that you went against me so only blame your luck ' Kushida thought.

Kouenji noticed the beige girl beside him overflowing with Confidence and smirked, Before slightly pulling up the cloth in his arm showing a bit of his muscles, To which Kushida traumatically averted her gaze, Remembering the experience she went through Yesterday after Ayanokouji tormented her.

' After that bastard left me with this Maniac. Do you know what he did ? He fucking stripped and forced me to watch him flexing his muscles ! I wanted to puke so hard, It was so disgusting ARGH ' Kushida internally complained while tapping his name *' Calm down Kikyuu, You cannot allow your facade to slip. He is gonna pay for this, Yes, He is gonna pay '*

Kushida after typing his name she tilted her phone slightly so Kouenji could see it and flashed him with a sinister smile, Slowly approaching the Censure vote with her index finger while letting Kouenji see. However, His smirk didn't waver, She got annoyed and increased her pace, But before she could put it on top.

" Umm~ Chabashira-sensei ? " A Meek voice echoed through the tense silence, Abruptly interrupting Kushida's amusement. She looked up and glared at the back head of the Girl called Nene Mori

" What ? You're in the middle of an exam " Chabashira indifferently said while looking at her

" Umm~ I don't know if it's a bug but " Nene Trailed off, Getting somewhat scared from Chabashira's gaze. However, She gulped and blurted out her words " W-Why can't i C-Censure vote K-Kouenji-kun ? "

" Huh ? " Kushida let a low confused sound that was only heard by Kouenji, Who's smirk couldn't go any wider.

" Yeah, I can't vote him too " Said another boy. " Is it a bug or something in the app Sensei ?

" Me too " " Yeah. "

Suddenly, Everyone started voicing their support to the complains. Kushida stared at everyone in confusion before tapping her phone herself. However, Her vote didn't register.

' Huh ? ' Thought Kushida before tapping the censure vote again, And again, And again, And her vote didn't register. She tapped in Horikita Suzune's name and the app approved, But tried to vote Kouenji again but it didn't accept it. She lifted her head towards Kouenji and opened her mouth..

Clap Clap

Chabashira-sensei clapped twice, Stopping all the murmurs and drawing the attention to her. She took a quick glance at Kouenji before opening her mouth

" I can assure you that it isn't a bug. The App is working perfectly fine. "

" B-But... Why can't we- "

" Did i stutter ? " Chabashira's voice turned even colder. " I said that the app is working fine, There is no problems "

" Then why can't we vote Kouenji ? " Asked a random defect. Raising more questions along the same lines

' No way.... Could it be... ' Thought a certain brown haired girl before checking something on her phone, And her eyes widened. She stole a glance at Kouenji who smirked at her ' I see..... '

" Ha ! It seems that you noodle brained peasants cannot figure it out. As expected from the garbage of society " That voice belongs to none other than Kouenji who boasted mockingly with crossed arms and a wide smirk. Angering almost everybody inside the Room

" What did you say you narcissist ? " Shinohara angrily shot up from her seat and glared at Kouenji.

" You heard him. "

" W-What ?!... " Shinohara was taken aback by Chabashira's intervention, Who was smiling crazily at the scene in front of her.

" He isn't wrong. You guys are really stupid " Everyone's jaw dropped, With the exception of Chabashira and Kouenji who were slightly shocked. They all turned to look towards the quite boy sitting close to the window. He rose her head and looked towards the podium, At his Teacher " Sensei, Why don't you explain to them and get this exam over with. I want to leave already "

" As you wish Hirata " Chabashira agreed to his request and leaned on the podium tiredly with both of her hands. Smiling sadistically at her Class, However, Kouenji couldn't help but notice the depression behind it. " I'll have to remind you bunch of the rules again. Honestly, How dumb can you even get ? "

" W-What do you mean S-Sae-chan-sense- "

" Oh please, Stop with that nickname, It disgusts me every time i hear you retards say it " Chabashira shot up and glared at the student who meekly looked at the ground. " I'll explain it into simpler terms for all of you morons. Have you forgot about the rules ? "

" T-The rules ? What do you mean Chabashira-sensei ? " Kushida raised an obvious question, While trying to appear calm. Everyone nodded at her, Not understanding Chabashira's question.

" The rules of Censure voting. You can only use it on 3 different Classmates of yours "

" Yes. We know that, So what's wrong ? " Kushida asked again. However, Something clicked inside of her head, Same as some of the smart students of Class D

' I knew it ' Matsushira thought. Celebrating internally with her Achievement ' Now, What would you do.... Ayanokouji-kun ? '

" I don't understand Sensei. Why can't we vote Kouenji ? " Asked Ijuin.

" Why don't you dedicate more fat to your brain than to your stomach and figure it out ? " Chabashira made fun of Ijuin's chubby build and stupidity, Angering him even more. She looked around the Class and almost everybody was confused " You guys never fail to amaze me, Just when i think you can't get more dumb, You find a way to impress me. If you can only impress me positively, But no, You guys excel at being stupid, Color me impressed, You're the worst "

Chabashira clapped, Trying so hard to contain her frustration. She took a deep sigh before facing her Class

" Let me explain it in more detail, You dumbasses. You can only use censure votes on your Classmates and cannot use it on somebody outside of this Class "

" W-Wait.... D-Does T-That M-Mean.. " Kushida voiced out, While stammering with her words. All of the Defects started realizing it too

" Finally you get it ? This is what the announcement later was about, Kouenji Rokusuke is no longer a student of Class D and he joined Class A. Surely you need no more explanation than this right ? " Chabashira explained, And everyone's doubts got clarified.

" W-WHAT ?! " " H-He... " " Joined Class A ?! "

Many murmurs erupted, As everyone started yelling their disbelief

" C-Chabashira-sensei. You mean he paid 20 Million points to Transfer ? " Kushida voiced out, And all of the simps listened to her.

" Do i need to explain that too ? " Chabashira laughed at the very obvious question. Kushida's hopes got crushed, As she looked at Kouenji's smirk

" D-Does that mean.... Kouenji-kun betrayed us ? " Kushida blurted out, And everyone jumped on her train.

" Yeah ! " " You Traitor ! " " You backstabber ! " " Yo- "

" Pfft Bwaahahahahaha " All the comments went silent at Chabashira's laughter who couldn't hold it back. Kouenji was chuckling to himself while Hirata was bitterly smiling. " You bunch are really stupid if you think he is a Traitor "

" Yeah ? He betrayed us and Joined Class A ! " Shinohara shouted. Chabashira opened her mouth but somebody cut through her

" You're the one to talk " Hirata said in a calm voice, Drawing everyone's attention to him. " You must be really dumb if you think he is a traitor, As Chabashira-sensei said "

" B-But Hirata-kun ! He Lef- "

" As if you **WEREN'T GOING TO PULL THE RUG BELOW HIM** " Hirata snapped and started shouting, Making Shinohara back away "**YOU WERE GOING TO BETRAY HIM, BETRAY A CLASSMATE. AND WHEN HE PROTECTED HIMSELF YOU CALL HIM A TRAITOR ?** "

His voice was loud and full of hostility, Making everyone start sweating. All the girls hung their head low while he kept ranting on them

" **YOU DARE BETRAY HIM AND CALL HIM A TRAITOR ? WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH YOU ?** " Hirata stopped to catch his breath and calming down, Before speaking in a lower tone but still cold enough "**It seems that Kiyotaka-kun was right after all. You guys don't deserve any care or sympathy, You're just a bunch of fake friends who use each other for your own benefit and stab each other on the back. Truly pathetic** "

" H-Hirata-kun... T-Tha- "

" **SHUT UP** " Hirata's high pitched voice shot up at Kushida's words. He stood from his chair and approached Kushida, He lifted his arm and pointed at her "**Don't even start with your bullshit, If anyone is to blame it's you. You Kushida are responsible, And only you** "

Kushida broke into a cold sweat, Fighting the urge to curse back at him and kept her fake attitude. Her eyes started tearing up, Going along with her act. However, Hirata couldn't care less

" **Oh please, Stop with the crocodile tears. Save them when you explain yourself in front of everybody** " Hirata moved his gaze from Kushida and looked at everyone, However, A Wave of reluctance came through his body, Not because of revealing her secret, But because of laziness "**I wouldn't care less about this Class. However, Allow me to give everyone of you as a parting advice** "

Hirata lifted his finger and pointed at the crying Kushida, Without any hint of sympathy on his face, He spoke

" **If you want to find who is the real Traitor, You should investigate this bitch.** "

" Hey, Who are you calling bitch- "

" **SHUT UP** " Hirata shouted at the simps and grabbed his bag before strolling towards the door. However, He stopped and looked at the Class. Or rather, One specific person " Kouenji-kun, Are you coming ? "

" Fuu, I guess " Kouenji grabbed his bag and strolled out of the Classroom with Hirata, Leaving a dumbfounded bunch on the inside.

" Huh ? "

Everyone's phone vibrated at the same time, Confusing the already depressed students of Class D.

' *Promotional message ?* ' Thought Matsushita before opening the message. However, She widened her eyes when she saw the title, She opened the audio file and listened to it. However, Her eyes immediately drew towards one person ' *I see, So my suspicions were correct huh ?* '

Everyone listened to the audio file was chocked to their cores. All of their wide eyes landed on one single person, Who was paralyzed on her Chair

" Ugh~ " Kushida furiously kicked her table while standing up and bolted at the exit, Disappearing from everyone's sights. All of them was paralyzed, Not believing what they way

' *As i said before. He is really scary* ' Matsushita thought while looking at the exit where Kushida left from. She sighed internally and shook her head ' *It seems that you've messed with the wrong person Kushida-san, I do honestly pity you* '

Back at Class A

Looking at my phone i let a satisfied grin before sliding it back. Everyone in the Class was shocked, And understandably so. Honami's wide eyes drew towards me, I reciprocated her gaze with a wide grin, And she received my message.

Now we wait...

Arc 9 Chap 7 : The Day of the Special Exam (Class A)

Class A (3rd POV)

" Alright~ Your results are out ! " The Homeroom Teacher of Class A, Hoshinomiya Chie announced to all of her students in a spontaneous manner " The person with the most Praise votes in your Class issssss.... Ichinose Honami with an impressive 89 Votes ! Congratulations Honami-chan~! "

Hoshinomiya congratulated Ichinose, So did her Classmates. The girl in question was surprised by the amount of people voted for her so she started awkwardly scratching her Red cheek in the middle of all the praises

" Thank you everybody for your kind words and trust in me~ I highly appreciate it ! " Ichinose stood up and bowed to her Class in gratitude before sitting down, With a smile brighter than usual. She looked towards her left where a certain Brown Haired boy was sitting, Ayanokouji gave her a thin smile with a nod, Seeing him she perked up and nodded too, Remembering their conversation Yesterday.

' According to Kiyotaka, There should be an announcement after this exam of a new transfer student. Kiyotaka didn't specify who it is exactly but i'm very excited Regardless ' Thought Ichinose getting internally excited ' If i have to guess, It's probably Kouenji-kun, Since they were working together behind the shadows. It would make the most sense. Anyway, I should focus on what's gonna happen next '

Ichinose prepared her phone and looked towards the podium where Chie-sensei stood, Getting ready to announce the censure votes.

" The person with the most Censure votes is..... Shibata Sou with 40 Votes. I'm sorry Shibata-kun, But you hav- "

" I would like to overturn Shibata-kun expulsion Chie-sensei " Ichinose cut through Their Homeroom Teacher's words and stood up. Hoshinomiya looked at her and grinned

" That would be 20 Million Points Honami-chan, Do you have it ? " Ichinose Nodded and stepped towards the podium in front of Hoshinomiya and transferred to her the required amount of points. Hoshinomiya nodded, Indicating the completion of the transaction.

" The Required amount of points have been reached and Shibata-kun's expulsion have been nullified. You're no longer needed to go to the Faculty office "

Hoshinomiya's words lifted the tense mood on the Class as the usual light and cheery one erupted. Many of them sighed in relief as a newfound smiles plastered on their faces

However, Amidst the celebrations. Chie Glanced towards Ayanokouji, The brown haired protagonist and grinned. Before clapping, Making the celebrations come to a halt, But the light atmosphere was still present

' *This is it !* ' Ichinose thought, Excitedly glancing towards her Boyfriend before looking towards the podium with Shining eyes.

" Alright everyone~ Now that the exam is out of the way, I have an announcement for all of you~ "

Kiyo POV

After Chie-sensei's announcement, Some confusion erupted in the cheery atmosphere. Many Students tensed up, Probably thinking about a new special exam. However, Chie-sensei's smile reassured them

" What kind of announcement Chie-sensei ? " Amikura rose her hand and asked.

" It's--"

Knock Knock

" Ah~ They are already here~ " Two knocks came from the Door causing Chie-sensei to stop and approach it, Leaving us hanging in the air. She slid the handle open revealing a Staff Member

" I'm sorry if i'm interrupting something " They apologized to which Chie-sensei shook her head. He took a step inside and scanned the Classroom, More specifically the Back Tables. He spoke with Chie-sensei and pointed towards my Direction, Causing everyone to look there too, Chie-sensei nodded and he temporarily excused himself

" What is happening ? " Confused remarks were flying around. However, They all came to a halt and widened their eyes when the Staff member returned, Carrying a desk with him.

Honami's happiness shot through the roofs as she was visibly excited at this point. Shortly after, She narrowed her eyes in confusion as another two staff members emerged. Same as everyone present

All of my Classmates's watchful gazes were on the three adults, Like prisoners in the middle of a checkup. Soon, The three of them arrived towards my direction.

The First Staff member placed the Desk around 20 cm behind my Chair and took one Chair from his friend and neatly placed it there

too. However, Another Chair was placed on the Desk behind Honami's and tidied it, Before they walked towards Chie-sensei and took their leave

All of my Classmates stared at the two desks placed behind us like they were some sort of a mystery. Honami's jaw slightly dropped as her eyes widened while staring at the table behind her, She threw a glance towards me conveying her theory and i nodded.

Clap Clap

Chie-sensei clapped garnering everyone's attention back at her, With a wide grin on her face she walked towards the podium and looked at all of us.

" Everyone~ I have an announcement to make " She quickly glanced at me before continuing her speech " Today~ We have not one, But Two Students transferring to our Class ! "

" Eh ? " " What ? " " Errr ? " Confusion erupted in the Class. However, Chie-sensei ignored it and looked towards the door

" You may enter now~ " At her words everyone went silent and glued their glances at the Entrance door. When two familiar students emerged wearing their School uniforms, At the sight of them everyone's jaw dropped

" What ? Are you all attracted by my perfectness already ? " I facepalmed at Kouenji's remark. He noticed my reaction and smirked even widely.

Why did i bring him to my Class again ?

*** Flashbacks ***

" Is this related to the condition you're adding ? " At my questions Kouenji smirked

" Yes, I want you to transfer me to your Class Ayano-boy " Kouenji requested and i rose an eyebrow

" You want to transfer to Class A ? " Kouenji nodded " And you want me to help you gather the points ? "

" Exactly "

Moving Kouenji to my Class huh ? That certainly sounds pretty. However, 20 Million points is no joke, If i gather all of my Classmates's points it would certainly be more than enough. But it would be hard to convince them, Especially since it would put us at the risk of an expulsion.

If i refuse, Then it would be pretty hard for us to cooperate from now on, Not because of Class Barrier but our Relationship. However, Why do i have a feeling that even if i refuse.... Kouenji would find a way to move regardless ?

I threw a quick glance towards him, He responded with a smirk.

Either way, This deal would be pretty helpful to me. Even accepting it without anymore conditions would be okay. But i wouldn't settle on that

" Alright, I accept. However, It would be on two conditions " I voiced out. Kouenji rose an eyebrow " First that after you Transfer, You wouldn't slack off and hold the Class back. I'm not asking you to go all out but at least give some satisfactory results. "

" Don't worry about that Ayano-boy. I'm not planning to hold back " Kouenji smirked, Before flipping his hair " Besides, We are heading towards a tough battle. Holding back would only cause problems am i right ? "

" That's true. " I agreed. Before stating my second condition " For my second condition, After we graduate, I want you to finance the medical bills of a certain person on a hospital until they are cured. I will provide you with their name somewhere in the future "

" I see. Well i accept that too Ayano-boy " Kouenji smirked. However, I sense some more " However, On one condition "

" Go ahead " I rose an eyebrow. Kouenji's smirk widened even more

" I will finance that certain person you're talking about. In return, I want you to join the Kouenji Conglomerate after i take over it " At his request, I slightly widened my eyes in surprise. However i quickly composed myself

" So you're offering me a job offer ? " I rose an eyebrow, He nodded.

A Job at the Kouenji Conglomerate huh ? That doesn't sound bad. However, Even though i hate working for others, This offer would secure my finances after we Graduate and it would help Honami's mother recover.

I doubt that Kouenji would give me something like a Janitor or an Average office worker, That is if he doesn't want to troll me. I would probably be the COO or something that of a high rank, Befitting my abilities.

" It really depends on whether the White Room gets taken down or not. However, I'll think about it "

" Take your time Ayano-boy. Remember that the job is always open for you " Kouenji said, Before extending his hand. " It was pleasure doing business with you Ayano-boy "

" The pleasure was all mine Kouenji " I firmly shook his hand, Finishing our Deal. We didn't need any recorders or memorandums, All we needed was a handshake " Before we go i have a questions, As our first line of trust "

" Go ahead Ayano-boy "

" You have a plan to gather points right ? " At my question, Kouenji smirked. He grabbed his phone and showed me his balance " Already half way through huh ? I'm very interested in what you did "

" Fufu. You could say it's a string of luck that i brought a certain something with me " Kouenji said vaguely. However, I slowly caught on that. *He used money to gather Private Points huh ? Interesting*

I could make use of that.....

*** Flashback END ***

That was how our Cooperation started, And now it has reached it's peak. Kouenji at that time already had 10 Million from his Senpais and i had around 7 Million from all the prizes and the money i received

So by the start of the Stonks Club, Kouenji had already attained his desired amount of 20 Million and saved it. Because we had already anticipated an exam like this and found out it would be the best moment to transfer during a time like this

The rest of the funds also allowed me to focus more on attaining another 20 Mil to transfer another student, Since Kouenji is already out of the way. Which is what led to my meeting with Sakayanagi back before the Paper Shuffle

*** Flashback ***

" Sakayanagi, I need a favor from you "

" Fufu, I'm all ears " Sakayanagi chuckled, Seemingly happy of lending me a favor

" I need you to lead the revolution on Ryueen's Class "

*** Flashback END ***

Ryueen is receiving monthly funds from Class B because of their contract during the Island exam, So in order for me to complete another pile of 20 Million, I created a situation where Ryueen has to give up his funds in order to save himself. Which is what happened during this exam

Hiyori and Ishizaki moved according to my predictions and brought me the points, It also saved me from using much more complicated methods to force them into the situation i created. So i'm thankful to the string of luck i received, But it wouldn't make any difference anyway. Because in the end, I am going to win no matter what

" Now~ If you may introduce yourselves " Chie-sensei said with a warm smile, Looking towards Kouenji and the other person. Kouenji smirked and went first

" My name is Kouenji Rokusuke, The sole heir to the Kouenji Conglomerate. It's a pleasure to make your acquaintance " Kouenji ended his introduction with a hair flip. However, My Classmates were too stunned to react and Kouenji thought it was from his perfectness.

" It's nice to meet you in person Kouenji-kun, It's my pleasure to

have you in our Class " Unsurprisingly, It was only Chie-sensei who greeted him back. This made some people snap out of their thoughts and greeted Kouenji back

" Hmph " Kouenji made his way towards my seat and smirked, Before sitting behind me. I simply threw a quick glance at him before focusing my eyes where everybody's, Some girls had a taint Red on their Cheeks while boys were somewhat Happy, Namely Shibata.

The person in question looked towards my direction and gave me a warm smile, I responded with a nod and he decided to introduce himself

" My name is Hirata Yousuke, You may call me Yousuke. I like to play soccer and i'm already in the soccer club and hang out with my friends, So feel free to ask me out ! It is my pleasure to join your Class and be in your acquaintance, I may be new to some of you but please take care of me for the rest of our time together " Yousuke ended his flawless introduction with a captivating smile, Already improving his reputation 10 times.

** Flashbacks **

" Hello Yousuke "

" Oh.... Good afternoon Kiyotaka-kun " I greeted Yousuke after i spotted him leaving the convenience store and approached him, His depressed expression formed into a weak smile, Trying to appear strong in front of me. " How are you ? "

" I'm good. What about you ? " I reflected the question back at him, Looking for an opening.

" I'm good too. Thank you for asking " Yousuke started scratching his cheek while nervously chuckling. " Anyway, Did you want something from me ? "

" Yes, I wanted to talk with you for a second " Yousuke got hesitant. But managed to turn and face me, Giving me his full attention. " Before that, I'm quite thirsty. I'll go get a drink, You sit there "

I pointed towards the same bench we talked about before making my way towards the vending Machine, Yousuke placed his bag that had around 3 cup noodles and sat. I bought two cans of hot green tea and gave him one

" Thanks " Yousuke gracefully accepted it with a smile, I nodded and sat beside him. I opened my can and took a sip, While enjoying the sunset view " I guess this is a nice coincidence isn't it ? "

" Hmm ? " I didn't expect him to start talking out of the sudden. Yousuke while looking towards the sunset pressed the can on his lips and drank " Oh you mean that time ? "

" Yeah. Same time, Same place, Same view, And same..... " He

drifted off, Swallowing his next words. However, I managed to catch them regardless

" Same state ? " Yousuke averted his gaze from the sunset to mine and gave me a sad nod.

" Yeah, I remember being depressed at that time and you managed to help me. But i guess i'm slightly better now right haha " He laughed nervously at his own joke. However, I didn't offer him any reaction and i only stared at him. His expression slowly faded into embarrassment before averting his gaze

" You don't have to hide it you know ? " At my words, Yousuke averted his gaze back to mine. " I know that you are depressed, And you don't like the way your Class is handling stuff. So i think it's pointless to try and hide it "

Yousuke hung his head low and averted his gaze. His expression was unreadable however, Both of his hands were tugging his pants

" W-What.... " Yousuke started muttering in a low voice. Before raising it, So i could hear him " W-What should i do... ? What should i do Kiyotaka-kun ? "

" I told you before didn't i Yousuke ? You can't do anything and no one can "

" I know..... But there must be something Right ? "

" No there isn't. Your Class is doomed to fail and there is no way they would do a comeback, Even with a miracle, It's just that they are beyond help " All there is left is to destroy any lies this man comes up with, He is desperately trying to find a way to fix his Class while he knows there is none, He is just coming up with lies to convince himself and my job is to destroy every single one of them.

" Why.... Why is this happening ? " Reaching his breaking point, Yousuke got frustrated and started ranting. " I only wanted for my Classmates to get along, I didn't want to graduate as Class A or raise in the rankings. I only wanted us to get along and live a fun life. Why is this happening ? Why ?.... "

Much like everybody, Yousuke also has a source of his confidence which is pretty similar to Honami. However, It is for a different goal.

Since the incident of his middle school, Yousuke strove to pay for his sin of abandoning his friend with helping everyone in need. That's why he goes to such a great length to help everybody, Whether they were enemies or not

It is safe to assume that he also went out with Karuizawa for the sake of helping her and not romantic interest. If i have to guess, It's probably to protect her from bullies as far as i have seen.

So, How could i make use of this weakness and destroy it at the same

time ?

" Is it too much to ask for ? " Yousuke rose his head after ranting and looked towards me " Is it too much to ask for Kiyotaka-kun ? Is it too much to ask for my Classmates to get along ? "

" Your Classmates doesn't deserve such a thing Yousuke " I said bluntly. And Yousuke widened his eyes " They don't deserve all the hard work you pour into them and your attempts to fix them, They don't deserve any of that. As you've already seen, They are a bunch of backstabbing 'friends' who betray each other without batting an eyelash, I'm pretty sure that they are planning to secretly target a student in this exam too. "

" B-But- "

" Am i wrong ? " I rose an eyebrow, Yousuke hung his head lower " In fact, I already know that they are targeting Kouenji in this exam, Am i right ? "

" How ? " Yousuke shot up and asked.

" Simple, Because somebody already spilled the news for me " I said. Bluntly hinting towards a spy, Yousuke tugged his pants even tighter " As you can see, Nobody deserves all the work you put into them. And if you still don't believe me, I guess i'll let you see for yourself "

" W-What do you mean ?.... "

" What i mean is, Tomorrow things are going to go very wrong for your Class, Since Kouenji is going to transfer to my Class " Yousuke's eyes widened. I tilted my head and looked towards him " And you can figure out what's gonna happen "

Yousuke's pupils were shacking, Imagining the scenario in his head. Until something clicked

" You see it now ? " I asked him.

" I do.... "

" However, You don't have to worry about a thing Yousuke " I placed my hand on top of his Right shoulder, He lifted his head and looked at me, With teary eyes " Even if you failed to protect someone. That doesn't mean your friend is sad "

" H-Huh ? " Yousuke was confused. " M-My friend ? Y-You mean S-Sugimura ? "

" Yes " I nodded. Before removing my hand from his shoulder " I'm pretty sure that he is already happy with the fact that you regret abandoning him and you're striving so hard to pay for your sin, And i'm pretty sure that he forgave you too "

Yousuke opened his mouth, But stopped, A Tear dropped while remembering his friend.

" You strove so hard to pay for your sin, I'm pretty sure your desperation already reached him, And if it's genuine he already

accepted it. Think about his feelings, He'll be happy to see you happy, And he'll be sad when he sees you sad. So don't hurt yourself because it would hurt him too "

" I-I... "

" Of course, I haven't met your friend nor i know his personality. So i may just be making stuff up " I Said. Before i continued, I locked my gaze with the teary Yousuke and said in a warm tone " But if your friendship back then was genuine and you really love your friend, Then i'm pretty sure your feelings are reciprocated too. Don't worry Yousuke, You did great "

Yousuke's tears ran free as he started crying violently on his sleeve, I only patted his back, Trying to comfort him.

I couldn't pretend to understand his pain, Nor pretend to know better. Those were just the words i thought it would help him. However, Somewhere deep inside, I have a feeling that i actually meant them

With this, Hirata Yousuke's defect should shatter, And his nature should change to some degree. And with this, *He has become a member befitting my Class*

I went to the convenience store and brought some tissues for Yousuke, He accepted them and cleaned himself. Before returning to his usual smile

" Thank you Kiyotaka-kun "

" I didn't do anything "

" Haha, Always so humble " Yousuke chuckled, Wiping his face dry " I guess if Sugimura-kun is already happy, Then it's all good "

" Yeah "

We sat there in a comfortable silence, Staring at the Twilight while he was wiping himself off.

" Yousuke.... " I suddenly blurted out, He threw the tissue away and looked at me. I tilted my head slightly and said " How do you feel about joining our Class ? "

*** Flashback END ***

After that, It was just a simple matter of breaking new lies he comes up with and cornering him into transfer. It wasn't as hard as destroying his nature and rebuilding it, But it needed some work

After i reached my home and got confronted by Honami, I transferred the 20 Million points to him and ordered him to transfer right after the announcement of the exam in the excuse of avoiding spreading more Chaos in Class D. However, My real reason is giving him a protection point before transferring him. Now, Class A has two students with Protection Points while Class D has none

Yousuke walked towards the Chair number 42 behind Honami who was still surprised at the revelation and sat there, He greeted

Many girls got visibly excited. However, The only thing stopped them from moving is the risk of losing Class Points, So it is a relief that my actions didn't cause chaos in my Class

" Alright~ Now that the exam is done~ You are free for the rest of the Homeroom session~ And since you have new Classmates~ Use it to get along ! " At Chie-sensei's announcement, Everybody either stood up and walked towards The two new tables or shifted in their seat towards their direction. Chie-sensei had a warm smile at her face before leaving. However....

All 42 Phones on Class A Vibrated at the same time. Causing Chie-sensei to stop dead on her tracks at the loud vibrations, Everyone looked at each other, Adding more fuel to their confusion. However....

Looking at my phone i let a satisfied grin before sliding it back. Everyone in the Class was shocked, And understandably so. Honami's wide eyes drew towards me, I reciprocated her gaze with a wide grin, And she received my message.

A Loud bang came from the Backdoor, Unconsciously drawing all of my Classmates's attention, Causing them to get shocked even more.

The person walked past through everyone standing and approached my table, With killing intents on their eyes and immense dark aura.

" Ugh " Arriving at my table, She extended her arm and grabbed my collar furiously, Before clenching her other hand behind her with the intent to hit me. Meanwhile, I only stared back at her with an uninterested look, Almost yawning

" YOU BASTAAAAAAAARD ! WHY DID YOU POST IT ! "

Arc 9 Chap 8 : The Downfall and the Cleanup

" K-K-K-Kushida-san ?!! " Many of my Classmates threw surprised exclamations at The furious girl gripping my Collar, Kushida ignored them all and focused all of her raging eyes on me

" Good morning Kushida, How may i help you today ? "

A Storm fell on our Class, Everyone without exception were staring at the horrific scene in front of them. Kushida was leaking an immense dark aura that intensified at my nonchalant greeting, One that you cannot imagine any high-schooler to have, Especially from someone like her, An angel in the minds of everybody

Her grip around my collar tightened and she was staring at me like i have just murdered her family, Any normal person would started trembling under this. However, I took it head-on with no reaction what so ever

Some forgot to turn off the Audio file they received cause of the shock, So all Kushida's secrets were spilling out in the background. From how much she hates everyone to how she caused a whole Class to fall apart in just minutes, To how she betrayed her Class to expel Horikita. All of that was revealed, *To the whole school*

Even if they didn't want to believe it, The scene in front of them would force them to. Kushida's picture is changing in the minds of everybody, And that change is massive, So everyone is still processing the information.

" Hey Kushida. Get off Kiyotak- "

" **SHUT UP BITCH !!** " Honami tried to defend me but Kushida refuted back, She alongside Kanzaki, Yousuke and Kouenji were still present with us, Since they are already aware of this nature of Kushida.

Honami was about to move and manhandle Kushida. However, I rose my hand gesturing for her to stop. She reluctantly obeyed and gave me a worried expression, However, My gaze was enough to reassure her and she nodded with a smile, Before glaring at Kushida.

Much like Honami, Yousuke and Kanzaki obeyed and stood aside, Glaring at Kushida. Who ignored all of them and focused solely on me

" Pffft Bwahahahahaha " Amidst the tension, Kouenji behind me started laughing loudly. Kushida switched from me to him, With legs crossed on top of the table he flipped his bangs, A wide apparent smirk on his face " Don't mind me, The scene in front of me is just hilarious. Twoface-girl trying to intimidate Kiyo-boy, What a nice joke "

" **Ugh What did you say you STUPID NARCISSIST ?** " Kushida yelled at Kouenji, Spitting in the air.

" My, Watch your mouth Kushida-girl. You're deluding my perfectness with your filth. It's a good thing that i brought my Perfectness Restorer " Kouenji grabbed a handkerchief and wiped some spit landed on his skin, Making Kushida even more annoyed " My perfectness is valuable Kushida-girl. So please don't destroy things you cannot afford, Since you'll be paying in a hefty way "

Kouenji's words may seem like a joke for provocation. However, I do sense the threat and seriousness behind them that Kushida was oblivious to. *'Just don't touch the man's perfectness '* That what it conveyed.

" **Filth ? You call me FILTHY ?** " Kushida yelled again, This time without spitting. Kouenji smirked and ignored her " **Every boy dreams about my spit, They would PAY to get it. And you're calling me FILTHY ? YOU STUPID DIC-** "

" I don't care. Either way, Can you let go of my collar please ? " I said while putting my hand on top of Kushida's grip, Drawing her attention back at me. She tightened her grip, Trying to choke me

" **SHUT UP YOU STUPID TRAITOR !!!!!!!** " Kushida put all of her might and rage in one single scream. She clenched her hand behind her, Getting ready to start attacking me

' Traitor ? ' ' What ? '

Confusion mixed with surprised murmurs erupted in the Class, Which was inaudible to Kushida.

" I'm afraid that i don't follow. Can you elaborate the 'Traitor' part exactly ? "

" **STOP ACTING DUMB YOU FUCKING IDIOT. YOU BETRAYED ME, AND YOU'RE ACTING ALL INNOCENT ? YOU STUPID SHIT** " Kushida swung her arm in an attempt to punch me, Garnering collective gasps from my Classmates. I tilted my head slightly, Dodging her punch, Adding more fuel to her fire " **You stupid Shit ! Why.... Why..... WHYYYYYYYY..... WHY DID YOU BETRAY ME WHY ??** "

She kept swinging her arm left and right, While i only dodged her attacks. It didn't take long before she got tired, Since she was punching the air with all of her strength and speed.

" Ara Ara Kushida-chan~ Using violence in front of a Teacher like

" **SHUT UPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPPP !!!!!!!** " Kushida yelled at Chie-sensei's sly voice, To which she responded with bonking her head with a slipped tongue. I ordered her too to not intervene but it seems that she couldn't help but chime in for some fun.

" I still don't get it Kushida. Betrayed you ? Innocent ? Can you please elaborate ? " I kept playing dumb for the sake of clarification for my Classmates, Since they would think there is something wrong with me after this, It's better if it gets solved right here and right now. *And some amusement too*

" **Ugh YOU POSTED IT. MY SECRET, YOU BETRAYED ME** " Kushida accused. I responded with widening my eyes in recognition

" Oh that ? Well i guess i did post it " Kushida clenched her fist again, Reading for round two. However i continued, With a smug on my face " But i do not ever remember betraying you, Since i was never on your side in the first place "

" **UGH** " Kushida swung her arm again, But this time i caught it with my palm. " **LET GO OF ME YOU DONKEY** "

She kept pulling her arm back, Trying to break free while nudging it with her other. However, I only kept increasing my hold and her body unconsciously adapted to reduce the pain

" Please let go..... Please.... It hurts... Please... IT HURTS IT
FUCKING HURTS "

" That's all it took to make you obey ? " I released her hand and she instantly clutched it with her other. Seemingly in pain, I threw a quick glance to Chie-sensei before standing up from my Chair and Faced Kushida who looked at me with all the hostility she could muster, I pointed at her and exclaimed " You, Kushida Kikyou, Are a threat to our Class and i only did what's right to get rid of you. Not only did you betray us once during the Zodiac exam, But you also betrayed us on the Sports festival too when you allowed Ryueen to poison the girls. I deemed you as a must eliminated threat, So i only did what's correct. Don't blame me, Blame yourself "

" Ugh " Kushida picked up the pace and launched herself at me. However, I hand came and blocked her punch and restrained Kushida in quick succession. " **UGH LET ME GO YOU ALCOHOLIC BITCH** "

" Ara~ That's not nice " Chie-sensei easily manhandled Kushida and cuffed both of her hands, Kushida kept resisting against Chie-sensei, But it was futile. " Anyway~ I'm sorry that you had to deal with that Kiyotaka-kun, Security is already here "

" Don't worry Chie-sensei, Just make sure that she doesn't rant about anything unnecessary here "

" Hai~ " Chie-sensei exclaimed before dragging Kushida away.

" LISTEN HERE YOU BASTARD, I WON'T FORGIVE YOU FOR AS LONG AS I LIVE. YOU WILL PAY AYANOKOUJI YOU WILL PAY DEARLY "

" If i can't make you pay. Then..... **Your family will** "

"

A Violent ever-so-loud laughter echoed through the Class, And even reverberated in the hallways. If i didn't know better i wouldn't have known where it came from, I turned around and looked at Kouenji, Who was tearing up. Chie-sensei and Honami were chuckling to themselves, Except the former who did it out in the open " Wow, You're such a rather.... Talented Comedian Kushida-girl. His family will pay you say ? Well, I wish you luck with that "

Don't get me wrong, It would work in my best interest if Kushida would take down that man and save me from all the hustle and bustle i would go through, It would also mean that my ideologies would be proven wrong. However, If such thing was possible, And if she did that, I wouldn't come to understand why i have spent all my life in the White Room instead of being a two faced asshole.

" A-Ayanokouji-kun. Why did you do that ? " Horikita Suzune asked me with a nervous voice, Her eyes full of despair. I simply rerouted and sat on my seat

" No that's not it. You told me that you'll use the recording to blackmail her to stop, Why did you post it ? "

" B-But... "

" That's enough Horikita-san. " A Male Voice echoed behind Horikita startling her, She slowly turned around and widened her eyes. " I wouldn't want to be rude towards the Former Student Council President's younger sister but Classes are in session, So i

recommend you to head back towards your Class "

" Y-Yes sir... " Horikita hung her head low before following the orders. However, She dropped me one last glance, It wasn't hostile, It was wary. I simply brushed it off and looked towards the door, Where a familiar adult emerged

" Good morning Students. If you don't know me i'm the current acting director of the School, You may call me Tsukishiro. " Tshukishiro with a warm smile greeted everyone inside of the Room " The staff members are busy so i'll make this quick. I'm sorry that you had to deal with this type of situation, Especially you Ayanokouji-kun "

" Don't worry about it, It was just the *cleanup* of a mess " I gave him a small smug and he fully received the meaning. He threw a quick glance at Kouenji who ignored him before continuing his speech

" I'm glad. Anyway, The individual named 'Kushida Kikyuu' would be properly punished for her actions. Especially after threatening... Your dad... Ayanokouji-kun, I hope you're not offended " Tsukishiro apologized. However, I could notice him trying so hard to not laugh or smile and keep a professional front. It was pretty rare seeing a White Room instructor's composure break like that, I guess the joke was just too funny for him.

With that, Tsukishiro bid farewell and took his leave. The atmosphere of the Class was still tense, And understandably so. However, It slightly lightened when we were alone

" What just happened ? " Shibata asked, Still dumbfounded. " What i witnessed what real right ? "

Her exclamations earned her multiple nods from my Classmates, That's when everyone's stunt drastically decreased

" Honami-chan. Were you aware of Kushida-san's true nature before this ? " Amikura asked Honami, Who was somewhat deep in thought, She snapped back and shook her head. " I see.. So you were- "

" No ! I didn't mean that " Honami immediately denied her own actions. " I meant that yes, Me, Kanzaki-kun and Kiyotaka were aware of Kushida's betrayals and second face since the Zodiac exam.. We didn't want to tell you because it would spread Chaos in the Class and we would become suspicious "

" No need to explain a lot Honami-chan, We understand " Amikura calmed down Honami who started panicking. " If that's the case then why did you shake your head when i asked you the questions ? "

" Ah~Umm... That~ " Honami was at a loss for words, I noticed that she glanced at me before speaking " I was just thinking of

something and brushed it off, That's why i shook my head "

" I see.... " Amikura gave an understanding look. However, It quickly turned to a teasing grin " So what was it Honami-chan~? "

" Ah I can't tell. Sorr- "

" I see, I understand i understand " Amikura nodded in fake understanding. Before glancing at me " I guess asking you about that was not appropriate, Sorry Honami-chan. But if you need help, I can offer you some advice on how to have sex with your Boyfriend~ "

" Wha~? " Honami's cheeks flushed red, Before trying to deny Amikura " N-NO ! I wasn't thinking of that MAKU-CHAN ! "

" Oh yeah ? Then why did you glance at him when i asked you then ? " Amikura seemingly noticed Honami's glance at me and grinned. Honami's face got even more red and ended up stammering " Don't worry Honami-chan~ I know how pure and kind you are, Those things should be saved for marriage.... Right ? "

" Y-Yes... " Honami seemed powerless against the Amikura omen, And couldn't help but feel embarrassed. Soon, Amikura had enough and turned with her grin towards the back ranks. More specifically, Towards Kouenji

" Hah, I like this Class Already " Kouenji announced while combing his hair with a smirk. Amikura grinned at him

" I'm glad that you liked it Kouenji-kun, Is it because of the dirty jokes ? "

" Hah, A little bit. " Kouenji said, Before throwing a side glance towards Amikura " But more importantly, I like it because of you Amikura-girl "

" Ara~ I'm flattered by your Confession Kouenji-kun~ However, I already like Emilia " Amikura rejected Kouenji's confession with a line made our whole Class laugh.

" Emilia ? Who is she ? " I asked confused. Honami facepalmed, Embarrassingly smirking to herself while the rest of the Class looked at me like i was a precious little boy

" You and your innocence Ayanokouji-kun. "

" Huh ? "

I could almost sworn that.... There was a hint of depression flying there

Weird....

After this, All of my Classmates went and greeted themselves to the two new students. And Surprisingly, Kouenji decided to cooperate and at least learn a few things about his new Classmates. However, They were mostly surrounding Yousuke's table

Honami sent me a message, Requesting to meet me for an explanation from me. However, She didn't force me to. Sensing that

i would mean no harm, I explained to her how did i acquire 40 Million points, While leaving out the part where i predicted an exam like this happening, Since it could give her some hints about Tsukishiro. At the end of the Explanation, Her eyes were shining in admiration with a cute blush on her face.

After that, We both returned to the Class and got dragged at the conversation with Yousuke and Kouenji. However, I did enjoy the show they were putting, And had a lot of fun.

That's it for Arc 9. It was a long one huh ?

I've ran into some problems while writing some parts so i hope it didn't feel bad or up to par.

The reason the Class poll existed is for the reason to expel Kouenji, I don't think that Tsukishiro would waste his time on an exam where Kiyo would have 0% chance of getting expelled and try to think of another, Especially when Kiyo isn't obsessed with his boring life style and trying to have fun with his abilities

And press F for Kushida. Wait no, She doesn't deserve that. Anyways, Next would be SS and i'm quite conflicted on who to do, But i'll manage.

Anyway, I'll catch you in the next one

Adiu Cya au revoir Bae Bae~ Sayonara

Hirata Yousuke SS - Genuine ?

" Am i wrong ? " Kiyotaka-kun rose his eyebrow
is he wrong ? No he isn't, And i know that very well

My Classmates are backstabbers, And i know that very well, Then why am i hesitating ? To admit out loud that.... *My friends are bunch of losers ?*

Kouenji-kun is also his friend, And they are gonna betray him, As Matsushita-san told me. Then why am i hesitating ? He could save him, While i can't.... *It seems that i am a loser too, I'm sorry....*

" In fact, They are targeting Kouenji in this exam. Am i right ? "
Huh ? How did he-

" How ? " I looked at him in confusion and muttered

" Simple, Because somebody already spilled the news for me " Kiyotaka-kun said while looking straight at my eye with a serious expression.

I see, So somebody already betrayed us..... huh ?

" As you can see, They don't deserves all the work you put into them. And if you still don't believe me, I guess i'll let you see for yourself "

If i'm not surprised then why am i frustrated ? It is expected at this stage.

What Kiyotaka-kun said was 100% True, Why am i getting all worked up for a bunch of people who lie as much as they breath ? No, I believe you Kiyota-.....

" W-What do you mean ?.... " Somehow, I got an ominous vibe from the last sentence and blurted out without a second thought

" What i mean is, Tomorrow things are going to go very wrong for your Class, Since Kouenji is going to transfer to my Class " Kiyotaka-kun said, And i widened my eyes from surprise. " And you can figure out what's gonna happen "

Kouenji-kun is gonna transfer to Class A ? If that happens then.....

" You see it now ? "

" I do.... " I muttered, Dejectedly.

The Class is gonna be in a turmoil, Since Kushida set the Target on Kouenji-kun. If he transfers then Chaos would spread and Kushida would be forced to choose another student amidst the Chaos meaning the Class would be destroyed....

" However, You don't have to worry about a thing Yousuke " A

Hand was placed on my Shoulder, Snapping me out of my thoughts
" Even if you failed to protect someone. That doesn't mean your friend is sad "

" H-Huh ? M-My friend ? Y-You mean S-Sugimura ? "

" Yes " Kiyotaka-kun nodded, Before removing his hand " I'm pretty sure that he is already happy with the fact that you regret abandoning him and you're striving so hard to pay for your sin, And i'm pretty sure that he forgave you too "

S-Sugimura-kun.... Forgive me ? No, There is no way !

Because of my selfish reasons, Sugimura lost his life, Because of me he died while suffering, If i have got involved instead of spectating Sugimura wouldn't have lost his life

I regret it, I absolutely do, I can never live with myself after that, I am a terrible selfish person. I should never be forgiven, Especially from him

" You strove so hard to pay for your sin, I'm pretty sure your desperation already reached him, And if it's genuine he already accepted it. Think about his feelings, He'll be happy to see you happy, And he'll be sad when he sees you sad. So don't hurt yourself because it would hurt him too "

M-My actions already reached him and he accepted them ? He'll be hurt if he sees me hurt ?

Is that true ?.....

" If your friendship back then was genuine and you really love your friend, Then i'm pretty sure your feelings are reciprocated too. Don't worry Yousuke, You did great "

Sugimura already forgave me ?..... And he wants me to be happy ?

Was our Friendship genuine.... Sugimura ?

' Hey hey hey Yousuke '

' Hmm ? What is it Sugimura ? '

' Do you want to check this store with me ? I heard that they bought a new Titan ! '

' Woah Really ? '

' Yep ! It's the Lady from Transformers. You know she has glasses and stuff '

' You mean Akashi's favorite character ? '

' YES ! It's her '

' Alright let's go get it ! '

' Yousuke.... Watch out ! '

' Ah '

' Yousuke, You ding dong, Why did you break it ? '

' I'm sorry ! I just tripped '

' Man you're so clumsy '

'I'm sorry ! '

' Don't worry Yousuke. We are friends right ? Toys can be replaced but not friends ! '

Was that all genuine ? Sugimura ?

I lowkey had the feeling that Sugimura is Hirata's god and he always asks him for guidance and apologizes for sins while writing this. Anyway it may be too cringe but i wanted to do something to touch my Cold assed viewers's emotions

Kushida Kikyuu SS - (Just read, Idk about the title)

*ArgguU*AA

WHYYYYYYYYYYY ? WHY DID HE POST IT WHYYYYY ?

MY NIGHTMARE.... IT WAS EVEN WORSE THAN WATCHING
THAT NARCISSIST

WHY.... JUST WHYYYYYYYYYYYY

I banged the wall beside me from my uncontrollable rage, That Bastard face is all over my head.

" Please be careful Kushida-san. You wouldn't want to destroy anything, Since you'll be paying it " That old geaser i'm following towards the faculty office spoke, Causing me to get even more frustrated

" FUCK that " I hit the wall again. Before remembering something and glared at him " Why are you expelling me ? Aren't you working with me to expel that Bastard and his fucking narcissist friend ? "

" My, When did i ask you that ? " *Did he just play dumb ?..... This fucker*

" YOU LIAR, YOU CAME TO ME AND REQUESTED MY COOPERATION TO EXPEL THOSE TWO, IN EXCHANGE OF HELPING ME TO EXPEL THAT BITCH "

" I don't remember ever talking to you Kushida-san, Please relax and control your rage, You could get me in trouble with your hallucinations "

" I'M NOT HALLUCINATING YOU FUCKING HAG, IT'S YOU WHO HAS MEMORY ISSUES, STOP MY EXPULSION NOW ! "

" That can't do Kushida-san. " I opened my mouth to shout, But he spoke instead " There is more than enough evidence that you willingly indulged in a violent act, As well as Threats. So there is no one saving you and you'll probably serve in Jail for at least 6 months "

" WHAT ? " I shouted. " J-J-J-J-Jail ? WHY ? "

" You are a subject to Criminal threats since you threatened Ayanokouji-kun, So it's only fair "

" No.... Please no.... "

" However.... " Suddenly, Acting director Tsukishiro stopped and glanced at my trembling body with his warm gaze. I stopped and

locked gazes with him " There is only one way that you could get saved " *A way.... For me to get saved ?*

" W-What is it ?! " I asked in excitement

" In fact, This is the only way i can help you. And it also aligns with your motives of getting revenge on Ayanokouji-kun " *A way for me to get saved..... And get revenge on that bastard ?*

" Absolutely. WHAT IS IT ! " I asked excitedly. Tsukishiro smirked before walking towards the faculty office

" I will call Ayanokouji-kun's father and bring him here so you could talk to him. He also wants to expel Ayanokouji-kun so he could retrieve him, You could deceive him into thinking that you're an Ally and stab him on the back where the opportunity arises "

That bastard's..... dad ?

" He can do. I would demolish the both of them " I grinned evilly. Tsukishiro turned around and glanced at me before looking forward before he shook his head lightly

' *What a poor little soul* ' Thought Tsukishiro

To be Continued ? ♦♦♦♦

Ichinose Honami SS - Fight

After our Quarrel with Kushida. Horikita-san appeared and started questioning Kiyotaka about Kushida who nonchalantly responded to her in a matter of a fact voice. It was probably my first time seeing Horikita-san like this, Meek and weak

However, In the middle of that, A Man's voice echoed behind Horikita-san and startling her, It was a familiar voice but i couldn't remember who owns it.

I glanced towards Kiyotaka and he was staring at the door in anticipation. When the person arrived, It was revealed that it was the new Acting director Tsukishiro that replaced the Chairman Sakayanagi for some reason.

I heard his voice when he introduced himself to the Student Council members when he was first elected, Right after the end of the Colossal exam.

However, I couldn't help but notice him looking at me in a weird way, It wasn't lust nor it was attraction, It was as if he is interested in me as a person, And my actions.

" The staff members are busy so i'll make this quick. I'm sorry that you had to deal with this type of situation, Especially you Ayanokouji-kun " After he introduced himself, He decided to keep it short and apologized to us, Especially Kiyotaka since he was the one in the middle of it.

" Don't worry about it, It was just the *cleanup* of a mess " Kiyotaka responded. However, There was a small smug on his face, The Acting Director rose his head in recognition. However, My head drifted off to something else

I don't know if it's just me..... But are they talking like they are familiar with each other ?

As far as i am concerned, Only little students get to talk with the Chairman. But Kiyotaka and The acting director are talking like they knew each other

More importantly, What's this look on both of their faces ? Kiyotaka has determination and challenging expression on his face while the Acting Director was somewhat smugly.

I came to the conclusion that they are at least acquainted with each other since The Acting director landed on the school. However, Why would the Acting Director instantly go to meet Kiyotaka if that's the case

?

" I'm glad. Anyway, The individual named 'Kushida Kikyoku' would be properly punished for her actions. Especially after threatening... Your dad... Ayanokouji-kun, I hope you're not offended "

Was he.... Trying not to laugh ?

Does he know about Kiyotaka's father ? And how scary he is ? So he tried to hide his laughter in order to keep his professionalism ?

Something instantly clicked on my head, As some of my worst fears is coming to get realized.

Is he here to expel Kiyotaka ? If that's the case, It would make sense why they are acquainted and why he is looking at me that way. Since i'm his girlfriend and Kiyotaka was supposed to be emotionless but he loved me, So it sparked some interest in the Acting Director

However, Kiyotaka told me that his father cannot make any moves until the start of our Third Year and we have a lot of time to prepare. Then what's is happening here ?

Did Kiyotaka miscalculate ? No, He knows his Father and how powerful he is, So then why is this acting director acting weirdly ?

Did Kiyotaka..... Lie to me ?

" Honami-chan ? " Ah

No, Don't think like that Honami, Kiyotaka wouldn't lie to you.... Probably

I can totally imagine Kiyotaka lying about something like this, Just to keep me safe.

Everything fits in place, And the only thing that doesn't is Kiyotaka's words. If you eliminate every impossibility, Only the truth remains, Even if it's unsettling. And the Truth is that....

Kiyotaka lied to me

However, I'm not mad, Just slightly annoyed. Kiyotaka is trying to keep me safe from his Father, And i can totally understand that.

However, This is our Fight and Kiyotaka is fighting alone, And i cannot stand on the sidelines and do nothing

Of course, The current me wouldn't stand a chance against The Acting Director and his Father alone, But the both of us can

All i could do is follow Kiyotaka's lead and have full faith in him, If i can't do it he can, And i have full faith in him to succeed. I wouldn't give a single care about who are we against, And i will fight them with all of my might...

To protect our life together

and our future together.....

Arc 10 Chap 1 : Negative Thoughts

A Week ago, A Rather gruesome events came to a close, Following the end of the Gruesome exam known as the Class Poll

During this gruesome period, All four Classes witnessed some great changes, That affected all students without exception. I for instance, Got my very well deserved and highly requested A+ on both intelligence and decision making on the OAA App, Making me the best student in the School by a huge margin

A Party gathering all of my Classmates took place on the day after, Celebrating our two newly allotted Classmates while celebrating my promotion as a secondary objective that was quickly forgotten after a few praises. However, I wasn't displeased by it.

Honami took it personally and took me to the arcade where we had a fun time celebrating, She was genuinely happy and proud of me, Which automatically made me happy too. *I guess my standards are low if i could be pleased just like that. However, It wasn't really a big deal, But not for her*

The welcoming party was huge, Celebrating both Yousuke and Kouenji's transfer. Surprisingly the Latter attended and even spared sometime conversing with some of my Classmates, *I guess he wanted to get to know his new Classmates better, Especially since he is gonna work with them in the future*

One of Kouenji's most recent acquaintances are none other than the Shibata and Amikura duo, As the latter became somewhat fond of Kouenji's narcissistic nature, Making him a perfect target for her teasing. Kouenji didn't seem to mind since he always brushed it off as them getting attracted to his perfectness, But it seemed that he was enjoying his time with them

Unlike Kouenji, Yousuke received much more attention than him for many obvious reasons. The man is a social god, So it is understandable. However, The both of them were welcomed warmly and settled quite nicely on the Class

The news of Yousuke's breakup spread like wildfire among the students, Some girls in our Class got visibly excited, Sensing their opportunity especially since he is very close by right now. It is said that their happiness was at the expense of Class D who were devastated upon receiving the news

However, This was nothing compared to the currently hottest

topic on the whole school that even upperclassmen are talking about, It was Kushida's revelations

Kushida's influence was much higher than i originally thought, So her revelation hit more differently and roughly compared to Yousuke's transfer, It hit both boys and girls alike. Her expulsion announcement shortly came after, Which was also the start of my new popularity

Many people thought of me as the cool and handsome hero that got sent from the heavens to purge the demons invading the great holy lands of the advanced nurturing high school. While some reasonable people disliked me since i revealed someone's past, The rest resented me for the fact that i attacked such a cute girl and forced her expulsion, And it is unsurprisingly the hardcore Kushida simps

However, I only did the correct thing to do, Getting rid of another one of Tsukishiro's pawn, Disarming him. I could've blackmailed Kushida into switching to me but it was far too unlikely and she'll most likely play the double agent with the intents to expel me, So getting rid of her was the correct choice

It didn't matter to me whether everyone hated me or not, The people around me completely understood why i did it and actually were thankful, That's all that what mattered to me.

It didn't matter to me that Class D was devastated, Or people became hostile towards me, As i can see by some glares from the people around me while i was making my way towards school.

I am fighting for our survival here, I don't have the luxury to invent a slick and smooth way to keep Kushida in Check, Or care about my foes. If anyone becomes a threat to my existence in this school and to my relationship with Honami, I wouldn't hesitate to get rid of them

" My, Why the seriousness Kiyo-boy ? " My thoughts were snapped by a certain someone's voice. Kouenji swiftly made his way towards my side while examining himself in his expensive hand-mirror with a wide smirk.

" Good morning Kouenji. I guess i just had some ominous thoughts " I greeted him back. Kouenji closed his hand mirror and looked ahead, Where a bunch of Class D students were stealing some glances at me

" I guess being popular sure is exhausting, Especially when it's in a bad way Kiyo-boy " Kouenji exclaimed, Before reopening his mirror again. " However, You shouldn't worry too much about it. And instead, Focus on the battle coming up ahead "

" Battle coming up ahead ? " Confusingly i repeated, Kouenji glanced at me and his smirk widened. Before flipping his bangs and

exclaiming

" Ah such ignorance. The couples sway and stumble, On the day of Red, Day of love, In the month of love " At his weird poetry, Something clicked on my head. *Ah shit, How did i forget that ?* " Do you understand what i mean Kiyo-boy ? "

" I do. " I responded firmly, Kouenji smirked.

" Then you should drop all of the bullshit politics and focus on the upcoming day, You wouldn't want to greet such a beautiful day like that Right ? "

" That's true " Kouenji was absolutely right.

I totally forgot about that day, Since we are currently busy with our Finals. Today was Wednesday 12 of February, The first day of the Finals, And also, Two days away from Valentine's day.

A Day where Romance blooms between couples and singles, By offering some chocolate to the person you love, There is also some cases of giving Chocolate to friends but it is mostly perceived the other way.

Although i'm not that knowledgeable about it, I know how important it is, Especially for Honami. And as i can see, *She is already scheming something behind the scenes without telling me. What a naughty little girl....*

" Now that's much better " Kouenji exclaimed with a smirk. Causing me to look at him in confusion " I hate gloomy thoughts Kiyo-boy, It always ruins the mood. Seeing your expression brighten up made me feel a sense of satisfaction, Since i was able to make you thinly smile "

" Well i guess. " I shrugged, And Kouenji smirked proudly. " However, It is technically not you who caused me to smile, Since i wasn't thinking about you "

" But a win is a win Kiyo-boy. You lost today " Kouenji boasted again with a laugh, And i sighed.

" Anyway, What's up with the 'Kiyo-boy' nickname ? "

" You don't like it ? "

" No, It's just that, Why the sudden change ? From 'Ayano-boy' to 'Kiyo-boy' ? "

" I thought that you hated *that man* so i decided to use your name instead. If you want i can revert ba- "

" No, You're completely right. Use that please " I immediately cut through Kouenji who smirked broadly.

" If it makes you feel better, You can use my first name too " At this, I shifted my gaze to him, Somewhat surprised. Kouenji smirked before flipping his hair " Don't worry about the repercussions Kiyo-boy, I normally wouldn't allow someone to use my divine name. I give you permission since you are a fellow perfect existence "

" Well i guess.... Rokusuke ? " Kouenji smirked

(A/N : Do you guys want me to keep using 'Kouenji' on Kiyo's thoughts or do you want 'Rokusuke' ? I'm super used to Kouenji and it gives more of a chad vibe than Rokusuke, So i'm gonna keep using it for this chapter)

With that, The both of us Reached the entrance of the school and moved towards our Class. I kinda hoped for Kouenji's habits to act up and instinctively moves towards Class D's direction so i could make fun of him. However, He didn't and looked at me with a smirk.

I begrudgingly clicked my tongue and arrived to our Class, Where a bunch of groups met on top of the tables while keeping some distances from each other, Studying different types of material. Some of them Greeted us which followed up by the rest of the Class

" Good morning, Kiyotaka-kun " Arriving at my seat, Yousuke who tutoring 3 girls 3 tables away greeted me. I slumped my bag on the chair and approached them

" Good morning Yousuke, Ninomiya, Ando and Tsukabe "

" Good morning to you too Ayanokouji-kun ! " Ando greeted me cheerfully, Followed up by the rest of the girls. Even though we don't come in contact quite often, I have kept a nice relationship with everyone in my Class. " Do you want to join us ? "

" Sure i don't mind " I accepted her invitation and relaxed while listening to Yousuke's explanation about a problem that gave a feeling of nostalgia

It was the same problem i helped Futaro in back on one if his last days in the White Room, He was bad at Maths so he couldn't fully grasp it and i helped him, *But i guess my explanation wasn't enough and he failed.....*

" Kiyotaka-kun, Are you okay ? " Suddenly, A Voice of a concerned Yousuke snapped me out, He was looking at me with worry, Same as the three other girls.

" Oh, No I'm fine. Just remembered a sad ending of a movie " I made up an excuse on the spot, Which seemed to work.

" Ah i see, Well you shouldn't focus on that and keep a positive mentality Kiyotaka-kun. Who is gonna ace the exams for our Class if you won't ? " Yousuke jokingly exclaimed, Trying to lift the gloomy mood i created.

" Well you could always cheat you know~ " Tsukabe said playfully

" That won't do Tsukabe-san. That is if you want to get expelled " Yousuke snapped at her with a playful warning, Which plastered a wide grin on her face.

Their banter shortly came to a close as they continued revising

their lessons. Shortly after i took my leave and checked the other groups as well who seemed to be doing pretty fine

However, I couldn't help but feel mentally tired for some reason, And i felt somewhat lost. Even though i have been inside this Class for almost a year now, I didn't feel like i belong to anyone of the groups. This may be just me waking up in the wrong side of the bed, But it really bothered me.

I haven't realized it but i slowly made my way towards my chair and sat there, Observing the my Class. Yousuke seems to be getting along pretty well with the Class and already became one of the central figures

" Do you see it now Kiyo-boy ? " Kouenji behind me exclaimed, Snapping me out of my thoughts and i turned to face him. " Do you see why you shouldn't overwork yourself ? Because i can clearly see that the constant pressure is taking a toll on you "

" Taking a toll on me ? " I exclaimed in confusion. *He must be joking right ?*

" Yes " Kouenji answered firmly with his smirk. " I know that you've dealt with worse in *that place*. However, You've never dealt with this type of environment before "

I opened my mouth to object but decided otherwise, Because i felt that he was right.

" Furthermore, You shouldn't worry too much about your future in this School and after graduation. Since you have a perfect existence by your side, Ha ! " Kouenji boasted delightfully.

" I see, Well thank you Rokusuke. "

" No need to thank me Kiyo-boy. This is what comrades are for right ? " Kouenji smirked, I responded with a nod.

It may appear as arrogance, But this was Kouenji's way of cheering me up. Whether i liked it or not, Those types of thoughts have been running in my head recently, Doubting my motives and moves, Doubting my chances of success

I can assure you that it is not regret on what i did with Kushida, Nor it is about transferring Kouenji and Yousuke, The both of them are important towards my success in escaping from *that man*. Those thoughts are probably the doubts you get after you reach the peak of your Success, Where you have around 90% chance of winning but be scared of the 10% other more than being happy with the 90%

However, The chances of my success in my eyes is nothing short of a 100%, And i wouldn't settle on anything lower than that. The first steps of taking down that man is already on motion and my second attack is coming pretty soon. So i have nothing to worry about

" Good Morning everyone~ " My thoughts were interrupted by the cheerful voice that came from the door, It was none other than my Honami.

" Good morning Ichinose-san ! " Multiple of my classmates greeted her, She smiled delightedly and waved at them, While making her way towards the chair.

" Good Morning Kiyo~ " Honami smiled warmly at me, Washing away all of my thoughts.

" Morning Honami, How have you been ? " I greeted her back with a smile of my own.

" I'm doing fine, Just attended another meeting of the student council. " Honami explained, Before pouting " It is unfair that they hold a meeting on almost every morning, It should be on the afternoons. Since they are taking the time i have with you~ "

" Well i'm not really bothered by it, They do it to lessen the amount of works for the afternoon right ? "

" Yep~ We do quarter of the work in the morning and the rest of it in the afternoon, But it's just a mere 30 Minutes~ Hmph~ " Honami pouted again and i patted her head, Her eyes shone as a result. " Hehe~ Pat me more~ "

" Sigh " I patted her more, And she perked up. " I Thought you'd get tired of it, I pat you almost every hour "

" Why would i get tired of it ? " Honami exclaimed. However, She instantly flashed me with a mischievous grin " If i get tired of it~ I'll ask you to pat me somewhere else~ "

" Pervert "

" Awww~ " I retrieved my hand back from her bangs and she instantly cried like a sad puppy.

I heard a small laugh behind me and Kouenji was smirking at me somewhat delighted and..... Proud ? I didn't get to ask him about it since the Bell rang and all students returned to their seats

Chie-sensei arrived, Carrying 4 packages of papers with her and greeted everyone. She seems to be in a good mood

" Good morning everyone~ You know the drill~ " Chie-sensei distributed the first pack of papers at us which was social studies, Probably the easiest subject out of them.

Scanning through the paper, All the questions were of reach to all first-year students, While there was some suspicious questions here and there, It really needs a little focus to solve.

I breezed through the paper and finished it in 20 minutes and handed it to Chie-sensei who didn't look surprised and accepted it before i walked back towards my seat. The moment i sat down Kouenji rose up and handed Sensei his paper as well

Before taking a nap, I decided to check on Honami by my side

who was slowly solving the questions with the tip of her tongue slipped out, Apparently finding the exam a piece of cake.

Just before any exams, Honami and i hold some one on one tutoring sessions where i work on her fundamentals so she could perfect them, Her brain seems to have an easy time picking up information and working on her flaws. However, Those tutoring sessions are more like a date since Honami would ask a reward each time she solves the questions

Not only on exam periods, But i also tutor her some advanced fundamentals on weekly basis and her level is currently not too high from a Third-Year. The way her brain works makes it easier for her to understand academics, So she is certainly gifted

Honami noticed me staring at her for too long and locked gazes with me, Before smiling warmly and lightly tilting her head, Making some of her silky strawberry hair fall to the side in a cute posture. I responded with a smile of my own and her cheeks lightly flushed

Ah, You know what, Screw the nap. I can watch this for the whole day

Arc 10 Chap 2 : 'Period'

Honami POV

Kriiiiiing

Haaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa

At the sound of the Bell, I dropped my pen and slumped on my chair, Sighing in tiredness. Many of my Classmates started yawning before stretching, Restoring their physical energy after the long morning sit

" The exams sure are exhausting " Hirata-kun behind me muttered, With a weak exhausted smile.

" You can say that again " I said before yawning and sitting properly. " But the most important thing is that we did great~! How did it go Hirata-kun ? "

" It went pretty well, I'm sure i scored high. Thank you for your concerns Ichinose-san " Hirata-kun thanked me with a smile, I responded with the same. However, His eyes opened and darted towards the left where Kiyotaka's table was " But i'm concerned about Kiyotaka-kun, He finished pretty early "

Kiyotaka was sleeping soundly on top of his table with his face turned towards us, His forehead was covered by his brown silky hair and the rest by his strong arms, Only his right eye was visible. *Somehow, Even his eye makes my heart race, Honestly what's wrong with me ?*

" You don't have to worry Hirata-kun, He always does this and ends up acing the exams " I reassured him and Hirata-kun's smile came back.

" I guess the rumors are actually true. " Hirata-kun said and i nodded.

" Yep~ Since he always finishes pretty early, Chie-sensei made a special case for him and decided to give him the next exam paper right after he finishes so he could sleep. As you've seen today " I explained

" Ah i see i see. I was kinda confused but it makes sense now " Hirata-kun nodded understandably. Before he started giggling and spoke jokingly " I wonder what was your reaction when you first saw him like this. "

" Haha please don't remind me. " I laughed scratching my cheek in embarrassment at the nostalgic memories.

I remember myself visibly sweating when Kiyotaka finished the exam in just 15 minutes thinking that he threw it, My anxiety was thorough the roof. That was probably the worst exam period in my entire life

" Haha I'm sorry Ichinose-san. I guess it was very bad " Hirata-kun apologized, Snapping me out of my thoughts

" No no don't apologize Hirata-kun, It's not your fault " I shook my head as i reassured him. " Anyways, I wanted to ask you. How did you find our Class so far ? "

As i said that, Kiyotaka shifted in his seat and woke up from his slumber and scanned the room until his eyes landed on us. I pulled a bento box out of my bag and handed it to him to which he accepted and stared at us

" Your Classmates has been nothing but kind, Even though i'm still an outsider they treated me like i'm their best friend and welcomed me warmly. I am grateful and happy to be in this Class with everyone here " Hirata-kun beamed with a bright smile, Genuinely happy to be here, Which also made me happy. Mako-chan and the others were approaching us and heard what Hirata-kun said which also made them happy

" I am very glad that you you like it here Hirata-kun, It certainly makes us very happy ! " I exclaimed, The Class nodded too supporting my words. " If you need anything you can just come and talk to me or Kanzaki-kun, Kiyotaka is also an option too "

" I will do, Thank you so much Ichinose-san " Hirata-kun bowed in gratitude. I simply shook my hand in front of him in order to divert his attention. Soon, Mako-chan and Shibata-kun joined us, Alongside some of our Classmates

Kiyotaka was silently eating his lunch while listening to our Conversation, I was getting worried about him because he has been isolating himself quite frequently this past week and it only gotten worse these past days.

He may appear fine on the surface but his behavior and the way he talks changed, It was as if he reverted back to his old cloistered self. Which begs the question on my mind

Is he on his period ?

While i haven't seen it personally, I heard from Mako-chan that men actually have their periods. One day i heard her asking Shibata-kun who was upset about something whether he was in his period or not which caused him to snap. It is the same reaction any girl would give if asked about it, So i came to the conclusion that men actually have their periods

That's why i refrained from asking him about it and doing something that would upset him, Just like what he does whenever

i'm on mine. *Don't worry Kiyotaka, Until your period is over, I'm gonna spoil you with everything i could*

With this newfound determination, I steeled my resolve and fired up my confidence. I opened my phone and searched for a classified note and deleted the very last plan that could last up to 3 AM and slid my phone back. *I gotta respect Kiyotaka's privacy and not force him to do things he doesn't want.... At least for now*

" Hehe~ " A cute giggle echoed behind me, I turned around to find Mako-chan staring at me with a wide grin.

" Why are you grinning like that Mako-chan ? " I asked, Confused about Mako-chan's behavior. *No way, Does she have her period too ?*

" It's nothing Honami-chan~ I just may have sneaked a peek on a certain note that got deleted right now~ It's nothing important really~ " *Ahwha ?*

" W-W-W-W-What note.... ? " I blurted out stammeringly, My face heated up to an immense degree. *Did she actually read it, That was top secret !*

" Aww~ Do you really want me to tell you Honami-chan~? " Mako-chan said, Before glancing at the people around us, Causing me to get flustered even more. " Do you want me to reveal such 'Classified' Information out in the open~? Especially if it'- "

" N-NO ! Please don't snitch Mako-chan ! "

" Don't worry Honami-can~ I won't~ " Mako-chan grinned evilly. As i felt somewhat relieved, Mako-chan spoke, Filling me with despair " But on one condition~ You record a video and send it to me~ "

" N-No ! " I unconsciously shouted, Objecting to Mako-chan's demand who's grin got even wider. All the people on the Class joined my friends around me into staring at me being a tomato.

" Sure, I can send you a video " That voice belongs to Kiyotaka who suddenly spoke, Somewhat startling me. I turned to look at him and he had a wide grin " But i need your cooperation that you won't do anything reckless with it "

" Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun~ It's just for research purposes~ " Mako-chan countered Kiyotaka's grin with one of her own as an intense staring content began.

After that, Kiyotaka returned to me his empty lunch box and joined us on the conversation, I used this opportunity to observe him and he was acting normally. His eyes weren't as dull as before and he seems to be enjoying the conversation again. This made me somewhat confused

So Kiyotaka..... Isn't on his period ?

Kiyo POV

" Aah I see " After Honami explained her concerns on why she has been observing me, I let a nod of comprehension. " But did you really think that i was on my period ? "

" Ah~ Umm~..... Yeah " Honami hung her head low in embarrassment and whispered, Which caused me to sigh " Hey~ I was only worried about you Hmph~ "

" Okay okay i get it " I patted her head, Her pout switched to a bright expression before she latched at my waist and hugged me. I simply embraced her back and caressed her hair " It's okay i'm fine Honami. I just had random thoughts that spoiled my mood, It's nothing big "

We were in the middle of the open, However, I didn't really care about that and embraced Honami even tighter. It was the afternoon of the same day when the both of us are walking together towards Home

Since today is the last day of the Finals, Club activities were cancelled and so is the council. We decided to hit home separately so we could have some peace together after all the anxieties Honami went through

We reached the Dorm room while Honami was latching at my arm, Completely oblivious to everyone's stares with a warm adorable smile. I Pressed the floor of her room and both of us walked inside

I slid my shoes down and followed her to the living Room where we dropped our bags in front of the bed. Honami opened the locker and handed me my clothes and grabbed my favorite Pink Pyjamas and wore them, I did the same and laid on her bed getting comfortable

She walked towards the kitchen to prepare some drinks while i scrolled through the channels on the TV. However, While doing that, I heard her move some sort of iron utensils. I simply ignored it until she abruptly called out to me

" Kiyotaka~ Can you come here ? " She called with a troubled tone, I moved from the small heaven known as Honami's bed towards the kitchen where i saw her having trouble handling a big bowl of frozen melted Chocolate. When she saw me she lifted the bawl up with all her might, High enough for me to be able to

comfortably catch it.

" What's this all about " After putting the bawl on top of the table. Honami grabbed a big spoon and started mixing it

" You're smart~ Figure it out " She flashed me with a mischievous grin while mixing all the chocolate up. I simply sighed before snatching the spoon away from her and mixing it instead

" Those are the chocolates you're gonna gift to all your girlfriends " I answered while mixing the monstrous amount of Chocolate inside, It's easily enough for more than 40 people so Honami had difficulties mixing it.

" That's half correct~ " Honami exclaimed, While pulling out some Chocolate molds out from the Kitchen's locker. " It's for everyone~ "

" Even Boys ? " I suddenly stopped and glanced at her. While crouching, She peeked from the top of the locker's door, With a wide mischievous grin on her face

" Jealouuuuuuuuuuuuussssss~? " She spoke in a playful teasing tone. I responded by averting my face towards the complete opposite direction of her while mixing some chocolate chips to the chocolate bowl.

Honami Giggled before pulling the last molds and closing the Kitchen Locker, She moved towards the Fridge and brought another chocolate mix. However, It was in much smaller amount compared to the bowl in front of me

" More Chocolate ? " I groaned. However, Honami responded with a frown

" This mix is a special one for a special person, I have extensively and personally took care of it so it would be the best " Honami explained. However, She was somewhat annoyed " Do you want to guess who it's for Dummytaka ? "

" Me ? " I said. Honami averted her gaze in the complete opposite direction of me with a pout, I simply sighed continued mixing.

When it was done, Honami ordered me to go to the bed and let her do the filling. However, I couldn't move away. Or to be more precise, My eyes couldn't move away from her

With the same face as Yesterday, She was baking the chocolate with a determinant look on her face, The slipped tongue on her face was a proof

However, That wasn't where my focus was.....

Warning : Lemon scene up ahead ●●●.Why ? Because i got

While she was doing CPR to the dough, Her voluptuous and enormous breasts were wobbling behind her Pink Pyjamas, Creating an eye catching scene that i couldn't take my eyes off. The only time i got to remove them was to check her plump thighs

The Pink Pyjamas weren't tight, But it was enough to show their shape and how beautiful they are without her feeling tight. With the pink color adding more to their Charm, Honami looked like a divine package

I felt my instincts acting up, And a huge urge to do something. However, I didn't fight them, And let myself act on my male instincts

" Eep~! " Honami squealed in surprise, As i moved and embraced her from behind, Wrapping both of my arms around her waist while leaning on her. " K-Kiyotaka~? "

" Shh. Just let me be "

" Ahnnh~ "

My Hands slowly crept up and gripped both of her milkers, Causing her to moan softly. I gave them a gentle squeeze getting a feeling of them, Before moving my fingers, Softly massaging them behind the fabric

" Ahnnnnn~ Kiyoko~ Stop~ Mmmm~ " Honami dropped the molders and weakly put her right hand on top of my wrist, Hoping that i would stop.

" Why ? You don't like it ? "

" AAhhnnghh~ " After i said that, I pulled both of my thumb and index of my both hands and gently twisted her nipples, Honami responded with a loud ecstatic moan

" No it's not~ Mmm~ The~ Mmmm~ Chocolates~ Ah~ " Honami spoke between moans. And i caught her message

" You can still do the chocolates no ? Your hands are free " I remarked, While giving her hard nipples another twist. She let go of the weak hold on my wrist and moved her hands towards the Table, While shivering from pleasure

She started working on the chocolates with her vigorous hands, Pouring it on the Molders while i continued fondling her breasts. She seems to quickly adapt and find the middle ground for work and sexual pleasure. *Time to top off the balance*

" Nghah~ " Honami jolted up after i moved my lips closer to her

red ears and bit them. Causing the cast iron in her hands to spill

" Aww Look at you spilling chocolate. You're so clumsy Honami "

" Nghh~ Hey~ That's because~ Mnggh~ " I bit her ear again. This time, I used my tongue and gently licked it, While i increased my pace and massaged her breasts more aggressively

She readjusted right again and resisted all the pleasure she's feeling. For Honami to be this Durant is quite surprising, And she's the one who couldn't hold back before. I thought i already did enough but i guess, *I have to give her one last push*

Honami relaxed a bit after i released my grip over her right breast. However, She quickly tensed up when i embraced her more tightly, While pressing my crotch against her Butt, My Member started poking her from behind.

" Ah~ Kiyo~ Wait~ Where are you~ Nghhh~ "

The Right hand that i recently released traveled across her voluptuous body towards her divine place. It slipped under her pants and before she realized, I slipped a finger inside of her

" Honami. You're pretty tight " I remarked as i felt her inside with my finger. Honami jolted up before putting her hand on my forearm, Requesting me to stop. However, I responded my slipping another finger

" Nghhhh~ Kiyo~ " Honami gripped my hair with her other hand as i was sucking her ear. She leant against me, Totally giving in to the pleasure, Her eyes were moist and her breathing was staggering. She was aimlessly staring at the sky with an open mouth that sang a beautiful melody of ecstasy.

" Honami " I whispered in her ear, She instinctively moved her head. " You know i have been having a lot of morning boners recently "

Honami couldn't respond because of the workout. However, I was sure that my words reached her and i kept whispering in a soft tone

" And you know it's a big problem right ? " Honami nodded lightly. " So, *I want you to relief me* "

At this, Both of our lips connected in a lustfully dominant kiss. Honami's hot heavy breaths were hitting my face as i completely abused her mouth, Breasts and her sacred place at the same time

The euphoria was rushing down at my body. However, It's probably nothing compared to what Honami is feeling

After breaking from the Kiss, I finally released her. She lean against the table panting heavily at the workout. I pulled both of my hands and slid down my pants, Revealing what i call my 'Wife-beater'

Honami stared at her beater with a stagnant look, As she seems to catch her breath. This was my cue

" Ah~ " I moved forward and slapped her meaty ass and squeezed it, Getting a feeling of it. Honami fell on top of the table and tilted her head and looked at me massaging her cheeks with a pout " Meanie~ "

I knelt on my knees and slid her pants down, Revealing her beautiful rich flower. Multiple love juices were dripping out

" Mmmghh~ " I moved my face closer to her flower and slipped my tongue, Engaging in Oral sex. Honami with her ass facing me was laying on top of the table, Gripping it tightly and moaning seductively from pleasure

Deciding that it was enough i stood up and lined my Wifebeater against her entrance and got ready to be sent to heaven. Honami's legs straightened up as she lifted her crotch up for me, While her upper body was laying on top of the table, It was such a beautiful scene to behold. And i decided to enjoy it to the fullest

" Honami is it okay if i go ? " I asked one last time. Honami turned her head and nodded at me

" Don't worry Kiyo~ It's my safe day " Honami said, With her cute face beet red. However, It had a smug grin.

I'll wipe that smug off your face you little shit. But i love you

" Perfect " After getting the pass, I plugged my Wifebeater fully inside my wife.

Pah

" Aaah~ " Honami moaned pretty loudly as my member was fully inside of her, My legs were touching hers almost as if i was riding her. I let it inside for a couple of seconds for her adjust. She tilted her head, Giving me a clear look on her lewd face while she was getting a premium look on my ravaging her.

" Ah~ Ah~ Ah~ Ah~ " I slowly started moving, Still helping her to adjust. " I'm not an amateur anymore~ You want me to relief you~? Then go Harder ! "

I was surprised that she could talk normally while i was dragging her insides in and out. However, I reciprocated her smug grin with one of my own

Now that's the spirit

Even though tomorrow is Friday, The last day of the week and the Valentine's day, We engaged in a Bliss for hours. However, Respecting the time we stopped at 1 AM and decided to sleep with her on the bed

" Don't make me forget what you did to me earlier~ " While cuddling on the bed. Honami spoke

" What do you mean ? "

" Acting ignorant are we ? " Honami grabbed my crotch with force causing me to squeal, As a mean to torture me " I'm not gonna

forget how did you assault me you pervert~ "

" Weren't you wishing for i- Ow " She gripped it tighter

" I'm gonna enjoy taking my sweet revenge on you~ Just so you wait " Honami finally released me and i instantly put some space between us. She smiled devilishly " Good night~ And love you~ "

" Love you too "

" Pervert~ "

Am i proud with this chapter ? No, I'm judt running through a mental block rn

I planned for this arc to be some more character development for all characters especially Hirata and Kouenji, But i couldn't find a way.

I added a lemon scene because i didn't know what to do. Well anyway, Thank you for reading !

Arc 10 Chap 3 : Class (D)alentine

Matsushita POV

Hello, My name is Matsushita Chiaki, And i am a Japanese Student at the Advanced Nurturing High School, The most prestigious High School in Japan. And Currently, I am a Student in the Class at the bottom of the Hierarchy, To be more exact, Class D

Picking up my pace, I walked towards the Class and slid the door open, To be greeted by the quite and gloomy atmosphere. A lot of people were missing from their seats and the people sitting inside threw side glances towards the door, Checking who arrived. Seeing that it's only me they averted their gaze back towards their original spot, On top of the Table

The Class has been like this for more than a week now, Depression and many absences. Even though today is Valentine where everyone should be happy, They were all indifferent. I picked up my legs and walked towards my seat and scanned my surroundings

All you could hear was the breathing of the people near you alongside some chatter outside of the windows, Other than that, There was a deafening silence. The energetic people who were usually beaming with enthusiasm were sitting cloistered on their seats, Staring either at their tables or phones. Growing more distant towards Each other day by day, With no one to cheer them up

Even Kayano-chan and Maya-chan, The people i usually hang out with were distancing themselves. I sent them messages almost everyday asking if we could go to School together and they rejected me every single time with half-baked excuses. And i have been walking to School alone for the past week

It is understandable, Since during those moments where we take a fat Loss, There was always Kushida-san or Hirata-kun who would try and keep the Class together. However, None of them currently are present. In fact, They are the reasons this time for our Class's depression

Kushida-san's dismantlement by Ayanokouji-kun and her expulsion hit very hard, It was as if sending a powerful blow to a damaged wall and shattering it into pieces, This blow's damage was multiplied for the Boys for obvious reasons, However, It doesn't mean that the girls weren't affected too.

To balance things out, Hirata-kun's transfer came like a sudden storm in the middle of a sunny day. Balancing the amount of Damage dealt to both sexes. Even i was flabbergasted, A Million question running through my head

However, Ayanokouji-kun reassured me of our deal and told me that he'll transfer me soon enough. I tried to pry for more information but he shunned every single advance i made, And i was left with no option but to believe in him

Class A spent a total of 60 Million Private Points during that day with Ayanokouji-kun spending two-thirds of it alone, Which was a new record for the whole School. What's crazy was that nobody in the whole history of this School managed to transfer Classes, And Ayanokouji-kun transferred not one but two students, In a period of 9 Months.

I'm not sure how he attained the points but his reassurance was more than enough to keep me silent, Ayanokouji-kun's feats speak for themselves and i'm pretty sure he already planned my transfer. The protection of our Memorandum also assures it even more so i decided to not question him further. But instead, Try to learn as much as possible from the show he pulled

Even if Class D has been receiving nothing short of a zero since Sudo-kun's case, I already have more than enough points to live on my own for a couple of months, Around 40.000 Private Points. One of the conditions of our Contract is that he pays an concurrent amount of Private Points in advance so i could live on my own while spying for him, We agreed on an amount of 75.000 Points to which i spent around half of it

Soon, The bell rang, With more than half of the Class missing and Zombikita entering right before time. Horikita-san much like always, Had bags under her eyes with a messy hair and walking with heavy steps. It looked like she has been suffering under a lot of stress. However, All students didn't react to it because they already got used to her Zombie appearances for a week

" They are still absent huh ? " Chabashira-sensei strolled inside of the Classroom and slammed her rolled poster on the table, Looking as cold as usual " This makes it more than 7 Days, Although you losers don't have much to lose anyway. The people with clean attendances records lost their safe period and now their absences are damaging your nonexistent Class Points. If they don't move, They would be expelled "

All the 12 other students hung their head low at Chabashira-sensei's insults, While i pretended to get touched by it too. I heard Yukimura click his tongue in rage two tables away from me, To which was heard by the whole Class since it was empty, Even by

Chabashira-sensei

" What's wrong Yukimura ? Can't handle being called a defective loser ? " Chabashira-sensei taunted Yukimura who snapped at her

" I'm not a defective Loser Chabashira-sensei ! I know i lack physically but i started training, Now i am clearly a superior student to those Tra- "

" Delusional. As always " Chabashira-sensei cut through Yukimura's ranting with her cold words

" Delusional ? I'm not Delusional ! " Yukimura fought back against Sensei, Who sighed in annoyance before sending a cold glare to him.

" Then tell me you freak. Why aren't you at the top of the Class in the OAA Rating ? "

" That-.... " He fell silent, From lack of words and the pressure Chabashira-sensei is applying. She smirked at her victory

" If you aren't the best in your Class, Then you gotta shut your hole and take your criticism in silence. Even Matsushita who is at the top of the Class hung her head shamefully, And you dare speak a word ? "

Yukimura begrudgingly tugged his pants and clenched his teeth in annoyance, He sent me an Antagonistic glare before shifting his gaze away. Chabashira-sensei smirked victoriously before grabbing the poster

" Now that's settled. You losers have to take a look at this " Chabashira-sensei spread the poster on the Board, Containing the results of our Finals. I was at the top with an average of 91, Something that i'm proud of. Newfound smiles found itself in the Class's faces, However, It was quickly crushed by Chabashira-sensei " You guys call those results ? And you're happy with them ? Even middle schoolers would get a higher average than this ! "

The slammed her hands on the poster where our average as a Class settled, 52, Yes, It read 52. However, That wasn't where my focus was

" For the love of god, I'm not asking you to get astounding results, Like Classes A and B who are sitting comfortable above the 85. Hell, Even your direct Rival, Class C got 73. Can't you at least manage to get closer to that ? " All of the people inside of the Class hung their head even lower. Expecting Chabashira-sensei to finish her words, All of them shot up when she grabbed a red pen " Don't even get me started with this ! "

She drew a red line above some Japanese letters of a name, Translated to English it reads : Sudo Ken

" It seems that our wonderboy ran out of miracles. It is impressive that he managed to hold this much, Considering how much of an

airhead he is " Chabashira-sensei glanced towards the empty seat in the back, Where Sudo was supposed to be sitting " He isn't even here to receive the news of his expulsion, Such pity "

Sudo has miraculously been scoring above the threshold by a very small margin in each and every single exam, His existence up to this point is considered a miracle indeed. However, It seems that his luck has finally ran out. *He never actually cared about how lucky he was and continued to slack off, Thinking that his luck would run forever, Honestly, Such a hideous mentality*

" I bet now he's laying on his Room thinking about how cool he is ditching Class while scoring right on top of the Threshold once again. And thinking of receiving a lot of 'red wrapped Chocolates' because of it. But in reality, His hot head would be wrapped in red instead. Honestly, The amount of idiocy the kinda have in these days is immeasurable. " Chabashira-sensei mocked again, With a sadistic grin on her face. " Keep going like this and every single one of you will follow the idiot trio. Until your Class reaches 0 Students and be the first Class in the history of this school to reach that 'divine' number. You already broke the record of the Worst Class D in the history so why not ? You're more than capable of achieving that "

It is said that this Class D is the worst Class D has ever came in contact with this School so far. Chabashira-sensei said that multiple times i count it like sheep when going to sleep

" Honestly, This year is pretty interesting. It has the best ever 'Class B' in the history of the School that broke surreal records and achieved the unthinkable in a matter of months. Meanwhile, It has the worst Class D that couldn't raise above 0 Points for god knows how long, Honestly, You guys are the worst. Why did i have to get you ? Why did *she* have to get such a Class ? This is the worst " With those final words, Chabashira-sensei waltzed out of the Classroom in a lightening speed. However, Chabashira-sensei emitted yet again another abnormal behavior

Chabashira-sensei is known as a cold Teacher that doesn't give a single care about her Class and we witnessed it firsthand at the start of the Year. However, Lately that changed. She has been getting frustrated over them being pathetic trash and shown actual signs that she actually cares. More importantly....

It seems that Chabashira-sensei and Hoshinomiya-sensei have some sort of a competitive or hate relationship between them. And Chabashira-sensei seems pretty envious and frustrated with the fact that her Class isn't doing as well as hers. Which begs the question, *Why is she acting all tough then ?*

I decided to brush off those thoughts and grab my phone to check

the bulletin board instead, All of the others silently sat on their seats contemplating life, While i searched for the Top scorers.

As expected, Ayanokouji-kun alongside Kouenji-kun and Sakayanagi-san got perfect scores across the board again. However, What wasn't expected is that Ichinose-san was between them too which somewhat surprised me

Her Academical scores has been drastically improving by each and every single day, Scoring higher and higher exam by exam, So it wasn't far fetched to think she'll be able to ace all of them someday.

It is also not too hard to guess that she has been privately tutored by Ayanokouji-kun who seems to have memorized our lessons to the back of his head, Scoring perfectly since the start of the Year. The only time he scored lower than that was in the Quiz test at the very start of the Year, Which is understandable since it had Material we didn't cover

While i do have my suspicions about that too, Especially with the one questions he 'missed' alongside the other three, I decided to write it off as lack of focus from his part. It tends to happen, Tunnel visioning on easy questions and missing some parts that cost you marks.

I scrolled through my phone for a bit before slightly opening my bag and making sure i haven't forgot my box, Realizing that it's there i let a big grin at it before closing my bag and adjusting my posture on the Chair

After the silent Homeroom Period, Mashima-sensei arrived to continue our morning lessons. Some Teachers came after him and all left, Soon, Lunch Break arrived.

" Hey Kayano-chan, Do you wan- "

" I'm sorry Chiaki-chan, I'm not feeling well " I rose up from my Chair to invite Kayano-chan for lunch to which she shut me down before i could even finish my request and walked out of the Class, Soon multiple students followed her path. *My predictions were correct*

Excitedly, I picked up my bag and walked out of the Class, Not to the Cafeteria but towards somewhere else. *For safety measures, I tried to act normal and invite my friends so i wouldn't be suspicious while predicting they would reject me, So i would go to my future Classroom*

Strolling around the Hallways, I arrived in front of the Nameplate ' Class 1-A ' and sneakily peeked through the Door, Some people were still inside, Eating lunch while happily chatting with their friends. I scanned the whole Class but haven't found my target. *Hmm, I could have sworn he always eats in the Class, Maybe he went*

somewhere else ? I guess i'll go check the cafete-

" What are you doing ? "

" Eeeep~! " I squealed and instantly backed away from the Door and turned around, Where a group of six people approached the door behind me, The boy with the purple hair exclaimed and looked at me suspiciously, It was Class A's Co-leader Kanzaki Ryuuji. *Aaaaah i got busted this early ? Damn it what should i do ? Think Chiaki Think-*

" Excuse me, But you still haven't answered my question " Kanzaki-kun insisted again, Narrowing his eyes even further at me.

" Umm~... I- "

" What's wrong Kanzaki-kun ? " A familiar voice came behind Kanzaki-kun, The girl looked at his suspicious face before tracing his line of sight towards me, It was... " Oh~ Matsushita-chan~! "

" Amikura-chan~! " *Amikura Mako, Thank goodness.*

" It's been a while Matsushita-chan~ "

" It has been a while indeed Amikura-chan, How have you been ? "

" I've been doing fine, I can't complain. Unlike you Matsushita-chan "

" Yeah. Being a student in Class D is really tiring " I sighed in tire, Trying to divert the attention away from the spectacle i preformed. However, Amikura-chan dragged it back

" Anyway, Why did you come here Matsushita-chan ? " Amikura-chan asked this question, Before forming an evil grin i'm too familiar with " Did you come here to meet with your secret Crush~ I wonder~? "

" No, Not particularly " I answered straight. However, Amikura-chan didn't budge

" 'Not particularly' eh ? So you didn't fully deny it~ "

" I- "

" Enough with your antics Mako-chan~ You're making Matsushita-san uncomfortable " A brown haired Tomboy girl bonked Amikura-chan on her head, Stopping her from attacking me relentlessly. I felt somewhat grateful to her " Anyway, We just grabbed our lunch at the Cafeteria. Do you mind joining us for lunch Matsushita-san ? Oh, I'm Ando Sayo By the way "

" It's nice to meet you Ando-san. But thank you for the offer, I have somewhere to go first " I kindly rejected their humble invitation, Before scanning their Classroom" Anyway, Do you know where Ayanokouji-kun is ? "

All of their eyes slightly twitched at my question, Before looking at each other. Amikura-chan's eyebrows relaxed before facing me and shook her head

" We don't "

" You don't ? " I unconsciously repeated. Amikura-chan nodded

" When Lunch Break came, He instantly left with Honami-chan without saying a word about their whereabouts. " Amikura-chan explained. " However, They looked like they were in a hurry, So we didn't try to question them "

" I see " I muttered, Before nodding in comprehension. " That's fine "

" Anyway, Did you need something from Ayanokouji-kun Matsushita-chan ? "

" Ah~ Umm yes. " I instantly panicked a little before dragging my hands inside of the bag. At my actions, Amikura-chan's infamous grin crept up on her face, Making me feel more embarrassed. I grabbed the wrapped box and handed it to her " Do you mind delivering this to him when he comes back ? "

All 6 of the stared at the box with calculative gazes. Before Amikura-chan rose her head to meet my gaze

" Sure, I don't mind. " She gracefully extended her hand and accepted the box, Before examining it with her hands. " But do you mind telling us what's inside ? "

" Ah, It's a friendly gift for Valentine " At my words, All of them widened their eyes in surprise. I instantly felt more nervous and shook my hands in front of them " It's not like that. It's just a friendly gift since Ayanokouji-kun helped our Class and no one is grateful for it, I decided to at least show my gratitude. "

" I see. " Amikura-chan muttered, Before flashing me with her wide mischievous grin " I guess i don't mind delivering it to him. "

" Thank you, Amikura-cha- "

" However " I instantly came to a halt at Amikura-chan's heavy words, With a wide grin on her face, She exclaimed " Do you mind explaining one thing if that's the case ? "

" Y-Yes ? " At my stammering, Amikura-chan's grin grew wider.

" Why are you blushing ? "

" Ah~ " I instinctively blurted out, Before feeling my face heat up even more. Suddenly, I felt speechless. " Umm~ "

" Do yo- Ow~ "

" Stop it Mako-chan. You're making Matsushita-san uncomfortable " A Brown haired Tomboy girl exclaimed after bonking Amikura-chan's head and scolded her " She is blushing because she is feeling embarrassed from your words. She said it's a friendly gift so don't make a big deal out of it "

" Ah~ That's such a boring way to look at it Sayo-chan~ Maybe she is part of Ayanokouji-kun's hare- Oww~ " The tomboy girl apparently named Ando-san bonked her head again.

" I'm sorry for her Behavior Matsushita-chan, I think you already know how childish she could act "

" No no, It's fine Ando-san, I don't mind it " I accepted her apology with a smile.

" Anyway, We were just at the Cafeteria grabbing lunch, Do you mind if you join us ? " Ando-san reciprocated my smile with one of her own and an invitation.

" I appreciate your offer Ando-san. But i have somewhere to go first, Maybe another time ? " I rejected her humble invitation, She smiled bitterly before nodding. I picked up my legs and walked to the reverse direction " Thank you guys for the Chat, I'll see you later "

With that, I bid farewell to an embarrassing encounter and walked away. However, I was happy with the way it went.

I wonder how Ayanokouji-kun would react when he receives my gift. Hehe~

3rd POV

The Brown haired Girl giggled to herself while thinking about the Boy. However, A Random thought Crossed her mind.

' Amikura-chan said he left in a hurry with Ichinose-san. I wonder what they are doing. Anyway, It's not my place to question their actions ' She brushed the thought off and happily walked towards the Cafeteria, Humming to herself.

Meanwhile :

" Ahnn~ Kiyotaka~ Stop~ Don't touch me there~ "

" I'm sorry Honami, But you gotta hold in tight "

" Aahhn~ "

What happened ? Well, Figure it out in the next episode of Drago- Okay i overused it. Anyway, Thank you for reading !

Special Thanks to ShashotoIslam for suggesting the idea of this chapter.

Arc 10 Chap 4 : Valentine of the Best Couple (Very Wholesome Warning)

I let a deep exhausting Sigh as i turned around and sat comfortably on the comfy Sofa, Looking at Honami's naked back while she was searching inside the Locker for some clothes

Her flawless snowy back that is glowing even more with the light was moving elegantly in front of me inside of her Room. Giving a full analysis to her body, She seems to have grown more into shape thanks to the morning routines and the hard work she puts though. Although i think her body is already in good shape, She is still pushing forward to improve as much as possible to make me prouder. However, I was already proud enough

' It's more like you are afraid that her boobs would get smaller '

' Shut up. That's not true '

' Don't fight it Boss. I know what you're thinking, Because i am you, And you are me '

' F-Fine you win. Just get back already '

Brushing off aside the internal conflict, I shifted my gaze from her back to the small piece of cloth laying on the floor in the middle of the open. It was a destroyed Light blue Bra with a beautiful design, Both of the pads were separated from each other in a forceful way. I sighed again remembering the events of this morning and the follow up

Time Travel-chan ♪(●□●。)>

I slowly woke up from my deep slumber, Feeling somewhat sticky. My eyes were sluggish while a heavy warm presence could be felt pressing herself on my left side, To which i instinctively recognized as my Honami

Slowly but surely, I woke up from my somber mood and rose up to stretch a bit, Getting a more accurate feeling of the state of my body, My eyes were somewhat sore. *This always when i either oversleep my internal clock or under sleep it.*

Recalling the events of last night i shot the Small desk Beside Honami's bed a glance where a small clock laid itself. *7:40 AM huh ? I guess i did oversleep, Well, At least it's weeken-..... Hold on*

I shot the screen one more glance towards the bottom where more information was laid down. Today was Friday 14th of

February, A Week day. *So there is Classes today, And it's 7:40 ? That means..... 20 minutes left for Class.....*

Instantly, Some alarm bells instantly started ringing, As if an Emergency. I instantly removed the blanket and shot up from the Bed and grabbed my clothes. At my sudden movement, Honami shifted incoherently on the bed and embraced herself for extra warmth, While munching on some imaginary things and muttering incoherent words

" Arpghhhh~ More~ I wanch morej~ Love you Kiyo~ " Honami slightly opened her mouth, Sleeping with a satisfactory and beaming expression. She looked so cute that i felt myself getting reluctant over whether to wake her up or not. *Was she dreaming about me ? Anyways*

" Honami, Honami Wake up " I shook her shoulders, Trying to wake her up gently. After a few shoves she shifted on the bed again and spurted some more

" Choco~~ Fajsi~ " I kept shacking her while she kept muttering some more, It seems that she is exhausted and quite enjoying her dream. When i was contemplating whether to wake her up or not, Her eyes instantly shot up and looked itself with mine. *Welp, Too late now*

" Kiyo~ " After staring at each other for 10 seconds, She instantly rose up and climbed my body and kissing me on my lips. I instinctively caught her and reciprocated her kiss, Moments later she pressed her lips harder before separating. " Good morning Kiyo~ "

" Good morning Honami, What was that for ? " Honami greeted me with a bright smile after we got separated. I smiled at her too while asking my question, And she got somewhat flustered

" I-It was a morning kiss ! "

" Morning kiss ? " She nodded

" Yep~ I read about it, That when you kiss your h-husb... I mean BOYFRIEND on the mornings it helps relief stress and start with a positive vibe... So i kissed you... Hehe~ " Honami Laughed nervously while scratching her Cheeks with a very cute blush.

" So what exactly were you reading when you found it ? " I marked. Honami's puffed and her face went completely Tomato-mode, I could even notice some steam coming out of her hair.

I could stay and watch this for the whole day. However, Maybe some other time. What's more important is that

" Honami " At my voice, She broke out of her world and locked gazes with me, Anticipating my next words " There is 15 minutes left for Classes "

" Eh ? "

With 5 minutes to spare, We arrived in front of the Class's door, I crouched allowing Honami to descend from my back after carrying her for the whole route, It was faster and we got just in the nick of time.

" Thank you Kiyo~ " Honami tidied her clothes after thanking me

" It's no worries. Anyway, This is gonna be tough " Depending on how this period goes, It may get very tough especially with no breakfast whatsoever.

" Yep~ But don't worry, We got it " Honami exclaimed, Trying to lift up the mood. I nodded before moving towards the door and putting my hand on the handle, Honami followed right behind. However, She looks somewhat suffocated

" What's wrong ? " I stopped my initial action and turned to check on her, She lightly flinched and avoided my gaze with a light blush.

" Ummm~ " Honami stammered, Trying to find the correct words. I noticed her breathing is short and repetitive, However, She wasn't exhausted. She tugged my sleeve with her hand and i responded by lowering my head towards hers, And she whispered " I wore the wrong sized Bra " *I see*

Because of the Rush, Honami didn't get enough time to pick her clothes and wore whatever. So this would explain her discomfort, Since that Bra looks pretty tight it might suffocate her.

" I didn't realize it because we were in a rush. But now, It is my old one which is pretty tight " Honami whispered, Somewhat embarrassed.

" Can you push through with it until lunch break ? Because if you can't, We might have to remove it " I suggested. Honami got even more embarrassed.

Going out in public without a bra might be inconvenient. However, It is probably better than suffocating with an undersized one, That's at least how i perceive it. She can remove it and stuff it in her bag and wait until she gets home and get rid of it

" I-I think i'll remove it... " Honami muttered, I responded with a nod. We both moved towards the Female Bathrooms where i obviously waited outside while she went in.

" There is still enough time, It should be fine. I'll wait for you

right here " Honami nodded before walking in, While i leant 5 Meters away from the door and closed my eyes. The Hallways were pretty deserted, Since almost all students are making their way towards their Classes

I kept waiting patiently outside of the Bathrooms for some time, Until i started getting concerned. I checked the time again and there was less than a minute left, Just when i started wondering what's up, Honami finally emerged from the Door..... *Looking more uncomfortable than before...*

" Kiyotaka~ " After i joined Honami, She called out to me.

" Honami, Did you remove it ? "

" Ah~ No... " Honami muttered, Getting more embarrassed. " It got stuck~ And i couldn't remove it~ "

" I see. " I muttered. Contemplating over something " So what are you planning to do ? Bear with it through the morning sessions and wait until lunch break ? "

At my question, Honami uncomfortably nodded. I sighed internally before nodding at her and leading the way towards the Class

Why is it always the Bra ?

I felt myself sigh in annoyance, Remembering the moments where The Bra has proven to be a major obstacle in my life. So far, The closest I've been to expulsion was because of the Bra. So it is technically my biggest opponent.

Honami heard my sigh and hung her head low. I patted her head with a reassuring smile. However, She only reciprocated my look, Not feeling good. I simply brushed some of her bangs and kissed her on her lips, Causing her to get startled

" What was that for ? " Honami asked. Playing with her hair a little while blushing

" A Morning kiss. It relieves stress "

" Hey~ " Honami cutely chopped my arm and averted her gaze with a pout, I looked at her and chuckled before bending and giving her a peck on the cheek. She perked up and turned around with a bright smile, Before giving me a kiss that lasted longer. " *I am melting~* "

After we broke up, We made our way back towards the Class and arrived just as the Bell Rang. Many students perked up at our Arrival. However, There was no greetings since Chie-sensei just arrived as well and we took our seats

During the whole morning sessions, I kept glancing towards Honami to check up on her, She was lightly sweating and uncomfortable that she had to distance herself from her desk a little for some breathing room. However, She endured it for the whole

morning sessions and when Lunch Period came we instantly stood up and excused ourselves.

Seeing that we were in a hurry, Our Classmates didn't question us and let us leave. When we were on the Hallway i carried the exhausted Honami towards the Dorms

" It is impressive that you managed to hold this much " I marked on our way. " I was seriously contemplating whether or not to leave mid session and pay private points later to compensate "

" Hah ? So you could do dirty things to me~? " Honami strangled my neck tighter and spoke in a teasing grin. " But yeah~ It was pretty hard but it's done now~ "

" Yeah. Sorry for making you go through that " I apologized. Honami However, Lessened the hold over my neck.

" No don't apologize Kiyotaka~ It's not your fault " Honami reassured. She embraced me even tighter while resting her head over my shoulder and spoke in a lower and warmer tone " Rather~ It makes very happy that you cannot hold yourself when it comes to me~ So don't blame yourself "

Surprisingly, Her tone didn't contain any lust, It was pure warmth and happiness. It seems that she was happy that i was at my limit and received some growth on my lascivious side rather than being happy at the fact she would be receiving more treatment. It is pretty hard to explain but she is selfless even in this scenario. *Which somehow made me irritated*

" Well you are my lovely Girlfriend that i love and adore so much. It is impossible to hold myself against you " I instinctively blurted out, Trying to break her selfless nature at least when it comes to our Relationship. " You are the person i value most in life, And i'll value you higher than anyone forever. So give yourself some credit Honami, You are the woman that i fell for after all. "

If you ask me, I would've never imagined i could blurt out those words ever in my entire life, And if i did it wouldn't be genuine and probably for deceiving somebody. However, I didn't say it for deception's sake, I really did mean those words.

" Kiyo~... " Honami muttered my name, Seemingly surprised. However, She sighed before leaning in on me and embracing me tighter than ever, Causing me to falter a little.

" Hey Honami, I'm gonna fall like this " I said to which fell on deaf ears, Honami started giggling at my struggles while making the most out of this. I stabilized myself before continuing my walk

" *I love you~* " She whispered under her breath while feeling immense warmth. I Glanced at her resting head, Somewhat confused about what she said. I couldn't see her face since she was resting on my shoulder side ways i simply admired her a little

before entering the Dorm lobby.

Honami used her hands to press the elevator buttons and open her Door, As soon as i entered i walked towards the Bed and dropped her there. I removed her shoes and walked towards the Door to close it and remove my shoes as well, Before walking back towards the Living Room

Honami was already undressing herself, I simply crouched in front of her, Waiting for her to finish. She somewhat faltered and got embarrassed at me watching. However, She quickly removed her top, Leaving her only in her Bra

Her Chest was roughly tightened by the Bra, Suffocating in the tight space provided, I gestured for her to turn around, The back buttons were done wrongly as well, Which explains why she couldn't remove it

" You couldn't remove it since you did the buttons roughly and now they are broken. " I remarked. Before moving my hands towards them to try and force them apart which didn't budge as a demonstration for her. She quietly nodded in comprehension " I'm gonna try to break them apart, Hold in tight "

Solidifying her will with a nod, I started applying pressure to the buttons trying to force them apart, To which the didn't budge too. I drastically increased the intensity which was to no avail as well. *This is the most stubborn bra i came across*

Honami seemed in pain at my attempts to force it open, I can definitely force it if i put enough strength in this, But It could lead to Honami getting hurt. So i decided to go by another method

" Ahn~ Kiyotaka~ Stop~ What are you doing~? " Honami questioned me while moaning as i put both of my hands on top of the pads

" I'm sorry Honami, But you gotta hold in tight " I said as i put my fingers on the Piece of cloth connecting both of the pads and applied greater strength than before.

It is safer to use strength here since it's just a cloth, Unlike the back where if you tear apart the buttons it could wound Honami's flawless back and be a target for infection.

" Ahhn~ " It didn't take long for the pressure to tear the connector apart, Causing Honami to moan in relief. She sat on the bed breathing Heavily while i threw the Bra away.

I gave her some space and walked towards the kitchen and brought her a cup Water, She gracefully accepted it and drank it, Feeling refreshed she handed it back to me

" Thank you Kiyotaka~ " She smiled brightly while being topless, I simply nodded with a smile before returning the cup back towards the Kitchen. She walked towards the Locker to search for a new Bra

while i relaxed on the bed

It didn't take long before she found one and wore it before wearing back her School uniform as well. She let a deep comfortable sigh before grabbing her bag and walking towards the Kitchen

" Kiyotaka~ Do you mind eating at the Cafeteria today ? " Honami asked me, While ruffling some carton on the kitchen.

" No i don't. " It would be lame to complain especially since i was the reason why she haven't cooked anything " But only for today "

" Hehe~ " I heard some small giggles coming from the Kitchen at my sarcastic tone. After that, She closed the fridge door and came out, She was smiling brightly with her Bag hanging on her shoulder and both hands behind her.

" Shall we go ? " I picked up my bag and said. However, Her smile grew even brighter. I narrowed my eyes in suspicion and her Cheeks flushed red.

" Umm~ I don't know how to present this but~ " Both of her hands came out from behind, Holding a cute Rectangular pink wrapped Box and handing it to me, Her cheeks were red very red and she was at a loss for words for a second " I hope you accept and like this humble gift of mine Kiyotaka~ I've put a lot of hard work into this to show you how much i love you~ And i hope you love it~ "

I stared at the Box in front of me that was presented by Honami as a gift for Valentine's day, Before smiling at her and accepting it. Although i knew this was coming, Seeing the Action happen in front of me made me a lot happier

While i was opening the box, Honami excitedly bent her knees, Waiting in anticipation for me. After removing the Cover i opened the box and found a small note there with a cute familiar hand writing

This is the Best Chocolates you could find in the world ! For the Best Boyfriend in the world !

Use them with Care.

Love you, Kiyotaka

I glanced at her blushing excited face before pulling out a piece of Heart Shaped Cold Brown Chocolate. It was cold since it just came out of the fridge However it was already melting on my hand from my body heat. Not letting any Nano-gram go to waste i put it in my mouth and started munching it.

I must have unconsciously formed a smile since Honami rose up

with shining eyes, Or probably read my face. But i didn't care to up my guard in front of her and simply enjoyed the piece of heaven on my mouth

" So How was it~? " Honami asked excitedly, Wanting to get praised more.

" It's probably one of the best things I've ever tasted in my life. "

" Yippie~! " At my praise, Honami punched the air while celebrating, Seemingly satisfied and happy for my praise. She instantly ran at me and hugged me to which i held her and reciprocated

We stayed in each other's embrace for a minute before breaking apart, We both made our way towards the Cafeteria and ate Lunch there together, It felt kinda weird eating it but i enjoyed it nevertheless.

When we arrived at the Class, A Bunch of our Classmates greeted us and surrounded us, We explained that we had some problems to deal with and it was good enough for them. We joined our Usual group friends and decided to chat for the rest of the Lunch Break

However, I couldn't help but notice my instincts acting up, Telling me that there is something off place. I couldn't exactly pinpoint it, But something feels weird

" What's wrong Ayanokouji-kun ? " Amikura asked me, Snapping me out of my world. *I'm probably overthinking this again*

" It's nothing. Just wondering about who received some Chocolates " With an excuse made on the spot, I shook my head and exclaimed. Amikura However, Grinned even wider. *So you were the fish after all*

" Oh You're wondering ? I Guess since you weren't here you didn't know " Amikura exclaimed, As my instincts got even wilder. I broke into a cold sweat " I Guess Sou-kun received one from me, Or you could say a half one.... "

She went on about the boys and who received from who, Making me somewhat regret using that excuse. However, Her next words made me regret it even more

" Ah that reminds me~ " Amikura clutched her bag and pulled a wrapped box " There is somebody i need to deliver this box to "

<https://youtu.be/9bdORiwoLho>

(A/N : Imagine this playing on the Background)

" Hmm~ For who ? Mako-chan ? " Honami asked Curiously. However, Everyone's eyes darted towards me, Including Amikura. *Oh no, It's happening*

" It's for Ayanokouji-kun~ "

" Haa-?! "

..... TO BE CONTINUED

Epic ending to the Arc 10 huh ? I guess i really am a genius

This is probably the worst Arc i made in this entire series, I planned for it to be character development as i said in the last chap, But it didn't turn out as expected. I am really disappointed in this Arc

Thank you all for reading. The second year is coming right up, Who is excited ? ;))))

Well, One thing for sure is that i am :)

Arc 11 Chap 1 : Flaws

Today, The 11th Month of my stay at the Advanced Nurturing High School has concluded, And now i commenced with the first day of our Last month as First-year High School students.

I woke up around my usual time for the Morning Workout, I jumped at my suit and grabbed both of my phone and The Smart Ring and made my way towards the elevator and pressed the Call button and left the Dorms

I activated my ring using the App and wore it, Meanwhile, I sent 100.000 Points from my Monthly allowance towards Honami's Account before jogging my way towards the Gym.

The usual morning Gloominess of the Outside has dissipated, Setting the Carpet for the Upcoming Spring, The Clouds has Subsided as the morning Lights of the Sun slowly started making their way towards the spotlight. The Air was still cold and fresh, And the only noises i could hear was the taps of my foot against the ground, Other than that, It was pretty quite. It really did put my mind at ease

I was enjoying my internal peace and before i knew it, I was in front of the Gym. The Guard instantly recognized me and gave me the Pass without presenting my Membership Card. Contrary to the outside, The inside was filled with noises from different people working out on their devices. While i spotted some Familiar faces, I spotted some unusual ones, Ones that i haven't seen in a while. However i brushed it off

On my way towards my usual Spot, I was greeted by some of my acquaintances, Mainly Hashimoto and Kito. I simply greeted all of them back before starting with my workout

Since today is the First day of another month, I made it a goal to increase the intensity of my workout. However, Last month, I already reached the Maximum level the devices at this Gym could handle, Except for a very few

It isn't that this Gym is bad, In fact, It is the most popular one. However, It wouldn't help me grow further than this and at best, It would keep my Body from degrading

Kouenji has already switched towards a more luxurious one located somewhere in the east, And it probably has the best equipment compared to the other Gyms. However, I do not have the

motivation to run 30 Kilometres back and fourth every morning just for some workout. So i settled on affording my own equipment back home, And it would probably arrive somewhere in-

" Kouhai-kuuuuuuuun~ " While spaced out, Two slender arms made their way towards my neck and strongly pulled me behind. I snapped back and was ready to counter-attack. However, At the sound of the Familiar voice i instantly disregarded that, The next thing i felt was a soft sensation on my Cheek. I looked up to see Kiryuiin embracing me with a wide smirk on her face, It took me a second to process the position we were in and i instantly tried to put some space. However, She held me even tighter and pressed my Cheeks against her Chest even more " Shh~ Stop Resisting Kouhai-kun~ Mommy Fuka-chan missed yo- Ow~ " "

She squealed as i moved my palm towards her waist and squeezed it, Making her jolt. Using that i immediately slapped her hands away and put some distance between us. She clutched her waist seemingly in pain, Before looking at me with a fake sad smirk

" Ara~ Is this the way to greet me after a long while Kiyō-kun~? I really did miss you "

" Good morning Kiryuiin-senpai, It has been a while indeed " She pouted at my monotone way of speaking. She was wearing Gym Clothes, Consists of a Small black shirt that stops at the Solar Plexus level with long black pants. " I heard that you've been thrown at an Crazy exam, How did it go ? "

Looking back at it again, Those unusual faces i spotted were all Second-Year students that came back to Campus. I heard about it from Honami around A Month ago, To be more exact, Right before the Class Poll that all Second-Year Students have been transported somewhere for their Year end exam, And she was ordered to lead the Student Council in the absence of Ikuto for an unknown amount of period.

" Ho ? It went pretty okay i guess. Honestly, I got pretty scared when i heard the explanation at first " *Kiryuiin got scared ? From a special exam ? Interesting....* " While i'm not allowed to talk about it, I wish you luck on it next year. You'll probably find it interesting "

" I see " Well for an exam to take a month to complete it sure sounds Scary. This could be what scared Kiryuiin, Since some students still haven't returned, It's pretty safe to assume that the duration of this exam could last up until The Final day of Spring Break. *However, The question is, What happens if you don't complete it ?*

" You don't have to worry about it too much Kouhai-kun~ You still have your Final Year-exam up ahead no ? " Kiryuiin said, I responded with a nod. " Then focus on what's coming up ahead,

Then worry about that later. But don't worry, Since i completed it i'm sure you will "

" Thank you for looking after me Kiryuin-senpai. I appreciate it " I offered her some sincere gratitude, She responded with a smirk

" Don't worry Kiyo-kun~ As your Senpai~ It is my job to help my precious little Kouhai-kun " Her smirk widened even more. As i felt some lascivious aura coming from her " In more than one way~ "

Suddenly, My body had more than enough training and decided to leave the Gym.

" Hey Wait~! " I heard Kiryuin's pleads behind me as i left the Gym. However, I ignored them and disappeared from sights. *Sigh, I forgot how troublesome that woman is, I need to be more careful to not upset Honami again*

Brushing off those thoughts, I entered my Dorm Room and took a Shower and made Breakfast before relaxing on my Sofa and scrolling through my phone.

Two Weeks ago, The School started another project using a Mysterious Building near the Teachers's Dorms. The Reason why it's called mysterious is because it was always off Access for Students and we were never allowed to go there.

Many Rumors erupted, Stating that it was haunted and many Students would get eternally lost going there. However, The School explanation shortly came after stating that it was a dorm building with weak Earthquakes resistance, So they moved the Students at that time to our Current Dorms which is much more resistant

However, I couldn't help but be a little bit suspicious. The Timings are just too good, It would be pretty interesting if Tsukishiro was the one actually responsible for this 'Project'

Since he wasn't discreet about it, I can abandon the idea of using that building as an operative base to expel me, He could be tricking me into thinking like this with reverse psychology, But it is too risky with the presence of Chie-sensei and Mashima-sensei around, And i trust that he has already seen through them.

Which brings me towards my second option and the most probable one. However, I decided to not think about it too much and dismiss the thought, Checking time i grabbed my bag and made my way towards Class

" Good Morning Ayanokouji-kun ! " Arriving in front of the Door, I was greeted by the warm greetings of my Classmates.

" Good Morning " I greeted them back while moving towards my Desk, I slid my bag down and glanced at the empty desk behind mine. A luxurious bag was on the Seat However, It's owner wasn't present. *Strange...*

While i was staring at the seat, Shibata sneaked behind me and

started pushing Kouenji to the side, Making enough space for her to enter. Kouenji simply allowed her be and looked at her with a smirk

" My it seems that you cannot handle the sight of my perfect back Yuki-girl. " Many of my Classmates widened their eyes at the sight of Himeno Yuki with Kouenji. However, Their surprise multiplied even further when he called her by her first name.

" Ugh~ How many times did i tell you to not use my First name ? " Himeno stopped dead in her tracks and looked at Kouenji with a disgusted expression, He responded with a smirk.

" I don't know. Perhaps it's because you look very cute when i call you that Yuki-girl "

" Urghah~ " Himeno flinched at Kouenji's words, Causing her to fall silent. The Class's eyes widened even further, And Himeno didn't fail to notice that " D-Don't say stuff like t-that out in the open ! it's embarrassing ! "

" What's embarrassing about saying the Truth ? "

" Eh~ " Himeno blurted out in shock at Kouenji's straightforward words. This time, She decided to instantly leave the spotlight towards her seat, With her head hung low. Everyone was surprised seeing the usually uninterested girl flustered like that. However, They were even more surprised at the fact that Kouenji could say all of those compliments out in the open with a straight face and without sounding creepy with it.

Honami just arrived in front of the door and looked confusingly at Kouenji's figure in the hallway, Before scanning the whole Class and meeting my gaze. Kanzaki emerged behind her shortly after and did pretty much the same

Kouenji flipped his bangs and nonchalantly made his way towards his seat, Regardless of all 40 Stares he was receiving.

Honami received some briefing from the girls about the situation after she greeted everyone inside. When she realized what i did she flushed with a cute giggle, Before checking on Shibata who seemed to be doing fine

Kanzaki also heard the briefing and broke into an amused smile and checked on Shibata as well. Soon the Class's atmosphere came back to normal and i decided to move towards my seat

" You have a strange taste in women " I mused after i sat and turned towards Kouenji. Who gave me an amused curious smirk

" Oh ? Are you sure you want to say that Kiyo-boy ? " Kouenji rose an eyebrow and smirked " There is nothing strange about her. In fact, I find her to be a very interesting fellow "

" No, You got me wrong " I shook my head. " I just didn't expect you to chase after Himeno of all people. "

" Who did you expect me to go after ? Fuka-chan-senpai-girl ? Or

did you perhaps wanted me to steal Ichinose-girl ? " Kouenji said, With a confident tone " Although it may not seem like it. If i wanted i could steal her from you if you want "

" Hah, Like you'll succeed " I stared at Kouenji's smirking face with a challenging grin on my face.

" Remember Kiyo-boy. I have money, You don't " Kouenji said jokingly. I released a small chuckle at his words. He sighed before staring at his desk " I don't know, The reason why i find her interesting is that because..... She doesn't seem to care too much about my background and money. She is carefree and apathetic and that's part of her charms "

" I see " I muttered.

Even though i don't have the specifics, It seems that Kouenji also has it rough, Not only in this School but also in his life before this. Since he comes from a wealthy family, A lot of people would try to befriend him solely for that fact alone

It is also probably that the Senpais he hangs out with are here just for his money and doesn't like him for real. However, The only reason he is still hanging out with them is to keep them close because they have their uses later on

This is probably the real reason why Kouenji is fond of this Class. We run at a system similar to democracy where everyone is treated equally, No matter who you might be. Since Kouenji was used to people approaching him with ulterior motives, He found it intriguing that people treated him just as they treat everybody else. This might be premature at this stage, But it is possible that Kouenji found a home in this Class

His Case is pretty similar to Yousuke who actually found a home in this Class already, His ideologies line up pretty well here and it is the perfect environment for him to work at full capacity and be at high spirits almost every time. He found it so comfortable that he even opened up about his past to some people who actually supported him and cheered him on

This way of working may appear perfect at first glance. However, It is definitely a naive way of thinking.

No matter where you go, There is always preferential treatment. Even in this Class, Where people are selfless and happy by just being together, They couldn't help but have a head hierarchy for the Class even if they didn't make it themselves, That's just how the Human Psyche work

Taking Honami for example, If she was given the choice to choose between me and one random student in this Class. She would undoubtedly choose me, Since i am at the top of her head Hierarchy. Of course she would be sad about the Loss of a Student

but she would choose the option that aligns with her feelings

This is why this way of thinking is flawed, And it may possibly be the downfall of this Class. However, And a Big However

That's what i was working on for the past Year, To remove the Flaws of this System and perfect it as much as possible. Our Classmates may appear naive. However, They are not at the same time.

They know the difference between an enemy and an Ally, And they won't sacrifice themselves for an enemy. It might have been the case at first but everything is changed now, All due to me influencing them

Don't get me wrong, I didn't change them to be selfish to abandon each other, They are still the same. I only worked on the finer details and introduced the Word 'Enemy' and 'Rival' to them and what it means, An enemy is someone you're supposed to fight and not help.

I did not ruin their relationship with their friends from other Classes. However, I reminded them that they are at the end of the Day our Rivals in reaching the Top. So that they wouldn't hold back against their Friends when it matters the most

I have worked to remove all the flaws in the fundamentals of this Class, Without Changing the ideology of it. If i did that, Then their win would be meaningless and all Honami's work would be in vain.

I was snapped out of my thoughts by a flick in front of me, I looked around to find Honami looking at me with a worried expression. *It seems that i doze off again. Sigh*

Seeing my reassuring slime, She smirked brightly, Erasing all of her worries, And mine. Soon, Our Homeroom Teacher Strolled inside of the Classroom in a serious manner, This alerted our Class and most of us shifted in our Seats to a more serious poses

" Good Morning Everyone~ I hope you're all doing well~ " Chie-sensei greeted us with her usual enthusiastic tone. " I guess you're all ready for this. Alright i'll cut straight to the Chase~ Your Year-end exam would be held in 15th of March, Two weeks from now. It's called the Event Selection exam~! "

Yooooooooow~ Sorry for late update, I somewhat always have a writer block at each Start of an Arc, It's getting annoying.

Anyway, I summoned you here to inform you. For the next week, I won't be having Internet for more than half of the day, Starting from Tomorrow until Thursday. So Updates would get slower considerably

Why ? Because the Final exams of High School or whatever you guys call them start next week. So, During the exam periods they cut internet for the whole Country, Even in businesses. Apparently, It is to 'Prevent' Cheating from happening.....

Well you might find it stupid, It is actually the case. They literally cut internet so students wouldn't look for answers on their phones WHILE BEING INSIDE OF A CLASS WITH 5 TEACHERS GUARDING.

BRUUUUUUUUH LIKE CAN'T YOU FUCKING CONFISCATE THE PHONES FOR THE EXAM PERIOD ? OR GET CAMERAS SO THEY WON'T CHEAT ? IF YOU DO THAT HOW WILL THE STUDENT CHEAT ? BRING OUT A LAPTOP ? THEY DON'T NECESSARILY NEED TO USE PHONES THEY CAN JUST SNEAK IN PAPERS, OR IF YOU INSIST ON THE PHONE THEY COULD JUST DOWNLOAD THE LESSONS BEFORE GOING IN. WHY DO YOU REMOVE THE INTERNET FOR A STUPID REASON AS TO PREVENT CHEATING WHEN THERE IS A MILLION MORE WAYS EASIER AND MORE EFFICIENT... BRUUUUUUUUUUUUH

Phew that felt good. Ranting out in the open, I might turn this fic into my ranting web just like Kushi- Joke i won't do that.

Anyway, Thank you for listening to my ranting and see you in the next one !

Arc 11 Chap 2 : The Event Selection

" Event selection ? Can you explain Sensei ? " Before anyone could speak, Yousuke took the lead and asked. However, He seemed to just have realized that he isn't in Class D anymore, So he doesn't need to take the lead in order to prevent Chaos from happening.

" Yes Hirata-kun~ I will explain " Chie-sensei nodded brightly, Causing Yousuke to sit back on his seat and scratch his cheek from embarrassment. Moments later, Chie-sensei cleared her throat in an elegant manner " I'll try to keep it as simple as possible. Basically in this exam, You have to compete with another Class, Much like the past exams. However, This time it's a direct confrontation, A 1 on 1 between the students of both Classes. You'll be tested in many fields be it Academics, Knowledge, Physical abilities, Decision making, Cooperation and even Luck. It could be anything. Does anyone have any questions so far ? "

At Chie-sensei's question, Multiple shook their heads. Seeing that, Chie-sensei continued

" Right~ In this exam, You'll be required to submit 10 events to compete on, Those events's contents are all up to you to decide. As i said they could be anything, Be it Shogi, Tennis, Academical test, It could be even some gambling games like Poker and even Rock paper scissors. As i said you'll be tested in many fields " At her words, Some Students glanced at each other's stern expression, Some doubts running in their heads. Chie-sensei rose her index finger and explained " Of course, Despite your freedom of Choice, You're still forced to follow some rules. You can only choose a well-known game to compete on, You are also expected to come up with a time limit for each event and Tie-breaking rules in case of a tie. "

All of those restrictions upon our options is to ensure a fair competition. You cannot choose unpopular games or gamemodes in order to secure a decisive win against your opponent, So all of us are expected to fight in the same battlefield. There is also rules to ensure that there is only one winner of an event and prevent any other outcome, In order for the results to be as decisive as possible

" You must select a different number of participants for each of your 10 events, Meaning that you cannot choose two events with the same number of participants, And you cannot choose more than 10 Players for an event. Which means that all the numbers in the [

1 ; 10] barrier must be used. Each person can participate in only one event, Don't worry, In case of 39 People have participated excluding your commander. The loop would restart and all of you can participate in another event "

All events must contain different numbers from 1 to 10, Which means that all numbers would be used for the 10 events. Students who participated in an event cannot participate again unless the 39 Student loop would be completed. It is expected for the other 3 Classes to have a shorter loop since they have lower students than 40.

" You must also provide a way for the Commander to intervene in the events. Each Class must set a person as their Commander who acts as their leader during the day of the exam, They would be the ones who is selecting the Participating students from a special tower. They cannot be selected to participate during events but they can act as a substitute on some games. "

The Commander part is probably one of the most crucial points in this exam. They would be the one who's calling the shots during that day, While they may just memorize the agreed upon participants. That person has considerable influence on the outcome of each event depending on their knowledge, So they must be someone powerful enough to at least secure a positive swing.

" Keep in mind that once you submit an event you cannot retract it, And if you fail on choosing the appropriate number of events or your Commander by the time of the deadline. The School would automatically fill that for you. But believe me when i say that you don't want that to happen. So don't test School-chan~ Patience and be like a the good little kids you are~ " Chie-sensei's playful tone delivered a heavy warning to not test our luck, Because this is a fraud gamble and we would pay a hefty price no matter what. " By the time of the Deadline~ All the commanders would be gathered in one room for a lottery to choose their opponents~ After everything is settled, All 10 of your events would be revealed to each other and you could spy as much as you want~ *Winks* "

Some murmurs erupted in the Class as people became visibly confused, In a bad way. However, They all came to halt at the voice of a beautiful strawberry haired girl

" Sensei ? Isn't that giving too much information to the opponents ? " Honami's voiced out her concerns " I mean, That would be pretty detrimental especially to the lower Classes. Since the more flexible the Class the more advantageous they are, Wouldn't that be unfair "

Honami's argument was valid, And it earned her the support of the Class. She wasn't worried about the Lower Classes but she used them as an example to try and swing things to our favor, Although

it really depends on our opponent for this exam, She stills wanted to take the safe and discreet approach. An excellent move by her. However, It would probably not change much

" Don't worry Honami-chan~ They most likely wouldn't be able to guess what events would be played " All students looked at each other, Trying to figure out the meaning of her contradictory words, That came shortly after " At the day of the exam~ All commanders must choose 5 out of the 10 events they submitted earlier on. Meaning that you only get to play at maximum 5 of your chosen events and not all 10, Which concludes that the other 5 were a sacrifice~ "

Soon, The confusion turned into comprehension at Chie's explanation. Each Class would have 5 Real events on their mind while the other 5 are just baits to deceive the opponent and keeping them guessing.

" Chie-sensei. So that means we'll be playing 10 events ? " Asked Amikura.

" Nope~ " Chie-sensei shook her head. " From the 10 events selected, Only 7 would get played. There is no way you can predict the order of the events nor the selected ones, It is all up to chance. "

In addition to the 5 baits, 3 Real events would be sacrificed as well, And it all depends on our Luck whether we get a desirable event or not. Worst Case scenario, We would only get 2 events from our selection while the opponent would get all 5

" In summary, First step is to choose a Commander then draw lots to determine your opponents, Then based on that you'll have to come up with 10 events with a unique set of rules, 5 of which are fake and the other 5 are your real ones. And you'll be battling on the day of the exam, In 15 of March. Does anyone have questions so far ? "

So far, The nature of this exam has been comprehensible, At least to some extent. This exam provides many opportunities for deception and baiting your opponent into your traps and securing a decisive win. Of course, There is no guarantee that we would win all 7 of the events, But at least increase the chances of that.

As stated before, It mostly depends on the Commander's skills and leadership. It would be ideal if they excel at everything since they would be influencing all the events in different fields, So if we could put someone like me at the commanding tower it would be ideal

" Now that everything's settled~ It's time to go to the results section ! " Chie-sensei exclaimed after answering some questions from our Classmates " Alright so we'll start by the rewards~ There would be a 60 Class Points reward for each event you win. And vice versa, 60 Class points would be lost for each event you lose, So it is

possible to win up to 420 Class Points~! *Coincidences can be freaky huh ?* "

Many of our Classmates were amazed, Not because of the legendary number but the amount of Class points that could be gained. They also realized something, That was pointed at by Chie-sensei

" That's Crazy right~! " Chie-sensei rolled a poster on the Blackboard, That contained the rankings for the month of February

Class A : 1665 C.P

Class B : 917 C.P

Class C : 635 C.P

Class D : 0 C.P

(A/N : Those are the Points with the Results of the Colossal exam and some light deductions because of the Chaos in the Class Poll. I always forget to update them so forgive me hehe~)

" As you can see~ If you manage to win all 7 of the events you would~.... " Chie-sensei pointed towards our Class and showed us a very excited grin " Surpass the 2000 Points Landmark~! "

Chie-sensei couldn't help but start leaping in excitement, Delighting the serious mood in the Class. Newfound delighted smiles found it's location on our Classmates's faces. You would basically earn 200.000 Points a month if we manage to pull such a feat.

Honami looked at me with shining eyes and a bright smile, I gave her a thin smile causing her flame up with determination.

" However~ Winning all events isn't an easy feat, Even for you guys. There would be events that is just unwinnable for you no matter who you might be~ So i recommend you to not get overconfident~ " Chie-sensei gave us a piece of advice. Which was understood by many of our Classmates

Even if you are a jack of all trades and master of all of them, You couldn't beat a specialist in his own field, Even for someone like myself. Specialist are people who mastered their field and actually dove deeper into it

Let's take English for an example, I can confidently say that i am fluent in it and have mastered it. However, My Knowledge wouldn't begin to compare against someone who mastered it and actually dove deeper into it, Learning Slang, The different words used on certain regions and the pronunciations. You could already tell that he is a specialist in English and i simply cannot win against them. Be it as rare as these people may be, They would be able to defeat

me.

Simply put, A Master cannot defeat a specialist. Although i may be considered a specialist in some fields like Chess and deception, There is many other people who excel at other fields where they would find an easier time defeating me.

So if we happen to go against a specialist on his event, A loss is almost guaranteed if we don't have a specialist of our own.

" All you have to do is choose your events and compete on them~ The School would take care of everything, If you happen to choose an academical test the School would prepare the questions~ If you choose a physical the School would prepare the necessary equipment. You all should be in ease " Chie-sensei explained. Before adding " However, If you happen to lose on overall score, Not only would you lose Class points

" But also **your Commander** "

At her words, The newfound cheery atmosphere instantly stormed into a tense one, Many audible gulps could be heard. Chie-sensei's serious expression quickly turned towards a cheerful smile

" But don't worry~ Since you have people with a protection point~ It should be all fine~ Besides, The expulsion occurs if you happen to lose more events than you've won. So with enough preparations you should be all fine~ "

" Why do you have to phrase it like that Chie-sensei " Some complains among the sighs of relief arose.

" Sorry Sorry~ It's just fun that way~ Teehee~ " She bonked her head with a cute wink.

" So you're saying that you're a sadist ? " At Amikura's words everyone started laughing. Chie-sensei pouted before smiling brightly

" Anyway, You have until tomorrow to choose your Commander. At the end of this Week a lottery would be held to determine your Opponents. The deadline for the events is the end of this week, Failing in submitting would end miserably for you so please avoid that~ Now, You have the rest of Homeroom as free time, So you can discuss anything you like~ " Chie-sensei exclaimed before making her way towards the exit " You can choose the Commander on anytime you like, You simply need to inform me about them~ If you need a summary of the Rules just check the OAA App and you'll find it there or ask me again~ Adieu for now~ "

As soon as Chie-sensei left, The Taboo has been lifted and people started chatting among themselves. However, All the Chatter stopped and laid their eyes on the Podium where Honami was standing

" Everyone~ Regarding the Commander, I think i should be the

one who takes the responsibility for that role. Of course if no one has any objections to it " Honami announced her candidacy for the role. Which was expected and received all the support from the Class, And no one appeared to be objecting.

When it comes to the Commander role, There isn't much of an option for us and she is our best option in this situation. Yousuke is an option too but his field of expertise would be better used as a Player instead of a Leader. He is inferior to Honami in Academics and Intellect, However he is definitely superior to her in the Physical field and somewhat balanced in Academics, So his field of attributions would be wider. And Honami wouldn't be a bad substitute either, So this works for the best

After she saw the support, Honami gave a thin smile before clearing her throat

" Now that's settled. I want to start preparations for the events Right away, I want you guys to create your own events and submit them to me so we can discuss them after our Opponent gets revealed. If you have anything you excel at please create an appropriate event for it with the set of rules the School gave us, This way we won't waste a lot of time during discussions and come up with the best possible events and everyone can get a chance to help the Class. Does anyone have any questions ? "

Instead of overworking herself, She is relying on her comrades to help her so everyone gets to contribute. All she does this week is note the ideas then discuss it as a group in the next week, This is definitely a good approach to this exam, And probably the most common too.

It is pretty obvious that the people with the Protection points would be the commanders in this exam, Which Makes Sakayanagi and Hiyori as Honami's enemies. However, The big mystery that is not so big is Class D

Since i stole Yousuke who is the holder of Class D's protection point, You can pretty much imagine what's happening. I can already hear faintly the Chaos that Class is in currently in, Or that's probably just my imagination. Sometimes i feel pity and some admiration towards Matsushita for being able to live in such a Class for a whole year and not going mad.

Chie-sensei said that to not test the School's patience and choose our Commanders, Unless we want a death wish. Which automatically leads to thinking that they would deliberately set a bad student for your Class to throw the exam Which makes me almost certain that Matsushita wouldn't be chosen, Since she is currently the best in Class D

Unless the pressure from her peers would get the better of her

and volunteer to the Commander role which counts as a suicide, I highly doubt that's the case since she has a brighter future than some random fodder inside of Class D. So as long as she does nothing she would be fine

However, Now that this exam has came, Ryueen and Sakayanagi are out for blood. This is probably the perfect chance for them to compete against me. Ryueen has been going to the Gym everyday and practicing martial arts while reading some Psychological Mystery Genre books to improve his intellect, While Sakayangi has been taking courses in Chess and Psychology to improve her deceptive skills and strategies. Both of them have been working pretty hard to reach me

So.... Who am i to refuse their desperate attempts ?

Arc 11 Chap 3 : Opponents

Honami POV

It was the afternoon of the Same day, Where the announcement of the Event Selection exam happened.

While i was gathering my luggage, Some of my Classmates approached me and Kanzaki-kun to consult about the upcoming exam and suggest some events. Kiyotaka seeing my situation decided to wait for me outside so we could head home together

For this Week, The School gave an optionary break to the First-year Club Members, Including the Student Council to prepare for the Exam. Since we have to come up with multiple events by the end of this week, Our Club-Activities could get in the way.

Even if it was optionary, Shibata-kun and Chihiro-chan decided to not take it and use it to hone their abilities. They both suggested their own events so practicing for it in case it gets chosen wasn't too bad of an idea

Hirata-kun decided to take the break and stick around to help us organize, Even with the little time he spent here he is already acting as one of the leaders. Normally, You would be uncomfortable with someone who just joined as the Leader, But it wasn't the case with Hirata-kun

It didn't take long for me to finish my group, After checking around i decided to leave the rest for both Kanzaki-kun and Hirata-kun and not keep Kiyotaka waiting too much.

After bidding farewell i spotted Kiyotaka at the end of the Hall talking with somebody and decided to approach him, His back was covering the person so i couldn't recognize who it is. After drawing closer i could hear their muffled chatter

" Hehe~ Yes, It is as you said Kiyotaka-kun~ The participation resets after the participants numbers reaches 39, Then you could participate again~ " As i came in closer, Their chatter became clearer and i instantly recognized the voice

" I see. Well that's all that i wanted to ask you Sensei, Thank you for your time " It was our Homeroom Teacher Chie

" Ara~ So you're gonna use me to extract information then throw me away~? You know Kiyotaka-kun~ I still have one final use~ " Chie-sensei said in a lewd arousing tone with a wide lustful smirk " As a final use~ You could use my body to relie- "

" Ahem~ " I faked a cough, Cutting through Chie-sensei's harassment, Her shoulders jerked up. Moments later she leaned sideways to look at me with a nervous smile

" Ehehe~ Hello Honami-chan~! " Chie-sensei greeted me awkwardly, While giggling nervously to herself.

" Yep~ Good Afternoon..... **Chie** " I closed my eyes and forced a smile on my face, Trying to not show my fury. I felt my left eye twitching as i spoke in a heavy tone " I believe i heard something about body usage..... Care to fill me in ? "

" Ehehe~ I can explain Honami-chan~! It's not what you think~ " Chie-sensei nervously said, Before looking at Kiyotaka and starting to scratch her cheek. " Well~ Cya~! "

" Wait ! " I blurted as Chie-sensei disappeared from our sights before she could explain anything. I felt myself let a deep sigh before clenching my fists in irritation *Why do people keep harassing Kiyotaka when they know that he is mine ? Can't they just leave him alone ?! Those women*

" Shh~ It's okay " As i was ranting inside of my mind, I felt a gentle embrace around me, Kiyotaka started caressing my hair calming me down.

" It's not okay~ Why do they keep harassing you when they know you're mine ?! " I tugged his shirt and started ranting to him instead, While he was caressing my hair. *I know that Kiyotaka is a chick magnet, And probably every girl in this School has a crush on him. I even accepted it when almost every girl gave him chocolates in Valentine. But this is way too much !*

Kiyotaka moved his hand towards my face and started caressing it, It felt so good ranting to him and getting comforted by him, He felt like he was mine and i could do anything with him, And It instantly calmed me down. However, I became yearning for more, I craved for more attention. So when he was about to let me go i embraced him instead

" Don't let go~ Hug me more~ " I commanded while pushing my face on his shirt. Moments later his hands crept back on my body and reciprocated my embrace

I didn't let go of him and leant on him closing my eyes, Yielding to the warmth producing from our embrace. All of my body was heating up from the feelings of love, The Euphoria was skyrocketing through the roofs, I can feel it

I feel so safe in his arms, I feel like i am the happiest person in the world. I feel like i could fall asleep and not give a single care. I.....

" I love you~.... " "

Kiyo POV

After Honami's whisper, Her body relaxed and leant even more on my chest. I tilted my head slightly to look at her and she was in a slumber, *She fell asleep. Sigh, What a troublesome girlfriend i have*

Although my words said otherwise, I unconsciously broke into a smile when looking at her cute sleeping face. I firmly held her waist and let her sleeping figure lean on it while i moved my other arm below her legs and swooped her into my arms.

" Ummppj~ " She muttered some cute unintelligent words as she shifted on my arms, Making herself more comfortable. Her hands moved on top of my chest as she slept more profoundly.

(A/N : Kiyo in Kouenji's body sounds too weird 🤪🤪

Anyway, Credits to Iviera on Reddit for this amazing piece of art. This deserves a medal for sure 🏆🏆🏆Especially the bottom..... Kyaaaaaa~)

Seeing that she got more comfortable, I picked up my legs and made my way towards the dormitories in an average pace, Honami slept all the way with a warm smile on her face.

Arriving at the dorm room, I unlocked her door using the spare keycard i had and placed her on the bed, She cutely shifted again and hugged her second pillow, Which is mine whenever we sleep together.

I changed to my clothes and grabbed hers, I was careful enough to not wake her up nor do anything too suspicious while changing hers. When i was done i covered her with a blanket and gave her soft warm cheek, Before going up and tidying the room

It was 5:50 PM so i decided to rest a little, I grabbed my phone and sat across Honami's bed, Having her sight right in front of me. I dropped her one last look before landing my eyes on my phone screen

Although i don't use it a lot, It has some pretty convenient apps for time usage and i currently have nothing to do, So i decided to scroll through some Manga websites and look for some interesting stuff

I have taken interest in Anime since Honami has introduced me to it, I was always fascinated by people's fantasies and work of fiction, Since it is common between teenagers and it could also help me build my incomplete personality. However, I'm not planning to dive deep in Anime..... or rather 'Weeb Culture' as they like to name them..... You could say i'm just an average enjoyer

However, Even as a self-proclaimed average enjoyer i couldn't help but feel a bit weird towards some of the titles. I mean, *Who in their right mind would name something like 'My Sibling in another world has the same nationality as my Best Friend' ?*

Author (Myself) : Hehe~

The Titles should be short and versatile, Not too revealing and not too mysterious. Don't get me wrong it is creative, But it is getting a bit out of hand.

After reading for exactly 2 hours, I stood up from my Chair and did some stretches. Honami was still asleep so i decided to move quietly to the kitchen and prepare our dinner

Since my culinary skills aren't that great i decided to cook something not so fancy, Just some Lasagna. Since there was no pasta dough i decided to make it myself, Things were bound to get messy so i temporarily wore Honami's pink apron and grabbed the flour pack and four eggs while i set the meat cooking on medium heat

Making the Pasta dough was a simple and quick process, I wrapped it up inside of a cover and threw in the freezer for the time being, Allowing me to focus on the other ingredients

After chopping off some veggies i threw them on the meat alongside some seasoning and beef stock, And covered it up with a lid allowing it to cook on low heat. I set up the Pasta machine and grabbed my dough and started shaping it

However, While i was doing that, I sensed some disturbance in the air. My eyes instinctively darted towards the Kitchen's door where a phone's camera was peeping close to the frame. The phone slightly shook when i made contact with him and instantly backed away.

" Honami, I caught you. Come out " I called out after busting her. However, She responded with silence. I knew that she was gonna be stubborn so i dropped the pasta alongside the apron and made my way out

Honami was laying on her bed with her back turned towards me, The Blanket she was covered with was undone and messy. It was pretty obvious that she just ran and fake asleep, Not because i know it already, But it's because her posture was slightly firm compared to a sleeping person and her muscles were tense, It was unnoticeable but not for me

I tried to approach her and take a look on her face. However, I was met with rock-solid poker face, Seeing it made me somewhat astonished. If i didn't know better i would have really thought that she was sleeping, Even standing above her for a minute she didn't crumble.

" Hmm, I wonder how long you'll be able to keep that " I remarked, Deciding to test her durability. Her lips slightly curled up, Before returning back to their normal state. " Hmm, Was that a crack i saw just now ? "

She didn't react to my remark and kept holding firmly, I Small

smirk crept to my face before i crouched down and started caressing her face.

" Aww, Honami sleeping is probably the cutest thing in the world, No, It is definitely the cutest thing in the world. I'm so lucky to have you as my girlfriend " In order for me to break her composure, It had to be genuine words for us to feel connected, So i put my heart on the speaker while caressing her cheeks, That got slightly warmer.

My words seems to have gotten some results, As she responded to them by shifting on the bed to face my direction while pretending to be asleep. Seeing her reaction i realized that my flattery won't work anymore, So i decided to go with another approach

" Honami, You remember what happened in the day before Valentine right ? " I said trying to jog up her memory. A Cute blush got plastered on her face, Indicating that it worked " You remember what was your punishment for taking a photo of me without my consent right ? "

I said that as i started tracing my fingers on her thighs, Causing her to slightly flinch. Her cheeks flushed even more as her face got tense, I continued tracing my finger up her whole body

" It seems that one punishment wasn't enough, I guess i have to punish you again " As i said that, I tapped her lips using my finger, Before dragging him towards her chest area, Making sure that she keeps track on my movement by tracing it over. However, As i was about to poke her nipples

" Bwa~ " Honami suddenly opened her eyes and screamed, Moving her hands in front of my face in a quick motion as an attempt to jump scare me, It was a desperato.

" Ooof, Scary "

" Hmph~ " She pouted at my blank response " So unfair~ "

" How come ? " She pouted again before throwing herself at me and kissing me passionately.

" You're so unfair Kiyo~ Always making me go crazy over you~ " She put her finger on my lips sealing it away before i could even talk " Shh~ Don't talk or i might lose it~ "

Seeing her status i nodded with a thin smile, She smiled brightly before giving me a quick kiss and hopping off my lap and doing some stretches

" Mmmm~ Right so~ Coming back to where we left off " On her way towards the kitchen, She spoke " You forgot to add Salt, You didn't freeze the dough enough and you didn't blend the tomatoes. But don't worry it's not a big deal "

" I see " I muttered, Mentally fixing my mistakes to not repeat them again. " So you were awake all along "

" Grr.. " She groaned with a glare at the entrance of the kitchen, I responded with a chuckle before following her inside

The Rest of the afternoon was spent on cooking and eating dinner while watching some TV. We finished off around 9 PM and decided to sneak back towards my dorm room since it was past curfew. Totally ignoring the meeting i have later

According to Matsushita, Someone from Class D has requested to meet me late at midnight for a 'very important' meeting, They also asked for Matsushita to conceal their identity. However, even without Matsushita breaking that promise and telling me their identity, It was pretty obvious who it was, and the contents of that meeting

Since today was the deadline of the Commander selection, All Classes chose their commander whether they wanted or not. And the poor soul that ended up being victimized in Class D was Shinohara Satsuki. Who thought that she could save herself using me and move her to my Class

Although that's not the reason why I'm ignoring this meeting, I could totally come up with a contract full of loopholes and scam the life out of her.

However, Meeting a girl at 11 PM in a deserted place is just not it, Especially if that girl is a former prostitute according to Kushida's post.

An hour after Kushida got restrained, She somehow managed to get the time and posted one last post containing everyone's secrets from each and every Class. Her phone was instantly confiscated by Tsukishiro and the post was deleted. While most people didn't get to read i, Some Class D students did and the rumors erupted.

Secrets are a deadly weapon, So i gambled on those rumors to be true and paid Private Points to get access to te post. The Rules forbid that but you could twist them with enough money

So following the logic of that post, She might try to pull something funny to sway me. While i'm sure that i won't fall for any of that, My truthfulness to Honami would get deluded so i decided to not do that

While i was wearing gathering my Clothes, Honami sneaked behind me and wrapped her arms around my waist. However, Her hands slowly crept down and clutched my crotch

" Honami, What are you doing ? " I groaned. Honami grinned and starting stroking it

" You think you can just leave after playing me like that~? Hehe~ You're wrong~ You're gonna pay dearly for that~ "

Next Day (*Honami POV*)

When the Afternoon Classes came to a close, Chie-sensei called out to me to follow her for the lottery of our opponents.

Yesterday, All of the Commanders were selected and today would be our first meeting together. Depending on the Class we get we have prepared multiple events for that, Our ideal opponent would be Class D. However, We'd have to win the lottery if we want that

" Alright Honami-chan~ We have just arrived " Chie-sensei said after arriving near the Faculty Room, She opened the Door and walked inside, Where i followed her Right after. " Good Afternoon Sae-chan~!!!!!! "

After Chie-sensei spotted Chabashira-sensei sitting peacefully in a chair, She instantly approached her and hugged her, Pushing her cheek against hers and wobbling her head up and down in a cute way

" Chie. What are you- "

" Quit it Hoshinomiya. You're disturbing everyone " A Firm voice came from Mashima-sensei, Ordering Chie-sensei to stop. To which she complied with a grin

" Sorry Tomonari-chan~ I just missed my Bestie~! " When Chie-sensei said that, I felt something off. However, I decided to brush it off and move towards the table, Where i greeted both Sakayanagi-san and Shiina-san. The former gave me a smug smile while the latter smiled angelically at me.

" Right, Since the Commander of Class D is absent we're just gonna exclude them from this lottery. Now the three of you draw some papers " After sitting between the two of them, Mashima-sensei announced and gave us a bowl, Since Shinohara-san was missing it only had 3 papers. Taking the lead, Sakayanagi-san took the first paper and i took second, The third went to Shiina-san. " Right, Now after you open them, If your paper had a black dot. It means that you get to choose, Now if you may open them. "

All the three of us nodded and unfolded our tickets, When i reached the last fold i was met with a blank ticket. I sighed in

dejection, Before checking my seatmates, Shiina-san also had a blank paper, Which means....

" My, It seems that it is my lucky day " Sakayanagi-san exclaimed before chuckling and putting her paper on the table, Showing a big black dot in it. " However, It is sad that it isn't very lucky at the same time "

" Huh ? " I got somewhat confused at Sakayanagi-san's words, She shifted her head towards me and showered me with a smug.

" So, Sakayanagi-san. Who do you wish to go against ? " Mashima-sensei took the paper and asked. Sakayanagi-san glanced at him before shifting her gaze back to me and giving me a wide smug. *No way, Is she gonna choose us ? But that's throwi-*

" Class D " Sakayanagi-san cut through my thoughts with a simple sentence, Trying to throw me off. However, Her smug smile went wider when i offered her no reaction.

Mashima-sensei smiled with a nod, Before typing something on his computer. *So our opponent is Class C huh ? I guess this isn't too bad after all. But why do i feel an ominous aura coming from Sakayanagi-san, As if she isn't happy with her choice. Did she want to go against me or Shiina-san ? If so, Then why did she choose Class D if she isn't happy with*

" It seems that we'll be facing each other in this exam Ichinose-san " Shiina-san said, With a wide bitter smile on her face. I responded with a nod " I hope you go easy on us "

" I'm not planning to Shiina-san. We'll take every win we can " I said competitively. Shiina-san responded with a confident smile, A Spark of rivalry sparkled between us.

After the selection, We got reminded again to submit the events right by the end of the week and got dismissed. All three of us decided to head home Together, Lowering our pace to match with Sakayanagi-san.

While chatting with each other, I couldn't help but think about our strange group up. I do believe that Sakayanagi-san and Shiina-san have some sort of a crush on Kiyotaka. So i feel somewhat guilty hanging out with them. However, I am happy that we can still get along together, Both of them are a pretty good and fun company

" Ichinose-san " While i was deep in my thoughts. Sakayanagi-san shifted her gaze towards me and called out

" Yes Sakayanagi-san ? " I glanced to meet her gaze, We stared at each other for a moment before she flashed me with a smug.

" Have you read this Light novel called 'My Boyfriend is a chick magnet and i don't know what to do ? ' " Wha ?

..... To be Continued

Arc 11 Chap 4 : Strategy

Honami POV

I opened my eyes to find myself sitting in the middle of the Class, Looking towards the podium where Chie-sensei was lecturing us. All of my Classmates were listening attentively to her, I glanced towards my left where Kiyotaka was and he had his usual bored expression during Classes. I unconsciously smiled while admiring him for a while, Until the bell rang

Chie-sensei strolled out of the Class leaving us all behind, I crouched grabbing my bag to hand Kiyo his lunch box. When it was within reach i pulled it up

" Here Kiy- " I lifted the box towards the empty desk on my left. " Huh ? "

I stared at the empty seat confusingly, Trying to figure out what happened. I drew my eyes and scanned my surroundings. However, I got surprised and confused even more

Where did everyone go ?

I was sitting alone, Confused inside the empty Class that was packed by students just a moment ago, A Deafening silence erupted.

However, In the middle of my confusion. I felt my intuition acting up and drawing me towards the Door, Where i obediently followed and met with a shocking sight that i would never forget in my entire life

" Kiyotaka-sama~ Would you like to try my food~? " Chie-sensei was clinging into Kiyotaka's right arm with only her underwear on, She put a sausage between her Breasts and asked Kiyo. Who..... *Bent forward and ate it.....*

" That's so unfair Chie-sensei~! " Mako-chan who also was on her underwear and clinging into Kiyotaka's other arm yelled, She grabbed some pies and put it closer to her Breasts. " Kiyotaka-sama~ Please try mine as well~ "

" Ara~ Don't take him all for yourselves ladies~ " That voice belongs to Kiryuin-senpai who drenched her naked body with syrup " Oh my~ I'm so clumsy~ Would you please be a dear and clean me up Kouhai-kun~ ? "

Kiyotaka nodded and grabbed a pie from Mako-chan's tray and approached the Drenched Kiryuin-senpai and started licking the syrup on her body.

" W-W-W-W-W-What is going on ?!!!! " I yelled pretty loudly, Drawing everyone's attention. Kiyotaka stopped licking and turned to face me " K-Kiyotaka ! What are you doing ?!!! "

" Oh Hello Honami. " I was trembling, I was stammering, I was feeling immense despair. But Kiyotaka responded apathetically, Staring at me like i was an uninteresting object " I'm just cleaning up Fuka. Is there something wrong ? "

" Y-Yes there is ! " I Yelled again. Kiyotaka narrowed his eyes " W-Why are you licking her ?!!!! "

" Why not ? You're not my girlfriend are you ? "

" WHAT ?! " I blurted out, Falling to my knees.

" Why do you look so surprised ? " I unconsciously drew my trembling face towards Kiyotaka, Tears started dropping down.

" Why... No.... Kiyo What.... " I couldn't find the correct words, My body trembling almost like i got hit by a teaser. My despair was just too much for me to handle

" Maybe if you were more assertive you could've have kept me from changing my plans " I was absentmindedly staring at the sky. Despite my inability to move or speak i can clearly hear his calm words. " Maybe if you were more territorial you could've prevented other women from trying to seduce me. I guess it's too late now "

More assertive..... More territorial.... ?

Did he throw me away..... Because i wasn't careful enough ?

" Let's go guys "

" Wait..... " I muttered in a whisper when Kiyotaka started leaving. " Please wait..... No..... "

He was slowly walking away, Fading in the Darkness surrounding me, My tears were falling into the deep abyss below me to the point i couldn't feel them anymore.

" Kiyotaka wait ! Where..... " I fell to the ground and started crying profoundly, While watching his back disappear into the unknown. My feelings were rampant to the point i couldn't control them anymore " Why are you leaving me ?! Why..... Why.... "

I started screaming at his direction, Hoping that he would come back. But he didn't, And my tears intensified.

" Why..... What happened to our future together ?! What happened to the time we spent together ? Why are you leaving me ?! You promised ! You promised that you would never leave me ! Was i not good enough for you ? I will fix that ! Please.... Just come back.... " My voice trailed off, However, Nothing emerged. " I will be anything you like, I'll change myself and do my best to suit you ! Please just come back.... Please Please ! Please i beg of you Pleas- "

" Honami.... Honami... "

" Huh ? " A Familiar voice started echoing out of nowhere, I unconsciously looked towards the Sky where a light was present, And it seems that it was coming from it

" Snap out of it Honami, It's a bad dream " The voice started getting louder, As the light shone even more until it became blinding. The next thing i saw was Kiyotaka with a concerned expression on his face, Seeing me he closed his eyes and sighed in relief

" A.... " I was speechless, More like paralyzed. Kiyotaka lifted his head at me and smiled

" It was a bad dream Honami, Nothing happened. " Kiyotaka dragged me closer to his sturdy body and embraced me, While caressing my hair " Don't worry Honami, I'm here. It was just a bad dream "

" K... " I was still paralyzed. However, Kiyotaka's touches lifted this effect from my body. " Waaaaaaaaaaaa~ "

I tugged on his shirt and started crying on it, Emptying all of my emotions on him. My body instinctively reached and embraced him very tightly

" I was scared ! Ha... I was Afraid ! Ha.... Please..... " I kept ranting to him my fears and worries, While dropping my tears while being embraced by him.

" Shh. I'm here Honami, I would never leave you, That's a promise " Kiyotaka took all of it with a warm tone and comforting words, It was exactly what i wanted to hear. He kept caressing my hair while hugging me, Helping me to calm down.

" *sniff* T-That's a promise ? " After calming down, I rose up and faced Kiyotaka who was smiling. He nodded before closing the distance between us and kissing me on the lips, I reciprocated it wholeheartedly and put my arms around his neck deepening it

I was feeling like an empty vessel after dropping all of my emotions. However, This kiss was everything that i needed, It filled me up again and gave me my strength back, Kiyotaka didn't try to break away but instead offered me unlimited usage of his lips, And i took him up on his offer

" More~ I want more~ " After 3 Minutes i ran out of Stamina and pulled away, Both of us were panting but him was to a lesser degree. I put my arms again and kissed him again, But this time it didn't last for long. " Thank you Kiyo~ "

" No problem Honami. " He reciprocated my smile with a warm one. While sitting on his lap i gave him one last kiss before checking the time " There is still 30 Minutes left, So take your time "

" Mhm~ " I nodded before going to change my clothes, Kiyotaka was already on his so he went and closed the door " By the way,

How did you know i was still asleep ? "

Currently, It is 7:30. The time where we agreed to meet up and head towards School together, So him coming here before that is odd

" Oh, You usually arrive before the scheduled time by some margin, So when you didn't i thought something was up and decided to check " Kiyotaka explained, Which caused me to nod in recognition. *He noticed the abnormal change and decided to act up on it, It makes sense*

" Hehe~ You know me a little too much~ " I grinned teasingly at him, While wearing my shirt.

" It sounds very wrong when you put it that way " I chuckled at his remark.

" I guess~ " I finished wearing my Clothes and collected my stuff alongside the Lunch boxes. " Alright Shall we go~ "

Kiyotaka nodded before stepping outside, After closing the door i instantly latched at his arm feeling the need to be more territorial after that nightmare.

" So do you have a plan for the upcoming exam ? " I was resting on his arm when he decided to break the silence. I opened my eyes and nodded

" Obviously~ " I nodded " Do you want to know ?! "

" I wouldn't mind hearing you out " Kiyo nodded, Giving me his consent. I got somewhat excited to share my master-plan with him, So i lifted myself and flashed him with a smile

" I have thought of the best set of events that would give us the best chances of winning. Although at the end it would be based on our luck, But it wouldn't hurt to prepare for the worst~ " I stopped waiting for his reaction, He gave me a nod. " So that's why i decided to implement a little something~ "

" Go on " Kiyotaka urged me to continue, Curiosity and interest written on his face.

" I have gathered a lot of events from our Classmates and classified them into tiers. However, I decided to mostly go with Academical events since it is one of our Stronger points against Class C " I explained while Kiyotaka listened attentively to my master-plan " It would also help keep Class C on guard and prepare for every possibility. However, If it happens that they correctly guessed our events, I have prepared an ace up my sleeve "

" An ace ? " Kiyotaka rose an eyebrow, I responded with a grin

" Since we could determine the rules of our events and the way the Commander intervene i decided to twist things up a little bit " I continued " On every Academical event, There would be a bonus question that would have the difficulty of Second-year level or

above. Of course, Our Classmates cannot answer them. But i can~ "

Since i have been tutored by Kiyotaka some advanced concepts and fundamentals used on a higher educational ladder on some of our free time, I am confident on my abilities to solve them. Using my privilege as the Commander, I could transmit the answer towards my Classmates and increase our points, This would serve as a tiebreaker and it is a massive advantage to our Class

" Of course, I have checked it up with Chie-sensei first~ As long as it is submitted as a tiebreaker rule then it should be fine "

One of the crucial elements on this School is the loopholes on it's rules, Abusing them is almost a surefire way to win. You could even pass Sugar as Salt as long as you use the rules to protect you.

" I see. " Kiyotaka nodded, Recognizing my master plan.

" Of course~ While Class C keeps preparing against our Academical events, I'll add some events where we have no ways we could lose~ " I added out of excitement.

" That is indeed huge " Kiyotaka nodded, Seemingly impressed. Before raising his hand patting me on the head " That is a pretty good plan, Good Job Honami "

" Hehe~ Praise me more~ " Kiyotaka smiled and patted me extra more. I blushed as i kept squealing internally.

" However.... " Kiyotaka's warm voice turned somewhat monotonous, Snapping me out of my bubble. " While it is indeed an impressive plan, There is a chance that it wouldn't work as intended, As you stated before, The selection of the events is all based on luck. How are you going to prepare against Class C's attack ? Especially if the worst case scenario happens ? "

What Kiyotaka said was indeed a problem, While we focus on our strong points, Class C is going to do the same, But to a more predictable manner. Since our Class is more flexible, It would be harder to guess our real selections out of the bait ones. Class C would most likely rely on their only strong point against us, Which is Physical ability

When you outline a plan to somebody, It would always be in the ideal scenario on how the ideal route would go, Then you would work on the finer details to perfect it as much as possible in case things would go wrong.

" Don't worry Kiyo~ I have already took measures against that~ "

" How so ? " Kiyotaka pressed for more, And i wasn't going to refuse him. I took out my phone and opened my Chat with Kanzaki-kun and showed it to him, He took my phone and read it before widening his eyes in surprise

" I didn't want to use that method but~ " I started explaining while scratching my cheeks, Feeling somewhat ashamed of myself "

While we were discussing this topic, Kanzaki-kun suggested that we use the leverage we have over Manabe-san and her friends to Blackmail her into becoming our Spy and relaying information for us. "

Since Kanzaki-kun recorded a footage of Manabe-san and her friends Bullying Karuizawa-san on the day before last on the Colossal exam, It gave us a weapon we could use against Class C in multiple occasions.

Of course, I am not very happy about this method, Even after agreeing to it. But it is Manabe-san's fault for bullying the weak, So she should be grateful that we aren't going to expel her and punish her this way

Kiyotaka was staring at my phone, Still surprised about the text messages. However, My shame was slowly building up by the second.

" K-Kiyo~? Are you disappointed in me~? " I couldn't take it anymore so i voiced it with a depressed tone. Kiyotaka snapped out of his thoughts and turned to face me

" No, I'm sorry if i gave that impression, I was just engaging in some internal monologue " Kiyotaka said as he handed my phone back, I lifted my face slightly at his words before he continued " And no, I am not disappointed in you. The reverse, I am actually astonished by the way you approached this exam, Even if you had to resort to Blackmail, It is better to let Manabe get expelled "

Kiyotaka patted my head with a warm proud smile and warm words, Cheering me up back to my usual state, Or it was even better. A warm smile crept up to my face, Before i felt my blood rush and hug Kiyo from excitement. He reciprocated my embrace, While we were on our way towards School.

I took a quick scan around us to see a lot of people glaring at us, Both boys and girls. I simply grinned at them and hugged Kiyo even tighter, Marking my territory and earning more intensified glares

You can glare all you want~ But it won't change the fact that Kiyotaka is mine~

And there is nothing you could do about it... Teehee~♡♡

Sex = Growth ? ☹☹

Arc 11 Chap 5 : Preparations

Kiyo POV

The First given week of the Preparations for the Event Selection exam is almost at it's end, With only one Event separating us from the Weekends

" Are you guys sure~? " Chie-sensei asked, While looking through a piece of paper in her hands " Once you submit those, There is no way you could retract them back, Even with the use of Private Points~ "

" Yes Sensei, We are sure~ " Honami who was standing in front of her nodded in confirmation " Those are the events all of us worked on and came up with~ We completely understand that we cannot take it back, But our decision is Final~ "

Chie-sensei shifted her eyes from the Paper to Honami before smiling brightly at her and nodding, She picked up the paper and excused herself to the Faculty Office to submit our events. Honami slowly made her way back towards her seat with her usual confident aura behind her

Today is the evening of Friday, Exactly 1 week away from the event selection exam. All 42 Students of my Class were present for the Revelation of our Opponent's events

During this past week, All of my Classmates have been working their butt off in preparations for the exam, Whether it was publicly or secretly. The peer pressure of the title 'Year end exam' has been doing wonders in them, Even the usually quite students has been more proactive

Honami, Kanzaki and Yousuke were working the hardest out of everyone, Organizing everyone's thoughts and discussing new ideas while trying to come up with new plans and tricks. I was once again reminded of how strong this Class's bonds are and how deep their trust is. From a utilitarian standpoint, It was very fascinating seeing everyone work like that

During this period, I have been doing nothing but be a pillar of support to Honami and advice some people who sought my help. Kouenji was pretty much the same too, Except for the supporting part. However, He has been a big help nevertheless

Honami didn't take any events from the both of us but instead

preserved us, Since we are guaranteed to bring a victory on almost any event she decided to use us in Class C's events, Which is wise.

Although i'm only narrating our Class's situation, Our two other competitors has been actively preparing too. Some Reports from our Class's club members that people were even practicing after Club hours, The Gyms were more packed and spying was everywhere. As much as we were excited about this, The other Classes were as much

Of course, This goes without saying that only Class D was the only one that was in shambles just as the exam got announced. Shinohara Satsuki, Who is better referred to as the victim of this exam stopped coming to School right on the next day she got randomly selected into. Needless to say, Her Classmates were as indifferent as they can get and they would get.

Their Class most definitely didn't select any events to submit, Just like how they didn't select a commander. Class B would have an even easier time than they actually have, And their winning percentage surpassed the 300%

Coming back to our Class, After all the push and pull we came up with 10 events, All within our strengths and well described, Giving then all an equal chances of being selected. Which would make it almost impossible for Class C to deduce our real 5 out of the 10 without any leaks. Our list goes as follows

Math Test : 10 Contestants

Science Test : 9 Contestants

Japanese Test : 8 Contestants

Social Studies Test : 7 Contestants

English Test : 6 Contestants (Bait)

Football Match : 5 Contestants (Bait)

Volley Ball Match : 4 Contestants (Bait)

Aerobic : 3 Contestants (Bait)

Horsemanship : 2 Contestants (Bait)

Painting Contest : 1 Participant

Although it may appear obvious at first, On all the bait events we clearly do hold an advantage over Class C, Even in those Athletic events due to the experience. Class C has Yajima in the Soccer Club but we have Both Yousuke and Shibata who are way superior to him even individually.

The only problem with the selection of this is that some of those events would conserve our Athletic Students, Since they are short in number compared to Class C. Ryueen if brave enough could write them off as obvious baits which is what Honami is hoping for, So

Class C would exhaust their students on studying and crush them using her Commander Trick

Another trick Honami thought about is trying to use all of our Class's students on the events in order to be able to use me and yet again, Her idea is great. However, It isn't safe from risks either. Besides, *She doesn't really need to use all of our Class*

All the excited Chatter in the Background came to a halt when Chie-sensei returned to the Class again, Carrying a small envelope on her hands. All the Students who were standing up sat back and focused their attention to the podium

" I'm back~! Did you miss me~? " Chie-sensei bent forward with her index on her lips which formed into a grin and scanned the Class, Her eyes landed on me and stared at me for 5 Seconds before pouting " Alright~ I have submitted your desired events to the Higher-ups and received Class C's~! Much like you they are currently reviewing your submitted events ! Does anyone have any questions before we start ? "

All of us shook our heads in denial, Prompting Chie-sensei to continue. She opened the envelope and read it's components, Her eyes widened a little before grabbing her pen and drawing the events alongside it's rules

Mixed Martial arts Tournament : 10 Participants

Building contest : 9 Participants

Dodge ball Match : 8 Participants

Swimming Tournament : 7 Participants

Basketball Match : 6 Players

Hide and seek : 5 Participants

Fishing Contest : 4 Participants

Long Jump : 3 Participants

Arm Wrestling : 2 Participants

Boxing Match : 1 Participant

" Those are the 10 events submitted by the Class C students. As you know, 5 of those would be selected for the lottery with your 5 on the day of the exam~ Does anyone have any questions ? " Chie-sensei's question received denial, Before she smiled brightly at us " Anyways~ You're free to use the Class to discuss or head home~ Just don't forget to close the door after you go~! Enjoy your weekends everyone~ "

Chie-sensei blew a kiss to all of us before signing out. At that precise moment, Honami stood up and moved towards the podium, With her trusty notebook on her hand. Nobody had any intentions of leaving and listened attentively to her

" Right~ There isn't much i want to add, But i just want to remind everyone~ " Honami grabbed a mop and started wiping off Class C's events, Leaving only 5 of them " According to our spy in Class C, Those 5 events are the real ones out of the bait. As you can see, They are all favoring Class C "

Mixed Martial Arts Tournament : 10 Participants

Basketball Match : 6 Participants

Long Jump : 3 Participants

Arm Wrestling : 2 Participants

Boxing Match : 1 Participant

All of our Classmates nodded understandably at Honami's explanation. All five of those events are within Class C's expertise, And most of our Classmates wouldn't stand a chance. However, I was somewhat intrigued at the choice of events. It seems that Ryueen was planning to lose some on purpose to eliminate both of me and Kouenji

He has realized that it is futile to try and win a lot of events against us, So he decided to go with neutralizing the damage as much as possible.

" We can remove Basketball from our Preparations since none of us actually plays it for real. So it would be a waste of time to prepare for it, if it gets chosen then it is what it is " Honami crossed off the Basketball event due to the lack of experience. " As we discussed before, We need you all to be as flexible as possible. There is chances that your events won't be selected and you'll be redirected towards another, Don't panic and do your best "

Since the event selection heavily depends on luck, We might exhaust all of our spare students and force them to some events unprepared. As Honami mentioned, There is a chance that your event won't be chosen and you'll have to participate on another. Flexibility is key on this exam, And we do have a definite advantage over Class C on that

Excluding one event, We have 4 that we need to prepare for. Therefore, Multiple of our Athletic students were assigned for multiple events.

Yousuke, Shibata and Minamikata were aimed towards the Long Jump event, They are currently our best option for this event. As for the arm wrestling event, Beppu and Kouenji were assigned there.

Kanzaki had some history with martial arts, Specifically Karate. So he decided to try and practice boxing for the event, He often times comes to seek advice from me and sometimes monitored him too. I estimate his skills by the end of next week to be at least

decent enough to give a good match

As for myself and some other participants, We decided to take on the Mixed Martial arts tournament. Although we didn't need other participants aside from me, Almost all the weak students are assigned to an academical event. So we had no choice but to go with this arrangement for now

As stated before, This arrangement would most likely change by the time the events would get presented. So those are our participants on paper, It could very well change depending on our luck

Even if Class C has advantageous events, With our Preparations there is a great chance that we could best them. We might even clean sweep this exam, Who knows

Shortly after, The discussion came to a close and all of our Classmates dispersed. Amikura gathered our usual group of friends and invited us to hang out. Trying to provide us with some fresh air after all the hard work for this past week

Our group consists off Me, Honami, Kanzaki, Shibata, Amikura, Shiranami, Kobashi and Minamikata. And we are all close friends who hang out together most of the times. Since we've been in a period of Chaos, We didn't get much of a chance to go out to do activities like usual. Until today

Our hangout went exactly like usual, Checking out multiple stores and services while enjoying the company of each other. I was holding hands with Honami with earned us the teasing of not only Amikura but the others as well, Which ended up being a battle of wits.

" Hey you guys~ " While we were on the move, Minamikata playfully flied in front of us and turned around, Making us stop and look at her

" What it is Kozue-chan ? " Kobashi represented all of us with that question. A Smirk started talking form on her face as she bent forward

" I have a good idea about what to do next " All of us looked at each other before focusing back at Minamikata, Urging her to continue. She smirked before walking towards the next corner, When we arrived she pointed towards the Teacher's dormitory area " How about we go and check out the haunted building~? "

The Building she was pointing at was the old dormitory the School is currently working on. It was located near the Teachers's dorms and it looks very mysterious at first glance, This is why it gained popularity during these past weeks.

" Umm~ Are you sure Kozue-chan ? " Shiranami meekly said " I mean i know that the building isn't haunted. But it looks pretty

dangerous "

" Yep~ Besides, Didn't the School already forbid us from coming close ? " Honami chimed in and supporting Shiranami's point.

" You guys are no fun~ " Minamikata pouted in disappointment.

" Hehe~ Nice try Kozue-chan~ " Amikura cheered her up, Before shifting her face to Honami. " If you don't mind me asking Honami-chan~ Do you know what they'll do to the building ? "

" Nope~ " Honami shook her head in denial. " The School most of the times keeps their affairs secret from it's students, Even from the Student Council "

I guess it is reasonable since Student Council members are still Students of this School no matter what rank they obtain. This statement right here somewhat contradicts Manabu's words about the Council's Strength. However, I don't think it's that either. This would mean that this building would cause the Students to be involved in one way or another, Pretty much like a Special exam

" However~ " Honami added, Drawing everyone's attention back to her " They have told us that one thing~ That the building would be ready by the Start of our Second Year~ And it is something to look out for~! "

Honami got excited as she spoke her last sentence, Lifting up the mood ten folds. Amikura and the other enthusiastic people's eyes started shining

" Ne~ Did they give you something else ? " Amikura pressed for more, To be met with denial from Honami. " I see, So they only gave you that ? "

" Yep~ " Honami nodded. " From what i can tell, The School is spending quite some money on it. I wonder what it is~ "

All of us immersed on our thoughts, Trying to come up with guesses on what it is. If i take the School's words as true that it is a pleasant thing, Then it would probably be...

" A Sex Hotel~! "

" Eh ? " Amikura blurted out sarcastically, Shocking everyone present. All of our Gazes drew towards her and she started grinning widely

" Why do you all look surprised~? It fits the bill perfectly~ " Amikura continued with her teasing, She lifted her hand and started counting on her fingers " The School is keeping it a secret~ They spent a lot of money on it~ And it's structured as a dormitory~ It perfectly fits a love hote- "

" S-Stop it Mako-chan~! No it doesn't ! "

" Hehe~ What are you all flustered about Honami-chan~? You know i was joking right~? " Amikura shifted her gaze towards the flustered Honami and grinned wider. Honami held my hand more

tightly, Feeling embarrassed.

" Jokes aside, I think Amikura's point is partially right " Kanzaki voiced out " It'll probably be like a fancy Hotel or Fancier Dorms In General. "

Many of us had similar thoughts to Kanzaki, So we found ourselves agreeing with him.

" Hmm~ What is this Mako-chan~? " On our way back towards the dorms, Amikura moved towards us and Gave Honami a small piece of paper. However, Before she could talk Amikura spoke

" It's a secret Honami-chan~ I think it would be better if you found out yourself~ " Amikura said while grinning at Honami. " Oh~ And no telling Ayanokouji-kun~ "

" Huh ? Why ? " Honami retaliated. Amikura closed the distance and moved her lips to Honami's ears and whispered something, That caused Honami's composure to crack

I couldn't hear what Amikura said that caused Honami to get all flustered, Honami started stammering but Amikura whispered some more, And Honami responded with a flushed nod.

Seeing that, Amikura smirked before throwing me a glance and grinning even further before moving back towards the front, Leaving me with a quite and flustered Honami

" What did she tell you ? " I decided to try my luck and fish an answer out of her. However, It was futile.

" I'm sorry Kiyotaka~ But it's really embarrassing~ " Honami responded, While hanging her head low, Still blushing. I simply gave her a peck on her warm cheeks before carressing her head

" It's okay. When you feel comfortable you can tell me "

" Mhm~ " Honami nodded, Before We all reached the dorms and went towards our rooms.

However, Little did i know that.... *That thing was really a big deal....* 🤔 🤔

Hello

.

.

.

Bye

Arc 11 Chap 6 : White Day

" Raise your guard Kanzaki ! "

Kanzaki who was panting in front of me nodded and rose both of his arms towards his head level, I took a step forward and threw a jab while massively holding back. He slapped my hand away and counterattacked with a jab of his own, I bent down to evade it and threw a strike towards his open stomach. Kanzaki's response was too late, But i stopped right before it came in contact

" Good Work " I commended while throwing him a bottle of water, He tiredly received it and started chugging down.

We were both sitting down inside the Gymnasium, In a Wednesday evening around 7 PM in a direct coaching session between me and him. It was the 13th of March, 2 Days away from the Event Selection exam.

" So how did i do ? " While wiping the sweat off his body using a dry towel, Kanzaki glanced towards me and asked.

" Considering that you only started last week, It is impressive how far you've came " It was certainly is. After observing some training institutions, It is safe to assume that you'd have to train for at least a couple of months to match him, Since he already has the physique, He only needed to get used to the style " If i have to put you somewhere, You'll easily be able to beat down your average Class C Delinquent. However, You will experience difficulties against experienced fighters like Ibuki and Ryueen, Excluding every other experience other than Boxing. "

While i haven't monitored Kanzaki's other skills, The man possesses an impressive hyper-focus and seriousness during a task. Which very much allows him to learn at an accelerated pace, I can tell that he wasn't born talented, But Rather, His level was all achieved by hard work. Which makes it all the difficult to put his fighting skills at a level if he decided to go all out

" I see... " Kanzaki muttered, Before taking another sip from his bottle. " Any advice ? "

" Just get more comfortable with your stance, Get used to the techniques I've taught you today and what you've learnt. I bet you already know that, But i highly recommend doing shadow boxing at home " Kanzaki listened attentively to my advice and concluded it with a nod. We packed our stuff before leaving together towards the

dorms " I have to commend you on something. I somewhat expected you to start complaining "

" Hmm ? " Kanzaki glanced at me in confusion

" What i mean is. Since you have experience, I decided to go a little rough and torture you a little, I expected some complains from you but you didn't " I spoke out my honest opinion. To a White Roomer, This was probably just a warm up. To ordinary people it sounded just as it said.

Even while he was exhausted, I have forced him to work out and he complied with no complains. Even while he was faltering, I was intrigued by his resilience and endurance

" Oh, I just think that complaining would be pointless " Kanzaki responded with a firm tone, As if repeating some wise words from his mentor. I simply gave him a small nod before continuing forward " What about you Ayanokouji ? "

" I feel the same way " I sighed " Complaining would hinder your performance and ruin your mentality, It would also reduce your potential. "

It is a good mentality to have in general, In most situations, Complaining would do more harm than good. I have learnt it the hard way on the White Room, After witnessing many children get refused after complaining

" But still, I do feel bad for going hard on you " Kanzaki chuckled at my statement

" Don't feel bad Ayanokouji, I know you did it just for my sake " Kanzaki reassured with a small smile. However, It was somewhat bitter " Besides, I'm already us- Never mind "

I unconsciously drew my attention back towards Kanzaki who was staring ahead with a frown, Seemingly deep in his thoughts. Although i was curious about what he was gonna tell me, I decided to give him some spac-

" I LOVE YOU ! "

" Huh ? " Kanzaki unconsciously blurted out in surprise at the loud exclamation that came from the Alley way behind us, We both turned around and glanced towards source before exchanging glances. " What was that ? "

" I don't know " After staring at the Alley way in silence for a while, We both sneaked towards the entrance and dropped quick peeks inside. However, We were met with the dark interior

" It's so dark, I can't see anything " Kanzaki remarked, It was above 7 PM where the sun is already settled, So it is understandable why he couldn't see anything. Moments later, He took his head off and gave up " Well let's head back, It's getting dark "

I nodded before retracting my head as well getting back on track.

We were driven by the heat of the moment and decided to satisfy our curiosity. Kanzaki couldn't spot anything so he fell back. However, I managed to spot some strands of black hair alongside some tears right by the entrance that Kanzaki missed

" You definitely heard a female voice say 'I love you' right ? "

" Yeah, But i couldn't recognize it " Kanzaki sighed after hearing my response. We both reached the dorms and entered inside " You go, I have to check something first "

" Oh. Okay " Kanzaki nodded and made his way towards the Elevator " Cya Tomorrow Ayanokouji "

I reciprocated his farewell with a wave. Before making my way towards the Mailbox section on the Dorms

I scanned through the many locks until i found my target, I unlocked the mailbox number 401 Where a rectangular shaped carton box was stuffed inside. I simply took it out and checked the notes outside, Before letting a satisfied expression

Finally, It's here

It was the evening of the Very next day, Thursday 14 of March.
The White Day

Classes are done for the day so everyone started packing up their stuff and either head home or for their last Club Activity day for this Semester.

Today is the White Day, Which basically the reverse of a Valentine, Where men are supposed to gift this time. I had made sure that i was acting completely normal today, Oblivious to that fact. As a mean to get some payback on Honami

I didn't fail to notice her hints during our chat or curious glances during Class. However, I brushed all of them off and acted

normally, She occasionally responds with pouts. However, She seems to still clinging into hope that i'll remember her

Thankfully, I wouldn't be a disappointment today since my gift arrived just in time. I have ordered it weeks in advanced and it arrived Yesterday. It wasn't that expensive, Considering that i have a lot of points. So it was a small sacrifice for the sake of her happiness

I have sent her a message after she left for Council work to hang out on my room, She replied with a thumbs up giving me the cue to start setting the stage. However, I still had one last order of business i needed to check for today

After gathering my stuff, I exited my Class and walked towards the entrance, Where i spotted my target swapping his shoes out. I picked up the pace and approached them and they instantly spotted me

" Good Afternoon Kiyotaka-kun " Yousuke greeted me with a bright smile, While tying his shoes down.

" Good morning Yousuke. " I Greeted back before opening my locker for shoes " Shouldn't you be going to club activities ? "

While Shibata and the others went straight for their Club, Yousuke headed towards the entrance in a strange abnormality.

" Oh, Yeah i'll be going there in a bit " Yousuke explained while smiling " I have asked Shibata-kun to tell the Senpais that i'll be late. Because i have something to do fir-

" Meeting Shinohara Satsuki ? " I didn't look at him while i dropped that, But instead i focused on tying my shoes. Yousuke fell silent, When i glanced at him, He had a surprised expression " Thought so "

Yousuke started blinking at me while i finished preparing myself, He seems to be pretty shocked at the fact that i figured it out

" Umm, How did you know Kiyotaka-kun ? " After setting my school shoes inside the Locker, Yousuke asked me nervously. " I'm pretty sure i haven't told anyone, Nor did Satsuki-san. So wha- "

" Oh, I just stumbled on you Yesterday. " Yousuke widened his eyes again and stared at me in reminiscence. Before something clicked on his head " It was after she loudly confessed to you, I'm pretty sure you noticed both of me and Kanzaki's presence and hid yourselves until we left. However, There was a strands of her hair on the entrance alongside some tears "

This was just a wild guess on my part, But it was built on some solid proof. There is no way for me to figure out the owner of the hair. However, It's owner seemed in a state of stress as she was crying while gripping her hair, So i narrowed down the suspects towards the only black haired girl who is clearly in that state

I didn't spot Yousuke at that time, But i pinned it on him based on this abnormality of his, His popularity between Class D ladies also supported this theory. And decided to try and confirm it

" Although i don't know what your relationship might be, I can't help but feel pity towards you if you like her. Since she'll be leavi- "

" No i don't like her " Yousuke cut through me and rejected my assumptions. Before scanning his surroundings and asking me to follow him towards outside, Where no one could be listening. He sighed before continuing " I don't know how to start on this, But i'll clear your suspicions first. No, I don't like Satsuki-san "

Yousuke denied again, I gave him a nod in comprehension, Ordering him to continue

" She has called me Yesterday to meet with her, She was panicking and crying, Afraid that she'll have to leave the School which is most likely what's gonna happen. So i comforted her and helped her, But she confessed her feelings to me and asked me to wait for two years to meet after graduation " Yousuke continued, Feeling somewhat distraught. " However, I rejected her, But she seems to have expected it. She asked me to call her by her first name on her last days here and gift her a present for white day so she could remember me. That's why i'm going to meet her now to give it to her as her last wish "

In other words, Since she would be expelled, She decided to go with a desperato and confess her feelings to try and win something out of her pathetic situation. However, After getting shot down she tried to salvage it by getting something from Yousuke so she won't feel lonely on wherever she goes.

I could care less. However, I decided to give Yousuke a bitter and pitiful smile to try and reassure him.

" I see. I'm sorry for prying into your Affairs "

" No, I understand Kiyotaka-kun. You were afraid that i would betray the Class " Yousuke gave me a reassuring smile " However, I want you to believe in me that i would never do that. This is my Home after all "

" I'm glad to hear that Yousuke " I smiled at him, Before taking my steps towards the Dorms. " Well, I have a gift to prepare too. I'll catch ya later "

" Have a nice evening Kiyotaka-kun, I hope you have a great intercourse ! " I stopped dead on my tracks and slowly turned my head, To be met with a chuckling Yousuke " I'm just joking Kiyotaka-kun. It's just fun to tease you guys sometimes "

" Well i should wish that to you too "

" Huh ? Did you say something Kiyotaka-kun ? "

" No " I shook my head " I'll see you Tomorrow Yousuke "

After bidding farewell to him, I picked my legs and moved towards my Room. Closing the Door, I instantly went inside and decided to clean it up, Honami would be here in a couple of minutes so i turned off the lights and sat on the bed

It isn't too far fetched to say that the time i spent on my Room is way lesser compared to the time i spent on Honami's. We are basically like a married couple living together almost everyday, Although i don't hate the thought of it, The School probably would

Again, It isn't too uncommon for Couples to rent a room and live together on the outside world, According to one of the Articles I've read. Maybe someday i'll get to live with her without worrying too much about it, That thought is really pleasant

" Kiyo~ I'm Home~! " While i was fantasizing, The Door suddenly opened as a cheerful and lovely voice rang thorough the Room. I instantly snapped back and hid the gift below the Blanket in a quick succession before turning to face Honami " Huh ? Kiyo ? "

As soon as Honami entered, She locked her eyes with mine and exclaimed in confusion, She narrowed her eyes suspiciously at me sitting on the bed. When i thought that she figured it out she started moving her left and and opened her mouth, Seconds later, The light turned on

" Why are you sitting in the dark like that~? " Honami asked, Slight Relief washed over my body.

" Dunno, Time past faster in the dark " I responded sarcastically with a smile, She giggled as her cheeks got somewhat redder. She dropped her bag and moved towards me to give me a kiss. However, I blocked her lips using my finger " Save that for later, I have something for you "

She widened her eyes at my Actions while our faces were milometers away from each other. I removed my finger and uncovered the blanket, Revealing a small rectangular box i received Yesterday. I grabbed it and handed it to her

" Kiyo~ What is this ?! " She asked me excitedly while analyzing the box, I had tore out the small note that came with it to avoid any spoilers and she pouted when spotting the remaining bits of paper. However, A small smile plastered on her face as she started slowly removing the wraps, Uncovering the whole thing

Honami's hands stopped in the air when she spotted another box inside. Before her wide eyes started wandering between the box and me, Just like a child getting excited over the gift. The box inside had one single difference, Is that it had a display on it

Honami with a slightly open mouth moved her hands and carefully carried the box out of the wrap, Using only the tip of her fingers. She got a better hold in it and opened the box and slipped

Edited by : UAM19 (Best Girl no cap)

Whzt do you guys think ? For me i'm ultra super excited
:DDDDD

Btw. Yagami is most likely expelled in canon

Arc 11 Chap 6.5 : Final moments of Peace

3rd person POV-CHAN

In a beautiful evening of a March 14th, While Ayanokouji Kiyotaka was celebrating inside of his dorm room with his Girlfriend Ichinose Honami in an occasion known as white day. In the meantime, There was another event occurring elsewhere

A lone male Student has just entered inside of a narrow deserted alley way, While carrying his school bag with him. This place was all too familiar with him, Since he has been here before

He kept walking aimlessly forward while checking his surroundings to keep him busy, There was a lot of empty dumpsters around and the route was not monitored, Meaning no security cameras were present. However, The boy had no reason to be alerted.

Or so he thought

" Sorry i'm late " Arriving towards his destination, The boy apologized to the figure standing in front of him. He rose his gaze to meet hers " Satsuki-san "

The girl in front of him, That goes with the name of Shinohara Satsuki shook her head while being somewhat uncomfortable. The boy noticed this However he dismissed it

" No it's okay Yousuke-kun " Shinohara waved her heads, While some sweat was building on her forehead " It's okay Really~ I've called you here because i was selfish. Don't apologize Yousuke-kun !
At least you've came..... Not like.... "

She muttered those last words under her breath, Remembering when she was waiting in the cold for an hour inside of the Special building for a person who ditched her at midnight.

She instantly started getting frustrated, Blaming the person for her current situation. However, She shook her head trying to get back on track

" Anyway, Did you bring me what i asked you Yousuke-kun~? " She asked him that question, To which she received a warm reassuring smile from Hirata. Her heart skipped a beat, As a random emotion started taking over. She kept cursing and blaming that person for ditching her during that time in order to conceal it

Hirata nodded before elegantly moving his hands to open his school bag and took a small box out of it. However, As he did that,

He heard a heavy drop in front of him which caused his attention to divert towards the noise, To be met with a surprise

" Ah ! " He instantly averted his gaze away, Trying not to look. Shinohara who was standing in front of him sighed internally

She was standing completely naked after dropping the only cloth that was covering her, Exposing her whole body leaving out only her shoes.

" S-Satsuki-san ! W-What are you Doing ?! " Hirata while looking elsewhere stammered, Feeling very uncomfortable. Shinohara took a step forward, Causing Hirata to tense up

" I'm sorry Yousuke-kun~ I really am. I hope you forgive me~ " Hirata was too paralyzed to move which made him an easy target, She instantly rushed at him and hugged him, Dropping him towards the ground

He let go of the Small box on his hand at the heat of the moment and it fell to the ground, Causing the lock to crack open revealing a cute hair pin inside. It instantly flew out in the air as Shinohara was assaulting Hirata, And as soon as it touched the ground....

" What is going on here ? "

15th of March, The Day of the special exam

Kiyopon POV

The morning Classes for today has came to a close, Opening the stage for the Afternoon, Where Today's exam would be held with only Lunch Break to separate

All of my Classmates were nervous, Since a huge exam is coming up. However, They were extra nervous due to the fact that...

" Hirata-kun hasn't arrived yet " All of us were looking towards the empty seat behind Honami's, Where a green haired boy was supposed to be. However, The seat was empty, For the whole morning

Yousuke was absent today for some reason and he didn't justify it, Which caused us to pay private points in order for it to not affect our Class points. However, It seems that now he would be absent to a further notice

" Don't worry guys~ " A Cheerful voice echoed thorough the nervousness, Like a light in the middle of the darkness, Drawing

everyone's attention towards it. Honami stood up from her seat without and spoke out, Without any hint of worry " Hirata-kun has turned to me and told me that he'll be absent for today since he has some important business to do and he'll return later for the exam~ So don't worry~ "

It may sound as an attempt to lift the mood. However, Honami's expression didn't give any hints of that, Instead, She spoke without any hint of uneasiness and appeared so sure with that, As if everything is under her control

Her optimism easily spread thorough the whole Class and lifting up everyone's morale. Although i doubted her statement since she was with me for the whole day, I decided to trust her regardless

" Now that's out of the way~ Let's not forget, We have one last thing to do~ " Honami announced earning a collective nods from the audience.

Oh boi

3rd person POV-chan

The sun has reached it's peak, Concluding the former half of the day, And commencing with the latter half of it

The Cafeteria slowly started flooding with first-year students at the advanced nurturing high school. Since the Second-years are on a vacation and the third-years are somewhere for their exams, There was way less members than usual.

However, Some students inside of the Cafeteria noticed something weird on their surroundings. Especially the Class C Students

" Hey, Where is the Class A Students ? " Murmured one of them to his friend, Who didn't know the answer either

On the plain sight of the Cafeteria, There was Students from all 3 Classes who were regulars or irregulars to the Cafeteria. However, Not a single Class A Student was present, Which caused some air of wariness to fly around

Some doubts and speculations started flying around the cautious students. However, They all broke down at the sight of the door

A Beautiful Strawberry haired Girl has just arrived, Carrying a lunch box with her and scanned her surroundings, To see multiple gazes on her. She slightly smirked before walking forward

" Hey, Here is one "

" Yes, It's Ichinose-san. I guess they just had a small meeting "

" Yeah. But what is she doing here ? "

" What do you mean ? "

" Doesn't she normally eat with he- "

" Hey you two, What are you talking about ? " The girl known as Ichinose turned her attention to the two Class C students whispering

towards each other and called out to them, She instantly picked up her legs and approached their table and took a seat beside them " You seem to be talking about something interesting. Care to share ? "

The odd behavior of Ichinose caused a stun in the brains of the two students, Failing to comprehend her actions and provide an answer. And oddly enough, One of them spoke up

" It's none of your business. "

" Oh yeah ? You were staring at me while talking, So it makes it my business " Ichinose refuted back while opening her lunch box. The boy's eyebrows twitched a little in annoyance

" Listen here you slu- "

" What were you about to say ? " A Calm monotonous voice echoed behind the boy and cutting through his statement. His eyes wandered backwards to meet a pair of golden eyes that were staring back at him.

The boy slightly opened his mouth but only to find some air, The boy broke into a sweat as his eyes kept glued on the Brown haired boy's. It felt as if those pair of eyes were staring at him from every direction, Watching every single move and small action he makes

The brown haired boy got bored and broke eye, Before rerouting his legs to sit beside Ichinose and placing the same type of lunch box beside hers, She happily smiled at him before happily engaging in a chatter, Disregarding the Two Class C boys's presents

" You two are annoying " Moments later the second boy mustered up the courage and lifted his tray up before leaving the table " Hey bro, Let's go somewh- Huh ?! "

As he was looking for another table, He couldn't help but drop his jaw as the realization finally hit him. He scanned through all of his Classmates's tables looking for some to join to find at least one student from Class A sitting alongside them and bothering them.

One of his Classmates got annoyed and went to change a table. However, The Class A student followed them right up and kept bothering them regardless. There wasn't any acts of aggression or direct bothering, It was an act of privacy invasion, But in a more legit way

" Y..... You ! " He snapped and turned to face the couple who were staring back at him, Ichinose had a small grin on her face while Ayanokouji was looking apathetically at him, Like he was trash. " Don't test my patience ! "

" What do you mean patience ? We aren't doing anything to you are we ? " Ichinose retaliated, With a provoking tone " This table isn't your property is it ? We are basically just happened to sit here "

" Are you SHITTIN ME- "

" Relax bro " The first Class C Student voiced out, Trying to calm down his friend who is in the blink of losing it " They are right, They aren't doing anything illegal here "

" B-But- "

" This is just an act to try and provoke us before the exam, We'll be basically giving them what they want if we give in to their provocations " Marked the boy, While pushing his glasses up just like a nerd in an Anime

" Oh..... " The realization hit the Second Boy as he started grinning like a mad lad " Oh pardon me~ It seems that your plan failed "

He smirked victoriously at the two couple while chuckling to himself. This time, He took his tray and moved beside Ayanokouji and sat, He bent forward and looked at him with a wide provocative smirk

" Seems that your plan has failed. Aya-no-ba-ka ! What would you do about- "

Kriiiiiiiiiing

" Seems that our business is done " Ichinose collected her empty lunch box alongside Ayanokouji's and stood up " Alright we've done enough~ Let's head back guys~ "

At Ichinose's announcement, All of the students of Class A present nodded and followed her out of the cafeteria. Except for one student

" Enjoy gulping down your food " With those final words, Ayanokouji exited the room and followed his classmates. Leaving behind a contest on who's a faster eater

'Now with this, Class C would either have to face us while being hungry or forcefully stuffed which would cause choke and exhaustion. In either case, This increases our chances of winning even by a small percentage' Thought Ayanokouji 'To be completely honest, There is better ways to go through with this. However, This isn't too bad either. Our opponents aren't that smart so this was a valiant attempt'

He glanced towards the right at Ichinose, Who was carrying herself happily with a small victorious smile on her face. She noticed his gaze and reciprocated it with a bright smile, He gently patted her head like a mentor while being proud of her

'You've done some great preparations. However, There is times where things never go your way even if you prepare perfectly.

So Let's see how well you'll do in this exam'

*Small Chapter before the exam. I'm sorry if i delayed it a lot
Well it's not like i added a lot of filler scenes for you to
complain..... Right ?
Meanie~ *pouts**

Arc 11 Chap 7 : Year End Exam. Pt 1

15th of March, 12:34 AM

Honami POV

Shortly after the lunch break incident, The whole Class regrouped inside of the Classroom, Preparing ourselves mentally for the exam coming up ahead

Hirata-kun still wasn't back yet, Which caused some of my Classmates to be uneasy. However, I wasn't too worried about that so i did my best to reassure them and lift our morale up.

Regarding that, Our Class is definitely in better shape compared to Class C. I'm pretty sure that the aftereffects of the Lunch Break havoc is slowly taking it's effect now, Eating pretty quickly would drain both of their physical and mental stamina while going hungrily would cause a drop in their performance. Depending on how Ryueen-kun would handle this, Their morale shall plunge even more

Clap Clap

Two Claps echoed from the front door, Coming from the recently arrived Chie-sensei garnering everyone's attention towards her

" Alright everyone, I'ma have to move you all out towards your new location where you'll settle there and wait for your turns. Honami-chan shall follow me afterwards for her commander tower in the special building " Chie-sensei announced earning a collective nods from us " It seems that there is one absentee between you. However, You all shall not worry about that and follow me~! "

Chie-sensei reassured while giving the Class a quick scan before smiling at us, We followed her towards a part of campus where our Classmates would be settling for the next period of time.

" Do your best everyone~ I'm counting on all of you ! " Reaching the place, I waved everyone goodbye and spoke in an encouraging tone. All of them responded positively at my encouragements, Before i nodded and moved with Chie-sensei. However, Someone called out to me

" Honami " It was Kiyotaka

" Hey Kiyo~ " I greeted him back and turned to focus my attention on him " So what's up~? Here to wish me a good luck~? "

" Sort of " Kiyotaka's short response made me furrow my brows. Chie-sensei was staring at him with a wide evident smirk " Well i

needed to relay something to you "

" Hmm ? Was it about what we talked about Yesterday ? " Yesterday during our white date, The topic of the exam was brought and we discussed about my progress. However, That was when Kiyotaka relayed a crucial piece of information to me. I was expecting further instructions on that manner, But Kiyotaka shook his head

" No, It's completely unrelated. In fact, This could come in handy later on "

" Hmm ? " Kiyotaka threw a quick glance at Chie-sensei before coming closer and whispering on my ear " Wait really ? "

I exclaimed in surprise, Feeling somewhat shocked. Both Kiyotaka and Chie-sensei nodded confirming my doubts

I see..... Depending on how the exam goes.... This could definitely come in handy.....

" Fufu. Good evening Ichinose-san "

" Good afternoon Ichinose-san ! "

Arriving with Chie-sensei towards the special building, I was greeted by the two voices of Sakayanagi-san and Shiina-san who were sitting comfortably waiting alongside their homeroom teachers

" Hey guys~ " I greeted them back before taking my seat as well. " Sorry to keep you waiting~ "

" Fufu not at all Ichinose-san. We have just arrived " Sakayanagi-san reassured with a smug, Shiina-san nodded as well. Before Sakayanagi-san broke eye contact and sighed " Those little seconds wouldn't compare to how much that girl would make us wait. Honestly she should just drop out already "

Sakayanagi-san's grumble wasn't unjustified, Since Shinohara haven't attended school since the day of the announcement. It isn't far fetched to expect that she wouldn't come here either. Her grumble caused Sakagami-sensei to roll his eyes and Mashima-sensei to bitterly smile. However, Chie-sensei started chuckling

" Don't worry Sakayanagi-san. I reassure you " Mashima-sensei spoke up, Trying to lift the mood " If the Commander doesn't arrive during the specified time limit, We will just start without them. As for the events and players selections, They would all be random "

In other words, If the commander isn't present it would be up to the school to play their role. Considering Chie-sensei's warnings about this, It is certain that the Class who falls in the hands of the School wouldn't have a very great time

While you could certainly replace the commander in any case, It has it's own draw backs. Besides, Nobody would volunteer to take the role of the replacement knowing fully that they would get expelled

After around 15 Minutes later, Chabashira-sensei entered the building..... *Alone*

" The commander of Class D has failed to tune in " She reported.

" Well that's settles it " Mashima-sensei announced, Before standing up alongside the other teachers and opening the door " There would be two sections for two different battles, And two different teachers to guard it. Sakayanagi-san, You'd have to follow Hoshinomiya and Sakagami for your tower. As for Ichinose-san and Shiina-san, You'd have to follow me and Chabashira. Do you have any questions so far ? "

We shook our heads in denial before bidding farewell to Sakayanagi-san and following our assigned Teachers. Chabashira-sensei opened the door for me in what it seemed like a control room that you find in movies. 2 Screens were neatly set on top of the spacious desk, A Mouse, Keyboard and other essential Computer components were all available with a normal Chair to finish it up

On the other side, I spotted Shiina-san who waved at me through the Glass alongside Mashima-sensei. I simply waved back before following Chabashira-sensei's instructions and settling on the chair, I set the notebook aside and wore my headset before shifting my posture. We were told to wait so i checked my notes for mistakes as a final preps, Shiina-san was doing pretty much the same

" Alright everything is settled. Are you guys ready ? " Mashima-sensei announced after checking his watch. At my nod, Both of my Screens flashed " Alright, Now that the exam is underway, There should be two different things popping up on both of your screens. The middle screen would be the one where you do your selections,

While you could spectate the events on your other. "

10 Different sections containing our submitted events popped up on the middle screen whereas the other stayed white. I moved the mouse and clicked on the 5 events agreed upon and submitted

" Now that you both have selected your events. It's time for the exam to start ! "

" Good luck Ichinose-san ! " Shiina-san moved her hand through the hole in the Glass for a handshake.

" You too Shiina-san~ Have fun " I accepted it as a sign of respect. My screen flashed and the first event popped up

Math Test - 10 Participants

Rules :

10 Participants from each Class would have to take on a test on Mathematics with bonus questions of a higher level.

The Commander could relay the answer of only one question towards all the participants of his Class

The Class with the highest overall score would be declared as the winner.

" It seems that you guys are off to a good start " Marked Shiina-san. " However, I recommend you to not underestimate us Ichinose-san. We also have some good students in academics "

" Hehe~ I am well aware Shiina-san " I responded as i picked up my participants. " This is why we prepared thoroughly for this exam. To completely dominate you guys "

Although i wanted to keep trash talking her so badly, I just had to refrain myself. I was about to make Class D as an example for her but i was afraid that i would hurt Chabashira-sensei's feelings.

Soon, All 20 of our chosen participants walked towards their task site and started taking on the test. I also received a copy of it and i instantly went to the bonus questions.

Hey, I recognize this one

I thought as i came across one question i recognized the most and started solving it, I unconsciously envisioned Kiyotaka in front of me guiding me to the answer and before i knew it, I was done

" So you can really solve higher level questions after all " Shiina-san marked as she was typing something in her computer. I unconsciously puffed my chest with a proud gesture and a smug

" Yep~ All thanks to Kiyotaka~ "

I typed in the answer and submitted it towards my Classmates who recopied it in their answer sheets. The Teachers collected the papers and corrected them, Before coming up and announcing our results

I was on the edge of my seat this whole time, Waiting in anticipation for it. I could see my Classmates on the screen of my right who were nervous too, Class C went with all of their academically strong students so it is reasonable

The Students i selected were all preparing for the same material for the last two weeks. So we should be able to win this with quite a margin

" I will now announce the results. The total overall score of Class C racks up to 754 Points " Announced the Teacher. I wasn't surprised by this outcome, Since only strong students were in the battlefield. However, A Small cold sweat built up on my forehead before the teacher continued his announcement " As for Class A. They achieved a total combined score of 824 Points, Which declares them as the winner of this event "

All of my Classmates cheered up and started celebrating, Lifting each other's morale. I let a huge sigh of relief as i wiped my forehead with my handkerchief, Brightening up

" It was a close fight " Shiina-san sighed behind the Glass, Before strengthening her tone again " Good game "

" Good game~! " As i said that, My Screen flashed just like last time for the selection menu. Where our Second event flashed up

Basketball Match - 6 Participants

Rules : The team with the highest scores would be automatically declared a winner in a classic Basketball match

In case of a tie, Each team would take shots and the class with the highest amount of scores would be declared a winner.

The Commander could act as a substitute after half time, 2 Substitutes would be available at any time during the match.

" One for one huh ? " I muttered as i started selecting my participants. They were all our sacrifices in this case. However, I cannot let Shiina-san know about this. " Let's have a fun game Shiina-san~! "

I offered her my hand with an excited and determined tone, Shiina-san accepted it with a bright smile. I moved my eyes towards the screen where the match was displayed..... eh ?

" Nice try Ichinose-san " Shiina-san giggled. Both sides were already on the basketball field, And Class C had above average athletes while we had below average. We were expecting at least one of the Basketball club members However, There was none.

" Haha~ It seems that you've seen through me " I laughed self-deprecatingly at my small loss. However, Shiina-san shook her head

" No, It wasn't me " She denied. " Actually, It was Ryueen-kun

who expected you to throw the basketball event and focus on the other events. So all the credits goes to him "

" I see " I muttered, As i watched our Classmates gets steamrolled against Class C. I looked at Shiina-san and flashed her with a wide grin " Haha~ But i can still throw in some substitutes and win this event. What will you do about that ? "

I grabbed my mouse and showed it to her, Adding more credibility to my act. However, Shiina-san didn't panic and challenged my grin instead

" Are you sure you want to do that Ichinose-san ? You'll be throwing all of the preparations you've done " Shiina-san argued. Before shrugging " Besides, If you do that i won't challenge you. Because you'll be throwing your chances in other events. You may win this but at what cost ? "

What Shiina-san mentioned was also true, Ryueen-kun has seen through some parts of my preps and organised accordingly. Our Classmates has almost no experience in basketball so throwing in athletic students would just be suicidal.

Shiina-san had one slight idea about this and explored it perfectly and pushed me towards a corner. All i could do was drop my mouse and give up on the spot

Class C has won this event by a huge margin, Our Classmates did try however they were far outmatched. And score was tied to a 1-1

Soon the Teachers cleaned up and our Third event popped up

Arm Wrestling - 2 Participants

Rules : a 2v2 Match between two classes combining their strength to take down the opponent.

In case of the two participants being at equal power, The Commander could substitute for one of the participants.

" Another one for us~! " Shiina-san exclaimed as the third event rolled up. Kiyotaka's words flashed through my mind before i grabbed my mouse and selected my participants " You sure about your selections Ichinose-san ? "

" Who knows " I unconsciously blurted out, Causing Shiina-san to narrow her eyes at me in recognition. I smiled at her face before focusing on my screen

For Class C, Both of Yamada-kun and Komiya-kun emerged with stoic expressions. Looking ready for up ahead. However, Komiya-kun's expression somewhat crumbled when he spotted our contestants

" Ha ! You called for my perfectness ? " Kouenji-kun audio played through the speakers before he emerged from the door, With

Beppu-kun lacking behind him. Kouenji-kun flipped his bangs and dropped the Camera a flashy smile

" So you chose him huh ? " Shiina-san muttered to herself while staring at the screen. I decided check on her and she had an unreadable expression on her face

A Teacher walked towards the Table to start the timer. Both of Kouenji-kun and Yamada-kun were sitting in the front with Beppu-kun and Komiya-kun to support. Since it is a 2v2 Arm wrestling match, The people on the front would be the important ones

Yamada-kun's build is pretty similar to Kouenji-kun, So they may appear at a similar strength at first glance. According to Kiyotaka, Kouenji-kun's arm strength may be even stronger than his since Kouenji-kun has a higher muscle mass. *With that alone.....*

Slam

Kouenji-kun instantly slammed both of Yamada-kun and Komiya-kun's hands, Leaving the latter in pain. Beppu-kun just stood there blinking at the scene in front of him

I have sent Beppu-kun with Kouenji-kun in case of a Stronger individual than Komiya-kun's appearance. However, It didn't appear that it was needed in the first place. Kouenji-kun looked very nonchalant about it

" Well that was quick " I muttered. We were now in the lead with a 2-1 scoreline. Shiina-san sat silent on her desk. Waiting for the fourth event to pop up

Japanese Test - 8 Participants

Rules :

8 Participants from each Class would have to take on a test on Japanese with bonus questions of a higher level.

The Commander could relay the answer of only one question towards all the participants of his Class

The Class with the highest overall score would be declared as the winner.

Class C has completely exhausted their Academical Students during last, So this was an easy victory to us.

We were now on the lead with a scoreline of 3-1, Only one event away from a positive outcome in this exam. However, Class C's chances of comeback is slowly increasing

Contrary to our victory, Our athletic students is slowly but surely going into extinction. We have enough to survive for one or two events. However, In the unlikely scenario that the rest of the events would all be Class C. We would be on deep trouble

I guess it is pretty much the same for Class C but to a worse

degree. However, No one is the favorite when it comes to luck.

My Screen flashed with our 5th event. However, My nightmares slowly started to come into realization

This is not good

Mixed Martial arts - 10 Participants

On the other side of the Battle

Sigh, What in the hell is this

A lilac haired girl with a petite build took a deep sigh as she watched how Kumoro Masumi stomped the terrified figure of Yukimura in a fight with no difficulty whatsoever. It is safe to say that the girl was bored out of her mind

" Hehe~ That was quite easy for you wasn't it Sakayanagi-chan~? " The petite girl known as Sakayanagi lifted her head to look at The Teacher in front of her

" Yes it is " Sakayanagi sighed in exasperation. " Can't you give me a good competition Hoshinomiya-sensei ? This is too boring "

" Well it seems that we don't share the same ideals Arisu-chan~ You can't enjoy seeing defects getting demolished ? Because i do~! " Sakayanagi sighed again, Thinking about how crazy this Teacher is.

The person in question was currently sitting in the seat of Class D's commander and scribbling through the computer like a mad scientist, Selecting the Students for Class D and control their fate with her own hands. For the past 6 events, She has submitted the worst of the worst and sadistically amused herself by watching them getting wiped out.

" Okay for the last meal is~ " Hoshinomiya hungrily stared at the flashing screen, Waiting in anticipation for the last event. It was around the same time of the Martial arts Tournament between Classes A and C. Soon enough, An event popped up " Yay~ An event to test the stupidity of the Class~ "

Hoshinomiya cheerfully exclaimed at the Flash mental arithmetic event where she instantly picked up her mouse and scrolled through the students

" Ne ne~ Arisu-chan~ You seem so bored that you want to pass out~ How about i send one capable enough student to entertain ya~! " Hoshinomiya offered with a bright and thoughtful smile.

" Capable students in Class D ? " Sakayanagi rose an eyebrow.

" Yep~ I'ma send Matsushita-chan because she seems to be quite a smart student~ She could give you a good enough Challenge " Sakayanagi jogged up her memory for a second before nodding

" Alright. Bring it on " Sakayanagi chose Katsuragi Kohei for the job, And he instantly emerged from the door. Hoshinomiya however, Choose.... " Sigh, I shouldn't have believed on you "

" Hahahaha~ Cmon don't be like that Arisu-chan~ " Hoshinomiya pouted before throwing a quick glance at the screen, Where Karuizawa, One of the dumbest students of Class D was walking forward with a nervous expression on her face. Sakayanagi sighed in exasperation and annoyance

She couldn't solve the first question and instantly gave up. Signalling a dominating victory for Class B with 7-0 scoreline, Earning them 420 Class points while Class D didn't lose any, *Because they are gods*

" Are you sure about this Hoshinomiya-sensei ? " Sakayanagi picked up her cane and left her commanding room, To meet with Hoshinomiya with Sakagami behind her. " I mean you could've at least tried to fight in order to decrease our points as much as possible. However, You instead gave us a total victory. "

" Don't worry about it Arisu-chan~ I wasn't allowed to do that anyway~ " Hoshinomiya waved her off with a wide grin on her face " Besides, Even if i was allowed to, I wouldn't have done it. "

" Hoh ? Why is that ? " Sakayanagi rose an eyebrow, Interrogating Hoshinomiya who was completely aware. However, She answered regardless

" Simply put, It would be more fun to watch Class D get completely wiped out without a chance. Rather than giving them a chance and witness them giving up " Hoshinomiya explained. " Besides, Even if you manage to surpass my Class in this exam~ I believe in their recovery and we'll reclaim the top spot once again~ "

" I see.... " Hoshinomiya's strong faith has reached to Sakayanagi, Igniting the fire inside of her even more. She gave Hoshinomiya a small smug before picking up her legs " Am i allowed to spectate the match of your Class ? "

" Nope~ But you can get access to the results right after it's done. " Hoshinomiya explained before drifting apart from Sakayanagi and Sakagami " Anyway~ I have somewhere to go~ Sakagami-chan please take care of Arisu-chan~ for me "

Sakagami furrowed his eyebrows at Hoshinomiya in confusion, Before nodding regardless. Hoshinomiya took a hike somewhere in campus, Until reaching an empty alleyway and giving it a quick

scan

" You can come out now~ " At Hoshinomiya's words, A figure emerged from the shadows and faced off with Hoshinomiya who gave them a warm smile and opening her mouth " Kiyotaka-kun is currently participating on the Mixed Martial arts Tournament, And he told me to bring you whenever he is unable to contact you.....

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

Hirata-kun~ "

Cliffhanger eh ? They are so beautiful don't you think, At least for authors out there can agree with me right ? Right ?

Anyway, Next Chapter is most likely the last on Arc 11. Ending the Third Semester of the First year.

Anyway, I have recently finished with the prologue of the Second Year and i'll post it on a separate book right after i post the last Chapter of Arc 11. Which is most likely the last as i stated before

This is the luxury of following, You'll get notified when i post my second book. So go drop yourself a follow or i'll steal your panties and smel-

Anyways, I'll post it on a different book so my Story wouldn't look impossible to finish. I mean Holy molly with this Chap this story could reach 22 Hours read time.

So thank you for wasting 22 Hours from your life to read this shitty story of mine. Yeah, Thank you

Cya around~ Bae Bae

Arc 11 Chap 8 : Year End Exam. Pt 2

Back towards our main fight :

This is bad

" What's wrong Ichinose-san ? " Shiina-san tilted her head to look at me with a small smug on her face.

" Nothing " I shook my head, Getting back on track. Shiina-san saw this and reverted back to normal

There is technically nothing wrong with our selections, Since i have all the participants ready to win this event. However, The problem comes after the selections. Where we would only have Shibata-kun, Kozue-chan and Kanzaki-kun as our athletic reserve

However, Kanzaki-kun is already settled for the boxing match which leaves 2 students left. Hirata-kun's absence makes it harder for us since we would be sacrificing one event

I could remove one of the participants on this event and add to my reserve. However, I cannot risk throwing this event since Kiyotaka is there. This tournament's nature isn't very lenient when it comes to sacrifices, Which makes it a deadly event against us

I took a sigh, Clearing my thoughts before organizing them. However, An idea popped on my head. I flipped through the notebook pages and checked for the remaining Class C events

If what Kiyotaka said was true..... Then this should suffice

After doing some quick math, I grabbed my mouse and did some adjustments, We were missing one student so i added Kozue-chan to the mix as the final participant. Kiyotaka alongside either her or Sayo-chan should go far enough with this solid lineup

" I guess you have already settled " Shiina-san marked, I responded with a nod. " Let's have a good game Ichinose-san~! "

" You too~ " I shook her hand, Before focusing on the screen.

I'm counting on you, Kiyotaka

Aight, Seems that it's my turn

I stood up alongside the other participants after the Teacher called out to us. Minamikata was confused since she wasn't supposed to participate. However, She put her faith on Honami's decision and decided to roll with it

" Do your best guys ! We're counting on you ! " Shibata cheered for us from the door, With our Classmates behind him in support. Him and Shiranami, Kanzaki, And Yousuke were the only ones remaining that haven't participated.

It seems that Honami has caught on to the information i gave her, And moved exactly how i expected. If everything goes according to my expectations, *Our dominance is nothing but assured*

Honami POV

The mixed martial arts tournament is currently in progress, The group stages has recently concluded, With 4 winner on total, 2 From each Class.

" Kiyotaka-kun is pretty amazing isn't he ? " Shiina-san muttered, As she watched how Kiyotaka topped his group without getting hit once. It felt amazing hearing her compliment him so i puffed my chest feeling proud, While blushing too.

Kiyotaka breezed through his fights with no difficulty whatsoever. He always plays with his opponents before beating them or straight up knocking them out in one punch. *So coooool~*

The other participant from our Class that successfully evaded the drop out was Sayo-chan, She wasn't able to win a lot but it was enough for her to advance the semi-finals. Where both Kiyotaka and her would face Ishizaki-kun and Ibuki-san.

I was surprised when i didn't see Ryueen-kun among the participants. However, I quickly came to the conclusion that they

have reserved him for either the long jump or boxing. It is a very bold move that exactly fits his style

The matches has started and Kiyotaka instantly ended it with a clean uppercut after evading Ishizaki-kun's strike rending him unconscious. *Sometimes i tend to forget how scary Kiyotaka can get. However, I'm not afraid of him in the slightest. The reverse, I love him very much !*

Much like Kiyotaka, Ibuki-san easily came on top on her fight. Moving towards the finals and facing off Kiyotaka

" Let's have a good match " After the referee blew the whistle, Ibuki-san rose her hands to fist bump Kiyotaka, As i sign of respect. I was surprised by this since i never got those vibes from Ibuki-san. Kiyotaka nodded at her and raised his hands too. However.... " Gaah~! "

As Kiyotaka was about to fist bump Ibuki-san, She rose her leg and threw a fast high kick trying to knock Kiyotaka unconscious. However, Kiyotaka who was expecting that bent down and kicked her other leg causing her to fall flat on the ground, It was so fast that it happened in a blink of an eye

Ibuki-san got up with an angry expression and charged at Kiyotaka with a middle kick. However, Kiyotaka challenged it head on and took a step forward and blocked it, Causing Ibuki-san to get sent back while faltering and before she knew it, Kiyotaka grabbed her throat.

" Grr.... Get off me ! " Ibuki-san's yells could be heard from the speakers, While she was resisting Kiyotaka's hand. " Get off me and fight me for real ! "

" Sorry, That won't do " Kiyotaka shook his head, Before increasing his grip over Ibuki-san's throat that her eyes somewhat went blank. However, While the scene was disturbing, I found it hot and got jealous, Not because he is with Ibuki-san, *But because he is chocking her like that..... Wait no stop you can't think like that !*

I slapped my cheeks and got my head straight, Luckily, Chabashira-sensei was too focused on the screen to notice my flustered state. Ibuki-san couldn't take it anymore so she tapped Kiyotaka's hands, Signalling her withdraw

" Yippie~! " I jumped from my seat in joy, After securing the victory for this exam for at least one margin. All of my Classmates started celebrating inside of the room, As our score has updated to 4-1

" Sit down Ichinose-san. The exam is still not done yet "

" Oh sowwy sowwy~ " I apologized cutely to Chabashira-sensei who sighed profusely before going back to spectate mode. I excitedly retook my seat again with a newfound determination and

motivation

" Well, It was a nice try from us at least " Shiina-san sighed with a bitter smile. " However, This is as long as you can go, We will not allow you to win any more than this "

" Hehe~ If you say so~! " I sarcastically said, Before our next event flashed up. However, All of my excitement and determination took a dip as soon as i saw the next event

Long Jump - 3 Participants

Rules : 3 Players from each Class would take turns and jump as far as they can in a classical Long Jump event. The winners would be determined by the Total score of a Class

The Commander could act as a substitute for one of the participants in case of an injury

" Hah~ Thank goodness " Shiina-san sighed before brightening up, Seemingly happy about the current situation.

However, As i saw the number of participants, A new realization hit me.

So far Both of our Classes have used 36 Students to participate on our last 5 events. With this as the sixth one, So we should both end up with 39 by the end of this

However, Excluding the Commander, Class C has 38 Students ready for participation. So they are short by one Player..... *Which means that....*

" Chabashira-sensei " I instinctively turned around to Chabashira-sensei and called out to her " Since Class C is short by one student, Does that mean they get to use other people who has already been selected ? "

It was stated in the rules that whenever you reach a certain number of participants the loop restarts and you could choose others that already participated. This question was an obvious one, *But i wanted to confirm something first*

" Yes Ichinose. Class C doesn't have the required amount of unused students so they get to pick others that already participated " *I see*

" Hah~ It seems that you figured it out Ichinose-san ! " Shiina-san sighed before cheerfully complimenting " I must commend you for noticing this Ichinose-san ! I really wanted it to be a surprise but that's too bad now huh~? "

This is one of the advantages Class C holds over us, They have a lesser amount of students which allows them to reach the loop and get to reuse their individuals sooner than us. However, Be it as rare as this occasion may be, It is a definite advantage for them

Vrrrt

While i was deep on my thoughts, My phone started vibrating on top of the desk. I unconsciously drew my attention towards it where it vibrated 3 more times, 4 in total

" You aren't allowed to check it Ichinose, Until the exam is over " Remarked Chabashira-sensei. However, *I don't need to check it*

" I know that Chabashira-sensei " I felt a smirk creep up to my face as i went and selected my 3 participants. *This is it, I've been waiting for this*

Shiina-san threw me a wary look before dropping her gaze towards the screen, Where the camera switched towards the sandy field, The place the events would take place

For Class C, She was forced to choose Ryueen-kun and Kondo-kun since they weren't selected yet, They were both physically adept especially Ryueen-kun since he has been training a lot. And for the third student she chose Kinoshita-san who is a member of the Track and field club, A pretty good lineup.

Ryueen-kun scanned through his surroundings until he found the camera and flashed a taunting toothy grin at it. However, I challenged it with one of my own. Ryueen-kun averted his grin towards the other entrance, Where his expression fell a little

For our Participants, I choose Shibata-kun and Kanzaki-kun since they were our only athletic reserve left. However, What's surprising for them was that the person who they tried to keep away from the exam was also with them, Which was none other than Hirata Yousuke-kun

" Ya punk' What are you doing here ? " Kondo-kun blurted out, Raging with hostility after the surprise.

" I'm here to participate in the event Kondo-kun. I hope we have a great match ! " Hirata-kun was unfazed and offered him with a bright smile despite his hostility. Kondo clicked his tongue in frustration.

" Kukuku i see " Ryueen-kun muttered with a evident smirk on his face, Amused by this whole ordeal. I expected him to at least be surprised since his plans of sabotaging us has failed, But he seems to be having a lot of fun.

However, I have no right to claim this victory or outmaneuvering of my own. This was all Kiyotaka's plan that he told me about Yesterday on our date. Hirata-kun's absence was all planned by him. All i have been doing was carry out his orders and take his lessons to the heart

The event commenced and all the runners has passed their turns. At the end we won by a 2 Meters difference, Increasing our lead even further to 5-1

Shiina-san was silently smiling bitterly at the screen in front of her, With a depressed aura around her. While Class C had 4 of their events played so far, They only managed one of them. So I decided to give her some space

The 5 minutes break has ended and the last event was about to undergo. The Teachers allowed the students to freely roam around so they all gathered outside to witness the event from up close

" Let's have a good last one Ichinose-san " I reciprocated Shiina-san's sportsmanship with a bright nod.

The only student that haven't participated so far in our Class is Chihiro-chan, So i hope that she gets an event where she can shine and contribute. Anything from us would do, But most preferably is the painting contest.

The Screen flashed for the seventh and last time today, Drawing my attention towards it. Everyone was waiting in anticipation for the next event

However, As the event popped up, Almost every face from my Class contorted. Chihiro-chan got terrified, As the worst possible event for her *flashed up*

3rd POV

Many horrified expressions spread between the Class A Students, After witnessing the last event for their Year end exam

" KUKUKKUKUKUKKUKUKUKKUKUKUKUKKUKUKUKU " A violent signature laughter spread among the horror drawing their attention towards a magenta haired boy and glaring at him. However, He couldn't care less. " Kukuku this is the worst, Absolutely the worst "

" Ryueen-kun, You wouldn't dare ! " Amikura Mako was the first one to take action and she went and hugged the terrified figure of Shiranami Chihiro, Who is the only person who hasn't participated

so far. The boy known as Ryueen rose his head and flashed a sinister smile at them

" No shit i would " Ryueen laughed at the empty threats of Amikura who's top priority currently was comforting her friend.

" Please everyone, We don't have to send her. She'll just get hurt !
" Amikura pleas received the support of her Class. However, It fell on the staff's deaf ears. Two referees separately made their way to each Class

" Ryueen Kakeru, You have been chosen to participate during this event. Please follow me towards the stage " The first referee announced and Ryueen instantly complied

" Nooo ! We can't do this ! We can't send her ! " Amikura was dead set on not sending her friend to face danger. The thought of fighting against Ryueen Kakeru isn't scary to most boys, So imagine how it must feel to be in Shiranami Chihiro's position " Ayanokouji-kun ! Please do something, We can't send her ! "

The girl pleaded at the only person who she thought he could save this grim situation, And most of the Class supported her too. The boy however, Only stared back at them before shifting his attention to the newly arriving referee

Ryueen has noticed this and smirked widely. You cannot change the chosen participants even for someone like Ayanokouji, Since the rules forbid it. So no matter what he may try, Ryueen's victory for this event is more than assured

He may have lost this exam as a whole, But he opted for a damage control strategy which somewhat backfired at him. Ryueen and his Class were happy with at least 2 events, Even if all of their fives got chosen

Hold on a minute

The Magenta haired boy suddenly stopped, As something crossed his mind. The referee was about to snap him out but he noticed the perplexed expression on his face

The way this exam went, And the order of the events..... Everything seems too good to be true

It isn't far fetched to say that the events selected and their order is nothing short of a miracle for Class C. All 5 of their submitted events got chosen against 2 from their opponents, The order of the events gave them the best chances of winning

39 Students used in the past 6 events to isolate Shiranami Chihiro and make her the last participant on this event, The order of the events and their number of participants.... There is no way this is a coincidence

In order to achieve this current situation, You'd need to pick a very specified events and place them on very specified orders, To which is pretty hard to achieve with only luck. This is what Ryueen

Kakeru realized and a theory crossed his head

Did that acting director manwhore do something ?

Before this exam, Ryueen was called by the Acting director to discuss with him the special exam. Ryueen immediately Rejected Tsukishiro's help and wanted to take down Ayanokouji with his own hands, Or else his win would be meaningless

The thought of the Acting Director helping him behind the scenes infuriated Ryueen, Even when losing regardless. He doesn't know the reason why Tsukishiro wants to expel Ayanokouji. However, He wouldn't hesitate to side with Ayanokouji in order to keep him here

Was it out of his sense of rivalry ? Or was it because of his brotherly love ? Who knows

Ryueen decided to keep his thoughts to himself and get this event over with as soon as possible. The Class A Commotion subsided long ago, Leaving somewhat of a calm atmosphere

The referee handed Ryueen his gloves and shorts after stripping down and helped him wear them, Ryueen begrudgingly let him be before stepping towards the ring

Ryueen was looking more fearsome than ever, Thanks to his daily training. His body has grown and toned a lot compared to last time seeing topless on the summer pool, And people couldn't help but recognize this difference, And some even admired him for his hard work

However, Ryueen was having none of that, He wanted to finish this event as soon as possible and he was impatiently tapping his foot on the ring waiting for his opponent. And soon enough, His wish was granted

Silence

Suddenly, The small murmurs flying around suddenly halted, Dropping a deafening silence on the field. Ryueen's foot taps slowly stopped too as he confusingly scanned his surroundings, To spot many shocked and confused expressions.

Tap

Tap

Ryueen's attention was drawn back towards the ring entrance, Where he could hear footsteps approaching him. He furrowed his eyebrows in anticipation, As the footsteps drew closer and closer

huh ?

His eyebrows twitched when he spotted a wind of the person's hair, Soon enough The footsteps reached his level of ground and walked in a straight line towards him. Ryueen's eyes went wide from surprise, As he watched the person approach him

When they were a dozen centimeters away, The wind of his brown hair that he spotted moments ago went stagnant as he gazed

back at Ryueen with his golden eyes. Shortly after, Ryueen realized the current predicament and a smirk slowly crept up on his face, A wide one.

" Kuku hello there..... **Monster** " The boy he perceives as the Monster peered back at Ryueen's eyes, Before giving him a small smug

" Hello Ryueen. Let's have a good match "

" Kuku **as you wish** "

Okay i know i said this was going to be the last chapter of Arc 11, But i didn't expect it to take so many words. This is the drawbacks of writing without any planning huh ?

Anyways, The next chapter is going to be the last in Arc 11. As for the second Year's prologue i'll post it right after that. I'm sorry

for delaying you

How did you guys find this chapter ? Was there a lot of grammar mistakes ? Let me know

Anyway, I'ma go straight and work for the next chapter. I'll see you guys !

Bae~ Bae~

Arc 11 Chap 9 : Tyrant vs Monster

Honami POV

" What ?! " Shiina-san stood up from her chair and blurted out, Staring at her screen with shock. " W-What is Kiyotaka-kun doing down there ? "

Her reaction wasn't different from the Audience of the Ring, They were all flabbergasted by Kiyotaka's presence. It was to be expected since Chihiro-chan or Yui-chan was supposed to be there

(A/N : Sowwy~ I did one small miscalculation on the previous Chapter and there is actually 2 people who didn't participate. Well i guess the blame falls on me for missing one small detail)

" M-Mashima-sensei ! Is this allowed ? " Shiina-san turned towards Mashima-sensei who gave her a nod with his stern expression. However, It made her even more confused " B-But shouldn't there be another student participating ? Kiyotaka-kun already participated once so- "

" Yes this is allowed Shiina-san, There is nothing wrong here. Everything is within the rules " Mashima-sensei cut through her with an explanation.

" B-But.... How ? " Shiina-san wasn't convinced in the slightest. Mashima-sensei sighed before dropping me a gaze

" If you want answers, You can ask her. I'm not allowed to give you anything. Please sit down and don't cause a commotion "

Shiina-san reluctantly obeyed Mashima-sensei and sat back on her chair, Not before dropping me a gaze. It wasn't hostile but it shows discomfort and confusion

Everyone inside of the ring begrudgingly stopped murmuring and watched the event. A Referee walked towards the stage to set a timer. Ryueen excitedly punched his gloves together with a big smirk, Seemingly excited for this match. Kiyotaka just stared back at him before shifting his eyes to the referee

One small detail i forgot to mention is that both of Kiyotaka and Ryueen were topless, Which attracted a lot of attention towards them. Kiyotaka's body was looking as fierce as ever. However, I decided to not pay too much attention to it and focus more on the fight

The referee looked at his watch before dropping the both of them a glance, To which they responded with a nod, Indicating that they

are ready. Ryueen extended one of his hands to fist bump Kiyotaka who reciprocated it. The referee dropped one last glance at his watch before declaring

" Right. BEGIN ! " He swiftly cut a line between the both of them, Declaring start of the match. They instantly backed away, Putting some space between them.

" Heh, It looks like you've outplayed me again huh ? " Ryueen with wide evident smirk spoke up, Acting passive for the time being.

" Well about that. I'd like to say that i'm kinda disappointed on you " Contrary to Ryueen who was excitingly tiptoeing around and working on his timings, Kiyotaka stood in his place with no guard, Looking as calm as ever

" Oh yeah ? Then tell me about it when i would be smacking your face you little shit " Ryueen instantly charged at Kiyotaka and threw a fast combo, Trying to catch him off-guard. Kiyotaka however, Calmly took a step back and evaded all of his attacks. Until he decided to throw an uppercut, To which Ryueen evaded by backing away

" Not bad " Kiyotaka marked. Ryueen's smirk slightly widened However, He was instantly punched in the face " But not good enough "

Kiyotaka caught Ryueen off guard with a very fast jab that he reacted pretty late for it. He faltered two steps backwards before raising his guard again

" Finally attacking aren't we ? " Ryueen looked at Kiyotaka, With his usual grin on his face. That punch ignited his thrill even more

" Not really. I just felt like punching you " Kiyotaka shrugged. Ryueen laughed before charging at Kiyotaka again with another combo, This time it was much faster. Kiyotaka evaded his attacks until he found a blind spot and threw a punch there. However, He stopped before it came in contact " You've left yourself open "

Ryueen-kun reacted late to the punch and he instantly backed away with a serious expression, The heat of the moment has caught up to him and he started to sweat lightly. He charged at Kiyotaka again and the same happened

" Kuku Oh yeah. By the way " Moments later, Ryueen slightly lowered his guard to look at Kiyotaka straight in the face. With his smirk back on his face " How come you're here ? "

Ryueen finally decided to address the elephant of the room with a million dollar question, This has been running through the heads of the whole audience, Wondering about Kiyotaka's appearance. This instantly caught the attention of Shiina-san and them

" I was just selected by Honami to participate " Kiyotaka

answered blankly with a shrug, Earning him a lot of dissatisfied groans of the audience.

" What does he mean by that Ichinose-san ? " Shiina-san tried to interrogate me. However, I'm pretty sure he'll explain it so just sat silent. She was about to ask again but her attention drew back to the screen

" Kuku don't joke with me " Much like everybody, Ryueen didn't buy it in the slightest. " You know that there is 2 people who haven't participated yet from your Class. So how are you here ? "

" Yeah ! How ?! " Shiina-san couldn't sit anymore and stood up, Following Ryueen's question with the same. Kiyotaka sighed

" Simply put, The loop restarted and they didn't have to participate "

" Cap. In order for you to participate again you'd have to pass thru- "

" Have 39 students participating ? " Ryueen shook his head and opened his mouth. However, Something clicked inside of his head in the meantime and he fell silent with an agape mouth. Kiyotaka glanced at him before continuing " It was never stated that you have to participate with all of your students in order to reset the loop "

" WHAT ?! " Shiina-san exclaimed in shock, As a commotion broke out in the audience. To be honest, I do understand their shock. Since if Kiyotaka didn't explain it this afternoon before going to the special building, I would have been as shocked as them. Kiyotaka, Regardless of the commotion continued explaining to Ryueen

" If i do recall correctly. The Teacher's exact words were.... "

*** Flashbacks ***

" ... Each person can participate in only one event, Don't worry, In case of 39 People have participated excluding your commander. The loop would restart and all of you can participate in another event "

*** End of Flashback ***

While this may be easy to spot, The way the Teachers phrased their sentences afterwards misleads you into thinking that this was just an example for a Class of 40 Members. They also included the fact that the lower Classes has lower students so the loop adapted to fit their number, Which pushes you to think that the loop is adaptive.

This was a very well set loophole that baited everyone in the School. But not Kiyotaka.... *Because he is amazing Kyaaaaaa~*

" Kukuku i see. " Ryueen finally snapped out of his thought, Wide

a wide satisfied smirk on his face. Before he charged at Kiyotaka " You had no idea that it would come to this did you ? "

" Obviously " Kiyotaka evaded his attacks before throwing a fake punch towards an exposed area of Ryueen, As if teaching him. " There is no way for me to know the order and the selected events, So i just told Honami about this trick in the unlikely case that it would happen. So she could choose me "

This was a trick Kiyotaka told me with the intention of 'just in case' and never really thought that it could come to save our last event. The only people who were aware of this loophole is the staff members since they weren't surprised by this revelation but rather, Surprised that someone found it

This situation is surreal, It really seems like a person has intentionally put those events in order to make this trick come to life. I don't know why, But at this thought i felt some small discomfort

" Kuku i see, I completely get it now " Ryueen exclaimed after snickering a little. " Which begs the question, Why would the school allow such a loophole to exist ? "

Both of me and Shiina-san glanced at the Teachers around us as if to imply our curiosity too. However, Kiyotaka's voice started echoing

" While i'm not exactly sure. This is probably the school's own way to reward us and punish us at the same time for spending money to save and transfer students. This is at least the theory i came up with "

At Kiyotaka's words, I realized that i felt the same way too. Normally, The School would make similar rules to each Class. However, If we had Class C's rules we would be at a definite advantage over them since we get to replace students, So this is probably why they increased our count as a punishment, And by 1 Student as a reward, Leaving us with 2 Students to spare.

During all of this, Ryueen kept charging at Kiyotaka who only evaded his attacks and punished his mistakes with fake shots. He had all the chances in the world to end the fight. However, He kept playing with Ryueen in order to Teach him

Ryueen at this point decided to go full on assault to try and land a hit. However, Kiyotaka this time punished Ryueen for real with a strong hook towards his face, Causing Ryueen to fall at the ground

" Play time is over. Time to review your mistakes "

Kiyo POV

I walked up closer to Ryueen's body with heavy steps, Trying to

intimidate him into standing up. He met my gaze with a smirk and spit some blood on the ground before standing up

" Your idea of manipulating Shinohara into keeping Yousuke away from the exam was pretty good. However, You handled it pretty poorly " Ryueen charged at me a jab. To which i responded by tilting my head and digging my fist on his guts " You've put too much faith on her and didn't think of a backup plan in case she fails. That was your first mistake "

To be honest, Ryueen's plan didn't have a lot of blunders while it could have been better. There is too much Ryueen could do in this exam where he is facing defeat on every corner

I wasn't frustrated by the fact that he failed. However, I was with the fact that he didn't realize that Shinohara was an enemy

*** Flashback ***

While Shinohara was assaulting Hirata.....

" What is going on here ? " A Person emerged from the shadows and exclaimed

" Heuh ? " Shinohara who was on top of Hirata froze as she heard the voice of an unexpected visitor. Hirata immediately glanced at them before sighing in relief as he recognized them. Shinohara slowly lifted her broken face and followed Hirata's gaze, Which lead to her face being broken to a level of beyond despair

The person in question had a big evil grin on her face as she aimed her phone towards the two students on the ground, Seemingly recording every move. Hirata took this chance to slip away from the frozen Shinohara's wrap

" Thank you for coming here. You saved me " Hirata while being flustered instantly thanked the mysterious woman who looked at him with her warm smile

" Don't worry Hirata-kun, It's my job as a Homeroom Teacher to protect my precious Students~! " Hoshinomiya Chie said with a warm motherly tone.

" No..... You got it all wrong ! " Shinohara suddenly shouted before moving away and covering herself with her suit. " I-I can explain..... I-It's not- "

" There is no need for that Shinohara-chan " Hoshinomiya stopped the recording on her phone and flashed her with a toothy evil grin. However, She turned to Hirata with a smile " You can go to your Club activities Hirata-kun, I'll handle it from here~ "

" No, Please don't expel her Chie-sense- "

" Don't worry Hirata-kun, I wont " Hoshinomiya shook her head before showing her phone to him, Where Hirata's eyes went wide " I'm here on Kiyotaka-kun's orders, So be at ease. He won't expel her~ "

" I see, So he helped me again huh ? " Hirata muttered under his breath to which was heard by Hoshinomiya. He gave her phone back and nodded with a bright expression " Right, I won't burden you anymore than this, I'll be leaving now. "

Hirata didn't want to argue with Hoshinomiya and obediently listened to her as soon as Ayanokouji's name was dropped, Before he go he glared at the trembling figure of Shinohara with some hostility on his eyes, Before taking his leave.

It isn't far fetched to say that Hirata Yousuke actually despised his old Class, For the most part. He still has some friends in there but his patience towards them drastically dropped, And he wouldn't hesitate to hate somebody if deserved to

" **Now** " Shinohara flinched at Hoshinomiya's tone, That was full of sadism and amusement. Hoshinomiya turned around and met her gaze, Before taking slow steps towards her. Shinohara tried to run away but she was backed against a wall, Hoshinomiya crouched in front of her and started stroking her hair, With a wide evil smirk on her face " Now now Satsuki-chan~ If you don't want to end up serving months in jail, **You're going to be our little puppet for the remainder of your pathetic days** "

** Flashback end **

" Kuku, So you used a Teacher in order to deflect my plan ? " Ryueen laughed. " But you know, A Teacher acting for her Student's sake is frowned upon. "

While Ryueen does have a point there. However, I only told him about the part where i sent Chie-sensei after Hirata to protect him.

" The School supports the idea of letting students resolve conflict on their own " And that is why... " And that is why, I took Shinohara's case from Chie-sensei's hands into my own and controlled her fate "

This was half the truth, The reason why i sent a Teacher instead of a Student is because a Teacher is almost untouchable. I have expected Ryueen to send some of his lackeys to spy and ensure the success of the plan, If a Teacher was spotted nearby they would back away. Unlike a Student

" Kuku so all of those messages of hers were all yours ? " I nodded.

While i was on my date with Honami, Chie-sensei was blackmailing Shinohara into deceiving Ryueen, Ensuring him that the plan was a success. It is forbidden for the Teacher to do this. However, As long as you're not caught, You can do anything on this School

I have figured out that Shinohara wasn't up to something good from the moment i saw her hair and tears in the alleyway. She

looked like she was having a panic attack but in reality it was all an act

The announcement of the Commanders was more than a week ago, And she had all that time to empty her emotions and grip her hair and panic etc etc. So by that that time, She should be a broken empty vessel of emotions trying to enjoy the rest of her remaining days

Which is what led me to think that it was an act to garner Yousuke's sympathy and manipulate him later on. Her having a panic attack at that time was just too odd. Of course there was a possibility of me being wrong. However, Better safe than sorry

Ryueen got exhausted, After charging at me again and again and getting rebuked again and again. He was now panting heavily with a lot of bruises on his sweating body

" Kuku, Just what are you really " Ryueen wiped some sweat off his forehead, And asked, Smiling exhaustively. I responded with silence " Now that i'm just repeating myself. You truly are a fucking Monster "

" Call me whatever you want "

" Gaah ! " I stepped forward and went for the kill. Ryueen's persistence finally ran out, As he flopped towards the ground unconscious. This man's will is as strong as Heavy Iron

However, *Before you go, I forgot to tell you Something..... Ryueen*

*You can call me whatever you want, A Monster, A Demon, A Beast....
I have abandoned all of those names*

I am frustrated by the fact that i defeated you with no difficulty whatsoever

But if you truly want to defeat me

Then you gotta do better than that

" My My. What a match ! " When i got off stage, I was greeted by the applaude of Tsukishiro who was approaching me alone with a warm smile

" What do you want Tsukishiro ? " I sighed in annoyance. He stopped clapping 2 meters away from me and stood there

" I just came to congratulate you on your win Ayanokouji-kun. " I stood there staring at him with my apathetic expression, Not buying it. Moments later he sighed " It seems that you aren't convinced. Very well Ayanokouji-kun, I want you to return to the White Room "

" No " I unconsciously answered. Luckily, No one was around to notice this confidential talk

" Ah. Too bad then, At least it was worth the try " Tsukishiro picked up his legs and started walking away.

" Hold it " I ordered. He immediately stopped and turned his head around

" What is it Ayanokouji-kun. Did you change your mind ? "

" No. But i want to confirm something " Tsukishiro now fully turned around to give me his attention, With his smile never leaving his face " Were you the one controlling the order of the events ? "

There is no way that the order of the events was a coincidence, Or just extremely stupid luck. The way this exam was building up for the last event and the presence of a plot hole for it, Too good to be true

" My, What makes you think like that ? " Like last time, I stood silently staring at him, As if he asked a pretty obvious question. He immediately too a sigh before answering " Well yes, I was the one controlling the event selections "

" Why ? Just to make us lose ? " At my question, He nodded.

" Yes. But it seems like it wasn't needed " Tsukishiro said before starting to walk away

" Hold it. "

" What is it again ? " Tsukishiro grumbled. However, I could tell it was fake

" You're lying. If you really did want us to lose then there was a way better order for that "

If he wanted us to loose, He could have swapped multiple events. For example, Instead of long jump he could have put the boxing event where Ryueen would go against Kanzaki and most likely win since the 39 Students rule still didn't apply. He picked very specific events in order for that rule to apply for only one student event where i participated. Which begs the question

Why ?

Did he figure out that Ryueen sided with me and wanted to punish him ? If so, Then why give them one event ? To make it appear legit ? Then he did a bad job to make it on our part, I highly doubt that

Tsukishiro stood silently analyzing me, Where i did the same. Soon enough he gave up

" I'll leave it to your imagination " Tsukishiro said before turning

around " Besides, You don't want to waste too much time. You have a visitor now "

As he said this, He moved towards the door where he walked past a newly arrived strawberry haired girl who was standing there. Which i immediately recognized as

" Honami " I smiled thinly at her before approaching her. Tsukishiro dropped me one last glance before completely disappearing, Leaving us alone. She took her first steps forward closing the distance between us " Hon- "

Slap

The next thing i felt was my right cheek getting warmer alongside a loud slap. *Honami.... Slapped me ?*

I was confused, So i turned around to look at her to be met with a surprise. Honami was holding back her tears

" Kiyo why ? " Honami spoke with a calm voice, Despite her tears. I didn't care that she slapped me, I only cared about the reason why is she upset " Why did you have to look like that ? "

Look like that ?

" What do you mean ? " I was genuinely confused at why was she upset. Her tears started running free before embracing me

" I-I thought you changed.... But why ? Why did you have to go back like that ? " She started ranting on my chest, Tears running free. My confusion started clearing up as i started realizing what she's talking about " I hate it, I hate that look. When you look scary, I hate it "

She spoke with a profound tone while sobbing on my chest, As my confusions cleared up, I unconsciously started caressing her hair

" You're not scary Kiyotaka ! You're not~ You're just a victim~ I love you, I love you so much~ Please don't be like that. It hurts me, It hurts me so much "

I guess me glaring at Ryueen like that after the match really did make her upset. However, That is pretty understandable.

It seems that my obsession with defeat is starting to affect her negatively. Especially when she worked so hard on the past year to make me feel loved and trying to break me out of my shell and past trauma. So seeing me revert back to my old mindset is affecting her

I do wish to be defeated. However, I do not wish that it would be at the cost of something important to me, This is what this moment made me realize

I also realized that i'm a selfish person, Wanting everything without any price to pay. Which is impossible

This is why humans work on priorities, And my priority now is....

Honami

I'm sorry for the latter part of this Chapter, Since i wrote it on phone and i quite suck at it. Tell me if it was better written than the other parts

Anyway, This is the final chapter of Arc 11 before SS's. And yes, There is Arc 11.5 which would be the last on my book

I can't believe i'm really saying it.

I have posted the second year prologue on another book, Go check it out and prepare to move there. Because that's where i'll be continuing my story (Second year)

How did you find this chap ? Was it good ? Lemme know !

Ichinose Honami SS - Lesson

" I'm sorry.... "

" Hmm ? " Both of me and Kiyo were walking back towards the dorms after our victory in the exam. However, I was not happy in the slightest

" I'm sorry for slapping you like that " *What was i thinking ? Why did i do that ?* " It was rude and insensitive of me, This is my fault, I don't know what occu- "

" Oh, That's fine " Kiyotaka answered calmly, Before extending his hand to hold mine to calm me down. " I needed that slap, It worked as a reminder. So i am grateful to it "

Why ? Why do you have to be so kind ?

It's always me who makes the mistakes, Yet you always forgive me and take the blame for it

Why do you have to do that ?

It's me who's at fault, I didn't know what i was thinking and let my emotions take over.

I'm not taking excuses, This is completely my fault

The last thing i want to do is to hurt you, You've already suffered enough. The last thing i want to be is like those people

What was i expecting anyways ? For you to get over your trauma in just a day ?

That was completely premature and insensitive of me

Why did i do that ?

Why ?

I felt my tears building up to which Kiyotaka noticed and gave me a comforting hug.

I'm always the one crying, and he is the one who comforts me

I'm always the one the one ranting, and he is the one who listens to me

He never complained, Nor expressed any discomfort. But always received me with love and care

Why do you have to be so kind ?

I don't deserve you, I clearly don't

However, I'm not gonna give up on you and do my best to fit you

This moment made me realize that i still have a lot of work to do, a lot of work on ourselves

I regret this, I regret doing that to you. However, I'm grateful to it as

well

*This was a great lesson to me, and he is aware of that as well.
I don't deserve him, But i still want him to stay with me
Call me selfish i don't care*

Ryueen Kakeru SS - Monster

Kuku it seems that i lost again huh ?

It was to be expected, Since the moment we were pitied against them. There was no way to win this exam, All we could have done was damage control which failed miserably too

Maybe i shouldn't have trusted that prostitute to do the job and did it myself. But he already expected that and set a trap for me in the meantime

Kukuku just how am i supposed to win against this guy ? He made everyone dance in the palms of his hands during Class Poll with minor efforts, He manipulated my whole Class to kick out that dog and help me stabilize myself so i could face him without holding back. He's been highlighting my flaws and ways to overcome them

I've been on his mercy for this whole year, Not only because of one thing but multiple

It seems that the acting director manwhore was right after all, This is just a game for him, He acts like he's reachable but in reality he isn't. He acts beatable but he isn't. Nobody can come near him

Which makes him all the more fun to go against him, He'll always come out on top no matter what you'll do, He is like your average overpowered main character that you find in a Light novel

However, The only difference is that most of those main characters get their powers through easy ways like asking from a god after reincarnating them or some shit.

But i can tell that Ayanokouji has worked pretty hard to reach the level he currently at, There is no way that this guy lived in a normal environment considering what's happening around me so far

That loli seems to know him from before, As she proclaimed to be his Childhood friend. So she might have an idea on what he's been through in order to achieve that

Either way, What he's been through is none of my business. His journey to stay in this School sounds thrilling enough to keep me busy from attacking him

Who knows what might happen, We might even have to face the whole school kukukuku

If Ayanokouji has to leave the school then it must be on none other than my hands, I wouldn't be satisfied with any other way

However, I couldn't help but frown a bit at the thought of
Ayanokouji leaving the school

Kuku have i grown soft ?

Maybe

Arc 11.5 Chap 1 : Partner-in-crime

" Haaaaaaa~ "

Honami exhaustively sighed as she flopped down the bed and closed her eyes, resting cutely with her cute pink Pyjamas beside me. " That was so good~ "

" Indeed "

I replied positively. We have just finished the last episode of an Anime called 'Love is war', it's a psychological romance where both the Main Characters are in love with each other, But the plot twist is that they both don't want to confess. Rather, they want the other person to, so they started plotting to corner each other, hence a love war started.

To be honest, I was a bit skeptical at first since it was Kouenji who recommended it to me. However, it actually lived up to the hype. He praised it so much that even my expectations slightly rose above the perimeter I'm supposed to have, expecting that it would get crushed. However, I'm confident to say that they were far exceeded

" I'm so excited to watch more~ " Honami expressed her excitement by raising both of her hands and punching the air. As she did this, I realized that I felt the same way too, *now I understand why he praised it so much.*

"Too bad it's already late," I said as I glanced at the clock portraying the image of midnight.

We were currently inside her room, on the 17th of March, two days after the year-end exam. Nothing memorable has happened other than a party celebration of our victory.

Thankfully, after that incident, Honami and I made up and got back to normal, in fact, that was a good opportunity for us to get even closer than before. There was still some air of awkwardness around her. However, it dissipated over time until it became a bygone,

which is something I'm very grateful for.

" Yeah~ What a pain " Honami huffed in exasperation, showing her displeasure at the unfortunate thing called time that is separating her from fully enjoying this masterpiece. I turned my head to stare at her, she lazily dragged her hips down on the edge of the bed with her eyes closed to show her frustrations. However, I was very tempted to lay down and snuggle with her due to how cute she looked. But I decided to attempt something else " Eeeep~! "

My left hand sneakily approached her body at a mediocre pace, making sure that she doesn't realize what was coming. Arriving at a safe distance, I immediately started my attack and grabbed a hold of her waist and squeezed it with little force. Honami's body jolted up with a cute squeal. After the squeeze, I immediately retrieved my hand back and stared at the TV as if nothing had happened.

Her waist was wide open in front of me, how could I not capitalize on it? I should probably blame her pink pyjamas for making it more appealing.....

How childish.

I sighed internally at the realization of my antics. However, Deep down, I was actually happy about it and for some reason, I couldn't focus on it since I had to focus on keeping my poker face.

Honami was rubbing her hand on her recently squeezed side while staring at me with an annoyed expression on my peripheral. It was the expression of someone who has just accepted that they got robbed of their free time and could do nothing about it, exactly like when your parents interrupt you to go buy something as small as a pin from the grocery store. Fortunately and unfortunately, That is something I couldn't relate to.

" Grr " Honami growled, trying to show her anger, which came off as cute since anything that comes out from her is cute, she is a creature who simply cannot express anything negative without it being cute.

Seeing that she got ignored once again, She inhaled before dropping to her knees and crawling towards me. I merely kept looking ahead and pretending she is nonexistent. However, I couldn't do that because my life would have no meaning, so I begrudgingly

acknowledged her existence and braced myself for what was about to come. When we were around one inch away from each other, I closed my eyes and stiffened my body

I could feel her appraising my face with her big mischievous grin and probably internally monologuing about how cute I looked and reassuring me that she'll never be hard on me, just to give herself some amusement. She is sadistic after all, So I wouldn't be surprised if she-... *Huh ?*

I opened my eyes in surprise as I felt a sensation somewhere on my body. I dropped my gaze down towards my lap where Honami stared back at me with a stern expression, The back of her head was resting on top of my thighs as she completely laid on the bed using my lap as a pillow. I couldn't get a read on her so decided to talk

" Hmph~ " As I was about to open my mouth, Honami shifted on her side and faced me with her back as if rejecting anything that comes out of me. She sat up and grabbed a blanket and instantly laid down on my lap again to sleep " Turn off the lights, I'm going to sleep~ "

This little brat

" Hehe~ " I heard some small giggles escape her mouth before she braced herself even more trying to contain them. I simply realized that resistance would be futile, so I sighed internally and clutched the light switch, and pressed it " Good Boy~ "

I felt my right eye irk as I heard more giggles come out of her. However, I remembered that I had a meeting tomorrow with a certain somebody alongside some work to do, so I begrudgingly allowed her to have this momentary victory, just to get some sleep.

I grabbed a pillow and put it behind my back in order to rest on it against the wall, Honami appeared to be fast asleep, so I took great care not to wake her up. I planted a kiss on her warm cheek before drifting to sleep as well.

This sleeping posture is definitely not the best, But it hardly matters to me. *That's at least what I thought before waking up.....*

" You're late, Kiyo-boy " Kouenji with his back facing me marked, before throwing me a side glance with a stern expression, lacking his usual aura. He was wearing some casual summer Clothes in the final days of Winter, The reason why he picked them was probably because they highlight the shape of his body. However, I didn't have too much time and energy to focus on that

" I'm sorry about that Roku, I had something to deal with when i woke up " I wiped some sweat off my forehead and met his gaze again. It was the morning of the very next day when i was late for my meeting with my partner-in-crime Kouenji Rokusuke by 20 minutes. When i was done i sent him a reassuring message before running all my way towards the meeting place.

Luckily, Kouenji didn't leave during that time and patiently waited for me. When I arrived, He appraised me with his analytical and calculative gaze for a moment before furrowing his eyebrows and fully turning to face me

" That's fine Kiyo-boy, but are you sure you're okay ? You look rather..... *Drained* " Mused Kouenji after analyzing me with some concern. *As expected from him, he seems to have noticed*

" No I'm fine " I shook my head in reassurance, before tiredly letting a sigh " Something came up and i had to go all out in order to get some free time. Don't worry it's all resolved now "

I could tell that i was talking more than necessary. However, I don't think it's a very bad thing either if the person I'm talking to is Kouenji. This is the first time my energy got drained to this degree in a long while. On the other hand, Honami wouldn't get to interfere with our plans today

Kouenji's lips curled up a bit to a small grin before he shook his head dismissively and flashed me with his trademark smirk

" Aight, If you say so Kiyo-boy " Kouenji brushed it off and turned around to grab two briefcases sitting on top of the edge behind him, they were both of the same design with shade black outlook and small but luxurious locks, it looked very expensive. He gripped them tighter before glancing towards me " We have a lot of work to

do Kiyo-boy, so if you think you can catch up you better start running ! "

" Wait- " Before i could finish my sentence, Kouenji ignited his engine and drove away. I groaned with a sigh before I was forced to keep up with him

Today is gonna be a long day

" Thank you for your business Senpai " We finished our deal with a handshake before the Senpai turned away and bid farewell to us " I guess that's the last of them for today ? "

I turned around towards Kouenji and asked, as handing him back his empty briefcase. It was the afternoon of the same day, around 5:30 to be exact.

" Yeah, that's enough work for today " Kouenji accepted the briefcase and clutched it with his other hand alongside the second briefcase, before raising his fist in the air " Good work Kiyo-boy "

" Although i had no input in this. But good work " I stared at his fist for a moment before I rose mine and we fist bumped for good work. Kouenji laughed a bit at my words " Are you sure you want me to keep them ? It is your- "

" That's fine Kiyo-boy " Kouenji waved his hand off dismissively, with a smirk as if he didn't care at all " I believe you should, we have more than enough anyways "

Kouenji spoke as if it was trivial and didn't really care, I simply took his words with a nod before focusing ahead of us as we took a stroll towards a cafe. We've been running around campus for the whole day so we decided to get some fresh air with some cold fresh drinks, Kouenji suggested a cafe he claims to be good so i decided to roll with it

It was the western cafe, a cafe that is always invaded by the upperclassmen, mostly third-years. Most of the tables were located outside in a small garden with some trails of the scent of ocean salt flying around. This was my first time in such a place and i can clearly see why it is in high-demand. *This would make a good place to go on a date with Honami*

Since the third-years are preparing for the graduation ceremony by the start of next week, their number is massively lacking

compared to usual. Instead, it was filled with students of the two lower grades

While navigating through the tables, i happened to come across Asahina Nazuna's table who seemed deep in her thoughts, the person who noticed my gaze was her classmate with her which goes by the name of Mikitani and reflected it with a glare. I heard that they got demoted to Class C by the end of the last exam. Well..... *I could care less*

Asahina noticed my gaze and glared at me as well. I brushed it off nevertheless and kept navigating ahead, Kouenji dropped me a small smirk seemingly amused by their reaction before focusing ahead where we got called by a familiar face

" Oh, Ayanokouji-kun ! Kouenji-kun ! " Sitting across our targeted table was Matsushita who waved as soon as she spotted us, sitting beside her were 3 of her friends, Onodera Kayano, Sato Maya and Karuizawa Kei from Class D

" Hello Matsushita-girl " I lazily waved back at her as Kouenji greeted back with a smirk. Seeing my lack of response Kouenji decided to take the initiative " How are you doing today Ladies ? "

His tone switched from his usual silly and narcissistic one to seductive and manly, and i'm surprised it worked on everyone except Matsushita. Since they were all nervously stealing glances at me while blushing.

" Knock it off Roku, look what you did " I lightly jabbed his arm with a sigh, he dropped me a side glance with a smirk. " I'm sorry if he made you guys uncomfortable, we'll be going now "

Kouenji's presence among Class D would be detrimental since they all betrayed him at some point, so those nervous glances at me from Sato, Onodera and Karuizawa were all pleas of help. However, that doesn't explain why they were blushing tho.... *Did they fall for Kouenji ?*

As unlikely as it is, I simply had no energy to deal with some useless gossip from 3 nervous girls and my spy. I'm surprised that Matsushita could publicly address me like a close friend without getting suspected by Class D, since we had almost no public contact other than our hangouts during the cooperative relationship at the start of the year, even during that we didn't show any signs of closeness.

We ordered our drinks and enjoyed them in a comfortable silence with some small talks here and there. 5 minutes later we paid and were about to leave. However, My expectations were broken

" H-Hey Chiaki-chan. What is your relationship with A-Ayanokouji-kun ? " Sato's stammering voice faded in the background as i left the Cafe. Kouenji pressed his lips together,

trying to contain his laughter. *That's what you get for trying to act smart in unnecessary situations Matsushita, Take that as a lesson*

" Today was fun Kiyo-boy " Reaching my floor, the elevator door opened and i stepped out. Kouenji pressed the buttons for his floor and bid farewell " Make sure you're on full energy tomorrow, we still have some more work "

" Yeah, Good night Roku " As i said this, the elevator door closed with his smirk as the last sight. I moved towards my room and opened it

" Ohayo~ " Honami's voice was the first that came out and greeted me.

" Good afternoon Honami " I buckled down and removed my shoes before walking inside of the Room. Honami gave me a warm smile while laying on top of the bed with a blanket on and a phone on her hands, she looked exhausted as well. I simply approached her and laid on my knees " How are you ? "

" Yeah I'm fine, just caught on to a little fever " I put my hand on her forehead to test her temperature, it wasn't very high so she should be fine with enough rest. I traced my hand and started caressing her cute red face and her smile got even warmer " As i said I'm fine. Enough about me, where have you been ? "

" Just running around and doing some errands. " I explained briefly. Honami nodded indicating that i was good enough for her. However, i narrowed my eyes and glanced towards the phone " Were you checking my location ? "

" Maybe~ " Honami grinned to which i responded with a sigh.

I moved away from the bed after planting a kiss on her forehead to prepare dinner, she wasn't really sick but rather exhausted so i didn't bother taking measures. Even so, I'm pretty sure my immunity system is strong enough to battle it

After eating, Honami was fast asleep, and so am i. Today has been pretty exhausting to say the least, I didn't bother to wash the dishes and quickly jumped in the bed to rest too.

Good night, Myself

The ending was pretty cringe, but i can't help it. I simply couldn't think of ways to conclude the chapter.

I was both exhausted and sweaty at the same time, But i had a lot of ideas too. So i just pushed myself to finish this but got stuck on the ending and decided to go with that, Sorry.

Anyway, I cannot think of any ideas to include in this Arc other than somethings, So if you have any ideas please suggest it to me here and i'll most definitely include it.

Anyway I'ma go take a shower and probably nap afterwards too. Thank you for reading and cya in the next one !

Arc 11.5 Chap 2 : Suspicious Milf

Kiyo POV

It was around 9 AM of the very next day, Monday 18th of March, 3rd day of our Spring Break

After our morning workout, Honami and I took a shower and decided to grab breakfast outside to start our day

We were currently heading towards the western cafe, the same cafe me and Kouenji scouted yesterday after i suggested it, Honami immediately agreed and latched at my arm before letting me lead the way.

She was wearing a beautiful dark blue dress made of some fine fabric with her trusty necklace, this combo came with no makeup and beautifully displayed her natural beauty. Her dress may show that her body is nerfed but i was actually grateful since she would stand out less, meaning less people ogling her. Overall, *she was breathtaking*

As if reading my mind, she hugged me even tighter before resting her head on my arm with a warm smile. I simply dropped her one glance checking her out with a thin smile before focusing back on my route

Luckily, her fever has subsided and she's back on shape already, due to the amount of rest she took. It was understandable since she was thoroughly exhausted yesterday, so i didn't have to order any medicine.

Speaking of ordering, my new set of gym equipment has finally arrived after so many delays and shipping issues, Currently it is waiting in the post-office and it will be delivered and set up on my room today around noon

I have encountered the same delivery issues with the mini-doll as well, the gift i ordered for Honami during white day. So it is safe to assume that online ordering has issues in general, at least in this school.

Brushing those thoughts aside, we have arrived towards our destination, the cafe was quieter than usual with less students in it, the same sight and smell but with a grayish morning theme. It felt like the best place for relaxation on earth

Navigating through the same path as yesterday, Honami's eyes was shining as she was scanning her surroundings. As outgoing as

she is, this was her first time here and she seems to already took a liking to it. I felt a small sense of delight for choosing the correct place, *for probably the first time..... Great improvement Kiyotaka !*

As i was mentally agonizing over my distasteful taste, I spotted Hiyori on one of the tables taking a sip from her cup before setting it back on the plate while immersed on her book. It was a sight I'm pretty used to

Honami also spotted her and instantly urged me to approach her, with a nod we both moved towards her table and greeted her

" Good morning Shiina-san~! " Honami's voice lacked it's usual pitch as a thoughtful measure to not ruin the calm atmosphere, but loud enough for Hiyori to hear.

" Oh~ Good morning Ichinose-san ! Kiyotaka-kun ! " Hiyori snapped out of her book and greeted us with an angelic smile. " How are you guys doing ? "

" We are doing pretty good Shiina-san, thank you so much for asking~ " Honami responded with a bright smile of her own before gesturing with her hand at two chairs " Do you mind if we join you ? "

" No, I don't mind ! " Hiyori shook her head before tidying her mess on the table and piling up her books, making space for us " Sorry about this, I didn't expect anyone to join me "

" No need to apologize Shiina-san. Rather, thank you for accepting us~! " Honami expressed as we both went and took our seats beside each other, Hiyori kindly offered us the menu to which we gracefully accepted and scanned through the list " I think i'll get green tea alongside a breakfast sandwich. What about you Kiyo ? "

" I'll take the same but with a banana milkshake instead of tea " Confirming it with a nod, I called the waiter and placed our orders. He told us to wait for about 10 minutes to which we nodded

" Anyway, would you guys like to continue from where we left off ? " Hiyori grabbed two books with her hands and smiled at us. We both shared a nod before receiving out books and engaged in a reading session

There wasn't a lot of talking around so the atmosphere was as good as the library, or even better with the presence of the ocean salt smell and the fresh air. Some cold breezes blew from time to time temporarily shifting the atmosphere's balance. It was a pretty comfortable environment to which allowed me for more concentration

Honami issued some small talk from time to time about her book to which Hiyori wholeheartedly answered, this poor girl was alone for the better half of her life and was happy by just having a friend who she could comfortably talk to and share her hobbies with.

It is a sad reality to realize, one that i could understand. However, I'm happy for her just like how she was happy for me when i found somebody. Lately i have witnessed her growing closer to her Classmates and not spend her time in isolation. She even found some people like Ryueen who were interested in her hobbies and spent sometime leading them though the way of a bookworm.

Before i realized it our food has already arrived, the waiter set our plates on the table and refilled Hiyori's coffee before taking his leave respectively. Honami instantly dove and drank half of her green tea with a happy smile on her face before glancing at her book again

" How is your Class handling the results Shiina-san ? " Honami rose up from her book and locked gazes with Hiyori and asked with a concerned tone, in an attempt to show her concerns. However, I found her question questionable so i paid a little attention to their chat

" We're handling it pretty well " Hiyori sighed before voicing out " We were sad about the results. However, nobody is really upset since it was a given. In fact, everyone took it as a learning experience and used it to grow even stronger ! "

Class C didn't dwell on the loss and used this opportunity to grow as an individual and as a group. Even when they are far away from the competition right now, they didn't break down and trusted Ryueen to lead them back to victory. It seems that the work I've done has been more fruitful than expected, which is always appreciated

Even when they are currently out of the game, with their current shape I do believe in their comeback and they'll be stronger than ever. *This is how Ryueen works and so does his Class*

Class A : 1965 C.P (+ 300 C.P)

Class B : 1337 C.P (+ 420 C.P)

Class C : 335 C.P (-300 C.P)

Class D : 0 C.P (-420 C.P)

" Gambare Gambare Shiina-san~! " Honami cheered a bit too loudly, causing her to instinctively duck down and cover her mouth as an attempt to hide herself. Hiyori giggled a little at the sly display of Honami to which Honami smiled at her " Even if you guys are our rivals, I'm gonna be cheering for your comeback from now on "

" Hehe~ Thank you Ichinose-san ! "

" No probs. By the way, you can call me by my first name too if you want " Honami offered. Hiyori slightly rose her eyebrows " I mean it would be pretty weird if you call my boyfriend by his first name and me by my last. While we are all pretty equally close~ "

What Honami said wasn't wrong in any way, while Hiyori spent more time with me than she did with her. Our position are equal, we are both her book-buddies and her friends. So it would be pretty strange for her to only call me by my first name when we are both equal

" Okay Honami-san~ You can call me by my first name too "

" It's a deal Hiyori-san~! " Honami and Hiyori both shared a handshake to seal the deal off. We both finished our food and stood up " It's been fun chatting with you Hiyori-san~! "

" The feeling is mutual Honami-san ! See you around ! " Hiyori waved at the both of us as we took our leave. We split the bill for the food and started aimlessly hiking around

" You didn't really mean to ask about their Class's situation right ?

" When we were far enough i broke the silence with a question and rose my eyebrow at her " Since you already know about it. Why did you ask ? "

" Dunno, just felt right " Honami shrugged. However, I kept staring at her to which she stared back and sighed in defeat " Fine. I only did it to get closer to her so whenever she thinks of stealing you she'd feel guilty for me "

" You did it for that ? " I asked to which Honami's cheeks slightly flushed and nodded. I simply sighed before patting her on the head

I couldn't tell whether she was lying or not. However, the fact remains that she has manipulated the conversation probably from the start to ensure that she came out with this outcome.

Whether she did it because she was really jealous or because of another goal. *Is something i'll discover later on...*

" Right~ That's the last of them. Great job guys~! " Chie-sensei announced before giving the workers a thumbs up. They all bowed before leaving my room and taking their exit " It's all settled now~ Kiyotaka-kun~! "

I nodded at her before taking a step inside of my room, to which she followed right behind. As i removed my shoes i laid my eyes on the newly settled workout utensils. There was a treadmill, Power

rack, Cable Crossover machine and some other smaller tools like weight wheels and sticks. I approached and appraised each one of them while Chie-sensei stood in front of the entrance observing me

" Do you like them~? " As i finished with my examination, I nodded at her.

" Yes, they are good " I replied positively. However, Chie-sensei started giggling

" *This could be taken out of context* "

" Hmm ? " She muttered under her breath to which i didn't hear. She immediately shot up and nervously waved her hands

" Oh it's nothing haha ! " I eyed her suspiciously before shifting my gaze towards my room.

It was 2:30 in the afternoon, few hours after our talk with Hiyori. Honami got called by Amikura to hang out in her room around noon, I also received an invitation from Shibata and Yousuke to hangout late afternoon to which i ended up agreeing to as well.

" You may go now, there is no need for further adjustments " After i was done tidying things up, I walked up towards Chie-sensei's side and voiced out. However, she started pouting

" You're just gonna ask me to leave after all of my hard work ? Don't i deserve a reward~? "

" Reward ? I paid you private poi- "

" No, not that ! " She cut through me with a small shout before running towards the door, checking that nobody is outside she immediately locked it and approached me. I immediately rose my guard and instinctively took a step back " Don't be afraid Kiyotakakun~ I just did it to get some privacy~ "

" Privacy ? For what ? " I managed to keep a level head and hide my nervousness. But despite my perfect poker face, she seems to be already aware of my feelings, by just following human nature. However, *even if you're aware that wouldn't help you since I'm ready to go all out to fight you, I don't want to cheat especially on Honami who i cherish so much, I'm not allowing you to break our relationship so you can just get lost ahead-*

" You always ask me to do your dirty work and never reward me for it. I could lose my job you know~ " *Huh ?*

" You mean Shinohara's case ? " I responded automatically.

" Yes~! " Chie-sensei nodded vigorously before continuing " You asked me to do a lot of things and break a lot of rules just to help you do your plans. I could've lost my job if i get caught~ So don't i deserve a reward~? "

To be completely fair, Chie-sensei's request wasn't too ridiculous. This woman risked her job in order to ensure that everything is going accordingly. My plans wouldn't have been as smooth without

her

" So you closed the door to have this talk ? "

" Yes~ " She nodded, before grinning lasciviously " Or did you want something else to happen~? "

" No this is the best case scenario " I voiced out as i sighed in relief. " A Reward huh ? "

I muttered before driving deep in my thoughts, thinking of multiple possibilities. I can tell that she would be satisfied with anything i give her even, even if i give her nothing, she would be happy as long as i keep her in Class A. So for her to ask me for something is just an attempt to get extra rewards for her work

Either way, I could brush off her offer and simply ignore it. However, there is something that i could give her.... *Or like she could give me*

" Well i don't know if this is a reward or not " I locked my eyes with her and spoke up, she attentively listened to me with an excited smile " But can you be my mother ? "

" Huh ? " She blurted out in shock. The process of expectations, she wasn't expecting this answer at all " Wait so you want me ? To be your mother ? "

" Yes " I nodded, before stepping towards the window and leaning on it, admiring the outside view while reminiscing " I'm pretty sure you had your own speculations about my past and the life i lived beforehand. My mother was deceased before i even saw her and I lived under the wing of that man, which you're already aware of his nature. So, I thought that maybe I can experience what a motherly love feels like when I got some freedom. So, would you mind being my mother Chie-sensei ? "

As i finished with my explanation, I turned around and faced Chie-sensei before asking her my question. Her usual cheerfulness and brightness were no where to be seen. Instead, there was a serious expression. She took some time and delayed her answer.

" Alright~ " She voiced out before shaking her head, dismissing her thoughts and flashing me with a gentle smile with her moist eyes " I'll be your mother Kiyotaka-kun. Although I have no experience in doing so, I'll do my best ! "

" Thank you, Chie-sense- "

" Nope~ Call me mom~ " Chie-sensei cut through me. However, she immediately dismissed it " No no you know what~? Call me step-mom~! "

" Step mom ? " She nodded vigorously with a wide suspicious smile. An adopted mother is referred to as step-mother, step-mom in short. While I'm not adopted on paper, I guess she has become my step-mother in a sense " Alright i accept. But this mother act

shall stay only between us " *I cannot imagine how embarrassed I would if i called her that in public*

" Alright It's a deal~ Let's seal it with a step-mother hug~! " Chie-sensei extended her arms with a wide grin. My instincts were acting up, telling me to back away. However, I defied them and accepted her hug " Good boy~ "

Chie-sensei patted my back with her arms tightly wrapped around me while my arms lazily went around her. I didn't feel anything, except for sense that i did something wrong

" It seems that you can't feel anything~ Well then- " Chie-sensei moved her arms away from my back and did something forbidden to which i immediately backed away, feeling irate. " This is called a step-mother's pants slip~! "

" You never learn do you " I said as i tidied my pants, to which she rose a finger and grinned.

" It is a step-mother's job to help her children~ Even in sexual relief~ " I was about to talk back but realized that it was futile. *I should have known that she would be the worst person to ask for such a duty*

This was definitely a bad idea

Step mom action going on ~~~~~ Isn't my book just the best ? You gotta admit it right ?

Anyways, I wanted to talk about something here but i somehow forgot 🤔

So forgive me. Til i remember or next chap

Yeah i remembered. Starting from second year my chapters's

length would increase to at least 3K+ It really depends tho
Bye

Arc 11.5 Chap 3 : Boredom

After the disastrous events with my 'mother' , Chie-sensei gave me a peck on the cheek before waving me goodbye. As a sign of her motherly love

While I still haven't changed my mind that this was a terrible deal, I don't think it's very bad either. Chie-sensei is definitely not the best out there, but I could use make use of the experience she's gonna provide me. All I need is a slight change of perspective and live with it

" I wonder what would be Honami's reaction about this... " I muttered, while laying on my bed and staring at the ceiling

Would she be angry or sad ? Happy or jealous ? I know that she would understand my feelings but how will she feel about it ? Sigh, It's starting to get lonely

I couldn't help but bring up her name and start thinking about her, much like every time we're separated. I am well aware that this is happening because I have nothing to do, so i decided to get up and take a random stroll to clear my mind

There is still an hour left for the hangout on Shibata's room, I could go now since he is currently in his dorm. However, I have taken the possibility of him doing chores or preparations so I decided just to wait

With a vest for efforts, I wandered around campus while swapping my air with a fresh one as I was enjoying the views. The atmosphere wasn't as chilly as the morning but it was still cold

I strolled from Keyaki mall to the special building, some alleyways and even the Teachers's dorms in a small adventure. However, as i was about to leave the latter place, I spotted something rather unusual

I redirected my legs and picked up the pace towards the small garden ahead of the Mysterious dorm building while hiding my presence. Arriving there I stared at the bushes for a while before sneaking my hand inside and tapping the dark green T-Shirt

" Haah ?!!! " The bushes started shacking with a medium-pitched startled scream. The person inside slowly rose his head until eye level above the bushes and looked towards me. I immediately recognized the long blonde hair tied into a ponytail and blue eyes, It was... " O-Oh it's you. Come hide real quick "

The person instantly clutched my hand and dragged me inside of the bush with them and made me some space, while I could've easily stopped them I didn't want to deal with the mess afterwards so I simply complied

" What's the meaning of this..... Hashimoto ? " The person in question was none other than Hashimoto Masayoshi of Class B

" I'm sorry my King. But i can't afford to get caught " He glanced at me with a small smirk and clapped his hands together apologetically with a small bow. I simply waved him off before following his line of sight " I'm trying to uncover the school's biggest secret "

" Biggest secret ? You mean that building ? " I pointed towards the Mysterious dorm ahead of us, Hashimoto nodded

" Yes. I've been observing it for over an hour and a half now " Hashimoto added with a frustrated tone, feeling sorry about his progress. However, I couldn't help but feel amazed " Do you mind helping me with this task King ? Not that i doubt your abilities but you could be a great help "

Hashimoto shifted his gaze to me and gave me an expectant look. He seemed somewhat dedicated into solving this case for some reason. I had nothing else to do for the next hour so i replied with a nod

" Sure "

" Yes ! " Hashimoto smiled broadly and punched the air in celebration. " Glad to have you aboard King, let's start our investiga- Oh shit something is happening "

Hashimoto immediately buckled down on his knees while dragging me closer towards him with excitement. I made myself more comfortable before opening a slight gap on the leaves and joining him on spying

Tsukishiro, the temporarily acting director of this school has just left the building with a phone in his ear and a small smile, seemingly in a phone call. Hashimoto narrowed his eyes in concentration. However, as Tsukishiro finished his call he was approached by two adults. One of which was wearing a formal uniform with a black hair, while the other was a construction worker who immediately walked inside with a box in hand

The black haired man and Tsukishiro chatted for a couple of seconds before the both of them entered the building as well. However, just before they disappear. The black haired man quickly tilted his head towards our direction before following in

" Man this is getting exciting ! " Hashimoto grinned excitedly, seemingly unaware. Which to be frank is pretty understandable, we are around 50 meters away from the scene which makes it easy to

miss small details. If not for me feeling his gaze I wouldn't have been sure if we were spotted or not " Say King, did you figure something out ? "

" Not really " I answered with a light head shake, to which caused Hashimoto to pout in disappointment. *Did he really expect me to figure it out by just that ?* " If you really want to crack it, I think you should just change positions "

" Huh ? " Hashimoto shifted his eyes back towards me, seemingly not comprehending my words.

" What I mean is, if you really want to get more information, I think you should get a closer look " If he is playing the spy, then he should be understanding my words. If sitting in the same spot doesn't achieve anything, try to switch it up and be bolder if you're dedicated enough

" I see. Thank you for the advice King ! " Hashimoto gave me a salute, expressing his gratitude. I simply nodded before rolling aside and making my leave " Wait where are you going ? "

" I have a meeting later. So- "

" Oh please King just wait a second ! " I stopped at the desperate voice of Hashimoto and glanced at him " Just stay with me for a bit, we're about to crack it soon I can feel it "

" Bu- "

" Just 5 minutes, 5 minutes and you can leave " Hashimoto pleaded, his eyes somehow turned into puppy eyes, the ones that Honami sometimes use to persuade me. I resigned with a deep sigh before rolling back

" Just 5 minutes " Hashimoto's inwardly celebrations got conveyed through a relieved smile. Before he picked up his legs and rolled out

" Alright. We're moving closer, how about there ? " Hashimoto pointed towards a corner beside the building. I nodded in agreement before he took the lead and started running there " You're too slow King. Move faster ! "

While he was running as fast as possible while being as discreet as possible. I lazily walked behind him as if I'm just passing by, Hashimoto started panicking and urged me to move faster. However, I wasn't trying to catch up to him, instead I was...

" Ah, good afternoon Ayanokouji-kun " In the middle of my stroll, Tsukishiro who was hiding inside of the building left in a 'perfect' timing and spotted me. I immediately stopped and glanced towards him.

" Good afternoon acting director. Do you need something ? " Hashimoto inwardly freaked out as he kept sweating. I simply signaled for him to leave using my hand, Tsukishiro furrowed his

eyebrows and looked at his direction. However, he was already gone.

" You know that wandering around here could get you in trouble, right Masterpiece ? " Tsukishiro decided to ignore my gesture and keep talking. He called me by my nickname, probably intending to have a white room talk

" I know. But I didn't really break any rules did I ? " I shrugged. He didn't seem to respond so I issued my talk " Anyway, I wanted to ask you something "

" Go ahead " With his usual warm smile and narrow eyes, he welcomed my question with wide arms.

" How is that man doing ? " I asked while staring directly at him. He stood silent for a moment before chuckling

" My, do you miss him ? "

" No, just checking if he's dead so I can start celebrating " I denied monotonously.

" You hate him a lot do you ? " Tsukishiro chuckled again while i replied with silence. His cheerful expression suddenly turned serious, as if play time is over. " Alright, we are straying off topic, this isn't why i called you here Ayanokouji-kun "

Tsukishiro has been sending many signals that he wanted to meet me, not only today but also in the previous days. The reason why I came here was in hopes to find him. Now that we met, he can tell me whatever he wanted to convey

" Now that your second-year is coming up. How did you find your first-year of high school Ayanokouji-kun ? " Tsukishiro's serious expression faded and a warm one replaced it. He spoke with an elegant tone, one befitting a staff member.

" It's been pretty interesting. " I decided to go with honest short replies. He cannot be trusted, not in the slightest.

" So I take it that you enjoyed it ? " I nodded wholeheartedly, which caused Tsukishiro to smile even more. " So what is your plans for the upcoming Second-year ? Do you plan to do anything in particular ? "

" Yes, I plan to stay here " I shrugged. " You didn't give me all of those signs just to ask me this did you ? "

To be completely honest, I have no idea what's going inside of this man's brain. His actions and words are all..... *Contradictory*

He picked up the worse possible outcome for the event selection, yet he arranged them so we have the best chances of winning. The outcome of that exam could have definitely been worse. Yet he didn't go for that

He wants my expulsion since that man is depending on him, yet he isn't taking it seriously. Nothing can reassure him against that

man's wrath, yet he is playfully taking it

Does he want to test me before going all out ? That is way too risky. Even with his influence he cannot directly issue my expulsion with no valid reason and he'd be hard pressed to make me give him one. So his only option is influencing special exams to make me fail

Which is what I covered by bringing Mashima-sensei and Chie-sensei to my side, he can create rules to make it hard for me. However that is futile. Currently he has no options.... except for.....

" No, I didn't call you just to tell you that " Tsukishiro replied, making me go back to reality once again. For the first time, his eyes slightly opened once more so and I met the color of his eyeballs " I just wanted to give you a small heads up Ayanokouji-kun. Your second-yea- No, the rest of your time in this School wouldn't be as easy as your first third. So if you really plan to stay here, you gotta prepare yourself "

" What do you mean ? " I asked for further elaboration. " If my memory serves me correctly, Chairman Sakayanagi would return by the end of the first semester. So by you saying that, means that- "

" That's exactly what I mean Ayanokouji-kun. Great job deducing it out "

The only option left for Tsukishiro is to rely on the students to deliver my expulsion. However, he knows it better than most people that ordinary people would never beat me even if they all team up

That man can send as many adults as he'd like. However, the only difference is that they are adults. They can never interfere in exam for students no matter who they might be. So, in order to deliver my expulsion he'd have to rely on the students. Which means that....

There would be White Room students after my head.....

" Maan this sucks ! " Shibata infuriatingly clutched the controller and was about to slam it on the ground. However, his other hand blocked it " Damn it "

" Hah, you're just bad " Hashimoto amusingly laughed at Shibata, to which he got frustrated even more. Yousuke and Beppu couldn't help but chuckle too

It was around 4 PM in the afternoon on Shibata's room. Where he invited most of his friends, There was Me, him, Yousuke, Beppu, Kanzaki and Hashimoto.

Hashimoto wasn't invited. However, after my talk with Tsukishiro I met with him afterwards and decided to apologize for my mistake. To which he laughed it off and decided to tag along. *The more the merrier I guess*

" Grr... Give me another round I swear " Shibata made such an exclamation for the third time today. Hashimoto grinned sadistically at him before inviting him for another match

Currently, we were playing an Anime fighting game called 'Dragon Ball Z Fighters' Where a lot of screaming happens, followed up by a change of hair color. Although the characters get more powerful, I simply couldn't understand how that change happened because of a hair color and a scream.

" Yeah... Yep... Yes... Totally... Fucking shit " Shibata threw the controller on top of the bed to which Yousuke caught and watched just how Shibata got repeatedly Combo'ed with no chance to fight back. " HOW THE FUCK IS THIS ALLOWED ? "

While Shibata's infuriated complains were funny and amusing. I somehow picked up the sense to feel his pain, Hashimoto kept repeating the same moves that were invincible. It is what you'd call 'Noob-friendly Tactics'

" Shibata-kuk, you're such a cry baby " Beppu mused loudly, making Shibata even more enraged. However, he managed to contain it

" Hoh ? You're not gonna ask for another round ? " Hashimoto rose his eyebrows and asked.

" No... " Shibata muttered in a low voice while hanging his head low. Hashimoto was about to turn around but Shibata blurted out " Play me in PES "

" Huh ? " Hashimoto halted midway and shifted back to Shibata.

" Did I stutter ? " Shibata's dark shades on his face slowly dissipated as he lifted his head up and flashed Hashimoto with a very wide victorious smirk. As if he just fell in his honey trap. " Play me in PES Hashimoto-kun "

Hashimoto started getting nervous, PES is a soccer game, which Shibata excels at. He has been bullying all of us using those noob-tactics, so it is understandable why we wanted to switch things up.

Hashimoto decided to protect his dignity and switched games. Shibata got permission from all of us to step as our avenger and fight Hashimoto, with a confident walk he grabbed the controller back from Yousuke and sat beside Hashimoto, declaring the match start...

" Hhahahahahahahaha " Hashimoto laughed hysterically as the match ended, declaring him the winner with a 7-1 Scoreline. Shibata's knees dejectedly fell to the ground, as he pulled what Yousuke called a 'Bra7il'

(A/N : Sorry for any Brazilian reading this. I swear I have nothing against you guys.)

Hashimoto was clearly built different on those console games and he seems to have mastered all of them. I have played him couple of times and got beaten down pretty badly, *I guess I finally lost against someone.....*

Time flew fast as countless match-ups were played on different games. Until the clock hit 7:30 when we all decided to call it a day

" That was a banger don't you think ? " Shibata rose this questions as we all sat in a circle, as if enjoying a campfire together.

" I didn't have fun "

" No fair Kanzaki-kun " Shibata pouted at Kanzaki's sarcasm which caused him to chuckle a little. " Hey guys.... I have something to confess to you "

Shibata took a deep sigh before facing all of us with an apathetic expression, his tone was almost monotonous, if not for a trail of nervousness on it.

" What is it Shibata ? " All of us felt the seriousness of this current situation so we paid our attention. The person in question hung his head low for a moment before letting another sigh and facing all of us with determination

" I'm gonna confess to Mako-san.... "

Finally Mako getting silenced ? Or would she reject Shibata to not get distracted from her job of being the cheap version of Ichika ? Or would she do both ? Who knows
A Chapter without Honami feels weird
Cya on the next one ! Bae Bae~

Arc 11.5 Chap 4 : Operation Purple Lion

Pt. 1

" Now. I shall pass the microphone to the representative of the graduated Class A. " After a long boring monologue, the organizer of the graduation ceremony announced before turning towards the 4 Third-year representatives behind him. " Horikita Manabu, please step towards the stage "

As he announced the name, Manabu stepped up, followed up by multiple loud applauds and cheers from the crowd, teachers, staff members, students, and even his formal rivals clapped for him. There was no surprises there, since this man was truly amazing

Manabu walked with elegance and honor just like any confident proud leader and stood as tall as a rock. His gaze descended on all of us as he was overflowing with authority and an untouchable aura. This show garnered a lot more respect for him, simultaneously, the cheers subsided, opening the stage for his speech

" I have been honored by the privilege of being nurtured and graduating from this astounding learning institution as one of the best students they could offer, so I am thankful for this opportunity. I must thank my homeroom teacher for being a great pillar of support and companion for our journey alongside the other kind staff members and teachers, it has truly been an honor to be under your supervision. " Manabu directed his words towards the staff members who all had warm and sad smiles on the receiving end. His homeroom teacher was bawling her eyes out at the shoulders of another, Manabu smiled lightly at her before continuing " Next, I must thank my Classmates for providing a fun environment to be and live in, we have always been united through thick and thin and always supportive of each other, I was very lucky for having such nice people as my companions. While i have failed in protecting some of them, they never failed to keep their faith and push forward. It was truly a blessing "

Manabu directed his gaze and words to the batch of students with golden medals tied to their black suits, their moist eyes were filled with admiration while their smiles conveying their deepest gratitude. It was truly a sight to behold, one that occur only in such

occasions. He redirected his gaze at us again. However, with a deep long sigh

" A New chapter has sprung into our lives, not only ours but also yours. We'll be climbing towards the adult world while you keep on struggling with your peers against the challenges of this battlefield. However, you have to fear not, as long as you stick together you all shall emerge victorious. Stick to your ideals and do not dwell on the past, because the future is all that matters. Even if you lose it won't be the end of the world, you still have bright futures ahead of you. " Manabu continued with his parting advice " You've got to find what you love, and that is as true for your work as it is for your lovers. Your work is going to fill a large part of your life, and the only way to be truly satisfied is to do what you believe is great work, and the only way to do great work is to love what you do. If you haven't found it yet, keep looking. Don't settle. As with all matters of the heart, you'll know when you find it.

Have no regrets.... "

It was Wednesday 26rd of March, The second day of the last week of spring break

The Graduation ceremony took place at the start of this week, 2 days prior to this day where all the students were obligated to attend, a lot of tears were shed and farewells bid. The Third-years were still allowed to roam around and enjoy the remainder of this week. However, most of them have already left, making campus more peaceful

Currently, Kouenji and I have finished another tour and separated from each other. I checked the time to see it just shy of the 11:20 AM Mark, making me slightly late. I picked up my pace and made it towards the meeting spot

" There you are Ayanokouji-kun ! " As i arrived towards the small alleyway, I was greeted by the relieved voice of Beppu Ryouta, followed up by the happy smiles of Yousuke, Hashimoto, Kanzaki

and one more person

" Sorry I'm late, I had to deal with something "

" That's fine Ayanokouji-dono " The person sitting on the ground with a laptop spoke up. His name is Sotomura Hideo of Class D. He shifted his glasses with a light smirk " Shibata-dono have just started, so i'll we'll just have to go with the summary real quick "

Sotomura started scribbling on his laptop before turning it to all of us, we all grouped up to look at it.

Sotomura dramatically presented his introduction to us, before his laptop flashed up with text " Right, allow me to explain what we'll do in this operation. I called it : **Operation Purple Lion** "

Operation : Purple Lion

Objective : Ensure the safe delivery of the HVT

HVT : Shibata's date

Final Goal : A Successful Confession.

More details about the Operation :

" Is this even necessary ? " I muttered while checking up small ear bugs used for communication handed to us by Sotomura

" Umu umu. They are important to stay coordinated during this mission, you'll be patrolling the area for any changes in surroundings and follow the orders. All for the sake of the mission " Sotomura strongly nodded, indicating the importance and seriousness

" Why can't he just take his chance and confess ? No matter how you slice it he has a pretty dece- "

" That also won't do Kanzaki-dono. Shibata-dono has trusted us with this info so we have to make sure to increase the chances of success as much as we could. " Realizing the commitment of Sotomura, we all decided to trust this man and follow through the mission.

Although his tone of speaking is peculiar and may even be promoted to bizarre. He is a pro in 'weeb' culture and quite knowledgeable in technology that he was nicknamed the professor between his peers and foes. He may see some stuff that we don't using his infinite knowledge about Anime and Manga

It was Hashimoto's idea to bring him here to assist us during this mission. Originally we were going to wait and hear the news from Shibata himself. However, this man decided to take it one step further

The Professor distributed to us some more equipment alongside some 'professional' nicknames and assigned to each one of us a starting location around Campus, he started explaining more details

during our relocation

[*Delta-dono*] Sotomura's voice transmitted through the ear pod, doing last check up for the locations.

[*Ready*] *That was Beppu*

[*nose-dono*]

[*Ready*] *That was Kanzaki*

[*Shirou-dono*]

[*Ready*] *That was Yousuke*

[*Spouse-dono*]

[*R-Ready*] *That was Shibata*

[*Snek-dono*]

[*Always ready*] *That was Hashimoto*

[*And finally..... MC-dono*]

" Ready "

[*Good, everyone is in position. I'm also ready*] Professor did some final adjustments with his laptop and concluded it with a shift in his posture and a clap.

[*Report, the target approaching from the south-east entrance*] Hashimo- I mean Snek reported

[*Alright*] Professor cracking his knuckles before saying in an anticipating tone

[*Now, Let us begin our date shall we ?*]

3rd POV

" Hello Sou-kun~! Sorry to keep you waiting " On the not-so holy lands of ANHS. Two couples met up on a small park outside of Keyaki Mall. The girl known as Amikura Mako greeted Shibata Sou who immediately greeted back

" Good morning Mako-san. Don't worry i have just arrived here myself " Shibata waved his hand off with a bright smile. Amikura took that for granted and smiled back too. They were both wearing some nice clothes that complimented their hair color. However, the only difference is that Shibata was wearing a cap to hide the transceiver device while Amikura had a different hair style.

[*You have to compliment her looks Spouse, say something nice*] Snek who was 50fts away from the scene whispered on his microphone. His role on the Mission was to stay close to the targets and track them down

[*Yes, usually girls put a lot of work on their looks before dates. So you have to show your appreciation for it Spouse-kun*] Shirou advised in support. There is no need for more debate when both Hashimoto

and Hirata agrees on one dating advice, since they are both more experienced with different types of women, more so than the rest of the group.

" Ummm.... " Shibata got slightly more nervous as he started figuring out a compliment to say. The Task force were about to help him. However, he already made up his mind. " Y-You look very good looking today M-Mako-san. The purple dress really fits you "

[*Mm. Wording mistake*] Delta remarked with a small wince.

[*That's fine Delta-kun. Showing a bit of nervousness would add more credibility to his words, especially when the target is suspected to have a mutual feeling*] Shirou reconciled, which earned him the agreement of almost everyone

[*You guys are making Spouse more uncomfortable, this is a critical moment so silence.*] Snek reminded, making everyone silently agree with him and wait for the results.

To the support of Hashimoto's words, Shibata were under constant pressure from the communications and Amikura's longing gaze, she stood silent for a moment before answering back.

" Thank you so much Sou-kun~ You're looking good yourself as well ! " Amikura complimented back.

" Thank you Mako-san. Shall we go ? " Shibata bowed a little in gratitude before offering, to which Amikura gracefully accepted.

[*Success !*] The professor lightly shouted in everyone's ears, a small weight going out of his chest with the sigh of relief [*Now, let us begin with Phase 2*

[*Our next destination is the mall clothing stores, where Spouse-dono would spend 30 minutes shopping for clothes with Target-dono*]

[*Is there any particular things we need to do during this Professor ?*] Delta asked.

[*No, there is no need for anything. We already have it planned*] The professor shifted his glasses with a confident gleam in his eyes [*We already have talked to the store's manager and asked for them to-*]

[*Wait Report Report ! Something is happening*]

[*What's going on Snek-kun ?*] Snek reported somewhat in panic. Shirou trying to defuse the situation asked for elaboration

[*Somebody in cosplay and huge pack of balloons is talking to them.*]

[*Huh ? Cosplay ? Balloons ?*] The Professor muttered in confusion, before moving his hands and typing on his keyboard to listen in Shibata's microphone

[*Free balloons ?*] Spouse

[*Yep~ Today we're celebrating the two year anniversary of the release of our film and we're giving away free balloons~!*] Exclaimed the disguised lady before handing out one Balloon to each of them [*And because you guys look cute together~*]

[Umm. T-Thank you miss] They both accepted the balloons before bowing and moving away

[*I'm rooting for the both of you~!*] The lady cheered while waving them off, making the flustermeter increase even more

[*Free balloons ?..... We take those*] Delta's cheers were shared among the task force. All except one

[*Weird...*]

[*What's wrong MC-dono ? Found something strange ?*] The professor addressed the elephant of the room. MC shook his head

[*Not really, probably just my imagination*] MC elaborated, to which everyone lost interest.

[*Anyways, now that we're back on track, let's continue with the date !*

]

Phase 2 proceeded smoothly, with the boys promising the Manager some sales, she did a wonderful job smoothing things out and offering a nice yet affordable set of clothes for the couple. In the end they each came out with 10.000 Points worth of clothes, making everyone a winner.

[*Another W*] During this whole time, the professor's way of speaking was stagnant, imitating a commander role and tone all the way. He was too immersed in this roleplay [*It's lunch break, so their next destination is a 4-star restaurant. We have already worked on the reserves so we can fill our bellies during this phase. However, we need someone to keep an eye on the targets*

[*That's where Nose-dono comes in with his super-duper disguise !*]

Just as Shibata and Amikura sat on the tables, a girl with long dark blue hair and blue eyes stepped inside of the restaurant. At first glance she looked beautiful. However, you wouldn't think so when you realize who's hiding inside

[*Why did i have to wear this ?*] After the waiter took her order, she immediately bent down to hide from sight and started grumbling. That girl was none other than nose himself, A.K.A Kanzaki Ryuuji in a perfect trap disguise

[*It is important to conceal your identity as a spy Nose-dono. For that, I have prepared the necessary equipment*]

[*Yes I know. But why do I have to disguise as a girl ?*]

[*That's because.....*] There was a brief moment of silence. During that, the professor shifted his glasses, as a tear dropped from his left eye [*I wanted to see the best waifus in person*]

[*What ?!*] Little did everyone know that, *this man was a true man of culture*

[*Keep your voice down Nose, you cannot afford letting anyone hear you*] MC quickly defused the situation with his calm voice, nose acknowledged the danger and begrudgingly gritted his teeth.

[*Fear not, in case anything spurts out of control. I'll be right there to back you up*] Sneek was outside the restaurant with a cup of ramen, acting as backup. This didn't assure Nose in the slightest. However, he decided to roll with it

Shibata and Amikura seemed to be enjoying their food while chatting happily just like how they usually does. Nose silently received his food and paid without uttering a single word, he pretended to be depressed in order to not attract suspicion and ate his food. Everything was going smoothly, it was the best thing everyone hoped for-

" Ara Ara~ What do we have here~? " *It was the worst thing everyone hoped for*

Just by the entrance, a woman believed to be in the middle of her twenties with light brown wavy hair and violet eyes. Nose immediately recognized her, so did the others

[*Uh oh...*] The professor immediately dropped his can of juice and started typing on his laptop [*Emergency everyone, a threat has appeared, i repeat, a threat has appeared.*

[*Code name : Milf Teacher, Threat Level : A, Priority : TOP. Must be dealt with asap. I repeat...*]

That woman was none other than the Homeroom Teacher of Class A, Hoshinomiya Chie in a beautiful black dress and light makeup. She firstly scanned her surroundings before approaching the table of the unsuspected couple with a wide evident grin on her face. Kanzaki a.k.a Nose was about to step up. However...

" What's the rush about.... kitten ? " An averagely built upperclassman sat on the table of Nose, preventing him from advancing further " You still haven't finished your food. So how about I cheer you up ? You've been looking down for a while.... "

The upperclassman said those nice words with a creepy smile that made Kanzaki inwardly contort in disgust. However, this unaccounted for presence prevents him from acting up without attracting too much unnecessary attention, since the upperclassman would most likely never leave him for the time being

Hoshinomiya was slowly approaching the couple's table while Nose got conflicted on what to do, Hashimoto tried to step up but was stopped by the guard and ordered to throw the ramen cup first. However, by the times he does that the damage would have already been dealt

Everyone felt hopeless and thought so hard over a solution. However, just as the situation was about to reach it's climax

" Chie-sensei~! "

I was planning to post this operation on a one long chapter then finish the next one which would be the last. However, I'm gonna be busy these days and didn't want you guys hanging. So decided to split it into two

There is most likely 2 chapters left in this arc which means the end of this book. However, do not feel bad because there is still more content afterwards. Not only SS's but also a sweet surprise for you all :))

*Anyway, Before this book gets to a close, I wanna try something first. *cough* *cough**

Listen here you dimwits, don't forget to upvote and drop a comment on the parts you liked and follow if you haven't you lazy ass fuck. If you won't do it I'm gonna come to your house and rap-

Anyways, please don't spread negativity :))))))

Hypocrite ? Nah, just following Honami's ideals

Anyways, I just realized i typed anyways 3 times

Anyways, Thank you for reading :DD

Ciao~ (idk what's this ._.)

Arc 11.5 Chap 4.5 : Operation Purple Lion Pt. 2

Just as the situation was about to reach it's climax, a cheerful and sweet voice resounded in the restaurant. Drawing multiple curious glances at the lady in question

" Ah~ Honami-chan~! " Code name Milf Teacher abruptly stopped and waved at Ichinose Honami who was sitting in a table at the corner of the restaurant enjoying some food, Ichinose reciprocated Hoshinomiya's wave and the latter immediately approached her " I never thought i'd see you here Honami-chan~ Are you meeting someone too ? "

" Hehe~ No no, I just got hungry and decided to grab a bite that's all " Ichinose responded with a cute chuckle and a tender smile, Hoshinomiya grabbed a seat and sat with her as they both started chatting

Many people witnessed this exchange and lost interest shortly after, including the young couple. The members of the Task force sighed in relief

[*Phew*] The professor wiped some sweat off his forehead with a long deep sigh. [*Heroine-dono came in clutch !*]

[*Yep, that was a close one haha*] Delta chuckled, soothing the atmosphere of the Communication link. [*Anyway, have you guys dealt with code name Pervert yet ?*]

[*Yep*] Both of Nose and Snek said in unison, while simultaneously dragging the unconscious body of the upperclassman after luring him out the restaurant.

[*That's good*] The professor smiled before switching to his commanding act again [*The goddess of luck has saved us this time and gave us another chance. We cannot afford to do any more mistakes*]

[*Yes sir !*] Almost everyone said in unison before started chuckling with each other. The professor smiled warmly, realizing that everyone is having fun.

The fun wasn't only spread to the members of the task force but also to the couple who enjoyed a feast full of enthusiastic chatter. Minutes later they both split the bill and left the restaurant and started strolling, followed up by Snek

The next planned destination was the amusement park, where the

last phase is gonna take place. Phase 4 is the longest out of all and the most tiring one, it is also the phase everyone was preparing to settle the score

Of course, this made Shibata more sweaty so he steeled his resolve to enjoy those final hours. Everyone relocated towards the park even Sotomura. *However.....*

" Hey Sou-kun~ " Amikura suddenly spoke up with an anticipating tone, Shibata snapped out of his thoughts and looked at her, with a small smile she suggested " Do you mind going to the bawling center next ? "

" Bawling center ? " Shibata parroted confusingly, to which Amikura nodded and her smile turned into a grin

" Yes, I wanna try some balls~ "

Her reply only stunned Shibata since the members of the task force were too alerted to notice her antics. Shibata composed himself and with a gulp he responded

" Sure, why not " He smiled. Amikura's grin went even wider in celebrations, before grabbing his hand and dragging him towards the center. Simultaneously, the members of the task force entered the stage of panic

[*Calm down guys. There is no need to panic*] Shirou immediately defused the situation, trying to soothe everyone [*She is just craving something right now, we should give it to her*]

[*Yes*] MC nodded in confirmation [*I recon we should just let Spouse handle it on his own, we cannot afford to refuse her*]

Soon all the members came into one lead and entrusted the mission to the man himself. Shibata got understandably more nervous, since he was left alone. However, he reminded himself that if he cannot go on a date alone he'll never be able to go far

Soon, they both reached the arena and paid tickets for the bawling room. The receptionist kindly instructed them the gist of the rules and provided them with a set of shoes and finger-less gloves that only Amikura wore before following her towards the center

" Wow~! " Just as the receptionist dropped them in the room, Amikura cheered at the beauty of the room. There was nobody inside so they both roamed around fathoming it, the room was temperature controlled and illuminated beautifully. There was around 10 Lanes with normal wood, unlike the fancy wood spread on the whole room with many facilities on top.

Satisfied with the small adventure, Amikura walked up towards one of the lanes and stared at the balls before moving her hand to caress them. On each rub they glisten more beautifully on the light. Amikura was amazed by their beautiful color after she missed them

for a while, those were indeed some nice *clean balls*

Shibata felt a shiver run up his spine for some reason he wasn't aware of. However, he was snapped out of his thoughts by Amikura who eventually picked up a ball and walked towards a lane

" Hyaaa~ " She firmly held the ball and elegantly preformed a throw, the ball rolled down at a mediocre speed and knocked off 4 pins. " Man I've definitely lost my shape "

Amikura grumbled as she started rolling her wrist as if warming it up. Before she threw a side glance at Shibata, snapping him out of his thoughts again

" It's your turn Sou-kun~ " Amikura stepped off allowing Shibata to preform right after the pins got restored. He stepped up like a robot and grabbed a ball before lining up his shot. However " What are you doing ? "

" Eh ? " Shibata's monotonic behavior got cut off with a simple question from Amikura, who furrowed her eyebrows in confusion.

" Sou-kun~ your posture is.... super wrong ! If you throw the ball like that your arm is gonna break ! " Amikura exclaimed worryingly. Shibata unconsciously tried to fix his posture " Do you know how to bawl ? "

" Ah hehe " Shibata bitterly smiled with a nervous laugh which have reached Amikura, causing her to sigh. While she was preforming, Shibata tried to take as many notes as he possibly can from her so he could imitate. However, he was easily busted.

" Here gimme this~ " Amikura went closer to him and requested the ball. A Small grin plastered on her face " You should have told me, but that's fine. But now, I'ma teach you real good~ "

The bawling date went smoothly, according to Amikura. Outside some rather touchy moments, they both had a great time knocking down some pins

After an hour and a half they both left the center to grab an afternoon snack, they settled on a strawberry crepe before making their way towards the amusement park

" Hey~ why did you choose the amusement park ? " Amikura suddenly sprang a question at Shibata after finishing her last bite.

" Well, I thought it's a pretty good place for a hangout " Shibata answered. Before throwing a curious glance at her " You don't like it ? "

" No, that's not it " Amikura shook her head " I thought you were scared of such places, since last time we went there you almost pis- "

" Okay okay stop ! " He immediately cut her off, feeling embarrassed at the memory. Amikura decided to let him off, not before smirking at him.

[*Could she have suspected something ?*] Delta asked.

[*Nope, she didn't*] The professor reaffirmed [*Anyways, are you guys done with that ?*]

[*We are almost done professor*] Snek responded, to which the professor nodded

[*Okay, MC and Snek, leave the rest to the others and proceed with what we've planned. They are nearing down the Park so make it quick*] The professor commanded with his persona, both of the mentioned individuals let go of their work and proceeded to disappear in the shadows [*Alright, let's continue with our date !*]

Soon, both of the couple reached the park and strolled around for the facilities and stalls, they tried different types games and snacks, topped off with some sly verbal abuse from both parties, all under the supervision of the Task force, who ensured the smoothness of the Date.

There was some minor disturbances occurring here and there, that was quickly dealt with. The time of the appointment was nearing down, and this kept going for quite some time. *Until one particular incident occurred*

Kiyo POV

Checking the time on my phone, it was 5:15 on the afternoon.

Shibata was currently trying out a shooter game on a stall for a prize of a doll from the different provided selections on the stall.

Much like everyone else, I have started to get tired of this. Overall, we have spent almost 6 hours in this operation, going around and spying to ensure it's progress. Not gonna lie I had fun at

the start, but it's starting to become a drag

However, now that we are so far into this we cannot call it quits, and we are kinda forced to see this through. The confession is pre-scheduled at 6 PM, 45 minutes later to be exact. Simultaneously, we have prepared a small surprise for them, to reach the ultra-romantic atmosphere.

The situation has been pretty smoothly so far, one could say almost too good. During this final phase everything was pulled out without a hitch, those two individuals's chemistry was on full display with little to no disturbances, whenever it appears it was quickly dealt with. One could say that this is a perfect date, *so it is all worth it in the end*

It's not like I had anything to do in the first place. During those times I truly realized how essential is Honami's presence in my life, since she was always able to fill my schedule with all sorts of spontaneous things. Sadly, she is busy right now helping the student council with paperwork of the newly allotted first-years.

Needless to say, I could have definitely asked her to report any suspicious files so I could track the white room enforcer/enforcers. Tsukishiro would never allow such a file to exist, even if he did, it would be a very obvious trap

They most likely have given them fake backgrounds and taught them the behavior of a high school student in order to blend in the crowd. It's been 7 months since that man paid me a visit so it is safe to assume they had that much time to prepare, and it is more than enough.

Anyone who survived that place shall not be underestimated, not in the slightest. One single misstep and you'd have the rug pulled underneath you, so having an unknown number of them hiding in plain sight isn't something to soothe your heart with.

Coming back to reality, Shibata has finally completed the shooter game with just enough points to pass, earning him a small pink doll to which he immediately stuffed inside of a bag and moved with Amikura towards the next and last location before the scheduled time. *Karaoke*

I got off my hiding place and sneakily followed right after them, Hashimoto could be spotted on the other side of the facilities stalking them as well. I have multiple thoughts questioning what I was doing but i pushed through. However, as we were nearing the place I spotted a rather troublesome sight and immediately hid myself

[*Oh my god !*] The surprised voice of Sotomura resounded shortly after. You could clearly hear him panicking and typing on his keyboard [*Emergency everyone, this is not a drill, i repeat, THIS IS*

NOT A DRILL

[Code name- Code Names Dragon and Loli has appeared outside of the Karaoke place, Threat Level... SS+ ! MUST BE DEALT WITH IMMEDIATELY]

You could tell how panicked he was from the pitch of his voice, he really did ear-rape all of us to some extent. However, *this may be our biggest obstacle yet*

Just by the entrance of the Karaoke place, Ryuen and Sakayanagi stepped out side by side and walked towards the direction Amikura and Shibata are coming from. Their presence is intimidating enough so seeing both combined really did submit a fearful sight

[*Damn it, what should be do ?!*] The whole task force was in a stage of panic, since this situation is the most serious we dealt with so far and it shouldn't be taken lightly. However, *I wonder why Ryuen and Sakayanagi are together.*

[MC-DONO MC-DONO !] The Professor kept yelling my code name that I still don't know what it means [*Use that MC-Dono ! Use the THING !*]

While everyone was confused about this 'thing' I immediately recognized what he's talking about, I stuffed my hand on my pocket in search until I found it and *lighted it up*

3rd POV

During the time MC was figuring out the thing, both sides were nearing down their distance.

Ryuen and Sakayanagi with their intimidating aura were approaching the reverse direction of Shibata and Amikura who had a bubbly and sweet aura. If the both of them Clash, the chances are the atmosphere is gonna get reduced to shambles.

All the members of the Task force were on edge, without exception. All of their work in the past hours all relies on one man. The MC, The Main Character, as named by Sotomura since he thinks that Ayanokouji is a Main Character material.

Both sides are closing in the distance on each other, each second passes the distance gets smaller and smaller, so does the dread. It's just a matter of seconds until they clash

This was for all the marbles, they cannot afford to lose this atmosphere no matter the cost. All hopes and expedencies were placed on one man, that man is

BANG

Their savior

Kiyo POV

Sigh, this was troublesome indeed

I sighed in small relief as some fireworks suddenly started

blowing in the sky, without any prior warning.

Of course, the one who set it up was none other than me all to attract the attention of the crowd. I immediately blended in to avoid any suspicion

This simple act of setting a firework stick could get me in trouble, especially with Tsukishiro around. There would be some small investigations. However, I highly doubt they'd go far for harmless fireworks

Just as the fireworks blew up, Shibata took this chance to walk past the distracted Ryuuen and Sakayanagi without them noticing. Surprisingly, Amikura complied with his actions and instantly agreed too

[*Good Job MC-dono, you did well*] The Professor congratulated me, just like a proud commander congratulating his soldiers. Soon, many other cheers erupted.

[*Professor, I have a request*] Just as the cheers subsided, I immediately spoke up.

[*What is it MC-dono ?*] Sotomura asked, voice full of curiosity.

[*I'd like to step down from the mission, I have something to investigate*] As I said this, I could feel the surprise coming out from the ear-pad.

[*Umm.. Sure, you can step down MC-dono. You've done a magnificent work so far*] Sotomura replied. However, he seems to have more [*But may I ask what will you investigate ?*]

[*It's personal. But I'll try to help anyway I can*]

[*That's okay MC-dono. Thank you for your work today*]

[*Cya King !*] Hashimoto alongside the other task force members bid farewell as well before I removed the ear-pad and turned it off.

Alright, now this is settled. I can begin looking for her...

I immediately stuffed the ear-pad on my pocket and merged with the shadows. Shibata is currently in the Karaoke room, which is the last destination before ferris wheel, where the confession is scheduled to take place.

However, I have no interest in that. The outcome of this operation is already set on stone. What interests me is something else

I searched in the outskirts of the Karaoke Room and after a short while I immediately spotted what I was looking for. *It seems that I was right after all*

Just as I found them, Shibata and Amikura simultaneously left the Karaoke place and headed South, towards the final destination. Soon, the two figure moved out and stalked the both of them, I sat on my place for a couple of few more seconds before following right up

I managed to keep an eye on the stalkers as I discreetly blended with the crowd with them. As soon as Shibata entered the wheel with his partner, they both separated and diverged on their surroundings.

Picking my target, I immediately approached her from behind as sneakily as possible, she was staring at the wheel, to be more precise where Shibata was. Reaching a safe distance, I extended my hand and held hers

" Eh.. ? " She instinctively flinched and retracted her hand and looked at me in a startle. However, her eyes immediately widened in recognition. " Oh ? Kiyo~?! "

" Yes it's me, Honami. " Honami was genuinely surprised at my appearance. However, her stiff shoulders immediately relaxed.

" W-What are you doing here ? " She furrowed her eyebrows before asking, voice full of curiosity. I simply stifled a laugh and gazed towards the Wheel

" I may or may not had an operation to ensure the safety of Shibata's date " As I said this, I saw her eyes widen in my peripheral.

" So you mean.... "

" Yes " I nodded before gazing at her. " We had the same plans "

A lot of weird things happened during this period of time, a little too much and miraculously, it always ended up in the favor of the date. All the small disturbances were taken care off, whether was it by us or 'luck' the surroundings helped this date flourish a little *too perfectly*

I was a little dubious at first. However, it perfectly makes sense now. There was no way for the cosplay lady to know whether or not Shibata and Amikura were a couple so she would root for them as she said. The movie anniversary was an excuse and the cosplay lady was actually one of our Classmates, trying to help in this date

Using this logic, a lot of other things would start to make sense as well. Honami's appearance in the Restaurant wasn't a coincidence, rather, it was planned.

The disturbances that were taken down by luck was the girls's doing as well. Much like us, they had their own plans to implement in this date.

" I see... I knew something was up " Honami muttered, before letting on a sigh and looking at me with a smile " I guess we were suspicious of the same thing huh~? "

" Yep "

She was busy with the tasks given to her so it is excusable that she couldn't focus on it. Unlike me, she seems exhausted by the way her body is holding up, so it is possible that she've done more work

than I am.

" Hehe~ " I was snapped out from my thought by a cute giggle from her. Instantly, she shifted her gaze from the wheel to me, with an expectant look " I have been suspicious of this ordeal for a while now. But sadly, I didn't get time to investigate it.

" Don't I deserve a reward for that, Kiyotaka~? "

Her eyes contained so much expectations that it became blinding, with a wide precious smile to top it off. I was gonna refuse but got afraid that I'll break this beautiful express, so I resigned myself

Honami noticed this and slightly bent her knees, as if anticipating me to head pat her. I don't know what she sees in them, but she always gets excited when I touch her in general

I did what was expected and raised my hands towards her head, she closed her eyes and smiled even more broadly, which made her look cuter than a puppy. My hand slowly descended on her as her excitement grew rampant. However, I pinched her cheeks

" Owwww~ " Honami took her a moment to realize and took a step back, caressing her cheek with furrowed eyebrows. " Why did you do that ? "

" Just because you were suspicious of something obvious like that doesn't mean that I have to reward you every time you get something right " I spoke in a scolding tone and a small smug. Her eyes slightly widened " Besides, didn't you just lie to me ? You said you're doing student council work "

" You're so mean~! " Honami pouted and looked away. However, her face quickly drew back " Didn't you lie to me as well~? You said you were with Hirata-kun ! "

" I technically didn't lie, because I was with Yousuke on the tranceiver " I pulled out the small ear-pad from my pocket and smug smiled at her. Her face was shocked

" It was just a small friendly lie ! "

" A lie is a lie no matter how big or small "

" A..... You're so mean~! " Honami had no arguments left so she resorted to her only option. She pouted at me and faced away

" Telling the truth is mean ? Man people these days... " I clicked my tongue multiple times while shaking my head, indicating my disappointment.

" Hmph~ " She pouted again, rejecting everything coming from me.

We decided to head back home, or more like the decision came from me since she refused to answer. During the rest of the day she refrained from looking me in the eye or talking to me, as if to indicate her anger

I knew that she'd respond like this since it happened multiple times. Yet I always choose to playfully anger her for no apparent reason

I guess it could be that she looks very cute when pouting
Who knows

HOLY MARAKESH I'M DONE WITH THIS CHAPTER

I said that i was busy last chap but that was for only 2 days, and it's been around 6 days since last i posted so.

Yep, I was clearly unmotivated.

Sorry for not uploading, but now I'm back. I am fine and not ill, just didn't feel like writing

I regained most of my motivation right after Ryuen and Sakayanagi appeared. I wonder why

If this chap is bad I know. I was literally thinking of discontinuing this Book and go straight to second-year. But that was just the feeling of the moment

Anyway, next chap is the last chap in Arc 11.5 However, I promised you with chapters afterwards

There is only a couple of trusted individuals that know what I'm gonna do beside a Lemon. So yeah it's a sweet surprise

Anyway, cya in the next one~

Honami best girl

Arc 11.5 Chap 5 : Farewell

31st of March. Unknown time and Location

" It's time.... "

The cricket inside the room instantly got crushed by the swinging door, leaving a mark on it's white surface. The perpetrator was a man wearing a white lab coat with a clipboard in hand and a mask covering his face.

" Move out " He commanded.

Shortly after that, the people inside hopped off their seats and followed behind the man.

" I suppose you've already memorized the details of your mission correct ? " The man inquired, while looking towards them. They nodded in confirmation " Good. "

With those final remarks, they all walked in silence through the white hallways, passing through multiple rooms very familiar for them. Until they reached a door

" The government is keeping a watchful eye on us, so we'll have to take the secret route out " Elaborated the man, while inserting a code in the numbers pad and opening the door for a secret passageway. " If you follow this path, you'll find a black car waiting for you outside, it shouldn't be hard to spot and you'll follow the orders of the man inside you understand ? "

They responded with nods and entered the passageway. The man was about to close the door if not for the remaining presence beside him. Who stepped in the secret passageway shortly came to a halt and looked back, noticing that someone is missing.

" What do you want **Subject** ? " The man asked coldly, emitting a ruthless aura while cruelly stressing the word as if referring to them as nothing but a joke.

" Sensei, I have a question if you don't mind " The kid asked out loud, with their usual tone and aura. Completely unfazed by the Teacher's heavy presence

" Go ahead, is it about the mission ? "

" Yep " The kid nodded. " Do you mind telling us about Ayanokouji-sensei's situation ? "

This question has attracted the attention of the student/s, as well as the Teacher. Who immediately raised his guard

" That isn't necessary for you to know " The Teacher refuted back.

" All you need to do is focus on your mission on retrieving Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, alongside other secondary goals. Other than that, is none of your business "

The Teacher responded straightly without an ounce of hesitancy nor stuttering, as if firmly closing down his gates and rejecting any more advances. The student immediately realized this and prepared to back off

However....

" It is important for our mission Sensei " The Student received unexpected support from their fellow classmate, who slowly took steps back and approached them. " In order for us to retract Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, we also need to know the exact moves he pulled beforehand to understand the way he operates even more "

Their support came as a pleasant surprise for the student and made them retract their plans of backing away. However, the Teacher wasn't going to open his gates any time soon

" You have already been provided advanced information about him from our database. Use that to work- "

" I don't think you understand Sensei " The Student at this point stepped back into the white hallway, peering at the Teacher. " What you have provided us was info about his skill level and performances in the white room, alongside some typical behaviors and habits he emitted.

" However, it isn't enough to completely understand how he works. "

It is impossible to completely understand a certain individual's behavior to the point that you could predict every action or words they emit, which is supported by the chaos theory. However, this reach is fathomable to some extent.

" It is impossible to know how he works- " The Teacher was cut short when he noticed the student in front of him sigh in deep disappointment.

" While it is impossible to completely understand him. Isn't it a bit.... *cruel*, for you guys to hide information that could possibly be of good use ? " The Student spoke with an unsure tone, slowly but surely opening those gates. " It could be considered an act of *sabotage* from you guys, to hinder our chances of winning while you could improve them even further "

" But.... what could the information about Sensei be of use for ? " The Teacher slightly opened his gates by this question, allowing for an opening for the student to fathom.

" We know that Ayanokouji-senpai is antagonizing his father, by refusing to return and sabotaging the white room while being in that institution. " They continued " This is why we want to know

what did he exactly do in order to restrain his father while being in a hopeless situation

" It would also give us an idea over how much influence he has within that certain institution, giving us more time to prepare against unforeseen enemies. What if for example, he is planning to trap us as soon as we set foot inside using some secret connections with the government and you guys hid it from us, would Ayanokouji-sensei be able to step in and save us ? "

While this situation may not seem very plausible, what the white room student is trying to imply is that the more information they can get the more it increases their chances of success. By expressing some concerns, *they have perfectly manipulated the white room instructor*

" Ugh, fine " The Man expressed, seemingly giving up. " Tsukishiro is gonna provide you with more info when you reach the school.

" But as for your question, Ayanokouji-sensei is getting investigated by the government and he's currently placed under house arrest, getting interrogated everyday. "

" I see " The White Room student nodded. " Would he be fine ? "

"To be honest, It's uncertain " The man checked some of his notes on the clipboard. " However, if the situation gets resolved, expect some backup to come your way "

" Right, thank you Sensei " Both of the students outside the passageway bowed before joining in. The man immediately shut the door, leaving the students inside alone.

" Thank you for stepping up for me right there..... **Takuya** " The white room student who originally posed the question thanked the white room student who stepped up, apparently named Takuya.

" No worries..... **Ichika** " Takuya turned towards her and gave her a nod, while they were both walking through the passageway, he slightly narrowed his eyes at her. " But I wonder if you really needed my help "

" Fufu, who knows " Ichika answered vaguely with a wide grin, to which Takuya brushed off. Ichika averted her gaze from Takuya and stared at the light at the end of the gloomy tunnel, with a happy smile

' I'll finally get to meet you, Senpai~ '

Kiyo POV

" Thank you for your business Senpai " At last, I gave a brief bow to the Senpai before turning around towards Kouenji. " It's finally over "

Kouenji gave me a smirk before accepting his empty briefcase I handed over.

" Fufu indeed " Kouenji checked his expensive wristwatch before dropping me a gaze " Let's go grab a bite Kiyo-boy, I have a nice restaurant "

A couple of days has passed since operation purple lion, and now it was the final day of spring break, 31st March.

During these past days, Kouenji and I occasionally went on our strolls to empty his briefcases. It was just now, on this final appointment around noon, that we have completely finished with our business.

" Actually.... " Kouenji was about to leave but abruptly stopped and turned around, with a curious gleam in his eyes. " I have someone I'm going to meet right now. So I'll have to pass "

" Hmm I see " Kouenji expressed his comprehension, before giving me a grin. " Is this someone more important than a perfect existence ? "

I could see the sarcasm floating out of his mouth that was forming in a teasing grin, one that the Amikura omen exhibits herself. It isn't a surprise to see even Kouenji getting infected by her because she is like a dangerous plague that influences you on each time you come in contact with, so it shouldn't be surprising to say that each member of our Class is in possession of one or more characteristics of her. *Even me*

" That I cannot answer. But it is a meeting I cannot afford to miss " At my explanation, Kouenji snickered before turning around.

" A Perfect existence such as myself needs no elaborations. I do understand " He started walking away before raising his hand as a farewell wave. " I'll catch ya later Kiyoy-boy. Because I'm gonna be busy catching some preys "

With that, he increased his pace and ran towards nowhere. I simply sighed before picking up my legs too.

It was generous from Kouenji to invite me to one of his adventures towards the fancy restaurants. While my reason for declining was the complete truth, it wasn't a complete lie either, I do have an important meeting later on. However, I simply didn't want to deal with the flirtatious Senpais that flock around him like ants, and getting dragged in their antics just because I was his companion. *You could probably tell that I have dealt with this situation before*

Though, that situation has aroused good questions that I've been ignoring for a while. Kouenji has expressed some interest in our female classmates, Himeno to be exact. However, he is still hanging out with his Senpais on a regular basis, almost as if nothing changed.

This contradiction made me wonder about Kouenji's true motives on romance, does he want to have a genuine relationship ? Or is he just building a Women roster for his selection ? Combining both doesn't seem out of character for someone like Kouenji. However, there is certain rules prevent Polygamy in Japan. Things are still in the air, at least on the surface

Speaking of relationships, it seems that Amikura would finally get suppressed as she has officially announced her relationship with Shibata right on the next day of the operation. Both boys and girls congratulated the both of them and gave them their blessing for a long and lasting Relationship.

However, whether or not Shibata actually manages to suppress her or get inverted is all up to his skill. The Amikura omen shall be stopped and if he happens to be the latter, I'll personally intervene and end him

In a playful way.

I looked up towards the sky as I silently walked towards the entrance gates of the school, the ones I passed one day shy of a year. Clouds got even more dense, brimming a gray coloring to my vision, as I spotted the man standing in front of the entrance, doing the same as me.

" Seems that It's gonna start raining soon. " The man with a warm expression shifted his gaze from the cloudy sky to stare at me through his glasses. " Don't you agree ? Kiyotaka ? "

I simply gave him a brief nod before joining his side and looking

up, both watching the sky get more dim while savoring our last moments together in this school.

" It's rare for you to issue a meeting between us Manabu. Do you have any reason for specifically calling me here ? " Moments later, I decided to break the silence with a question and stare at his eyes, to which he reciprocated my gaze.

A Farewell party was set up by the student council for Manabu and Tachibana, to which all of their acquaintances attended, even Honami. I would have attended it as well if not for him to prohibit me with a request to meet here, at this time and day.

Manabu snickered a little at my question, as if he found it funny. Before looking at me with his warm gaze, the one that is completely different from his sharp, icy one. One that genuinely conveyed some emotion

" I just wanted to have my last chat with my first friend "

" First friend huh ? " I gave him a small laugh, as if indicating a ridicule. " You know that a lot of people would be upset if they heard this statement yes ? "

" They don't matter " Manabu refuted. " What matters is what I feel is right..... Although, I wish I could apply this mindset somewhere else.... "

For Manabu who has been at the top for so long, It must have been hard for him to make some friends among his environment, where everyone either looks up to him or jealous. It would be pretty hard to find some genuine feelings in this environment, *which is something I have experienced back then*

Manabu has held to his self-preservation and prevented himself from falling in any traps. On the other hand, he became lonely around his 'friends' that he considers as acquaintances in order to not get used by them. *It is truly a sad reality to live in-*

However, as a final act towards this man. I should help him break out of his shell, even if there is a chance we won't meet again

At least I'll carry something, a memory of an act towards the person known as Horikita Manabu

" Hey Manabu.... " Manabu shifted his attention towards me as I spoke up, and focused on my words. " About what you said in the graduation ceremony, to have no regrets as we live in our high school life.

" Do you have any regrets ?.... In this school life of yours ? "

It isn't far fetched to know that everyone who graduated or is about to graduate would have some types of regrets left here, no matter how big or small. Whether they didn't make use of a certain facility or failing to confess your love, to even a mistake that caused an expulsion of somebody. All sorts of regrets would be left there

So for him to say that wouldn't be very convincing, and a bit unbelievable too. So he must have something, a regret weighting him down heavily, in order to for him to utter such a request.

Manabu fell silent, immersed in his world and searching for the answer. I could clearly feel a different vibe coming out of him, a different aura, one that exhibits profound remorse.

" I do. " He sighed, deeply before uttering a short reply.

" What is it ? It's clearly weighting you a lot, so drop it. "

" My only regret at this school was not preparing a great candidate for the position of the student council and allowing Nagumo to take it. " He gave me a small smile. " However, and thanks to you, I was able to attain for that and fix my mistake. "

" No need to thank me, I have gained something valuable from it as well. "

Although the chances of me pummeling Nagumo if I ever see him are thorough the roofs. I am actually grateful for him for orchestrating that Library incident and allowing me to get with Honami closer than originally planned. However, this small gratitude doesn't outweigh my hatred towards him and I'll pummel him the same way with or without.

" However.... " Manabu interjected, grabbing my attention that was already on him once again. Since he still had more to say " I do have a regret. However, It isn't as a student of this school

" But questions my intentions as a Brother "

It isn't too far off to think that Manabu lived a perfect life as a student, while I'm not aware what he's exactly been through, his past achievements speak for themselves. He may have regrets as a leader for his Class for graduating with 36 Students, or as a student council president. However, that doesn't seem to be the case

" Brother ? You mean your Sister's.... ? " *defect*

I didn't dare to utter that word to him. However, he seems to have read my mind and gave me a sad nod, one full of remorse.

" Suzune has been always looking up to me and following my steps whenever I go, I was like an idol to her. Yet, I've failed to make her realize her flaws. Instead of convincing her, I just pushed her away and treated her coldly because I was impatient, I was frustrated with her and couldn't contain my emotions for the better good. I hoped that she'd realize her flaws during the 2 years I left, but it's gotten even worse. "

Manabu's usual composure completely broke, and he seems to be feeling a lot of emotions at once. This thing right here was clearly taking a big toll on him and destroying his mental health. It didn't seem as a final moments of regret, rather, he has been regretting this for a while now.

" I will and always be a failure of a Brother, I have failed to guide my sister because of my stupid pride and pushed her away. I have failed her as an Idol figure, to show her the correct path as well.... "

While Manabu kept ranting on about his regret while being in the verge of breakdown, I silently stood in front of him and heard every word that came out of his mouth. There was no words that could comfort him or actions that would reassure him, Manabu would always feel this way no matter how you slice it.

I could promise him to to help his sister overcome her flaws in order to reassure him. However, Manabu would just feel more pity for himself as he just have allowed another person to fix his problems. He'll probably live enslaved to that feeling of debt towards me and actually never make any progress.

This situation is pretty complicated, In order for me to fix Manabu, I'd have to reassure him about his sister's improvement while leaving out any thoughts of my intervention somehow. That way, Manabu wouldn't excessively worry about his sister while being indebted to me. Which leaves only one-way

" If you ask for my opinion, I don't think your Sister is gonna remain like this "

" Huh ? " Manabu immediately snapped out and looked at me, with a depressive aura around him. I simply averted my gaze towards the school's building behind me

" This School's nature doesn't allow weaknesses to flourish, the strong would remain and the weak would get disposed off. I'm sure you're aware of this more so than anybody else. " I briefly shifted my gaze back at him before looking at the sky " In this type of environment, the weak strives to get stronger and eliminate all of their weaknesses in order to survive.

" Take our year's Class D for example, they have been on 0 points since forever. In order for your sister to survive in this type of environment she'd have to pull an astounding amount of effort that is only possible if she moves on her own. She'd eventually realize that following your footsteps would lead to her demise and she'll adapt to survive. "

Getting influenced by people isn't necessarily a bad thing. However, it tends to get very unhealthy to the point where they copy everything out of them, their favorite color, music, food.... Those types of people are pretty common around the world as far as I am concerned

Each person walks on a different terrain towards their way to success, taking different types of approaches and variant amounts of efforts in order to succeed. If you simply follow the exact same footsteps of your idol, chances are you'll trip and fall. Taking the

exact same footsteps on different terrains wouldn't result in the same ending, and this is what I'm hoping for Manabu to understand, that his sister will *adapt*.

" But..... Wouldn't it be too late when she realizes that ? " I shook my head

" If she's determined to follow your footsteps and graduate from this prestigious school as well. This moment of struggle would happen and she'll be forced to abandon her ideal and choose the option with the highest priority which is- "

" Abandoning my ideals, to graduating from the school. " At his response, I gave him a nod.

For summary, If Horikita Suzune was to be put in a situation where she'd have to take a different step than Manabu in order to keep pushing forward, she'd definitely take that and slowly drift from Manabu's route.

" Your understanding of human nature is quite terrifying. " Manabu chuckled slightly, seemingly coming back to his usual aura with a deep sigh. " Thank you Kiyotaka, you managed to help me again. "

" No worries Manabu. " He extended his arm and we both hugged each other, *manly hug*.

Of course, this was just a part of my illusion. Horikita would stubbornly keep track of Manabu's footsteps even after adapting to a more optimal route, that is as far as I'm concerned.

However, Manabu doesn't need to know that. So It's better to leave things as it is

" Enough about me Kiyotaka. " Manabu after breaking apart immediately threw me the ball, with an expression more serious than his usual one. " What about you Kiyotaka ? Are you gonna be fine ? "

As he uttered these words, I immediately realized what he's talking about.

" I'm gonna be okay Manabu, you don't have to worry about it. " I patted his shoulders, trying to reassure him. " Moreover, you should focus on yourself now. "

I do appreciate Manabu's concerns about the Tsukishiro's case. However, this is a task I'm completely confident of overcoming. If Manabu believe on me then he'll accept my change of topic

" Focus on me ? " *and he accepted it*.

" Yes " I simply let go of the confused Manabu's shoulders and stared directly at his eyes. " You don't have to abide by expectations, not anymore.... "

Manabu slightly widened his eyes, indicating his surprise. I noticed this and immediately continued

" Don't let people decide for you what to do, you aren't a slave to their expectations. This your life, your territory. And only you get to decide whatever to do with it. " I pointed at him, strengthening the meaning of my message. " You said it yourself during the graduation ceremony. You have to find what you love and do what you believe is right, and the only way to be truly satisfied is to love what you're doing. People put expectations on you for their own selfish reasons. So you have to fight them, if you truly desire to be happy. "

People's expectations are set in order for them to gain from it in the long run. If you happen to meet it you'll only be used afterwards and if you don't, you'll be disposed off.

Ironically, this small concept even works outside of the white room. The people who are so called 'friends' who are there just for their own benefit, and dispose of you whenever you won't be able to reach it anymore.

He and I are similar in a sense, that man has also set plans for me to rule over Japan for his own benefit. However, the only difference is that I have decided to retaliate against and choose my own path, *and that's what Manabu needs.*

" I see... " Manabu muttered, I could feel the gears in his head moving. He slowly lifted his head and gave me a small smile. " I'll think about it. Thank you again, Kiyotaka "

" No worries Manabu. " At my words he stuffed his hand inside of his pocket and pulled something out. " What's that ? "

" It's a paper, with my phone number in it " He gently offered it to me to which I accepted and opened. " I have stuffed Akane's phone too in case mine doesn't work. "

" I see. " I muttered, before lifting my gaze to meet his. " Doesn't this get me in trouble if the school figures out ? "

" Yeah, that is if the school figures out. I'll trust that you'll hide it well " Manabu amusingly chuckled at his words, to which I let a sigh.

" Alright, I'll take a good care of this. " In reality, I didn't need the paper since I have memorized both numbers. "

" While I'm not sure what will happen to you from here on out. But if you ever need my help send me a call "

" Right, Thank you Manabu " We shared another hug that lasted much shorter. Since Manabu's bus has just sailed by the entrance.

" Right, I guess it's time to leave. " Manabu grabbed his luggage and sailed towards the bus. However, he abruptly stopped right by the entrance and turned around " I never got to thank you for accepting my invite and coming here today. So thank you again, Kiyotaka "

" No need to thank me Manabu. " I sighed before continuing. " Thank you for this amazing year Manabu, things would definitely not be the same after this. The only regret I have is not getting to know you more "

What I have spoke up to this point was almost filled with illusion. However, those were probably the first sincere words I spoke during this meeting. I definitely regret not fathoming the existence known as Horikita Manabu and discovering him, since I could have learned something from him.

He is someone I truly respect, he accomplished extraordinary feats and not bragging about it, he never allowed his arrogance to get ahead of himself and kept his performances up high. He was a great leading figure that people could learn from

While his level still doesn't come near a white room student, he has worked pretty hard to nurture his abilities and became extraordinary in an ordinary environment. That is a feat that truly deserves the utmost respect

Manabu chuckled at my words

" Is that so ? Then perhaps give me a call or two during your free time. "

" You know I cannot do that. "

" I know you can "

" Why ? "

" Because I said so "

Manabu snickered at his own words while an exasperating sigh escaped my mouth.

" You're supposed to be a former student council president, you shouldn't encourage students to break the rules. " I scolded.

" You sound exactly like my mother. " He chuckled again.

Shortly after our banter, Manabu set sail inside of the bus and turned around, with a small smile he waved at me.

" Farewell, for now. Kiyotaka "

" Farewell, Manabu " I waved back, the bus door immediately shut leaving no room for further talk. I stared at it's back while it kept accelerating towards whatever location it's going to.

Shortly after the bus disappeared from the sights, a calming silence prevailed among the lightly blowing wind. My head for some reason felt very light and clear, allowing me to register all of those effects into my brain.

Immediately after that, I brushed my feet against the floor, picking up my pace towards the dorms.

However, I dropped a brief glance towards a corner while walking, before completely ignoring it and stuffing my hands on my pocks.

She didn't even have the courage to say goodbye to her brother. What a sad reality she's living in

I sighed at the idiocy, before shifting my gaze back towards the corner.

Don't worry, Horikita Suzune. I have already prepared something for you

Your input would be useful in my grand scheme of things

So rejoice, because I'm gonna give you a role to play.

A small droplet fell on my cheek while approaching the dorms. Soon, more droplets came, until it became a bath

It's raining

" Welcome home Kiyotaka~ " At the sound of the muffled thunders and heavy rain, Honami's sweet voice echoed inside of her dorm room as I walked inside. Wearing my favorite pajamas she came towards me and welcoming me. " Hey, lemme take this~ "

" Thank you " Honami took off my wet vest and put it for laundry while I took off my shoes. " It seems that the rain won't go off for a while "

" Yep~ " We both stared at the balcony's window where heavy rain was pouring down on campus, I could spot some people running while fighting against the rain to survive. As we both sat on the bed " Why did Horikita-senpai call for you at this time ? "

Her tone didn't sound commanding or interrogative, it was as if she was just curious about our meeting.

" He just wanted his last conversation to be with me for some reason " I decided to feign ignorance on the reason, since stating it would be unnecessary.

" I see... " Honami muttered with a bright smile and a nod, seemingly in comprehension. " It seems that my competition is only

increasing huh ? Even men are falling for you, as expected from my soulmate~ "

" What do you mean " I deadpanned. Honami responded with a cute chuckle

" Nothing~! Haha " She laughed spontaneously before creeping closer and resting on my arm. I decided to let her be. However, something caught my attention.

" Soulmates huh ? " I muttered, while subconsciously laying on head on top of hers. " Do you believe on them ? "

" Of course I do~ " Honami responded strongly, with as-a-matter-of-a-fact tone. Immediately, her tone trailed down to a low and warm one, as I could feel her finger draw smooth circles on my lap. " After all.... *You're here*~ "

Just with those simple worlds, I felt like the doors of heaven were opened to me. The heavy rain drops soothed the calm atmosphere and cleared the way between our hearts, making words even more reachable.

As if in the spur of the moment, We both locked gazes. And as being driven by the intimacy, our lips subconsciously drew closer as we were both lost on each other's eyes, creating a small intensity just as our lips brushed together, before we finally locked down.

The topic of soulmates is a pretty controversial one, and pretty interesting too. The book definition of the word is a person ideally suited to another as a close friend or romantic partner, which in a sense makes soulmates exists. However, there is many other definitions that are much more interesting

" Mmmmmh~ " Honami put both of her hands on each side of my cheeks and pulled me closer, almost as if requesting more.

Someone who is created only to be with you, someone who is your perfect match.

" Mmmmm~ " Granting her request, I wrapped my arms around her waist and pulled her closer.

And much more absurd definitions. Science interjected

" Mmmgh~ " I inserted my tongue inside of her mouth to which she wholeheartedly welcomed.

However, they were never able to prove those absurd theories

" Mmmmgghhh~ " My tongue collided against hers, allowing an equal exchange of saliva.

Because....

They are *absurd*

" Mmmmmmm~ " Honami moaned in great pleasure, melting from this moment of intimacy.

So I am

" *Pah* " We both separated from our kiss, to catch our breaths. Her

face was completely flushed and she seems to be in a drugged state. However, she crawled back up to me shortly after and kissing me again. " Mmmm~ "

However, If you ask me. Whether I believe in soulmates or not
" Mmgh~ " Honami outweighed me causing us to fall on the bed, kissing me sluggishly.

Then I'd be forced to accept that *they do exist*

She laid on top of me and kissed me even deeper, screaming her desires for me and for my love. To which I could unconsciously hear from the bottom of my brain

*You'd be forced to accept it when someone like her exists in your life
No matter how absurd it is*

I gave her what she desired, my full love, to which she responded with hers too.

*Someone you could act as yourself with, without you even knowing it
Someone that bring the best out of you
Someone that you share mutual feelings of love*

She started running out of stamina. However, not out of her desire. She desired me more than anyone else

And I desired her the same way as well.

Our lips connected again, in a hungry kiss, not out of lust but love.

*Someone you feel so safe in their arms
Someone you couldn't imagine your life without
Someone you share your soul with*

How can you deny an existence of such a person when they are right in front of you ?

There is no point

If those theories of perfect couple do exist out there, she has to be the one

Even if she isn't

Even if there is somehow, a person more perfect than her for me out there

I would reject them

Because for me.....

Honami is my soulmate

I can confirm as a single, writing the last part actually made me lonely

But ha, A perfect existence as myself can get bitches as easily as breathing. I am not Bitchless, Bitches are me-less

Well anyways, I was planning for a chapter release yesterday In order to prepare a lemon for 20th July... CUZ IT'S HONAMI BDAY

However, I got caught up on a..... Rather..... Questionable personalities quarrel

P.S : If you knew what happened, you're an absolute legend

Anyway, This is the last chapter of V11.5 This volume took longer than anticipated.

I won't complete this book yet, I still have some promises to keep

Not only lemon but look forward to the outside content. I swear you'll like it (probably)

Anyways. Have an awesome one everyone

Cya~ Prepare tissues~ :))))

Arc 11.5 Special Chapter : That Morning

+18 ● ● ● ●

Lemon warning : Explicit sex (smut chapter)

● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ● ●

March 18th, 6:02 AM

Frrrt

I felt a small chill run through my body in the middle of my slumber, causing me to instinctively shiver and embrace myself tighter

I need a Blanket

My mind started screaming for a blanket. I wasn't fully conscious yet, but I immediately recognized it as the cold and began my aimless search.

However, my hands stopped at the feeling of a soft weight being put down on my lap and pressing herself against my cold body and covering me up. Our collide generated heat enough from my body to overpower the cold

At first, I didn't recognize what it was since I wasn't conscious enough. So I slowly opened my eyes to check what it was, moments after my blurry vision dissipated, I widened my eyes.

" Oww~ Finally you're awake~! " Honami moved from the back of my head and faced, with an excited and bright smile. She straightened her back from excitement and slightly bounced on top of my lap, while grabbing my shoulders to support herself.

" Honami ?.... What are you doing ? "

" Really ? You're asking me that~? " Honami deadpanned, with a somewhat flushed face. She slowly moved her right hand and started drawing circles on my chest. " You know what I'm gonna do~ "

As a matter of a fact, I did have an idea about what she was gonna do. However, I simply wasn't conscious enough to realize it and ended up asking her myself.

Instead of offering her a response or moving, my eyes drawn towards her body and kept staring at it. She grinned more mischievously before hopping off my lap

" Say Kiyo, you like my new suit~? " She stood in front of me and started flexing in many poses, displaying multiple of her body parts

to me. In reality I couldn't see any, since she was wearing some sort of a black suit covering her whole body, leaving out only her face.

Not gonna lie, she looked astonishingly arousing and beautiful too. The black suit tightly held firm around her perfect body, making her even more voluptuous. Her plump butt and perfect bust were standing out alongside other body parts. *It was definitely more than enough to make my monster start waking up*

Honami must have seen a reaction from me somewhere as she slowed down and gave me a grin. She was silently staring at me, awaiting my answer.

However, instead giving her an opinion. I voiced out

" Where did you get this ? " Honami was clearly not expecting this type of response came to a halt, with a small disappointment on her face.

" Mako-chan gave it to me. " She bluntly responded.

" Amikura ? " I parroted and she nodded. She moved towards the side and grabbed a bag. " That.... "

She has shown me the bag contents, and it was full of tools helpful for sex. There was contraceptive boxes, gag balls and some glasses that appears to be aphrodisiacs. She pulled out a box and shown it to me, and it was the one her suit came from.

" I see.... " I muttered. " When did you receive them ? Was it related to that time when she gave you a paper and you got flustered ? "

It was the only situation I could think of as of the moment, I was feeling to many things at once.

" Ah jeez~ Stop with the interrogating me like I'm some sort of a criminal~ " Honami sighed in exasperation, as she returned the box back to the bag.

" But you're just about to rape me " I deadpanned.

" Don't put it like that, you're my boyfriend~ " She said that with a completely innocent tone while checking the description of the aphrodisiac bottles. I wanted to make a move and stop her. However...

" Then any reason for tying me up ? " I looked around my body to find some thick ropes wrapping around me and tying me to the bed.

" I'm sorry Kiyotaka~ " Honami with a bottle in hand approached me and flashed me with a small grin. " You are pretty strong so I had to take some measures~ Besides... "

At this, she cracked the bottle open and flashed me with a sinister smile, a smile that I have yet to see on her beautiful face up until now. Sadistic and cruel, almost as if-

" I'm gonna suck you dry~ and I'm gonna enjoy it~ "

" Hona-Mghh " She took a sip from the bottle and moved her lips

to mine and started lip-feeding me the aphrodisiac. Slowly as I drank it, she tracked her bum and placed it on my lap while kissing me lustfully.

Even after I fully drank it, she didn't stop kissing me and started grinding my lap. I could feel the last drops of the aphrodisiac travel through my mouth, setting on a timer for it to start effect.

" My~ He's pretty angry~ " After we broke up, she remarked after dropping her gaze towards my crotch, where my bulge was pressing hard against her thigh. She moved a finger and started stroking the tip. " Do you want me this badly Kiyo~? "

" Yes. I want you " I decided to take a straight approach and answered her bluntly. There is a timer on the aphrodisiac and she is on a sadistic mode, so it's better to satisfy it first before the timer hits up.

She gave me a satisfied smile before unbuttoning my pants and sliding it down, releasing my wife-beater.

" It's as godly as ever~ " She remarked before she started grinding it, making me release multiple grunts. She slightly unzipped the front of her costume and slid it down her shoulders below her bust level to display her beautiful boobs to me. She grabbed both of them and twisted them up, aiming her nipples towards me. " Cmon Kiyo~ Suck them~ "

I wordlessly complied and started munching on her nipples. She pleurably started moaning and bouncing on my lap, grinding my shaft in the meantime.

A small study shows that you feel more pleasure during sex while clothed/half-naked than naked. And I could clearly tell that it was the case, since I'm still on my Pajamas and Honami on her black suit with only her breasts shown.

Soon, I abruptly stopped licking her breasts, as she simultaneously stopped grinding and looked at me. I felt my blood circulation increase as my feelings went rampant, every part of my body started heating up.

" Hehe~ It seems that it's finally working " She grinned at the sight of me before hopping off in front of me, sitting on her knees and staring at my shaft. " Since you've been a good boy~ I'll give you a reward~ "

She wrapped her hand around my shaft and started slowly stroking up and down. She stopped and briefly glanced at me, before picking the pace and stroking me down even faster. Until-

" Mmmm " I moaned as I immediately started unleashing my loads everywhere, it was even bigger with the effects of the aphrodisiac.

" It seems that we need some cleanup afterwards~ " Some

droplets of my semen landed on Honami's face to which she licked off before checking her surroundings.

She moved her hand back and wrapped it on the base of my shaft, causing me to release a soft moan and my member getting hard again. She grinned

She brushed some strands of hair off her face before moving her tongue and licking my tip while gently squeezing my base. I closed my eyes and simply let her do her work, while enjoying the feelings of pleasure she's giving me.

My soft moans enticed her even more as she blushingly swallowed my whole tip and slowly started making her way to the bottom. My shaft traveled inside of her wet mouth, each centimeter goes inside the more pleasure I get, Her hot breaths were hitting against it staining it more with saliva. Soon enough, It hit the back of her throat.

" *cough cough* " She started coughing before reattempting again, trying to swallow my whole shaft in. To which she failed every single time

" It's futile. " I marked, with a smug on my face. She stubbornly attempted again to which she pouted at the end.

" Jeez~ You're pretty annoying~ " Honami grumbled at my small victory. Before ducking down and clutching the bag and grabbing a gag-ball " This should do~ "

" Hey- Mghhh " She immediately shot down my protests by stuffing the ball on my mouth, she kept her finger there to prevent me from throwing it up.

" Try to remove it and you'll drink 3 of that~ " She pointed towards the aphrodisiacs threateningly. I simply calmed down and gave her a nod. To which she victoriously grinned at

I'ma remember that

After the grin, she supported herself using my shoulders to lay her knees on top of the bed, her floating beasts gently descended towards the surface as she completely laid on her stomach and continued sucking on my shaft.

Shortly after that, my hips started shacking before I came inside of her mouth. She received it with a small moan before cleaning it up and swallowing all of it.

" Hehe~ That was a party in my mouth Kiyo~ You had a big blast~ " Honami lewdly said that as she sat up on her knees and licking her fingers, with her breasts hanging out. " Seems that the aphrodisiac effect has wore out~ damn what a bummer~ "

Honami expressed her disappointment in the aphrodisiac while I inwardly agreed with her. I quickly checked the hour to see it around 7 AM, which means that I still have 2 hours left for my

meeting.

" If the aphrodisiac doesn't work~ then what should I do to arouse you even more~? " Honami put a thinking pose while sitting on her knees on the bed thinking of possible ways to make me horny. " Oh~ maybe I should try this~ "

Honami grabbed both of the pillows and put them on top of each other before resting her back on them. She slipped her hand inside of her suit and started touching her nether regions

" Mmmm~ " Honami spread her legs as she started fingering herself, releasing a series of sexy and arousing moans. " Mmmm~ Kiyo I'm so horny~ Come and help this horny little maiden~ "

She requested in a sexy tone and a very lewd expression. As to add in more to her roleplay, she grabbed her bust with her free hand and started playing with it

" Ahhnn~ This little slut craves your cock daddy~ come and help her~ "

While she may be roleplaying right now, she is truly expressing her desire for my wife-beater. Although I would like to give it to her, I simply 'cannot' move right now.

" You can't move daddy~? You gonna leave me here~ " Honami gave me a taunting grin. " Fine~

" Just say something~ If you do then I'll release~ "

This was probably the most absurd offer I've received in my life, and she knows it very well. If I talk I'd have to throw out my gag-ball which will automatically mean that I'll drink 3 bottles of aphrodisiac. It may be weak compared to the normal ones, but it is more than enough for me to go berserk.

Oh no, what should I do

Oh yes, I can always do that

" Hoh ? " Honami expressed her shock by a loud surprised voice. However, It quickly turned into an amused grin. " Kiyo~ you can't do that, It's futile~ "

I started applying pressure on the ties around me, trying to break free. *If the two options aren't to your liking, make a third one.*

" I knew you'd try that so I choose the best ropes I coul-.... EEEEEH~? " Honami was profoundly surprised as I was simply cleaning up the remaining bits of ropes and throw them out. After I got rid of them, I slowly turned my head and glared at her. " W-Wait ! Kiyo- Eeepghhhh~ "

She squealed with a small grumble as I quickly approached her and grabbing her neck before slamming her on the bed.

Her reaction at first was one of fear. However, It quickly turned into a lustful grin and tried to fight against my hold. To which I increased it even more

" Gghhh~ " She opened her mouth and slipped her tongue out, choking under my grip. I spit out the gag-ball before calling out to her " You've been a pretty bad girl up until now. "

" Yes~ I have been a bad girl daddy~ I deserve a punishment~ " She spoke submissively, her calling me daddy enticed me for some reason.

" Good, then spread your legs " She obediently complied and spread her legs, I like seeing this this quick change of her behavior, from acting dominant to submissive.

" Ahhhn~ " With both of my hands I created a gap around her crotch and ripped her suit. However, I left out the other areas and only removed the important parts. " Punish me~ punish this bad girl for being naughty and cheeky~ punish her with your magical cock daddy~ "

As I was about to hand her my punishing sword, her masochistic side started fessing up. This isn't the first time. *But I like it more this way*

pah

" Mghhhhhhhh~ " I served her punishment with a strong thrust, pushing the entirety of my member inside. She moaned loudly as I slapped her bum with my hips. I added another, and another.... and she moaned and moaned, until it became a beautiful melody of ecstasy. " Ahh~ Ahh~ Ahh~ Ahh~ Ahh~ Yes~ Yes~ "

Her moans rhymed up with each thrust I gave her.

Pah

" Ahh~ "

Pah

" Ahh~ "

Pah

" Yess~ "

" Choke me~ Choke me daddy~! " I complied and gripped her throat and kept on thrusting her, her breasts were wobbling with each push. Her expression turned completely lewd from pleasure slipped her tongue out. " Agggghhh~ "

I shifted my posture and lifted her up to turn her around, she supported herself on the bed with both of her hands as her bum was facing me. I put both of my hands on both sides of her waist and plunged in again

" You've been pretty naughty "

Slap

" Aahnnnn~ " She moaned pretty loudly as I slapped her bum, before continuing on pounding her.

" Was this all your plan ? Me sleeping like that then tying me up ? "

" Ngh~ Yes~ Ngh~ It was my plan~ Ah~ I planned for it~ " *I see...*

I scanned my surroundings and grabbed the aphrodisiac bottle and took a sip, before grabbing her lewd face and lip-feeding her the same way she did and she obediently swallowed all of it. Before falling onto the bed, in the receiving end of my knocks.

I kept knocking on her womb while occasionally slapping her ass, the aphrodisiac effects started taking a toll on her as she kept on demanding to violate her even more. Which of course, I took her on that offer

" Honami, I'm gonna cum " As I was about to reach my climax, I voiced out. However, I felt her insides narrow down around my wife-beater

" I'm gonna cum too daddy~ Let's cum together~! " I looked at her face and she was completely losing it. Who would have thought she could make such an erotic face

" Honami... " I muttered her name as I felt the moment of truth approaching, my hips voluntarily started pushing faster and deeper. " I'm gonna cum~ "

" YES~ DADDY~ "

Pah....

" A....." With one final thrust, her inside were marked as white as I came spurting out . Her erotic sexy moans came to a halt as she arched her back, taking in everything. " Arrgghhhhhhhhj~ "

Her thighs were shacking violently before falling to her knees at the ground, panting heavily while laying her upper half of her body on top of the bed. Soon, She closed her eyes as the counterattack came, and her flower started dripping out with both of our fluids.

I feasted my eyes on such a beautiful sight, this sight right here made me even more happier that I have left the white room. However, I couldn't see it through the end cuz I had to check the time

I need to finish this ordeal in 45 minutes so I can arrive for my meeting later.

However, I cannot let her like that or else she might intervene.

So I have to drop her unconscious before that

I stared at her as lifted herself on top of the bed and laying there, trying to catch a break. I ran through multiple calculations before inwardly sighing

No matter how you slice it, I'll be late for that meeting

I estimate us finishing in more than an hour if we keep on our pace. So I have to shorten it

I didn't want to do it this early, since I wanted to build you more durable by the time. However, It seems that I have no choice

*Prepare yourself Honami
Because I'm going all out
For real this time.....*

AA

**I WAS SCARED OF THIS LEMON
HOW DID I FINISH IT IN ONE DAY**

I'm sorry If the last part is badly written, I simply reached the point where I didn't want to write anymore and just speed ran through it.

**As you can tell, I developed PTSD of writing lemons
However, I promised a lemon each .5 Chapter so..... yeah my fault**

**Anyways, thank you for reading !
This concludes the story. I cannot believe I'm saying this..
But I never said It's the end of uploading
Feel free to stay for the SSs and what's after that. Or you could go to my second book from here
Anyways, Chao !**

Afterword.

This is the end of my first book ! Well.... Not exactly but the end of all the content

I'm gonna take my time here and speak my thoughts, you could stay and listen or you can ignore, it's up to you.

Would this be the last upload ? No, I still have some stuff planned for this book, like some Short Stories

Currently, I only have one planned, so if you'd like to see something please just ask. There is a great chance that I'll implement what you ask, so don't be shy

I have some ideas for one shots and alternative routes (some twists) that I have gathered from either your comments or my own imagination. So I'll most likely create a one shot book to post them in there

Anyways, It has been quite an adventure in this book, To be completely honest with you I had the dedication at first to finish this book and I did expect myself to finish it.

However, I never expected that it'll get this much engagement.

Truly, I was blown away.

I still remember when I was laying on my bed and pressing the 'create story' and filling in the info

I still remember writing my first chapter 10 at night, and checking for viewers for 2 hours straight and writing another at 12

I Still Remember Sweating And Getting Annoyed Over Pressing The Caps Button At Each Word Of A Sentence.

It might be a mistake. But for me it's part of my book, I am somewhat frustrated that many ppl dropped my book cuz of this mistake. However, I won't go back and delete it

It reminds me of how I used to be and how much I improved, whether it was by self-correction or criticism. It's part of this book and I won't delete it

The only parts I'm gonna rewrite is when I broke the 4th wall. Although looking back at it, I might have used it to divert your attention over information

That's one regret I have, the other one is rushing Kiyo's development.

However, I don't feel too bad about it anymore, I have made plans to cover it up and make a good plot about it, so for you guys

to enjoy.

Also, I'd like to mention one thing. I don't hate any character from my book

Yes, they are all not my characters and basically copied them. But I just realized that I do not harbor any hate from that shittykinugasafanfiction here

Yes, even Karuizawa.

I only hate her canon version for some obvious reasons that are somehow 'unobvious' However, if I find no reason to hate her in a story I won't

Of course, you may see me trash her in some story. And I do not harbor any patience towards her.

However, I realized that during my read of a reaction story for this book made by DegenerateSenpai where Karuizawa there is actually likable and I had no problems with her, at least not in the first chapters.

If you're curious about the reasons I hate her I'll probably post them somewhere, and I'll make sure to mention them if ppl are curious enough.

Point to be delivered, I do prefer some characters over other, but I do not hate anyone of them. Even Ike & Yamauchi, they have served as good antagonists for a while.

Nagumo ? Sigh.... He is useless, I didn't want him in my story.

Anyways. I just want to have a moment to thank all of you, yes all of you. The people who were here from the early days and who commented, upvoted, critisized, even the silent readers and ppl who dropped (and who skipped)

Just clicking on my book gives me appreciation, I'm happy.

These past (I think) 5 months have been great, and probably the most fun times I had. You all made it great

And I hope I made your time great too, laughing at some of my lame jokes or entertained you with my writing in general.

If this happened then I'll truly be proud of this work.

The second-year is coming up, and I'll try to make it as best as I possibly can.

If you're curious then yes, I have already finished planning for the major plot points for the whole year, stuff like characters, exams, plans. I have everything written for the whole year

I hope I get the time to finish it, next year I'll have my college entrance exam so uploads would almost likely slow down.

But I'll try my best to balance things out, I really enjoy writing here and I do not wish to stop any time soon.

Seems that I've talked a lot, Well. Who cares

Thank you for reading up until here ! As I said if you wish to see

something whatever it is please comment.

Stay safe, stay healthy. And most importantly

- .
- .
- .
- ..
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Make sure to spread your legs once in a while 😊

ES - Yamauchi 'Yamagod' Haruki

ES = Expulsion Stories

A small series where I post some short stories for certain individuals's expulsion.

Our guest today is Yamagod. So, without further ado, let's jump right in.

I am one and only perfekt existence in word.... I AM-

" -YAMAUCHI HARUKIII ! " I scremed at miror, remindin mayself who i am. " AN I WIL GET A THEESOM TODAY ! "

dat bastard ayanokoji tok my chance yesterday to fuck chiaki and hit me an my homie kanji. I wold never forgiv him for destoyin may butiful face, naw grills woldnt cum for me

kanji is dum and ugly so dis doesnt mater, wat mater is im gona talk with chiaki chan to fuck her later wizout him

but wat if... ayanokoji fucked her az wel ? he said dat chiaki chan was at the toilet so he now and fucked her ! Ahhhhghhhh dat bastard !

he gets to fuck honami chan and chiaki chan to ? Dat bastard ned to lev som gurls for us to fuuuuuck

no no calm down haruki dere no way dat bastard did it chiaki chan love you and only you calm down yes calm down

buynt if chiaki chan did it wiz him den i wil fuck her an dump her i dont need hore in life

i grabe may bag and make sure dat my trusti condom is insid and go to schol

I cheked again just in kase for may trusti condom i have thoghts bitches wold want me so i boght it on first day of schol and save it. I wil get to finali uze it on chiaki chan

Hehehe Im going to fuck with chiaki chan she'll love my dick coz its so big i got biggest dick in clas no entire schol fuck schol i got biggest dick in the entire world soon I'll ntr u and then I'll beat you

ayanokoji you just wait

Dat day i wasnt hard enogh wen we compare dick size, it was a cioncidens. Everywan was so smol

dat koenji always think he is perfekt with dat shity body of his but every woman wil squirt everywhere za moment I taik my shirt off and show off my sexy godly abs. I am the gret Yamadead after all

maaan i cant wait to fuck chiaki chan is hotie and i dont now were to start. Hehe shold i toch her boobs first or ass ? Maybe kiss her haaaa dis is hard im alredy cuming

everywan loked at me like im weirdo wen i clened my cum in my pant and wipe it on hair. Dey say dat ze hair smels with people motive so wen girls smel my hair dey find cum dey know im ready to bang al night

It was a given dat im handsom sori chiaki chan but if girls want to fuck im gona do it

after i dump chiaki I wil go after dat cute girl in class c what's her name hiyori chan iam sur she fal for may god loks

after i dump hiyori chan i wil go to dat tomboy girl her nam is mio chan she iz cute tsundere and im sure she liks it rough and iam rough she wil becom my favorit masoshist

hehe, im gona ntr yo and mak harem everywan is may cum dump bat dont wori chiaki chan cuz ill fuck yo to

now.... im gonna go and cum in heaven

" you are expelled "

Wat

Writing style inspired by : pl_obsidian 🤖

Special thanks to Kawaii_Aether and AnkitFTW for helping me make this even more stupid.

Anyone looking for part 2 ? ^^

Final upload.

Yo.

I know I said that I'll do some uploads after the final chapters with some content. But I decided to move it into a one shot book.

If you are interested then watchout for the announcement, whether It's through my board or second-year book.

Anyways. Thank you all for reading ! This is the final upload of this book !

The link of the sequel (second-year book) :

[https://www.wattpad.com/story/314193190?
utm_source=android&utm_medium=link&utm_content=story_info&wp_pa
%2BUCilTvYvhPA3ZVIaf3oLnzVhUbJzrwGE59t
%2BGpMT3n53yjETw0%2FKLV4iXpfcqkIznq3mEhpRNUmK8RH2eo3wWtU
%2BCU4bHC4ggbieqEYVS%2Br8r4Anir](https://www.wattpad.com/story/314193190?utm_source=android&utm_medium=link&utm_content=story_info&wp_pa%2BUCilTvYvhPA3ZVIaf3oLnzVhUbJzrwGE59t%2BGpMT3n53yjETw0%2FKLV4iXpfcqkIznq3mEhpRNUmK8RH2eo3wWtU%2BCU4bHC4ggbieqEYVS%2Br8r4Anir)

Or could be found on my profile ;)

Anyways. See ya there !